

ICSSH2016

INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES

CHALLENGES: FROM DIVERSITY TO SYNERGY

13-15 May 2016, Skopje

CONFERENCE PROCEEDINGS



CONFERENCE PROCEEDINGS

International Conference on Social Sciences and Humanities *Challenges: from Diversity to Synergy*

Skopje, November 2016



International Balkan University

CONFERENCE PROCEEDINGS

INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES
“CHALLENGES: FROM DIVERSITY TO SYNERGY”

PUBLISHER:

International Balkan University

EDITOR:

Asst. Prof. Dr. Mevludin Ibish

DESIGN & DTP:

Vladimir Gjorgjieski

Muhammed Erdem İşler

PRINTED BY:

CIRCULATION:

200 pieces

PLACE OF PUBLICATION: Skopje

COPYRIGHT:

International Balkan University

ISBN 978-6-0865137-4-0

COMMITTEES

Organizing Committee

İsmail Kocayusufoğlu, PhD
Yıldıray Çevik, PhD
Snežana Bilić-Sotiroska, PhD
Mevludin Ibish, PhD
Emilija S. Canevska, PhD
Fehmi Ağca, PhD
Tarık Çakar, PhD
Andrej Stefanov, PhD
Bejtulla Demiri, PhD
Aleksandra P. Kujundziski, PhD
Hiqmet Kamberaj, PhD
Kire Sharlamanov, PhD
Aleksandar Anastasovski, PhD
Sedat Mahmudi, PhD
Isa Spahiu, PhD
Shener Bilalli, PhD
Violeta Madzova, PhD
Benjamin Shultz, PhD
Goran Bidjovski, PhD
Aleksandra Ristovska, M.Sc
Srdjan Mikik, M.Sc
Radmila Živanović, M.Sc
Neslihan Ademi, M.Sc
Sezen Ismail, M.Sc
Emin Idrizi, M.Sc
Vladimir Gjorgjieski, M.Sc
Visar Ramadani
Muhammed Erdem Isler
Ceneta Telak
Skofiar Kamberi
Aldin Kalač
Reyhan Izet
Tirana Ameti
İncinur Şabani
Sabina Alomerović
Kristina Veličkovska

SCIENTIFIC COMMITTEE

Ferid Muhic, (Professor Emeritus), Skopje, Macedonia
Ismail Kocayusufoglu, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Hasan Boynukara, PhD, Namik Kemal University, Tekirdag, Turkey
Ednan Arslan, PhD, Vienna University, Austria
Andrea Popescu, PhD, University of Bucharest, Bucharest, Romania
Ljubomir Drakulevski, PhD, University “Ss. Cyril and Methodius”, Skopje, Macedonia
Mevludin Ibish, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Nejat Tongur, PhD, Maltepe University, Istanbul, Turkey
Nazmi Maliqi, PhD, FON University, Skopje, Macedonia
Yıldırım Çevik, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Bahattin Acat, PhD, Eskişehir Osmangazi University, Turkey
Ivan Genov, PhD, Director at Science and Education Foundation, Bulgaria
Snezana Bilic Sotiroska, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Lidija Pecotic, PhD, Gestalt Psychotherapy Training Institute, Malta
Marika Basevska-Gjorgievska, PhD, University “St. Clement of Ohrid”, Bitola, Prilep, Macedonia
Ali Bajgora, PhD, European College of Kosovo, Kosovo
Fehmi Agca, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Tomi Treska, PhD, European University of Tirana, Albania
Tome Nenovski, PhD, University American College, Skopje, Macedonia
Aleksandar Jovanovski, PhD, University: St Clement Ohridski – Bitola, Macedonia
Dashmir Bërxulli, PhD, University of Prishtina, Kosovo
Tarik Cakir, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Hasan Korkut, PhD, International University of Sarajevo, Sarajevo, Bosnia and Herzegovina
Emilija Stoimenova-Canevska, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia
Aliriza Arenliu, PhD, University of Prishtina, Kosovo
Blagoja Spirkovski, PhD, FON University, Faculty of Economics, Skopje, Macedonia
Muhammed Ali PhD, International University of Sarajevo, Sarajevo, Bosnia and Herzegovina
Sener Bilali, PhD, International Balkan University, Skopje, Macedonia

HONORARY COMMITTEE

Prof. Dr. İsmail Kocayusufođlu, Rector of International Balkan University

Prof. Dr. Mahmut Ak, Rector of Istanbul University

Prof. Dr. Mehmet Karaca, Rector of Istanbul Technical University

Prof. Dr. M. Hasan G6nen, Rector of Eskiřehir Osmangazi University

Prof. Dr. Muzaffer Elmas, Rector of Sakarya University

Prof. Dr. Yener Y6r6k, Rector of Trakya University

Prof. Dr. Heinz W.Engl, University of Vienna

Prof. Dr. Y6cel Ođurlu, Rector of International University of Sarajevo

Prof. Dr. Naci G6ndođan, Rector of Anadolu University

Prof. Dr. Mustafa Aykaç, Rector of Kırklareli University

Prof. Dr. M. Emin Arat, Rector of Marmara University

Prof. Dr. Yusuf Ulcay, Rector of Uludađ University

Prof. Dr. Mahmut 6zer, Rector of B6lent Ecevit University

Prof. Dr. Suad Becirovic, Rector of International University of Novi Pazar

Prof. Dr. Vatan Karakaya, Rector of Ahi Evran University

Prof. Dr. Vullnet Ameti, Rector of State University of Tetovo

Prof. Dr. Ali Bajgora, Dean of European College of Kosovo

FOREWORD

The success story of the International Balkan University began in 2006. Recognizing more than 500 years of history between our nations, a group of intellectuals and academicians established the Foundation “ÜSKÜP”, which then founded the International Balkan University in the heart of Balkans, in Skopje. The vision of our founders traced the road in which IBU would rise as a cultural bridge between Macedonia, Balkans and Turkey and increase the level of quality of the education in the region.

With this mission in mind, IBU has focused on educating self-confident, multidimensional, socially responsible and globally competitive individuals who will take responsibility for the development and welfare of their societies.

The International Conference on Social Sciences and Humanities (ICSSH2016) is to bring together innovative academics and experts in the field of social sciences and humanities to a common forum. The primary goal of the conference is to promote research and developmental activities in Social Sciences and Humanities. Another goal is to promote scientific information interchange between scholars, researchers, developers and practitioners working all around the world. In this regard, I would like to extend my sincere gratitude to 16 partner universities and all participants from 13 different countries for making the ICSSH2016 a successful scientific event.

With an international scientific and board committee, ICSSH2016 will help in sharing knowledge, meeting people and will provide an intellectual and international friendship atmosphere. Different and important issues will be treated, analyzed and questioned in the debates organized in the conference.

ICSSH2016 is to be held in the city of Skopje, the heart of Balkans. Also known as the city of Stone Bridge (Vardar Bridge), Skopje has carried its rich history, culture, cuisine and art for centuries. Today, Skopje represents a real bridge between the different cultures, traditions and religions in the Balkans and a strong promotor of the harmonious and brotherly relations between the peoples of this region.

As this year we are celebrating the 10 th anniversary, the IBU family is motivated more than ever to give a boost to our growth and whole-heartedly accepts the challenge of becoming the most prestigious university in the region and beyond.

In the end, allow me to make a sincere call for engagement. In a time when our noble value of peace is at stake in the world, let us come together, inspire ourselves in courage and enthusiasm and, in one voice, send a joint message and promote our friendship, brotherhood and cooperation and contribute to a better tomorrow for all humanity.

Sincerely,

Prof. Dr. İsmail Kocayusufoğlu
Rector of International Balkan University

CONFERENCE PROCEEDINGS

INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES
“CHALLENGES: FROM DIVERSITY TO SYNERGY”

A STUDY FOR RAISING THE READING HABIT IN TURKEY: SHALL WE PLAY THE LIBRARIANSHIP GAME?

ASIYE K. YILDIZ *

Abstract: Reading habit and using library are not individual, but they are also taken into account as a criteria of social development; it is widely accepted that there is an important relationship between the interest in reading and welfare. When the Turkish reading and using library habit indicators are analysed, it is possible to say that this issue is kept up to date as a problem. The goal of this study is to emphasize the necessity of the establishment of preschool libraries for implementing the reading culture in Turkey and turning the act of reading a habit by implementing the concept of book and library in the minds of preschool children, underlining that the reading activity should be started from preschool children. Also, in this study to help the preschool children gain the reading culture, during the 55th Library Week, "Librarianship Game" will be explained by establishing a "Preschool Library" in a Preschool.

Key Word: Preschool, book, preschool library, reading habit, reading culture, librarianship game

1. Introduction

Reading habit and library use are not only individual, but they are also taken into account as a criteria of social development; it is widely accepted that there is an important relationship between the interest

* Asiye Kakirman Yıldız, Department of Information and Records Management, Marmara University, [akakirman@marmara.edu.tr]

in reading and welfare. When the Turkish reading and use habit indicators are analysed, it is possible to say that this issue is kept up to date as a problem.

In fact, the interest of Turks in library and reading seem quite high since the Ottomans (Erünsal, 2015). However, in the historical process, the lack of establishment of library use and reading habit prevented it to settle as a cultural aspect.

But, the issue of education is among the major agenda items in Turkey, as in the whole world and, required legal arrangements have been made by the Ministry of Education and the government, especially to spread abroad the preschool education. Now, it is intended to develop and spread a reading habit based on the culture with an educated reader fundamental throughout the country. However, to achieve this goal certain important revisions need to be done in the current structure. The most fundamental revision is to convert the preschool “reading corner” that helps the children to interact with reading to a “Preschool Library”. The most effective way, child – book interaction, for the process of turning into a reading society and raising an individual with the reading culture should be showed starting from the early years of life. That is why, in the preschool institutions, “Preschool Library” must be established. The library is one of the important fundamental social institutions that have an important role in the culture transfer. Also, there is a relation between reading abilities and library use habit. The more habit of library use is progresses, the more the society will produce knowledge.

2. The Reading Habits of the Families

Books are the most basic tools to support the language, psychological-cognitive and social-emotional development of the children between 3-6 years old which is pedagogically the most productive period in the development of perception and skills. The very first centre that makes the child friends with the book is naturally the family.

However, according to the research results, it is seen that the family who needs to be the role model for the child to acquire a reading habit does not fulfil the task sufficiently. According to the results, %50 of the families do not own a common library in their houses. It is also seen that the same percentage of the parents does not have a reading habit and also do not follow any periodical publication. It appears that almost all of the families buy books for their children; they even have a library of their own. However, the fact that among the activities done while spending time with their children, even though watching television and drawing are listed high, reading not even being in the list is quite significant. According to the results mothers buy books more than the fathers, mothers do activities like drawing and painting while fathers watch television, the only common subject of mothers and fathers is unfortunately the fact that they have never gone to a library. Even, to the question in the survey "Do you think a preschool library is necessary?" it is seen that the answer "doesn't matter" has been selected highly.

Therefore, it is clear that in the society the reading habit development won't be through "from family to child, from child to society". In that case, for this habit to be implemented as a culture "from school to child, from child to society" plan must be executed. For this, "Preschool Libraries" must be established to embed the concept of book and library in the preschool period children minds (Kakirman Yıldız, 2015).

3. Preschool Library

Reading habit is gained during childhood. Children books can make the child love firstly the book then, reading. One of the biggest and the most important characteristics is the fact that it opens the doors to the book world for the children. Stimulated by the context, language and the pictures, children grow up as adults who love reading and become book-friendly. Without noticing, the child gains the aesthetics and meaning abilities such as the colours, shapes, lines and harmony (Saçkesen, 2008).

A qualified preschool library equips the children with lifelong learning and literacy abilities and helps the children to be effective and active in the society. The children supported to use the library from

the early ages will high likely stay as library users in the future years (IFLA, 2). Researches show that, following appropriate programs can improve the reading habit. In an observation done on this subject, when a group of children made to exchange books with each other, it was observed that the reading habit improves. It is seen that there is a difference between reading a book advised by the teacher and advised given by a friend. During these kinds of interactions between children, it is estimated that certain group dynamics increase the positive attitude towards reading (Dökmen, 1994).

The environment created by the preschool libraries will adorn the children's lives, change their point of view towards the world and will help them be a good book reader in the future by making them encounter good literature examples (Çakmak Güleç, 2014). The libraries that will be established in the preschool institutions will help showing sensitivity towards children's literature and childhood studies. Preschool libraries will contribute to the increase in the children's literature publications and the quality.

In the program currently applied in preschool institutions for preschool education prepared by the Ministry of Education, it is seen that the concept "flexibility" which is one of the basic principles of the program is quite important for preschool children. During the flow of the daily education, depending on the attention and the curiosity of the children the ability of the teacher to add new activities in the course is defined as flexibility. In this context, when applying the daily flow of the program, teachers resolving the curiosity of the children because of the quick change in the children's attention and curiosity are qualified as "Opportunity Education". It is a known fact that the fast learning is done according to the interests and curiosity of preschool children, which is in fact opportunity education. To improve all the areas of improvement (social-emotional, cognitive, language, etc.) the teacher tries to satisfy the interest / curiosity of the child with a written, visual or auditory source related to the subject.

This is why the teacher needs to be able to reach the sources regarding different subjects which are why the only centre that can help the teacher is preschool libraries. However, there are no libraries in pre-

schools to provide these sources for the children. It is supposed that the book corners created in classes are not sufficient for these needs.

4. Preschool Education in Turkey

Preschool in our country is unfortunately not in the scope of compulsory education. However, at least the year before primary school and kindergarten period is in the scope of government supported education and preferred by most of the families. Consequently, with providing access for the preschool children to libraries will be an important opportunity to equalize the academic development indicators and decrease the structural fragilities.

Preschool years is the most appropriate stage to stimulate the child's interest in reading (Yavuzer, 1997). Children should have the possibility to examine the books of their own liking and reading parts of books then leaving the rest to the children's imagination should be tried. Opportunities like completing a half completed text, sharing a book with a friend should be given to the child. Children should be encouraged to talk about the book of their choice and the books read in class (Sinar Çilgin, 2006).

JSHS|13

Not every child has the equal opportunities during preschool years. That is why, it is foreseen that the high quality education provided in the preschools supported by the government will close the gap between different socio-cultural children and with preschool libraries, the reading culture in the country project will be implemented. It is advised that the Ministry of Education should do activities concerning this subject and to make the reading habit a cultural aspect "Preschool Libraries" are advised to be established. For the children that are from different socio-economic environments and not raised in a house with a reading culture, opportunities supported by the government should be provided such as the establishment of preschool libraries for preschool education to implement the library aspect in their minds, which maybe will be the first time they will encounter one.

5. Shall We Play The Librarianship Game?

In Turkey, every last week of March is celebrated as "library week". In the scope of this celebration both academics and practitioners

gather together and a number of studies and activities are done about library use and reading habits in Turkey.

One of these activities is the project, which was indicated with its outlines, of the establishment of “Preschool Libraries” in the preschool education institutions which is planned to be brought to life with the purpose of increasing the reading habits in Turkey. First pilot study has been executed in a Private Preschool.

Primarily a presentation has been done to children regarding the books and library and subjects such as how libraries are used, how to behave in a library and what books tell us have been explained.

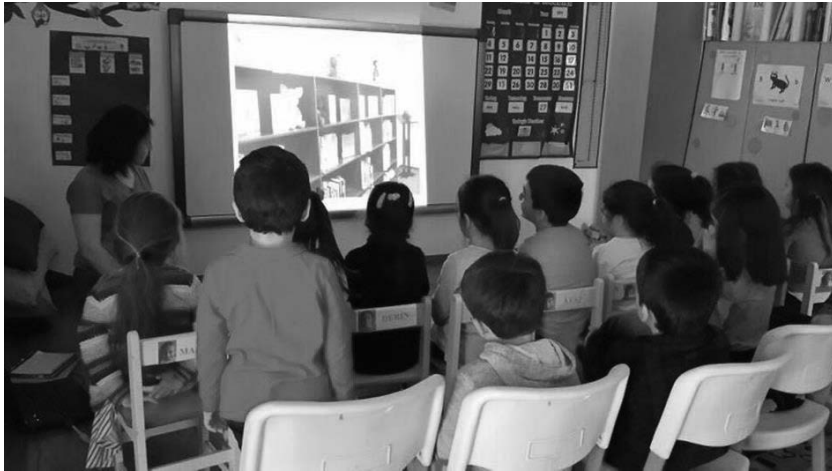


Figure 1 – While The Children Are Watching The Library Presentation

After the presentation, books from the various places of the school and the classes are gathered and a Preschool Library has been created together with the children. The most supportive act was from the children that have brought books from their houses.



Figure 2 – During The Establishment of Preschool Library

After we have established the library, “Librarianship Game” has been played to explain and teach the children how to benefit from the library. Firstly, a library membership system has been created and for this a library card and a bookmark saying “my best friend is a book” have been prepared. After designing the cards and the bookmarks themselves, the children have borrowed publications of their choice with these card from the library.

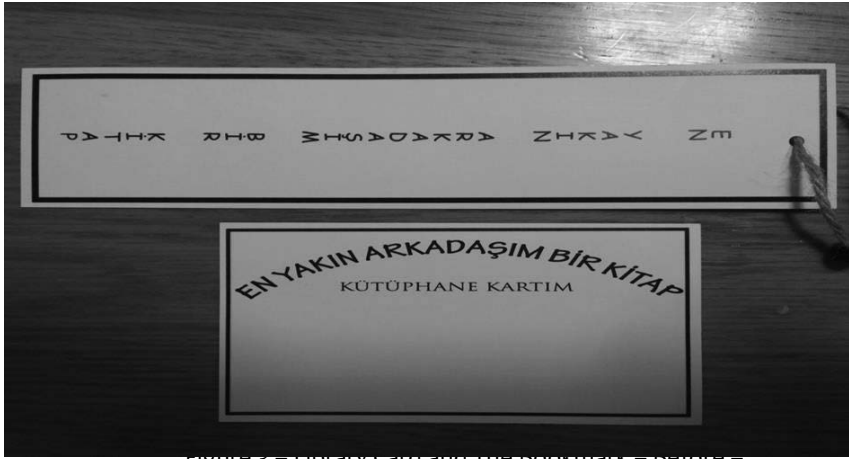


Figure 3 – Library Card and the bookmark – before –



Figure 4 – Children Are Doing Their Own Designs



Figure 5 - Library Card and The Bookmark – After-



Figure 6 – Children Are Borrowing Publications With Their Membership Cards

After this project has been implemented, in the minds of preschool students at the age between 3 – 6 years “library” perceptions and “librarianship” profession have been formed. In this school which every Thursday is the “book day” students can borrow books from the preschool library if they wish. Also, children that bring their own books from their houses to share them have at least the perception of book, library and reading habit.

Conclusion

The structure of a country's education should be to organize education infrastructure starting from preschool education rather than having the goal of making the schooling ratio 100% or providing education to the country children. The first step to make for this purpose is to implement the "Preschool Library" project to be able to raise the generation with implemented reading habits.

Library services for children should be as important as the adult library services. Preschool libraries should satisfy the children's needs of the knowledge, culture and entertainment by (IFLA, s.11):

- Lending various materials
- Providing information and counselling services
- Helping the children with the material selection
- Including the children during process of material selection and the improvement of the library services
- Giving education regarding library use and information literacy
- Stimulating activities
- Providing services of creative programs and story reading.

References

- Bayram, S. (2001). Türkiye'de Kitap Okuma Alışkanlığı. İstanbul Ticaret Odası Yayınları, İstanbul.
- Çakmak Güleç, H. Ve Geçgel, H. (2014). Çocuk Edebiyatı Okul Öncesinde Edebiyat Ve Kitap. Kriter Yayıncılık, İstanbul.
- Dökmen, Ü. (1994). Okuma Becerisi, İlgisi Ve Alışkanlığı Üzerine Psiko- Sosyal Bir Araştırma. Milli Eğitim Basımevi, İstanbul.
- Erünsal, İ. (2015). Osmanlılarda Kütüphaneler Ve Kütüphanecilik, Timaş Yayınları, İstanbul.
- <http://www.ifla.org/files/assets/hq/publications/professional-report/100-tr.pdf>. "Guidelines For Library Services To Babies And Toddlers", International Federation Of Library Associations And Institutions, Ifla Professional Report 100.
- Gündüz Sağlam, A. (2007). Anne – Baba Ve Öğretmenlerin Okul Öncesi Çocuk Kitaplarını Değerlendirmesi, (Yayımlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Afyon Kocatepe Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Afyon.

- Güvenli, G. and Ak Akyol, F. (2014). "Zoraki Bir İlişki: Kitap Ve Dergi Okuma Alışkanlıkları". 23 Nisan TRT Uluslararası Çocuk Ve Medya Kongresi 16- 18 Nisan 2013 İçinde. p. 97- 117, TRT Eğitim Dairesi Başkanlığı Yayınları, Ankara.
- Kakırman Yıldız, A. (2015). "Türkiye'de Okuma Alışkanlığı Kültürü İçin Okul Öncesi Eğitim Kurumlarında Anaokulu Kütüphanelerinin Gerekliliği - Necessity Of Pre-school Library In Preschool Education Institutions For The Reading Habits Culture In Turkey" Milli Eğitim Dergisi.
- Mol, S. And Adriane G. B. (2011) "To Read Or Not To Read: A Meta-Analysis Of Print Exposure From Infancy To Early Adulthood", [Http://www.Ncbi.Nlm.Nih.Gov/Pubmed/ 21219054](http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/21219054).
- Sınar Çılgın, A. (2006). "Çocuğa Büyülü Bir Dünyanın Kapılarını Açmak", Milli Eğitim Dergisi, 172: 175-182
- Sınar Çılgın, A. (2007). Çocuk Edebiyatı, Morpa Yayınları, İstanbul.
- Veryeri Alaca, I. (2013). "0-5 Yaş Çocuk Ve Ailelerine Yönelik Devlet Destekli Dil Gelişimi Stratejileri, Medya Ve Okuma Kültürü Projeleri" I. Türkiye Çocuk Ve Medya Kongresi Bildiriler Kitabı İçinde, Çocuk Vakfı Yayınları, İstanbul, p.335-370
- Wade, B. and Moore, M. (1998). "An Early Start With Books: Literacy And Mathematical Evidence From A Longitudinal Study", Educational Review, 50 (2) : 135-145
- Yavuzer, H. (1997). Ana – Baba Ve Çocuk. Remzi Kitabevi, İstanbul.

MINIMUM INCOME SUPPORT POLICIES IN SOUTHERN EUROPEAN WELFARE REGIMES AND ITS APPLICABILITY IN TURKEY

BILAL AKYOL *

Abstract: Defined as the condition whereby individuals fail to meet their basic needs, the age-old problem of poverty has changed in quality with the Neo-Liberal economic policies put into practice during the Industrial Revolution and 1980s. Thus, the focus of international efforts fight against poverty shifted attention to “rights”, giving rise to policies of minimum income support in many parts of the world, primarily the EU countries. In Turkey, however, the fight against poverty still continues to have traditional methods, with poverty aids in the hands of the ruling class, and far from a rights-based understanding. Although Turkey has policies similar in nature to the policy of minimum income support, these are highly inadequate as the distribution of such aids to those in need falls largely within the initiative of government officials, and due to the large scale of informal economy. This study compares the minimum income support policies of Southern European Welfare Regime countries, who share certain characteristics with Turkey, to the policies of fight against poverty already in practice in Turkey. The study refers to written primary and secondary sources of data on the issue, and uses the methods of descriptive and comparative analyses.

Key Word: Minimum income support, basic income, poverty

* Kırklareli University, Social Sciences Vocational School,
[bilalakyol@klu.edu.tr]

1. Minimum Income Support

Poverty, a fact looked for a remedy since the early days of humanity, is a case which people cannot meet their basic needs. Before the formation of the modern state mechanisms, the fight against poverty was usually made through social solidarity or religious institutions. For the problem of poverty that was tried to find a solution more with the mercy of charitable, it began to be mostly discussed that that this problem had to be solved within the framework of “right” since the 16th century. With the efforts of humanists who call political officials to take responsibility in this issue with welfare measures instead of abandoning the poor in mercy of benevolent, several regulations have been implemented and these arrangements have come to the present day in developing according to changing conditions (Bugra, 2015: pp.12). The first comprehensive and systematic proposal in providing cash income support to the poor was raised in the book of “Rights of Man” by Thomas Paine in 1791. This proposal became an important premise for the proponents of minimum income support that will be done as a civil right in the next centuries to the poor, not in the form of alms. According to this view, the set of rights-based legal arrangements that which people can take decisions related to their own lives with their free will, instead of public aid s in the form of alms that they take insulting by officials, feeding from door of the rich, and getting the support of their relatives, form the basis of system of democratic values (Bugra and et al., 2012).

Minimum Income Support, one of the rights-based legal arrangements, is applied by the regular transfer of cash from public sources for citizens whose incomes are below a certain level today. The presence of different economic, political and cultural approaches in the implementation s related to Minimum Income Support makes difficult to be made a common definition. Minimum Income Support is described as “cash transfers” which are regularly transferred to all citizens who are under a certain predetermined income level from public sources and can be granted depending on the condition to work for the benefit of society from time to time or to continue a training program and of which purpose is to boost the poor citizens above a minimum living level accepted by society (Coskun and et al., 2011).

Especially in the Countries of European Union; it is implemented in many countries such as United States, Brazil, South Korea, South Africa, and Japan in different ways and it is names in such different ways as “Basic Income”, “Negative Income Tax”, and “Subsistence Level Income Support”.

1.1. Minimum Income Types

Depending on their implementation shapes; Minimum Income is divided into two as “Unrequited Models”, which does not depend on any condition, and “Mutually Models”, which is granted depending on some conditions.

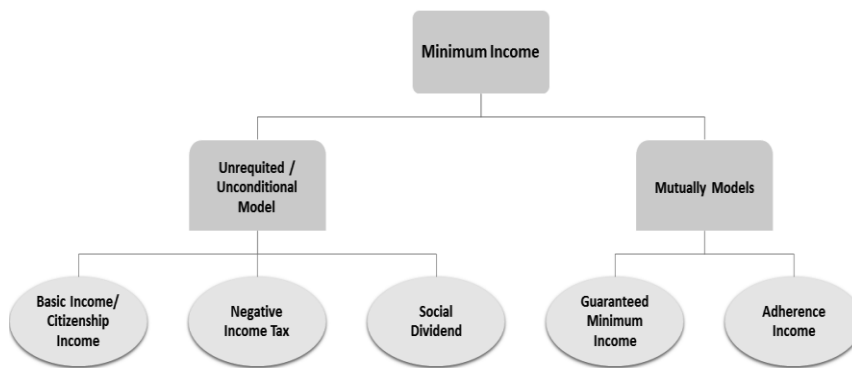


Figure 1: Minimum Income Types

Reference: Karaaslan, İ (2014) “Avrupa Birliği’nde İstihdam Odaklı Asgari Gelir Desteği Ve Türkiye’nin Uyumu, Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation, İstanbul University

In the Unrequited / Unconditional Model, the person is not obliged to work in exchange for this income support, and the person may not subject to any income test to qualify for the minimum income support. Every citizen is assigned to an unconditional income in an amount that he can sustain life, and the parties in the middle class and the rich whose income level is above average are enforced to

income tax. By the assigning of income, all the other social rights financed from social security premiums are eliminated. Income of citizenship is a type of income that has emerged to eliminate humiliation and consolidate the people's feelings of citizenship and identity. The implementation of Negative Income Tax is the support of citizens who live under a certain income by the taxes collected from those having higher income level. Additionally, in the practice of "Social Dividend" as another "Unrequited Model", natural resources that the country has are the common property of all society, and the state should give a share to individuals from the income that it earns after the sale and the lease of these natural resources (Karaaslan, 2014).

Mutual Models are an implementation which income is guaranteed under a working and also which a person is subjected to an income test to qualify for the minimum income support. Individuals have to work in a business ordered by the state and to participate in vocational training programs in this system (Karaaslan, 2014).

2. Implementations of Minimum Income Support In the Welfare Regime of Southern European and Similar Implementations In Turkey

2.1. The Welfare Regime of Southern European

Although the social model and social policy of Europe have common features, it is found significant differences between the models of capitalism and welfare state. It has been done several classifications related to the models of Social Welfare State and the social policy practices. It can be said that these classifications have been carried out by Esping Andersen, Albert, Coates, Leibfried, and Adnett (Celik, 2014: pp.62-63).

While "the Southern Europe Welfare Model" under this study is called as "Latin Environment Model" by Leibfried, this is a model in which social conditions are inadequate, because the institutional structure of the welfare state, which the labor market is mainly agriculture and the structure of traditional welfare services and family solidarity continues, is not adequate. Italy, Spain, Portugal and Greece are the countries where constitute this model. Adnett, with the classification that he made in 1996, named this model as "Traditional Underdeveloped Model" and determined that the state is inadequate to regulate labor markets and to ensure fair income distribution and also family

economy and agricultural production are dominant (Celik, 2014: pp.64-65).

The most prominent feature of “the Southern Europe Welfare Model” is the tight and effective relations of family and relatives in the framework of market-state-family trio. While “family” is almost the carrier element of this model alone, it alleviates the burden of the state in the field of social policy at the level of informal sector almost in all modern and traditional problems (unemployment, poverty, social exclusion, protection of those in need –the old, child, disabled). It is another feature of the model that social protection network becomes very fragmented and inadequate. In particular, the dual distinction on social insurance and no-premium payments, the intensively fulfillment of social welfare and services by family, charities, and religious institutions, the less amount of social aids, the absence of a national social protection, and the gap and clutter in the net of protection are the elements that determine the structure of this network. Additionally, it attracts attention as other elements characterizing and affecting another two determinative features in mention that the political culture and labor sector are different according to the Western countries. These countries covered by the Welfare Regime are the countries which have the highest poverty rates in the European Union. Social aids are generally administered by local administrations. The prerequisite of benefitting from welfare programs is the condition of residence in the country’s borders in a certain period, and the aid amount is below the average of the European Union (Gunal, 2010).

JSHS|25

These countries can be described as a social welfare state rather than a state. Because the prevalence of unrecorded economy in these countries, in addition to favoritism, partisanship, and partisan attitudes, increases social spending and leads to the failure of these countries in the area of social policy (Gumus and et al., 2013).

Spain, Italy and Portugal, because of the narrow-scoped situation in social welfare policies and the variety in their regional practices, show common features as non-stable countries in their systems of minimum income support. Both the formation and implementation of

policy in these countries are carried out by local bodies (Erdem, 2006).

2.2. Minimum Income Support Practices in the Welfare Regime of the South Europe

Social policy practices in Turkey are similar to the Welfare Regime of the South Europe because of both the narrow-scoped situation of social aid policies and the weight of traditional aid procedures as well as family solidarity. Therefore, this study examines the practices in the countries under the Welfare Regime of the South Europe and then focus on the practices similar to the minimum income support in Turkey

2.2.1. Portugal: Transition from the Local Arrangements to National Arrangements

When compared with the other European countries, the social security system of Portugal is not a serious tradition historically. Portugal was not a social security system until the regulation of a national social security law (Lei de Bases da Sedurença Social 28/84) in the country in 1984. In similar to Italy, the implementation of a minimum income support to ensure a social integration (RMG) (Rendimento Minimo Garantido) was moved from local regimes to national level in 1996. The implementation contains people above 17 years of age and families matching economic situation fixation. The aid systems in which the amount or form of minimum income is left to the initiative of decision-maker have been protected by this new implementation, and with this system, social aids have become a general and fundamental right across the country. RMG contains business agreements toward ensuring social integration such as the systems in France and Spain. It can be given such obligatory duties as attending the courses beneficial for themselves, looking for a job, and sending their children to school for those who receive aid. Additionally, social welfare regime of the country is successful to be able to ensure the cooperation of the labor market, which promotes the social inclusions of people who receive aid, and non-governmental organizations as well. Depending on the amplitude of conditions that are demanded for receiving aid, the system could have been only for people who are in extreme poverty. As a majority of 71% of those who receive aid consists

of women who seek for help to support her family. The implementation fits for an income level below minimum social security pension costs. Accordingly, there is an implementation that is 100% of the minimum pension costs for families consisting of two adults, 70% of the same costs for families consisting of more three adults in addition, and as plus, the sum of 50% of costs for every child (Bugra, 2014). The amount of aids is usually much less; it corresponds to a low proportion of total resources of the persons. It is seen that the central state takes the responsibility in recent years and does more work to increase the effectiveness of the aids (particularly increasing the target group with the amount of aid) (Erdem, 2006).

2.2.2. Italy: Minimum Income as a Last Resort Implementation

Social security in Italy is defined on family just as in Turkey. It is projected that solidarity networks inside the family protects individual and it provides supports in difficult times. Social security system has also been constructed through this social structure (Sener, 2010). Italy is one of the rare European countries which has still not a universal program to combat social exclusion. Its welfare regime is based on a parted and split basis. The management of minimum income support implementation has been given under the responsibility of the municipalities which take the necessary resources directly from the Ministry of Labor and Social Policy. Individuals who benefit from the implementation are Italian or other EU citizens who reside in one of the municipalities under the implementation for 12 months in minimum. Also the people who are the nationals of non-EU countries or not under any country's nationality are eligible to benefit from the implementation on providing that reside in one of the municipalities under the implementation for 3 years at least. Those who are unemployed despite being able to work in the age of working are obliged to attend to vocational training courses and accept job offers. Minimum income support in Italy entered into force with the budget law of 1998 and was defined as (RMI - Reddito Minimo d'Inserimento) "economic and social support mechanisms of persons who carry social marginalization risk and are unable to protect and keep up themselves or people who they have because of psychological, physical, and social reasons to fight for poverty and social exclusion". Aids are given for a year, and if the proof of continuation of need is

offered, this period may be extended later. RMI is a last resort implementation because it targets at the people who cannot take any support from other social aid mechanisms. It is the condition of being able to take help that economic resource constraints of candidate people are to be evidenced by economic detection of status. As seen in other welfare regimes that take the family into the center, the person's seek of help can be rejected in case of household member who requests help is any relative of him who has a legal responsibility against himself. It constitutes negative aspects of aids that aids address to specific target groups, they are generally given for certain periods of time, they become generous, and their qualification is determined by discretion of decision-makers (Erdem, 2006).

2.2.3. Spain: Minimum Income Implementation at the Regional Level

In the past there was not any stable working life and regular job, but the poor who were able to work and the people who were excluded from the labor market had the right to receive aid from the Spanish social security system. The minimum income systems of the country are carried out in the regional level in terms of both the formation and implementation of policy. The most important examples of them are Ingresos Minimos de Insercion and Renta Minima de Insercion (or Salario Social). The legal infrastructure of these implementations was put on in 1989 by the Catalan Government and in 1995 by the Basque. In some areas, while aids were implemented as a social right, the regional governments usually constituted aid systems of which terms were determined by them. Although the duration of income support is one year, the duration may be renewed if the need continues. In the system people between 25-65 years of age are located, but the heads of households with children under 25 years of age or the disabled dependent form the exception to this condition. In exchange for help, as it can be predicted the forced labor and responsibilities to increase the objective of social integration, it can be also paid regard to participate in the active labor market programs in the formation of searching job, developing skills, and benefitting from the training programs. Spain has put the minimum income policies into practice almost across the country among the South European countries; even if it is a single country, this type of social aid spending is still the lowest share of Gross National Product (Erdem, 2006).

2.2.4. Greece: An Newly-Emerging Implementation

While the basic income support implementation in Greece has been the subject of debate since 2000, it firstly started in the thirteen regions selected as a pilot area in a structure designed by the World Bank in November 2014. In the studies conducted by the World Bank, the cost of the minimum income support implementation for the country's economy has been calculated to be 0.5% of GDP. From January 2015 until August 2015, it was made aid €200 for single person, €100 for spouse if there is, €50 for little child if there is, and additively €100 for that child if there is an adult dependent child among from the aids from which 1.2 million of people benefit. In addition to this cash help, there are also non-monetary components including warm support, food vouchers, subsidized employment, and training programs. However, the burden of income support in this project has been on the shoulders of local authorities more, and they could have taken very limited support from the central government (Laterza, 2015).

2.3. Social Policy Implementations Similar to Minimum Income Support in Turkey

JSHS|29

The social security system in Turkey is basically divided into two as contributory and non-contributory. When looked at the area of non-contributory social security system in Turkey in general, it is possible to mention about many social aid mechanisms that are implemented by General Directorate of Non-Contributory Payments of Social Security Administration (PÖGM), Social Services and Child Protection Agency (SHÇEK), the General Directorate of Foundations (VGM), the General Directorate of Social Assistance and Solidarity (SYDGM), and local foundations, and provincial and district municipalities. SYDGM distributes social aids by the hand of Social Assistance and Solidarity Foundation (SYDV) in the local areas, it carries out the implementations of the Conditional Cash Transfer, which are given on condition the children benefit from education and health services, and does financial transfers to primary education (E.g. It meets the costs related to the distribution of free school books in the primary education via the fund). PÖGM makes the allocation and payments of 65 years of age and disability pension, which is known as "2022

Maaşı/Pension of 2022” or “Üç Aylık/Quarterly” among the people. While SHÇEK conducts the control and distribution of home care pensions, the General Directorate of Foundations (VGM) basically operates with its public soup-kitchen and neediness pensions of which scope is very narrow. The provincial and district municipalities carry out the social aid activities that are usually in kind, different from each other, and irregular but are corresponding to serious rates in financial (Çakar and et al., 2009). Moreover, the Unemployment Insurance, which is granted under the contributory social security system, can be considered as a kind of Minimum Income Support.

We can categorize non-contributory social security payments implemented in Turkey in Table 1.

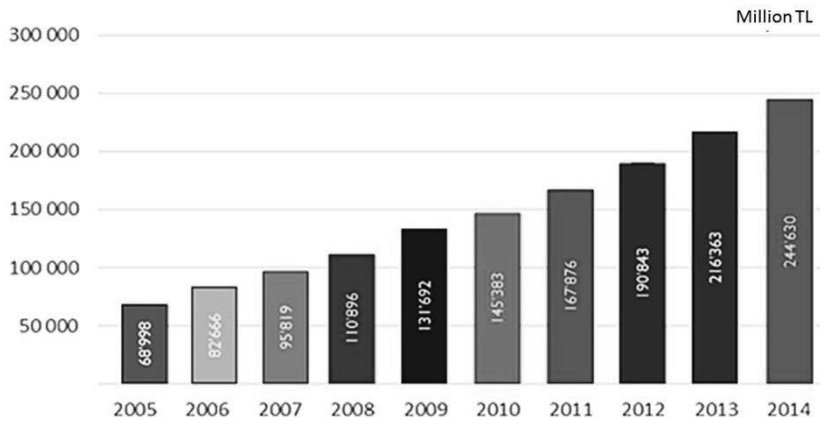
Family Benefits	Training Benefits	Health Benefits	Special Purpose Benefits	Aged and Disabled Benefits	Employment Benefits	Project Supports
	Training Material Assistance					
Food Assistance	Conditional Training Assistance					
Housing Assistance	Lunches Assistance			2022 Elderly People Assistance		
Social Housing Project	Free Textbooks	Disabled Needs Assistance		2022 Disability Assistance		Income Generating Project Supports
Coal Assistance	Making Student Hostel	Conditional Health Assistance	Soup Kitchens	2022 Assistance for disabled's relative		Social Service Projects
Widow Assistance	Student Transportation on Housing Subsidence Assistance	General Health Insurance Determination of Income and Premium Support	Family Assistance	2022 Sclerosis Assistance	Orientation Job Assistance	Employment Training Projects
Assistance to Military Families in Need	Free Carriage of Disabled Students		Assistance to Foreign Nationals	Home care Assistance	Work Commencement Assistance	Social Support Projects in Rural Areas

Table 1: Non-Contributory Social Security Payments Implemented In Turkey

2.4. Annual Social Expenditures in Turkey

However Neo-Liberal economic policies, which was put into practice since 1980's, USA at the first, in many countries of the world, have dominated the view on the state minimizes public spending to aim at increasing social welfare with the boost of production and employment, Social Policy spending has reversely continued increasing while the share of the Public decreases in economy. It is possible to face with this example also in Turkey. It is shown in Chart 1 the Social Expenditure Statistics of Public Sector between the years 2006-2015. As it can be seen from Figure 2, Social Expenditures have showed an increase of approximately 485% from 2006 until the end of 2015. As for the Social Protection Expenditures have increased almost by 485%. The rate of Social Expenditures to GDP has increased from 14.5% to 19%. There has been an approximately 13.60-fold-increase in non-contributory pensions during the same period.

Chart 1: The Social Expenditure Statistics of Public Sector



Conclusion

Today in some countries inside or outside European Union, poverty has not been seen as an individual misfortune, and moving from this idea, Minimum Income Support has been put into practice as a responsibility of the state to struggle with poverty. However, in Turkey, it is seen to exist an approach that brings the aids for the poor in a matter of conscience based on the principle of self-determination to fight for poverty and takes it under the responsibility of the people with the emphasis of philanthropy/volunteerism. So, the delivery of resources, left for struggle with poverty in Turkey to those in need, is formatted more according to the circumstance of opinion leaders or government officials rather than an approach based on “right”, and this condition brings a lot of problem such as exclusion especially (Koca, 2015).

The fact of poverty, which also became a big problem of the working people by the Industrial Revolution, has come to be a social problem, not only personally. The perspective on this issue should be changed to solve this problem, and the struggle with poverty should be maintained as the axis of “right”.

The fight against poverty, not excluding these parts of people or not building high walls and cameras on vital areas, should be carried out giving the rights from the country’s resources for them also. In this way, both social exclusion can be prevented and such many problems as robbery and murdering can be hindered. This will lead to minimization of security and infrastructural spending. The instruments for fighting against poverty, which are implemented in Turkey, has taken a very diverse state. With this state of it, it is not possible to control it from a single point, fix the real needy people to distribute aids, and distribute them in an effective way. Favoritism and partisan treatment, which are a common feature of the Welfare Regime of the Southern European Countries, are also one of the significant problem of our Country (Turkey), unfortunately. These conditions prevent the delivery of aids to the real needy. Besides, the apply or benefit for this kind of aids causes to social exclusion. Because of all these reasons, we offer that Minimum Income Support should be given as a unique type of aid and an income of citizenship, instead of all these aids for

the poor which are implemented in Turkey, without regarding any income test or application condition. In this way, by this income support that everybody benefits, it can be prevented social exclusion, favoritism, and partisan treatment. This aid will be taken back from those whose income is above a certain level via progressive income tax, besides.

References

- Buğra, A. (2015). Kapitalizm, Yoksulluk ve Türkiye'de Sosyal Politika. İstanbul: İletişim Publications
- Buğra, A.,Keyder,Ç. (2012). Bir Temel Hak Olarak Vatandaşlık Gelirine Doğru. İstanbul: İletişim Publications.
- Coşkun, S., Güneş, S., & Ortakaya, F. (2011). Asgari Gelir Desteği ve Türkiye'de Uygulanabilirliği: Bir Model Denemesi. Gazi Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi, Volume 13, Issue 3, pp 129-158.
- Çakar, B. Y., & Yılmaz, V. (2009, Ocak-Nisan). Sınıf ve Vatandaşlık Ekseninde Türkiye'de Sosyal Yardımı Yeniden Düşünmek. Toplum ve Demokrasi, Volume 3 Issue 5, January-April 2009, pp 27-38.
- Çelik, A. (2014). Avrupa Birliği Sosyal Politikası ve Türkiye. İstanbul: Kitap Publications.
- Erdem, I. (2006). Avrupa'da Asgari Gelir Uygulamaları. İstanbul: Boğaziçi Üniversitesi Sosyal Politika Forumu, Research Papers, İstanbul
- Gümüş, İ., & Tatlıyer, M. (2013). Güney Avrupa Refah Rejimi'nin Borç Krizi. İş Ahlakı Dergisi, Volume 6 Issue1, May 2013 pp 1-37
- Günel, P. (2010). Avrupa Birliği'nin Güney Avrupa Sosyal Devlet Modeline Etkisi: İspanya Örneği. Yardım ve Dayanışma, pp 81-95 <http://www.acarindex.com/dosyalar/makale/acarindex-1423938566.pdf> Access : 12.09.2016
- Karaaslan, İ (2014) "Avrupa Birliği'nde İstihdam Odaklı Asgari Gelir Desteği Ve Türkiye'nin Uyumu, Unpublished Doctoral Dissertation, İstanbul University
- Koca, M. (2015,). Sosyal Dışlanma Sorunu Ve Asgari Gelir Desteğinin Gerekliliği. Uluslararası Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi, Volume: 8 Issue: 39, August2015, pp501-510.
- Laterza, V. (2015, 08 22). GREECE: Government to roll out a Guaranteed Minimum Income scheme. <http://www.basicincome.org/news/2015/08/greecegovernment-to-roll-out-a-guaranteed-minimum-income-scheme/> Access: 27.12.2015

IDEOLGY AND THE TRANSMİSSİON OF
THE CULTURAL ELEMENTS TO THE TARGET LANGUAGE
BY THE LİTERARY TRANSLATION: AN ANALYSİS ON
FORTY FOUR TURKİSH FAIRYTALES

BURCU TÜRKMEN *

Abstract: The aim of this study is to indicate how the cultural elements and ideology of the author/translator of a literary text is transmitted into the target text by explaining certain language usages in “Fourty Four Turkish Fairy Tales” of Hungarian Turkologist Ignac Kunos. In this sense, fundamental principles of Lefevere, the elements of Newmark inspired from Nida, and the norms of Toury are considered in this study. In the light of these principles and theories, the relation between literary texts and ideology of the translator are discussed.

Key Word: translation studies, literary translation, culture, ideology.

1. Introduction

Translation is not an independent field of language or transmission. It is important to have background about the target and source languages and cultures while translating the texts from one language into another. The translator or interpreter of the texts should have the knowledge and skills to transmit the cultural and sociological elements into target languages and cultures. In this concern, the no-

* Bulent Ecevit University, [burcuturkmen@beun.edu.tr]

tion of ideology has a substantial part in the translation process of any text. In literature, the authors of the texts use the impressive words while in the process of creating them in order to have impression on a wide intended population. Thus, the words and utterances of the authors reflect the ideology of them. Ideology of the publishing house or editors and etc. has importance as well as the authors' after the writing process.

Some of the parts of certain fairy tales from "*Forty Four Turkish Fairy tales*" written by *Ignac Kunos* will be analysed by the discourse analysis method from the point of ideology dimension of the translation. In the first section of the study, general description of the notion of "*ideology*" is given. In the second section of the study, depending on the fundamental principles of Lefevere, the elements of Newmark inspired from Nida, and the norms of Toury, information about transmission of cultural elements and ideology of the author and the translator/interpreter will be provided. In the third section, information about the biography of Hungarian Turcologist and author Ignac Kunos is provided. In the same section, the focus is on the meanings and the usages reflected to the Turkish translation of cultural elements in the certain fairytales of Ignac Kunos, "*Fear, Three Orange Peris, The Rose-Beauty, The Magic Turban, The Magic Whip and The Magic Carpet, The Black Dragon and The Red Dragon*" from "*Forty Four Turkish Fairy tales*" by the help of discourse analysis method.

2. Transmission of ideology via translation

In this section of the study, at first, ideology is described in different forms. Secondly the general information about ideological texts is indicated. In this concern, the ideology in translation and the transmission of the ideology via translated texts are given. Thirdly, the three basic steps used in literary translation; interpretation, creation and editing of Lefevere, five cultural elements such as ecology, material culture, social culture, organizations customs, activities, procedures, concepts, gestures and habits of Newmark, and the norms of Toury are given in order to indicate the relation among literature and the literary translation and ideology of the translators.

1.1 About Ideology

Before describing the relation between translation and ideology, the translation of the cultural elements, different descriptions of the notion of ideology in different fields are indicated in this section. As a meaning of science of ideas, “ideology” concept was used by Destutt de Tracy at first. Tracy mentioned the “ideology” term in a conference in Institute de France in 1996 (Aktaş, 2012: 48).

The fundamental meaning of the ideology is described as “*whole thoughts of political, legal, scientific, philosophical, religious, moral, aesthetic directing the behaviours of a government or a party, establishing a political or social discipline*” in online TDK (Turkish Language Association) dictionary (tdk.gov.tr, 2016). On the other hand, in Merriam Webster online dictionary, “*ideology*” is described as 1 : *visionary theorizing*, 2 a: *a systematic body of concepts especially about human life or culture* b: *a manner or the content of thinking characteristic of an individual, group, or culture* c: *the integrated assertions, theories and aims that constitute a socio-political program* (merriam-webster.com, 2016).

 JSHS|37

In this concern, the literature is a field in which the ideological expression can be transmitted to the intended population. Even if it has an ideological aspect, literary expression does not reveal this, and presents the ideology in a refined way (Aktaş, 2012:48). Each of the messages has their own target group or population. Correspondingly, in order to transmit the necessary message(s) to the target groups, the translator or the interpreter of the texts should interpret them as well as the authors. Not all the texts should have an ideological messages or aims. As Alev Bulut indicated in her “Basından Örneklerle Çeviride İdeoloji İdeolojik Çeviri” (Ideology in Translation Ideological Translation with Examples of Media) book that “Each of the texts is ideological since they service for their own aims” (Bulut, 2008: 68), all the texts have aims to be written such as religious, generical and political.

1.2. Transmission of Cultural Elements into Translated Texts

1.2.1. Literary Translation

Before describing the transmission of the cultural elements and the texts translated into secondary languages, three different kinds of translation labelled by Roman Jakobson are indicated below:

1. Intralingual translations or *rewording* is an interpretation of verbal signs by means of other signs of the same language.
2. Interlingual translation or *translation proper* is an interpretation of verbal signs by means of some other language.
3. Intersemiotic translation or *transmutation* is an interpretation of verbal signs by means of signs of nonverbal sign systems (Jakobson, 2012: 127).

As Jakobson stated above, there are three different kinds of translation. However, the second one, "*interlingual translation*" in which a text translated from one language to another, is recalled generally.

Therefore, translations of literary texts have certain characteristics. In the scope of literary translation, prose/fiction (novels and stories), theatre, and poetry translations are concerned. Jim Meyer described what literature is in his study named "What is Literature" under the title of "A Literary Prototype" as below:

- . are written texts
- . are marked by careful use of language, including features such as creative metaphors, well-turned phrases, elegant syntax, rhyme, alliteration, meter
- . are in a literary genre (poetry, prose fiction, or drama)
- . are read aesthetically
- . are intended by the author to be read aesthetically
- . contain many weak implicatures (are deliberately somewhat open in interpretation) (Meyer, 1997:4).

Literary translation is known as reader/audience- oriented. According to Doğan, reader/audience- oriented translations require to consider certain elements such as the language of the reader, the culture, rhetoric, place and time to be transmitted to the readers/audiences (Doğan, 2014:88). In this concern, the literary translation is categorized into three types such as prose, poetry and theatre. Within this scope, especially the prose (novels/tales) translation is exemplified in this study through the sentences and utterances from “Forty Four Turkish Fairy Tales” by Ignac Kunos.

1.2.2. Transmission of Cultural Elements Based on Theories

The literary texts are not written for the scientific aims, and they do not include any scientific formulas or terminologies. They are generally lack of argumentative structures and concentrate on emotive meanings, idiomatic expressions, and figurative and connotative language. While translating the literary texts, certain problems related to the artistic language usage, linguistics, cultural words and concepts, differences about time, and the literary types and technics occur in the target texts as Aksoy indicated in her work of art (Aksoy, 2002:83).

JSHS|39

For the theoretical background of literary translation, the norms of Gideon Toury are mentioned in this study. These norms are classified as in three steps such as Initial norms, Preliminary norms, and Operational norms. Toury describes these norms as below:

1. preliminary norms, which decide the overall translation strategy and the choice of texts to be translated,
2. initial norms, which govern the translator’s decision to adhere primarily to the source text or to the target culture, and
3. operational norms, which control the actual decisions made during the act of translation (Toury, 1980: 55).

According to Toury, the norms are at a level between competence and performance. The norms of Toury make the translator/interpreter decide on approaching to whether target culture or source culture. At the beginning of the process of translation, the translator of the literary texts consider these norms as the transla-

tors of all kinds of texts, then he/she conceives the cultural factors in order to transfer the correct messages into the target culture.

In order not to have any problems during the process of the translation of source literary texts into target languages, the translators/interpreters should have the efficient knowledge about both of the languages and the cultures. Thus, the message of the source texts can be transmitted truly and in an effective way into the target language. In this context, the cultural factors in the literary texts by Peter Newmark are mentioned in this part of the study. These factors are given in an order as below.

1. Ecology: flora, fauna, winds, plains, hills, etc.,
2. Material culture: food, clothes, transport system, towns, cities, etc.,
3. Social culture: work and leisure
4. Organisations, customs, activities, procedures, political and administrative and religious concepts
5. Gestures and habits (Newmark, 1988: 95).

According to Newmark, certain methods can help to the translator/interpreter of the texts without losing the same effect of the source text with the target text, and keeping the artistic and functional characteristics of the source cultural texts from the view of functions in the target society, the translator decide for the methods of translation about how to transfer the cultural elements into the target language. These methods are organized as *literal translation*, *transference*, *adaptation*, *neutralization* or *functional equivalent*, *explanation* and *deletion* (Newmark, 1988: 81-91).

In another step for translation of the literary texts, the opinions of Andre Lefevere are considered. Lefevere takes a different approach to literary translation. According to Lefevere, as expressed by Aksoy, *translation is rewriting*. He determined this view firstly in article named as *Why Waste out Time on Rewrites* (1985), and then in his book named as *Rewriting and Manipulation of Literary Fame* (1992), he discussed this term multi-directionally. *Rewriting* means that the text is under the process in the same language or another language

for a certain aim such as translation, criticism, summary, adaptation for children, making TV film, and writing as a script. According to Lefevere, the large part of the cultural exchange occurs via rewritten texts rather than “originals” (Aksoy, 2002: 50-51).

All the rewritings reflects a certain ideology or intention when they are completed into the target language. According to Bassnet and Lefevere, rewriting is manipulation, undertaken in the service of power, and in its positive aspect can help in the evolution of a literature and a society. Rewritings can introduce new concepts, new genres, new devices and the history of translation is the history of literary innovation, of the shaping power of one culture upon another culture (Bassnet-Lefevere 1995:ix).

3. Forty four turkish fairytales by Ignac Kunos

3.1 Who is Ignac Kunos?

According to the information given at the beginning of “*44 TÜRK PERİ MASALI*”, the Turkish translation of the *FORTY FOUR TURKISH FAIRYTALES*, Kunos (1860-1945 Budapest- Hungary) was a Hungarian Turcolog, who studied on Turkish language, folk literature, and folklore. He was leading for introducing the Turkish folk literature to the Western countries. He was interested in Turkish language while he was student, and he learned Turkish. He travelled Anatolia for five years. When he went to his home, he began to publish his notes about Karagöz, theatre in the round, Nasreddin Hodja and certain traditions about Turks; then he became one of the most important names in Turcology (Yalçındağ, 2016: 5).

3.2 About Forty-Four Turkish Fairy tales

As it is stated in the preface of the book, this book is a kind of compilation of the forty-four tales/ stories about rich Turkish culture. Kunos wrote this book by listening the storytellers, who are important for the social life in Ottoman, and taking notes of them. This book is in the same category with the Eastern stories, which are kneaded with the Islam culture and has Muslim characters. The characters are wearing robes, the women characters are wearing turban (religious headscarf). Such costumes also indicate the orientalist views of the society in the stories (2016: 13).

3.3 Discourse analysis of the cultural elements of selected fairy tales

In this part of the study, chosen source text and the target text from Forty-Four Turkish Fairy Tales are analysed in the context of discourse analysis depending on the information presented above. Aforementioned book was written in English by Kunos in order to disseminate the information about Turkish culture and tales to other cultures and countries. In this concern, it is analysed whether there is the same effect of the source text in the target text or not when it is translated. Here the ideology of choosing words and usages of the translator has importance. If translation is accepted as rewriting, the question whether there is any difference between the texts written by original author and the translator or not will be answered in this study.

Source Text	Target Text
Forty Four Turkish Fairy Tales	44 Türk Peri Masalı

As it is seen above, the title of the book both in target and the source texts are same in terms of meaning and usage of the words. The unique difference between these two titles is the numbers. In Turkish translation "Forty Four" is written with numbers as "44". The translator, for only the design of the cover, may choose usage of the number. This is not a kind of usage, which indicates the ideological choice.

Source Text	Target Text
<p>Fear</p> <p>..."Someone is casting our ship to and fro, we are afraid." The youth, binding a rope round his body, dived to the bottom of the sea. There he discovered that the Daughter of the Sea (Deniz Kızı) was shaking the vessel. He fell upon her, flogged</p>	<p>Korku</p> <p>..."Suyun içinde bir şey gemimizi saga sola savuruyor, korkuyoruz!" deyince genç çocuk aradığının suyun altında olduğunu düşünüp hemen beline bir ip bağlayarak denize dalmış. Gemiye sallayanın bir denizkızı olduğunu gördüğünde hiç</p>

<p>her soundly, and drove her away. Then, appearing at the surface, he asked: "Is this fear?" Without awaiting an answer he swam back to the shore, dressed himself, and went his way...</p>	<p>çekinmeden üzerine atlamış ve bir süre boğuştuktan sonra, denizkızını oradan uzaklaştırmış. Yüzeyle ulaştığında ise kendi kendine "koru deney şey acaba bu mu?" diye sormaya başlamış tekrar. Cevap vermeden kıyıya yüzüp üzerini giyindikten sonra oradan uzaklaşmış...</p>
<p>..."But I am seeking fear; I will not be your Shah," replied he, resisting the efforts of the crowd to carry him off to the palace...</p>	<p>...Çocuğa "fakat ben korkunun peşindeyim, onu arıyorum, sizin şahınız olamam." diyerek onu saraya götürmeye çalışan kalabalığa direniyormuş...</p>
<p>...Then the marriage feast was ordered, and it lasted forty days and forty nights. The young Shah had his mother brought to his palace and they lived happily ever after...</p>	<p>...Ve düğün için hazırlıklar yapılmış, kırk gün kırk gece davullar çalınmış, genç Şah, anesini de yanına getirtmiş ve hep birlikte mutlu mesut yaşamışlar...</p>

...In the first example of the Fear, "someone" is translated as "bir şey" not "birisi- kimse" in order to develop the interest of the readers. Another example is Daughter of the Sea (Deniz Kyzy) is translated into as "denizkızı". Actually, this word means mermaid. But in the English original source text, this is written as Daughter of the Sea (Deniz Kyzy) in order to have the Turkish effect on English. In the second sentence given above, "am seeking" is translated as "peşindeyim, arıyorum". The translator add a word more in order to have a fluent expression. In the last example, and "it lasted forty days and forty nights" is translated as "kırk gün kırk gece davullar çalınmış". In this original text there is not anything like "drum", which means davul in Turkish. But in the Turkish wedding ceremonies, the Turks have drummers in general. This indicates that the translator uses the addition technique in translation process.

Source Text	Target Text
<p>The Three Orange Peris</p> <p>... "Selâmin alejküm!" they took courage and returned the greeting: "Ve alejküm selâm!"...</p> <p>... "Oh, my child," lamented the Padishah, "thou art my only one. If thou forsake me, then can I have no joy."...</p> <p>... "Oh, dear mother," sighed the boy, "such misfortune is mine that it were better you did not ask and I did not answer."...</p> <p>... This happy end attained, we will once more stretch ourselves on our divan...</p>	<p>Üç Portakal Peri</p> <p>... "Selamünaleyküm" diyerek onları selamladığında, cesaretlenmişler, onlar da dönerek "Ve Aleykümselam" demişler...</p> <p>... "Ah canımın canı oğul!" diye yakınmış Padişah, "Sen benim kıymetlimsin. Beni bırakıp gidersen, ben bir daha mutlu olabilir miyim hiç."...</p> <p>... "Ah sevgili validem!" diye iç geçirmiş çocuk, "Ne sen sor ne de ben söyleyeyim."...</p> <p>... Onlar ermiş muradına, biz çıkalım kerevetine...</p>

In the title of this tale, the author of this book preferred "Peri" for "Peri" in Turkish, which means fairy. In the first example of this tale, author uses the Islamic words, which means "peace with you" for "Selâmin alejküm!" and "Ve alejküm selâm!" Actually these words are not Turkish, they are Arabic. Here it is seen that both the author and the translator preferred borrowing technique in writing and translation periods. On the other hand, while translating the interjective sentences such as "Oh my child... and Oh my mother...", the translator preferred the usages of "Ah canımın canı oğul!" and "Ah sevgili validem!" in order to reflect the effect of old Turkish words usages and for the emphasis of these words' meanings. In the last example, there is a certain difference between original and the translated sentences. But the meaning is the same. As Lefevere mentioned in his studies (Aksoy, 2002: 51), the translator used the "rewriting" technique in the translation process.

Source Text	Target Text
<p>The Rose-Beauty</p> <p>In olden times, when the camel was a horse-dealer, the mouse a barber, the cuckoo a tailor, the tortoise a baker, and the ass still a servant; there was a miller who had a black cat...</p>	<p>Gül Güzeli</p> <p>Develer tellal iken, pireler berber iken, guguk kuşu terzi, kaplumbağa fırıncı ve eşekler yine hamal iken, siyah kedisi olan bir değirmenci varmış...</p>

When there is a usage as “In olden times” in the original tale, it is not in the translation. Here it is seen that the translator uses the deletion. There are different usages for the same meaning such as “horse-dealer and mouse” for “tellal and pire”. These words are not in the same meaning while they are translated into Turkish, but the general meaning of the sentences are same. It is seen that translator in the translation uses the adaptation and the functional equivalent techniques.

JSHS|45

Source Text	Target Text
<p>The Magic Turban, The Magic Whip and The Magic Carpet</p> <p>...“We are the children of one father,” said the eldest; “he died not long ago and left behind him a turban, a whip, and a praying-carpet.</p>	<p>Sihirli Sarık, Sihirli Kırbaç ve Sihirli Seccade</p> <p>...Birinci adam, “Biz üç kardeşiz, babamız kısa zaman önce öldü ve arkasında bir sarık, bir kırbaç ve bir seccade bıraktı.</p>

Beginning from the title of this tale, “Turban, Whip and Carpet” words are translated as “Sarık, Kırbaç and “Seccade”. Turban is a Turkish word and it is generally used for the meaning of headscarf of women. But in the flow of the tale it has a meaning for “headgear-imamah”, which means “sarık” in Turkish. On the other hand, “carpet” is translated generally as “halı” in Turkish. But here the translator preferred “seccade”, which has a religious meaning. Seccade is used for “prayer-ritual worship” in Islam. Here by using such words again,

the translator aimed to have the same effect of the original text into the target cultures and societies.

Source Text	Target Text
<p>The Black Dragon and The Red Dragon</p> <p>...When he had taken his abdest and said his prayers the day had fully dawned and the nightingales filled the air with their delightful songs...</p> <p>...Allah will restore to thee thy children.</p>	<p>Kara Ejderha ve Kızıl Ejderha</p> <p>...Abdestini alıp namazını kıldıktan sonra, gün ağarmaya başlamış; bülbüller neşeli neşeli öterek göğü doldurmuşlar...</p> <p>... “Allah sizi işte o zaman çocuklarınıza kavuşturacak” ...</p>

In this tale, the author of the source text used the words such as abdest and Allah, which are important words in Islam. “Allah” means god in English, but muslim prefer to use “Allah” since they think that there are difference both of these usages in their religion. Allah is unique in Islam, but in other religions there may me more gods according to the believes of people and societies. “Abdest” is used for the meaning of ritual-washing or ritual ablution in Islam. Since the target of the author of the source text is to reflect the Turkish and Islamic culture and usages to the other cultures, he preferred to use such usages, and the translator of the book take also the same path into the translation process.

4. Conclusion

In this study, the tales and their translations named as “Fear, Three Orange Peris, The Rose-Beauty, The Magic Turban, The Magic Whip and The Magic Carpet, The Black Dragon and The Red Dragon” from Forty Four Turkish Fairy Tales (Turkish translation name is 44 Türk Peri Masalı) written by Ignac Kunos are analysed in terms of discourse analysis based on the transmission of ideological language usages and culture. In the original source book, the target of the author is to reflect the Turkish cultural, social and the Islamic elements to the target societies and cultures. In this context, author preferred to use certain Turkish and Islamic elements and words. Within this

context, depending on the ideology of the translator or publishing house or editors, the translator of the book preferred to translate the book in the same way with the author. In general, the translator uses the borrowing technique to use the same words with the author, then he uses most of the common literary translation strategies of Peter Newmark as mentioned in *Geçmişten Günümüze Yazın Çevirisi* written by N. Berrin AKSOY as in the categories of “literal translation, transference, adaptation, neutralization or functional equivalent, explanation and deletion”. The translator of the aforementioned book, as well as the author of it, follows a path to reflect the Turkish cultural elements and myths to the other cultures and societies. With this purpose, translator uses the literal translation, transference, explanation and functional equivalent techniques as it is indicated in the examples from the book as above, while translating the book.

References

- AKSOY N. Berrin, “Geçmişten Günümüze Yazın Çevirisi”, İmge Kitabevi, Ankara, 2002.
- AKTAŞ Ümit, “Edebiyat, İdeoloji ve Poetika”, Metamorfoz Yayıncılık, İstanbul, 2012.
- BASSNET, Susan and LEFEVERE, Andre. e.d. “Translation, History and Culture”, New York, 1995.
- BULUT Alev, “Basından Örneklerle Çeviride İdeoloji İdeolojik Çeviri”, Multilingual Yayınları, İstanbul, 2008.
- DOĞAN Yalçın, “Sözlü ve Yazılı Çeviri Odaklı Söylem Çözümlemesi”, Siyasal Kitabevi, Ankara, 2014.
- JAKOPSON, Roman, “On Linguistic Aspects of Translation”, Lawrence Venuti (collection) *The Translation Studies Reader*. 126-131, Londra and Newyork: Routledge, 2012.
- NEWMARK, Peter, “Approaches to Translation”, Prentice-Hall, New York, 1988.
- TOURY, Gideon, “In Search of a Theory of Translation”, Tel Aviv, Porter Institute for Poetics and Semitics, 1980.
- YALÇINDAĞ, İ. Kürşad, “44 Türk Peri Masalı”, Tefrika Yayınları, İstanbul, 2016.

İNTERNET KAYNAKLARI

http://tdk.gov.tr/index.php?option=com_gts&arama=gts&guid=TDK.GTS.57caca20391033.47092737, 03.08.2016.

<http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/ideology>, 03.08.2016.

MEYER, Jim (1997) "What is Literature", Work Papers of the Summer Institute of Linguistics, University Of North Dakota Session 1997. 41:4

http://arts-sciences.und.edu/summer-institute-of-linguistics/work-papers/_files/docs/1997-meyer.pdf 03.08.2016

<http://sacred-texts.com/asia/fft/index.htm#contents/> Forty-Four Turkish Fairy Tales, 03.08.2016.



IMPROVING STUDENTS' SPEAKING SKILLS IN AN EFL CONTEXT




BILJANA N.SARAKINSKA*



Abstract: Learning a foreign language is acquiring, developing and improving a number of skills, and in this context learning English as a foreign language is no different. Among the skills that need to be mastered are reading, writing, listening and speaking. It goes without saying that one set of skills is not more important than another, however, it is safe to conclude that the ultimate aim of learning any foreign language is to facilitate communication. In this sense, we can say that speaking skills are often equated with communication skills, which, up to a certain extent, is true. Yet, it is important that we bear in mind the fact that communication is not solely identified with speaking, since communication can also include writing, listening, and up to a point, reading as well. Another important point that should be considered when discussing the acquisition, development and improvement of foreign language skills is that of instruction, learning, and feedback. The aim of this presentation is to provide some insight into how EFL students can improve their speaking skills in an EFL context, as well as the possibility of incorporating communicative grammar in practice, and the pedagogical implications in English language teaching.

Key Word: speaking skills, strategies, techniques, communication (skills)



* "Blaze Koneski" Faculty of Philology - Skopje

Ss. Cyril and Methodius University, [biljananaumoska@yahoo.com]



ICSSH2016
INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES



1. Improving Students' Speaking Skills in an EFL Context

Learning a foreign language, any foreign language, has to do with acquiring, developing, and improving a number of skills, such as, given in no particular order, reading, writing, listening, and speaking skills, broadly and generally speaking, of course. It goes without saying that the ultimate aim of learning a foreign language is to facilitate communication, and as such, spoken language production is often considered to be one of the most challenging aspects of learning a foreign language. There are certainly a number of factors that are involved as regards how easy or challenging it is to acquire and improve a set of skills in learning a foreign language, and what seems easy for one person might be challenging for another, and vice versa. We cannot claim with definite certainty that one set of skills is more important than another, or that one set of skills is more challenging to acquire than another.

What we can claim with certainty, however, is that it is important that all skills are mastered in order to meet the ultimate aim of facilitating communication. It goes without saying, however, that speaking skills are generally viewed by learners, in the majority of instances, students, as the most complex to master, although, certainly not impossible.

Undoubtedly, many learners may find it challenging to express themselves in spoken language in the target language (12), whether the target language is English or some other foreign language. Several factors may be at play as regards affecting learners' speaking skills, and it is important that they are taken into consideration, since only then will they be appropriately addressed and dealt with. Some factors that may affect learners' acquisition, development, and improvement of speaking skills may be:

- learners' age;
- learners' proficiency;
- group size;
- resources/teaching staff available;
- learners' needs/motivation.

In terms of the learners' age, we can generally summarize that younger speakers are less inhibited when it comes to expressing themselves orally, despite the fact that they may lack life experience, and as such may be limited to a given specter of discussion topics, whereas older, more mature learners tend to show greater reluctance and inhibition when it comes to oral communication. This can be attributed to the fact that although, generally speaking, older learners are more dedicated to learning the grammar rules of the foreign language, they tend to display apprehension when it comes time to communicate as they do not want to make a mistake. Younger learners, on the other hand, have no such inhibitions - although they may be less dedicated in terms of learning the grammar rules of the foreign language, they display no anxiety when it comes to expressing themselves orally. Interestingly enough, they seem to thrive on using the foreign language for oral communication, and in most instances, it is their favorite activity.

As regards the learners' proficiency, undoubtedly, the more proficient the learners, the easier it will be for them to speak the foreign language, and thus, to achieve spoken communication. This is where speaking skills go hand in hand with reading skills, and reading comprehension, as the more learners read in the foreign language, the bigger word stock they will have, and the better intuition they will have for acceptable and unacceptable constructions in the target language. Reading also improves learners' fluency, and in the long term, it improves their ease in communicating in the foreign language. This is in fact, a perfect example of the complementarity of the various skills in acquiring and improving one's foreign language knowledge. Reading skills also result in learners' increased cultural awareness, which is another important aspect when learning a foreign language.

As to the factors of group size and resources/teaching staff available, these are more or less out of the realm of the learners' power to control. Undoubtedly, if the group size is too large, the learners might not all get a chance to speak, or might not all get a chance to speak very much. Furthermore, those who are more extroverted and not so shy might get more opportunities to express themselves orally at the expense of those who are more inhibited and introverted, as the lat-

ter just might get lost in the shuffle. On the other hand, too small a group may also lead to problems as it will not allow a diversity of opinions to be expressed, and may also make various speaking activities undoable, such as debates and discussions. In this sense, then, it is important that the group size is balanced and not too large, and not too small, either. The other factor mentioned, that of resources/teaching staff available, is also out of the realm of the learners' control, and it is connected to the group size - the more teaching staff available, the more balanced the groups will be in terms of size.

The last factor mentioned above, learners' needs/motivation, is probably the most influential concerning the success of the learners in acquiring, developing, and improving their foreign language speaking skills. It goes without saying that when learners are motivated, success cannot be far behind, and that is true in this case as well. Learners are motivated when they have strictly defined and determined needs, and they are focused on meeting those needs. The instructor/teacher also has a significant role here, especially in increasing learners' motivation, and this can be done firstly by being aware of the learners' different needs, and then, secondly, in working to address those needs. This can be done by choosing appropriate speaking activities which will interest the learners and motivate them to participate as much as possible, as well as dealing with and adapting to the existing conditions as regards group size, and resources/teaching staff available.

Undoubtedly, when dealing with helping learners acquire and develop speaking skills, there are some factors that need to be taken into consideration, which may affect oral communication. It goes without saying that learning to speak a foreign language requires more than knowing its grammatical and semantic rules, and that the objective in any language classroom is to get the learners to use the target language, which is done best when they are actively involved in the learning process. However, we also need to be aware of the following factors which may appear as a hurdle to foreign language students:

- learner inhibition/lack of confidence/anxiety;
- lack of motivation;

- lack of vocabulary;
- lack of listening skills;
- L1 interference.

The factor of learner inhibition/lack of confidence/anxiety in reference to hindering learners' acquisition, development, and improvement of speaking skills in the target language are ultimately influenced by the learners themselves, although the instructor/teacher most definitely has a significant role in alleviating the said states and facilitating the communication process. Learner inhibition may occur due to a number of reasons, among which we can mention the learners' age; generally speaking, it tends not be an issue among younger learners, who seem to have no problems with self-confidence when expressing themselves orally in the target language. Older, more mature learners, on the other hand, tend to shy away, at first, from speaking in the foreign language, most frequently because they do not want to make mistakes, which are inevitable. The good news is that confidence, like any other skill, can be developed and improved over time, as long as there is an encouraging and friendly atmosphere during the learning process. Over time, and with practice, the learners' confidence will grow, and their level of anxiety will decrease, or disappear altogether.

The factor concerning motivation is ultimately dependent on the learners of the foreign language, although the instructor/teacher also plays a vital role in terms of whether the learners' motivation will increase or decrease. There are learners, of course, who are intrinsically motivated, and will work hard to achieve their ultimate aim of being able to communicate in the target language. However, in the majority of cases, it is up to the instructor/teacher to take the lead and motivate their learners, as much as possible, using various techniques and strategies they have at their disposal, and help learners improve their speaking skills. Ultimately, it is a joint effort learner-teacher in the learning process, and the final result is simply a reflection of how successful that effort was. It goes without saying that threats (tests, marks, etc.), and bribery (candy, etc.) are not the right approach to increasing motivation, but rather providing a pleasant working atmosphere, and choosing the age/group appropriate activi-

ties and topics. Getting learners motivated, and keeping them motivated, is a challenging, yet rewarding task.

In terms of the learners' vocabulary, or lack thereof, this is where we can say that reading skills are so important in helping improve speaking skills. In other words, the more learners read in the target language, the more they will increase their word stock in the said language, the more fluent they will become, the better their intuition will become as regards various phrases, collocations, constructions, etc., the better they will be able to express themselves in the target language, thus resulting in decreased anxiety and inhibition, and increased confidence, ultimately resulting in increased motivation. We see the chain effect of all of these factors, how they are linked one to the other, and it all starts with (improved) reading skills. This is just one example of how all the skills are interconnected when we talk about acquiring, developing and improving one's knowledge of a given foreign language.

Another set of skills that plays a significant role in improving learners' speaking skills is the set of listening skills - namely, we cannot work on improving learners' speaking skills without working on their listening skills at the same time - it is a two-way street. Often, listening skills are seen as not as important as speaking skills, and this is a situation that needs to be rectified and overcome as the two sets of skills are partners and go hand in hand. There are different strategies, techniques, and activities that can be employed to improve learners' listening skills, and ultimately facilitate their oral communication abilities.

And, finally, there is the factor of L1 interference that may appear as a hurdle in learners' attempts to acquire, develop, and improve their foreign language speaking skills. Namely, this factor, like the others mentioned previously, does not stand alone on its own, but rather it is connected to other factors, and dealt with accordingly. Generally speaking, the issue of L1 (mother tongue) interference appears in lower proficiency groups, where there is a lack of vocabulary, where the learners use their L1 as a crutch to help them communicate something in the target language. This is something that can be overcome with time, as the learners' proficiency in the target language in-

creases, as their word stock expands, and as they gain confidence in expressing themselves in the L2. One thing that should be particularly stressed here is the importance of sticking to L2 use at all times during the foreign language instruction, and limiting the use of L1 as much as possible.

Of course, the above-mentioned factors may or may not be present, and certainly not all at the same time, however, as long as we are aware of what hurdles may appear, we can be prepared and not be caught off-guard should they make an appearance. As was mentioned previously, it is important to remember that it is a joint effort, learner - instructor/teacher, and the more effort both parties put into it, the greater the results will be.

There are different strategies and techniques that may be employed in developing and improving (EFL) students' speaking skills, such as:

- reducing teacher talking time (TTT);
- increasing student talking time (STT);
- achieving a balance between speaking and listening;
- avoiding yes/no questions;
- employing multiple learning methods;
- raising students' awareness that mistakes are an inevitable part of learning;
- stressing the importance of the integral role of correction.

The first two points go hand-in-hand, and are, for the most part, self-explanatory. Namely, the teacher has the role of facilitator, and it is important that as the learners' proficiency increases, the teacher talking time (TTT) is reduced, and conversely, the student talking time (STT) is increased so as to allow learners as much as possible the opportunity to practice their speaking skills. Previously we mentioned the importance of developing listening skills in order to facilitate learners' speaking skills, i.e. the importance of achieving a balance between speaking and listening. In this way, learners see first-hand that all set of skills are important, and are complementary to each other. Another way of increasing learners' opportunities to

practice their speaking skills is by employing open-ended questions, and, in effect, limiting the use of, and even avoiding yes/no questions, which do not add much to practicing speaking. Just as it is important to deal with all set of skills when learning a foreign language, it is also important to employ multiple learning methods. Different learners have different learning styles, have different needs, their motivation is different, as is their knowledge and proficiency in the given foreign language. By employing multiple learning methods, there is a greater chance of successfully meeting the said differences that are present. The last two points, raising students' awareness that mistakes are an inevitable part of learning, and stressing the importance of the integral role of correction are of significant meaning since learners need to be made aware that mistakes will be made, but that that is a positive and expected aspect of foreign language learning. The important thing is not that mistakes are made, but rather, how they are dealt with, both by the learner and by the teacher. In terms of assessing speaking skills, and in our case, assessing speaking skills in EFL, there are detailed criteria (band scores/descriptors) that are used to objectively assess students' speaking skills, such as grammatical competence (range and accuracy); vocabulary (lexis); pronunciation; discourse management (fluency and coherence; cohesion), and interactive communication (initiate, develop, respond). This is something that learners should be made aware of in order to feel comfortable when the issue of correction comes into play.

The points above only graze the surface regarding the different strategies and techniques that exist, and that may be made use of in order to facilitate the development and improvement of (EFL) students' speaking skills.

In line with the importance of acquiring, developing, and improving speaking skills in an EFL context, a survey was conducted among 72 third-year EFL students at the Department of English Language and Literature, at the "Blaze Koneski" Faculty of Philology, to gain an insight into their opinions as regards what they feel is the most important aspect for them to acquire and improve on as regards learning a foreign language, and in their case, learning English as a foreign language. The results received showed no great surprises, although there were some unexpected answers along the way.

One of the questions on the survey was the following: What skill (reading, writing, listening, speaking), if any, do you think is the most important to learn when studying EFL? Only 10% of the respondents felt that all of the skills were important, while the majority, 62% of the respondents, set speaking skills as the most important. 19 % felt that the most important were writing skills, and only 5% and 4% declared these to be reading and listening skills, respectively.

Other questions that appeared on the survey were the following: what is the most difficult skill to be assessed (why); how can students' speaking skills be improved; what would be the most comfortable environment for doing speaking activities - pair work, group work, class work, etc. Interestingly, the respondents felt the most difficult skill to be assessed was speaking, closely followed by writing; in terms of improving speaking skills - they felt the speaking activities needed to be 'interesting' in order to motivate them; whereas in terms of the environment they felt most comfortable to practice their speaking skills - the results were close as regards pair work and group work, eventually followed up by class work, such as debates and discussions.

2. Conclusion

In conclusion, speaking skills are often seen as the most important to master when it comes to learning a foreign language, and they are generally perceived as the most complex and difficult to master, as well as the trickiest to evaluate. Learning a foreign language = to facilitate communication, and in this sense speaking skills = communication skills. Speaking skills can be evaluated objectively, within a given set of parameters, by using various band scores that provide an accurate description of students' speaking proficiency. Foreign language acquisition is a joint effort (learner + teacher), and as such, constructive feedback is crucial in the learning process.

References

- Gebhard, J. G. (2006). Teaching English as a foreign or second language: A teacher self-development and methodology guide. University of Michigan Press.

- Hinkel, E. (2006). Current perspectives on teaching the four skills. *Tesol Quarterly*, 40 (1), 109-131.
- Murphy, J. M. (1991). Oral communication in TESOL: Integrating speaking, listening, and pronunciation. *Tesol Quarterly*, 25 (1), 51-75.
- Savignon, S. J. (2008). Communicative language teaching: Strategies and goals. In E. Hinkel (ed.), *Handbook of research in second language teaching and learning*, pp. 635-651. New York: Routledge.
- Ur, P. (1995). *Discussions that work: Task-centered fluency practice*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

EVALUATION OF AN ENGLISH LANGUAGE TEACHING PROGRAM OF A VOCATIONAL SCHOOL OF HIGHER EDUCATION

DERYA TUZCU EKEN *

Abstract: The aim of this study is to evaluate English language teaching program of a vocational school of higher education concerning the opinions of students about the aims, content, materials, assessment methods of the course and their self-evaluation. In this respect, a questionnaire was conducted to 100 students studying in various departments of a vocational school of a Turkish university. The data analysis of the questionnaires revealed that the aims, content, assessment methods and materials used are useful, and, most of the students believe the course itself is beneficial yet; they also have some suggestions to improve the course such as increasing speaking activities. Besides, there are some problems as low motivation and interest of students and crowdedness of classes which should be taken into consideration.

Key Word: English program, higher education, program evaluation, students' opinion, vocational school.

1. Introduction

Learning a foreign language (FL) broadens the worldview of people and provides a gate to access other cultures. Therefore, a qualified language education should increase learners' curiosity and enrich their perception of the world. Therewithal, teaching should provide students the ability of self-expression in the target language and understand and respond orally and written to the speakers of that lan-

* Kirklareli University, Turkey, [derya.tuzcu@klu.edu.tr]

guage. Language learning should also equip students to work and study abroad.

Language programs, therefore, should keep in step with modern language education and be designed accordingly as they affect the learning process. To provide an efficient language program, evaluators need to check the program consistently, and this continuous evaluation as stated by Richards (2005) involves investigation of context, goals, syllabus, and structure of a course as well as analysis of the application, planning, teaching and learning processes.

In Turkish education, teaching and learning FLs, especially English for a few decades, has been an indispensable component of curriculum ranging from primary to higher education. The main aims of higher education in Turkey in this respect are to get better jobs and follow technological and scientific improvements (Konig, 2003). Hence, while designing ELT programs in higher education, the occupation and other related requirements of young adults need to be considered in detail. Also, it is necessary to gather the views/opinions of those young adults during the program evaluation as they can take the responsibility for their learning. Thus, in this study learners' perception of the ELT program of Lüleburgaz Vocational school were investigated.

2. Program Evaluation in Education

A program is "a set of resources and activities directed toward one or more common goals, typically under the direction of a single manager or management team" (Wholey et al., 2010: 5). Therefore, in education, a program can be defined as "a series of courses linked with some common goal or end product" (Lynch, 1996: 2). As the definition suggests a program, especially an education program has goal(s), is composed of a range of courses and at least one person directs it.

An integral and indispensable way of curriculum renewal, evaluation is a process of critically examining a program. It involves collecting and analyzing information about a program's activities, characteristics, and outcomes. The purpose is to make judgments about a program, to improve its effectiveness, and to inform programming decisions (Patton, 1987).

Program evaluation, as a whole, requires working systematically to collect, analyze and report the relevant data. It is “the application of empirical, social research methods to the process of judging the effectiveness of public policies, programs, or projects, as well as their management and implementation, for decision-making purposes” (Langbein, 2012). As the definition suggest, to evaluate a program it is expected of a researcher to apply research methods to the process and to make decisions with the help of those method(s). Another important point is judgment making which requires careful investigation and decision-making.

In line with the phase of program development, the demand for program evaluation is growing. Therefore, as in every field of research, in education there is an increasing need to evaluate the programs. However, program evaluation is not an ordinary research and evaluators need to apply to the specific steps of program evaluation.

3. Vocational School of Higher Education in Turkey

In Turkey, post-secondary vocational schools are part of higher education, and they offer two years of formal education. The students do not have to enter the central university placement exam, which is compulsory for the faculty level. This type of schools are the first steps of higher education and after graduation students get an associate’s degree that can be further used to enter a faculty. There are also limited number of vocational schools that provide distance education. Face-to-face vocational education is common.

Two-year vocational schools, defined by Council of Higher Education (2014) as ‘an institution of higher education that is aimed at training human capacity in particular professions and provides instruction lasting four semesters’. The primary medium of instruction is Turkish, and generally, English is taught as a FL.

ELT Program of Lüleburgaz Vocational School

It is a compulsory General English program implemented in the first academic year. Each department has to apply the same program and its requirements. The program is implemented in both terms under the names: Foreign Language I and Foreign Language II. The course

hours are weekly four, and each term is composed of 15 weeks, so students get nearly 60 hours in each term. The level is elementary.

The general aim of the program is to improve students' basic level skills in English reading, writing, speaking and listening. Therefore, while reinforcing prior knowledge also building on is aimed.

The learning outcomes mostly focus on the 'immediate environment' and usage of grammar structures such as 'comparatives, present continuous, present perfect, etc.' which is appropriate to the elementary level.

The methods suggested are 'communicative language teaching', and 'task-based language teaching.'

The materials are a course book (New English file A1-A2), its workbook, storybooks appropriate to level, worksheets, projector, computer, video and audio equipment, and board.

The assessment methods are pen and paper tests, in-class observations, assignments.

The aims, materials and assessment methods seem to be appropriate to the modern language teaching approaches; however, in class teacher applications might not be as stated and it might not satisfy the expectations of learners. Therefore, the views of learners regarding benefits of the program are aimed to be gathered by questioning if it is enough to compensate the needs of students. In this respect, the research question of the study is as follows:

What are the opinions of vocational school students related to the aims/outcomes, content, materials, and assessment methods of English course as well as their self-evaluation?

4. Methodology

Setting and participants

This program evaluation study was conducted at Lüleburgaz Vocational School of Kırklareli University with the participation of 100 students studying at several departments. Table 1 indicates the demographic data.

Table 1 Students' distribution of gender and department

		Gender		Total
		female	male	
Department	Social	32	18	50
	Technical	23	27	50
Total		55	45	100

Of the 100 students, 55 were female, and 45 were male. 50 students from social sciences were divided as 32 female and 18 male. Technical department was distributed as 23 female and 27 male. There are more female students in social sciences and more male students in technical sciences.

Instrumentation

The data were collected with the help of the questionnaire developed by Odabaşı (1998) and later adapted by Güllü (2007). The modified version of the questionnaire was found to be more appropriate as it was previously used to evaluate the ELT program of a Vocational School.

JSHS|63

The items in the questionnaire were analyzed in detail and at the end of each part, one open-ended question is included considering the views of an expert. Open-ended questions provide the researcher an opportunity to gather all the related opinions on the topic that was unforeseen. This structure type gives the respondents freedom in shaping their answer and increases the cognitive effort (Ballou, 2008).

Besides, a pilot study was conducted with 20 students, as a result, it was found to be appropriate.

Data collection

After getting the necessary permission from the school administration, the questionnaire was conducted to students in the spring term of 2014-2015 education year. The researcher distributed the ques-

tionnaire (one department at a time) and gave necessary explanations. It took nearly 10 to 15 minutes to complete.

Data analysis

Data collected from the questionnaire was analyzed by using SPSS v.21 and as for statistical analyzes frequencies were used, and each question was examined one by one.

5. Findings

The data gathered from the questionnaire were divided into 5: the reasons of students in learning English, aims of the course, the content of the course, self-evaluation of students, and assessment methods.

Students' English Learning aims

The first question of the survey sets out to gather the objectives of students in learning English. The responses show that 59 % of students learn English 'because it will be useful in professional life.' The second most favorite answer is 'because it is compulsory' with the percentage of 29 %. Most of the students are aware that English will be useful in their professional life, which shows that either the students are very attentive to their future professions, or the English teachers create awareness about the usefulness of English. The least popular answers are 'since I like it' 11% and 'other' 1% (that it is universal language). None of the students chose the answer 'to find a job easily'. Students English learning aims reveal that they are aware the advantages of knowing English.

Goals/objectives of the course

The second question asks 'what do you think the objectives of English course are?' The most common answer is that 'English is an international language and learning it will provide an essential to communicating with people of other nations'. Besides, 'English will be useful in my professional life' and 'it will be easy to find a job if I know English well'.

The third question is 'do the teachers of English course give you a syllabus at the beginning of the term', and there are only three options here: yes, partly and no. 57 % of students said 'yes', 27 %

'partly' and 16 % 'no.' The students who answered as 'partly' might say so because of teachers' presenting the syllabus orally or the ones who answered as 'no' might say so as they might not be at the first lesson when teachers introduce the course syllabus or teachers do not give an outline at all.

The fourth question is expected to be answered only by those who responded to the third question as 'yes' because it asks 'do the teachers follow this syllabus throughout the term?' 82% of the students answered 'yes,' 14 % 'partly' and 4% 'no' which shows that English teachers mostly follow the syllabus.

Question 5 is 'do you believe that the objectives are reached at the end of the term'. 37% of the students answered 'yes,' 49% 'partly' and 14% 'no.'

The last question of this part is again an open-ended question asks students what benefits they might get if they know the objectives of the course clearly. Students believe that if they know the aims of the course clearly, they can concentrate on the course better and work hard.

Content and materials of the course

The question seven examines if the students find the content difficult. Only 9% said 'yes,' 49% 'partly', and 42% 'no' which shows that the content of the course is appropriate to the level. The content of a course need to be a bit challenging, having an accessible content does not promote learning. As Fink (2003) states while designing content of a course we should sequence the ones that build on one another in a way that makes students associate each new topic with the previous one as the course proceeds.

The eighth question investigates if the students find the topics of the course appealing. The responses are 'yes' 52%, 'partly' 33% and 'no' 15% which shows that the topics are much more interesting than being boring. The content of the course is commensurately hard and appealing to most of the students.

Question nine examines the views of students whether they believe that the topics dealt in English course will contribute to their future career. 79% of the students answered as 'yes,' 16% 'partly' and 5%

'no.' The majority of the students believe that the content of English course is beneficial for their future career which can be inferred that there is not much problem with the content of the course.

Question ten (open-ended question) is directed to the students who answered the question nine as 'no' or 'partly.' Some of the answers given are not exactly related to the question. For instance, one of the students said 'I can easily search the internet' or one of them said 'the lessons are too long to concentrate'. The most logical answer is 'we do not have enough opportunities to speak so that in the future I will not speak English easily in my professional life'. However, this is not again directly related to the content of the course. It might be linked to the usage of skills while teaching the content. It seems that the students are not so much aware what is expected of them in a working environment.

As for the materials, the 11th question asks 'what are the most commonly used materials'. The answers are 41% 'all', 40% 'a course book', 7% 'computer and technological tools', 6% 'photocopy or hand out', 4% 'a supplementary book', 2% 'note-taking'. Most of the students said their English teacher uses all of the materials and secondly they said their teacher follows a course book. When we refer to the content of English program, the primary sources are given as a course book named New English File Elementary. It includes various supplementary tools such as 'I-tune', 'audio CDs', 'DVD', 'teachers book with test and assessment CD-ROM', 'on-line skills practice', etc. That is probably why some of the students said that their English teacher uses a course book, and some said English teachers use all of them. In fact, English teachers benefit from the course book and its materials.

12th question aims to learn the views of students about the efficacy of the materials., The answer 'yes' is the highest with a percentage of 65% and second highest answer is 'partly' 28%, and lastly 7% 'no.' The materials used are beneficial from the students' point of view.

Question 17 is related to the difficulty level of the course materials. 14% of the students answered as 'yes,' 40% 'partly', and 46% 'no.' The materials are not so difficult, yet, the reason that some of the students think the materials are difficult might be because of their

low level of English or lack of interest. The students who answered as 'yes' are asked to give a possible reason in question 18. Their answers are 'sentence structures are complex' (6 students), 'language of the book is difficult' (4 students), 'subjects are difficult' (1 student) and 'other' (3 students). 'Others' state their reasons as 'visuals are too complex to understand, and the exercises are challenging,' 'Turkish meaning is not given in the book' and 'I do not like the course.' As it reveals, the majority of the students do not have difficulty in understanding the materials.

Self-evaluation of students

Question 13 asks 'do you attend the courses regularly'. 72% of the students replied 'yes,' 24% 'partly' and 4% 'no.' Inferential statistics show that a vast majority of the students attend the course regularly. The ones who do not attend the class will fail at the end of the year because of absenteeism. The rest have the chance to enter the exams.

The 14th question is expected to be answered by those who responded to the former as 'no' or 'partly.' 28 students answered this question. The answers are:

- 'too many courses in one week' (12 students),
- 'other' (9 students) (sleeping problem, early class hours, not to be late for work),
- 'attendance is not necessary to get a passing grade' (3 students),
- 'attendance is not necessary for being a good worker in the future' (2 students),
- 'subjects are not interesting' (1 student),
- 'lessons are monotonous' (1 student).

Here, we can deduce that it is not because the lessons are uninteresting, or the courses are tedious it is mostly the mood of students that feeling unready due to the early class hours, having sleeping problems or having to work because of financial difficulty.

Question 15 inquires students activeness during the lessons. 67% of students responded as 'yes,' 27% 'partly,' and 6% 'no.' A good number of students are active during the course hours. They can be be-

having so to pass, to get higher marks or just because they like to be active as they like learning English.

Question 16 analyzes the responses of students that do not actively attend the course. The responses are 'the classrooms are crowded' (13 students), 'inadequate motivation' (9 students), and 'other' (8 students). Their reasons are 'I do not like English', 'I feel inadequate', 'the lessons are too early, so I do not wake up completely.' There are a few students who believe that 'lessons are based on memorization' and 'lessons are teacher-centred.' The most prevalent reasons are full classes and lack of motivation. The solution to crowdedness is beyond English teachers' authority yet, lack of motivation can be handled by decreasing the crowdedness and English teachers might try much harder to grasp the attention of those uninterested students.

Assessment methods

The 19th question requires to state preferred assessment techniques. 'Test' is the most favorite method (37%). The second most popular answer is 'in class performance' (29%), and it is followed by 'written exam' (13%) and 'oral exam' (13%), and the last one is 'term paper' (8%). When referring to the program content, it is seen that 'pen and paper tests, in-class observations, assignments' are stated as assessment methods and in line with the preferences of students. As noted by the students, oral exams and term papers can be used in assessment to get away from routinized exams and to appeal to several ability students.

Question 20 polls the general success of students from their point of view. 47% said their level is 'average,' 37% 'successful,' 10% 'very successful' and lastly 6% 'not successful.' Nearly half of the students see themselves as average, but successful and very successful equals to the percentage of the ones answered as 'average.' As a result, with a change in assessment method, it might be possible to increase the number of successful students.

The next question aims to gather the reasons of students who answered the last question as 'average' and 'weak.' The most popular ones are 18% 'having no interest in lessons', and 'inadequate motivation'. The problem is principally inner motivation or lack of interest that can be altered with the help of English teachers.

The question 22 asks whether the program meet their expectations. 48% of students said 'yes,' 40% 'partly' and 12% 'no.' As in phase with the preceding findings, the program meets the expectations of students to some extent. However, to meet the expectation of all of the students, necessary alterations are required. Lastly, the reasons of this is also questioned and the most common answer is 'English course is inadequate to transfer my professional life' and 'lack of speaking exercises'.

The last question is an open-ended question aims to gather students' opinions and suggestions within the boundaries of the study. The results are intriguing as many students want the English course hours to be increased, remarking that it is insufficient to learn English well in just two terms. Also students want speaking practices. Even they think that English course hours should be equal in high school education. Therefore, they can get the chance to learn English beforehand, and when they come to the university, they can add some more to their English.

6. Conclusion and Discussion

The findings of the study show that students learn English for their professional life as well as it is a compulsory course. It reveals that students are mostly aware of the usefulness of knowing English. It might be because those students know what expect them in the future, or it is the English teachers who make the students aware of benefits of knowing English.

As for aims/objectives of the course, though it is a bit challenging for teachers to make the goals more explicit and clear, it is beneficial for students to know the aims of a course. If the objectives of a course are defined clearly, then it is easy for the teachers to follow their steps to be taken and it is beneficial for students to learn these objectives. The findings of the study revealed that English teachers mostly give syllabus at the beginning of the education year and make the course objectives clear to students, and they follow the program mainly. Students, on the other hand, believe that knowing the objectives of the course provide a better concentration on the course and thus supports productivity.

The content of the course is partly challenging and appealing to the interest of students to some extent and students mostly believe that the content will be beneficial in their future jobs. The materials used are a course book and its supplementary materials including video, audio applications. They are useful from the point of students and majority of the students find the materials understandable.

As a self-evaluation of students, only a small number of them do not attend the course regularly and the reason of them mostly personal. Besides, whatever their reasons students are active during the lesson. Being inactive is because that the class is too crowded, or students lack of motivation.

As for assessment methods, the multiple-choice test is the most popular one chosen by the students and it is interesting that some of the students want oral and written exams as well as in-class observation and term paper. Half of the students see themselves as average in respect to success. Only a small number evaluates them as unsuccessful. The rest is whether successful or very successful. Therefore, various assessment methods can be used to appeal every students' ability to increase success. Besides, the unsuccessfulness was attributed to the lack of motivation and having no interest in lessons that can be changed with the cooperation of teachers and students.

Overall, the program meets the expectation of students on a large scale, yet there are some issues to reconsider by taking the suggestions of the students into account such as increasing the course hours, decreasing class size, increasing speaking exercises and so on. Besides, though every skill is given one by one in the program, it is understood from the answers of students that speaking is mostly ignored. Therefore, it is suggested that speaking exercises should be increased and given as equal importance. Besides, teachers should do their best to include as many students as possible into the lesson and enhance their motivation.

References

- Bayram, S. (2001). Türkiye’de Kitap Okuma Alışkanlığı. İstanbul Ticaret Odası Yayınları, İstanbul.
- Çakmak Güleç, H. Ve Geçgel, H. (2014). Çocuk Edebiyatı Okul Öncesinde Edebiyat Ve Kitap. Kriter Yayımcılık, İstanbul.
- Dökmen, Ü. (1994). Okuma Becerisi, İlgisi Ve Alışkanlığı Üzerine Psiko- Sosyal Bir Araştırma. Milli Eğitim Basımevi, İstanbul.
- Erünsal, İ. (2015). Osmanlılarda Kütüphaneler Ve Kütüphanecilik, Timaş Yayınları, İstanbul.
- <http://www.ifla.org/files/assets/hq/publications/professional-report/100-tr.pdf>. “Guidelines For Library Services To Babies And Toddlers”, International Federation Of Library Associations And Institutions, Ifla Professional Report 100.
- Gündüz Sağlam, A. (2007). Anne – Baba Ve Öğretmenlerin Okul Öncesi Çocuk Kitaplarını Değerlendirmesi, (Yayımlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Afyon Kocatepe Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Afyon.
- Güvenli, G. and Ak Akyol, F. (2014). “Zoraki Bir İlişki: Kitap Ve Dergi Okuma Alışkanlıkları”. 23 Nisan TRT Uluslararası Çocuk Ve Medya Kongresi 16- 18 Nisan 2013 İçinde. p. 97- 117, TRT Eğitim Dairesi Başkanlığı Yayınları, Ankara.
- Kakırman Yıldız, A. (2015). “Türkiye’de Okuma Alışkanlığı Kültürü İçin Okul Öncesi Eğitim Kurumlarında Anaokulu Kütüphanelerinin Gerekliliği - Necessity Of Pre-school Library In Preschool Education Institutions For The Reading Habits Culture In Turkey” Milli Eğitim Dergisi.
- Mol, S. And Adriane G. B. (2011) “To Read Or Not To Read: A Meta-Analysis Of Print Exposure From Infancy To Early Adulthood”, <Http://Www.Ncbi.Nlm.Nih.Gov/Pubmed/21219054>.
- Sınar Çılgın, A. (2006). “Çocuğa Büyülü Bir Dünyanın Kapılarını Açmak”, Milli Eğitim Dergisi, 172: 175-182
- Sınar Çılgın, A. (2007). Çocuk Edebiyatı, Morpa Yayınları, İstanbul.
- Veryeri Alaca, I. (2013). “0-5 Yaş Çocuk Ve Ailelerine Yönelik Devlet Destekli Dil Gelişimi Stratejileri, Medya Ve Okuma Kültürü Projeleri” I. Türkiye Çocuk Ve Medya Kongresi Bildiriler Kitabı İçinde, Çocuk Vakfı Yayınları, İstanbul, p.335-370

- Wade, B. and Moore, M. (1998). "An Early Start With Books: Literacy And Mathematical Evidence From A Longitudinal Study", *Educational Review*, 50 (2) : 135-145
- Yavuzer, H. (1997). *Ana – Baba Ve Çocuk. Remzi Kitabevi*, İstanbul.

EVALUATION OF CURRICULUMS BY OBSERVING JOB ADVERTISEMENTS IN HUMAN RESOURCES MANAGEMENT

ELİF AYDIN *

NERMİN ÇELİK*

Abstract: It is really important to educate students in accordance with sector requirements in terms of the education quality. Analysing job advertisements is one of the ways to find out the requirements that the sector expects from staff members for employment. This research aims to determine sufficiency of the curriculum of associate degree program of Human Resources Management (HRM) with regard to the sector expectations. For this purpose, courses in associate degree program both in state and foundation universities by year of 2015 compared with courses that can be provide most frequently used 10 qualifications determined by observing 80 job advertisements on kariyer.net related to HRM. As a consequence, it was seen that communication skill is the first place among the most required qualifications in the job advertisements. Also, it was found out that curriculum of universities does not include the analytical thinking course which provides analytical thinking skills for students.

Key Word: *Job Advertisements, Curriculum, Human Resources Management*

1. Introduction

Technological improvements and changing society lead to new career opportunities or they sometimes revise the profiles of existing professions. It is possible to see that a speciality which was not needed in

* Bulent Ecevit University Caycuma Vocational Scholl

* Bulent Ecevit University Caycuma Vocational Scholl



a field of occupation before can take place among prior criteria. The main purpose of educational institutions is to provide qualified education through following necessary developments of society and the time and searching for the change. It is essential that universities carrying a mission for training students who keep up with the changes and meet the needs of modern time are required to know the needs of the sector. One of the most practical ways of learning the expectations of the sector is analysing the job advertisements. Outlining new profiles of professions through analysing job advertisements and trying to apply these knowledge and skills of professional profiles in educational fields will probably strengthen the relation between education and employment.

It can be thought as a drawback of higher education system that graduates in Turkey do not have fundamental knowledge and skills which are needed for labour market (Biçerli, 2011, p. 122). In other words, curriculum in higher education institutions is insufficient in terms of qualified workforce and meeting the needs of the sector. For this reason, the issue of revising universities based on the needs of labour market is one of the essential subjects in the field. In the current study which was conducted in regard to the mentioned points, mostly preferred qualifications in job advertisements of Associate's Degree in Human Resources Management were identified at first. After matching the qualifications with the courses, inferences whether these courses are delivered by universities or not were determined.

2. Literature Review

Some of the conducted researches about job advertisements are explained below. Choi & Rasmussen (2009) carried out content analysis for job advertisements and presented knowledge, skills and experiences required for digital librarianship in America. They state that identifying the required qualifications is useful for research on developing curriculum in educational institutions. France (2010) identified administrative accounting applications which are most common job advertisements in Australia. The researcher states that the study is useful for students studying in administrative accounting and educators who design curriculum in the same field. Erkarlan et al.

(2011) analysed job advertisements and identified expectations of the sector from industrial designers. Then, they investigated curriculum of industrial design undergraduate programs in Turkey and defined the perspective of educational institutions and industrial designer profile. In the final part of the study, they evaluated findings and found out the inconsistency.

Messum et al. (2011) identified fundamental requirements of health administrators through job advertisements. They concluded that their identification overlaps with basic employment skills determined by Australia Science and Education Institution which develops plans and programs for educational institutions. They emphasized that findings of the study can be useful for developing curriculum and enhancing skills and information offered to graduates. Wise et al. (2011) investigated job advertisements published between 2004 and 2011 about librarianship and information sciences in Australia. They categorized advertisements based on the concepts of knowledge and skill using content analysis and making comparisons. They state that changes are needed to be reflected to the curriculum since there are some increases and decreases in required qualifications.

Cevher (2013) put forward new suggestions for course credits in curriculum in his research. In the study, the researcher analysed job advertisements of secretaryship through document analysis method and identified most preferred competences wanted by firms through content analysis. Bacaksız & Sönmez (2014) analysed job advertisements in human resources websites of Turkey through descriptive and comparative studies. They aimed to find out the required specialities of nurses and their research fields. Özdemir & Aras (2015) searched job advertisements related to human resources expert through content analysis and identified required specifications. They compared these specifications to standards determined by professional competency board and demonstrated that there was a great similarity. They suggest a revision for university course contents based on requirements in job advertisements and national occupational standards. Gerek & Efeoğlu (2015) analysed required competences for civil engineer graduates in job advertisements through content analyses. They stated that findings could be used in curriculum design of universities.

When the current studies in the literature are examined, it is seen that job advertisements in different fields such as library science, industrial design, management, secretaryship, nursing, accounting, human resources management and engineering are searched through content analysis. Besides, it is appear that there are some common suggestions for using findings in the revision of related curriculum. In the current study, one perspective of job advertisements (the most important specifications to apply in curriculum) is analysed as differently from other studies in the literature. It is analysed whether related courses exist in HRM (Human Resources Management) associate degree curriculum in Turkey or not. Besides, some suggestions about curriculum were offered after identifying certain courses providing required qualifications.

3. Methodology

Aim

The current study which puts forward the idea that there is a relation between curriculum and job advertisements aims to determine whether curriculum of associate degree human resources management department meets the expectations of the sector.

Method

In data collection procedure, document analysis method was used and descriptive analysis was used in analysing the data.

Data Collection and Analysis

Data collection procedure was carried out in website called kariyer.net (2016) in February, 2016. 80 job advertisements related to HRM associate degree program were analysed. Most required 10 qualifications which can be taught in education were collected through document analysis. After defining universities delivering HRM associate degree in Turkey, course suggestions which are meeting the needs were offered through descriptive analysis. Finally, the curriculums of state and foundation universities in terms of relevant courses were investigated and some inferences were made based on this comparison.

4. Findings and Discussion

The findings related to the most required 10 qualifications in 80 job advertisements in the field of HRM are shown in Table 1.

Table 1. Courses Matching the Most Required Qualifications in Job Advertisements

No	Required qualifications	%	Courses
1	Has effective communication skills	11.82	Communication
2	Uses MS Office programs well	11.09	Computer Office Programs
3	Knows labour law and social security institution regulation	9.64	Labour and Social Security Law
4	Be capable in planning, organization and decisionmaking	6.91	Management and Organisation
5	Be use the software program	6.00	Using Computer in HRM
6	Knows payrollling	5.82	Payrollling
7	Knows the procedure of personnel affairs	5.82	Personnel Affairs
8	Knows creating tally and fee management	4.91	Performance and Fee Management
9	Takes part in team work	4.91	Team Working
10	Has analytical thinking	4.55	Analytical Thinking

Table 2 demonstrates vocational schools offering HRM associate degree in Turkey in 2015-2016. In the study, an only one curriculum was used in universities which have more than one vocational schools taking into consideration curriculum and having the standard of education.

JSHS|77

Table 2. Vocational Schools Delivering HRM Associate Degree

University Type	No	University Name	Province	School Number
State University	1	Adnan Menderes University	Aydın	1
	2	Afyon Kocatepe University	Afyon	1
	3	Anadolu University	Eskişehir	1
	4	Artvin Çoruh University	Artvin	1
	5	Atatürk University	Erzurum	1
	6	Bülent Ecevit University	Zonguldak	1
	7	Celal Bayar University	Manisa	1
	8	Cumhuriyet University	Sivas	1
	9	Dumlupınar University	Kütahya	2
	10	Erzincan University	Erzincan	1
	11	Giresun University	Giresun	1
	12	Kastamonu University	Kastamonu	2
	13	Kırklareli University	Kırklareli	1
	14	Kocaeli University	Kocaeli	1
	15	Nevşehir University	Nevşehir	1
	16	Ordu University	Ordu	1
	17	Süleyman Demirel University	Isparta	4
Foundation University	18	Beykent University	İstanbul	1
	19	Doğuş University	İstanbul	1
	20	İstanbul Arel University	İstanbul	1
	21	İstanbul Aydın University	İstanbul	1
	22	İstanbul Gelişim University	İstanbul	1
	23	İstanbul Medipol University	İstanbul	1
	24	Olan University	İstanbul	1

It is searched whether identified courses exist in the curriculum of HRM associate degree or not. Courses in the curriculum and course hours were studied based on compulsory (C) and elective (E) (See Table 3-4).

Table 3. Courses in State University Curriculum

No	Courses	Adnan Menderes	Afyon Kocatepe	Anadolu	Artvin Çoruh	Atılım	Bülent Ersoy	Cahit Dıyıcı	Cumhuriyet	Danışman	Erzurum	Gümüş	Karaman	Karabük	Kocaeli	Medipol	Oban	Sakarya	Sakarya Düzce
1	Communication	E3	E4	C3	-	C2	E1	C2	-	C3	C2	E1	C4	C2	-	-	C2	-	C2
2	Computer Office Programs	-	C2+E3	C3+E3	C2	C1+C2	C2+C2	C3+C3	-	E3	C3+C3	C3+C3	E3	C2+C2	C3	-	C2+C2	C4+E3	C2
3	Labour and social security law	C3	C3	-	C3	C2	C2	-	-	E3	C2	C3	C3	C3	C3	-	C2	C3	C3
4	Management and Organisation	C2	E3+E3	C3	C3	-	C3	C2	-	C3	C3	C3	E4	-	-	-	-	-	C3
5	Using Computer in HRM	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	C3+C3
6	Payrolling	-	-	-	C3	-	C3	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
7	Personnel Affairs	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
8	Performance and Fee Management	C3	C3	C3	-	-	C3	C3	C3	E2	C3	C4	-	E3	-	C3+C3	-	-	C3
9	Team working	E2	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	E3	E2	-	E2	-	-
10	Analytical Thinking	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-

Table 4. Courses in Foundation University Curriculum

No	Courses	Baykent	Doğuş	İstanbul Arel	İstanbul İyigün	İstanbul Gelişim	İstanbul Medipol	Oban
1	Communication	C2	C3	-	-	C3	C2	-
2	Computer Office Programs	C3	C3	-	C1+C2	C2	C2	C3
3	Labour and social security law	-	C2	-	C3	C3	-	C3
4	Management and Organisation	C3	C3	-	C3	C3	C3	-
5	Using Computer in HRM	-	-	-	E2	-	-	-
6	Payrolling	-	-	-	-	-	-	C3
7	Personnel Affairs	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
8	Performance and Fee Management	-	-	-	C3+C2	C3	C3	C3
9	Team working	-	C2	-	-	-	E2	-
10	Analytical Thinking	-	-	-	-	-	-	-

Looking into the curriculums of universities, it is seen that communication skill is the first place among the most needed qualifications in the job advertisement. It is appear that computer office programs course exists in the curriculum of all foundation universities and it is available in all state universities except Adnan Menderes University. Because of the fact that the requirements provided in the course are in the second place in the study (11.09%), it is suggested that the course should be offered as a compulsory course for two semesters. It is appear that suggestions for increasing course hours in Artvin Çoruh, Cumhuriyet, Nevşehir, Gelişim and Medipol Universities help curriculum revision studies.

It is seen that labour and social security law which is in the third place appears in all state universities except one (Anadolu) while it is not offered by 3 foundation universities (Beykent, Arel, Medipol).

Payrolling (5.82%) and personnel affairs (5.82%) courses are offered in a combined way, in the name of payrolling and personnel affairs at Artvin Çoruh ve Bülent Ecevit Universities. It is seen that the course does not take place in the curriculum of other state universities. As a foundation university, Okan University just has the course of payrolling. Based on job advertisements, it is suggested that these are required to be offered as two separate courses and existing course hours should be increased.

It is seen that the course of team work suggested for aptitude of team working is an elective course among 24 universities and a compulsory course in 2 universities. A course which is needed for requirement of thinking in an analytical way –the 10th one in mostly preferred 10 specialities – does not appear in curriculums. In the study, it is suggested that Analytical Thinking course should be provided in the curriculums. Looking into the numbers of courses which appear in the curriculum, it is seen that Bülent Ecevit University has 7 courses out of 10 while Arel University has 1 course out of 10 in their curriculums.

5. Conclusion

In the current study, job advertisements are analysed and it is investigated whether the courses in the curriculums offer mostly preferred 10 qualifications in the sector. It is found out that there are differences among universities in terms of course name, course content, course credit and course type (C-E). For this reason, universities can think about the ways of developing a common curriculum. One of the significant findings of the study is to see that analytical thinking course does not exist in the curriculum. The fact that some important courses which offer mostly required qualifications for HRM staff do not exist in some universities or are offered as an elective course is another important finding of the study. In this regard, it is suggested that analytical thinking should be add to the curriculum as a new course and other courses identified by the study should be offered as compulsory courses in HRM associate degree programs.

It is expected that the current study contributes to curriculum development and revision studies in higher education institutions which have HRM associate degree program. It is considered that the re-

search should be carried out in periodically in order to enhance the quality of education. It is hoped that courses for qualifications mentioned in job advertisements can be suggested and these qualifications can be categorized in terms of their frequency in advertisements and courses as compulsory or elective.

References

- Bacaksız, F. E. & Sönmez, B. (2014). İnsan kaynakları web sitelerinde yer alan hemşire iş ilanlarının incelenmesi. *Sağlık ve Hemşirelik Yönetimi Dergisi*, 3(1), 112-122.
- Bıçerli, M. K. (2011). Yükseköğretim sistemimizi işgücü piyasasındaki gelişmeler paralelinde yeniden yapılandırmak zorundayız. *Yükseköğretim ve Bilim Dergisi*, 1(3), 122-127.
- Cevher, E. (2013). Sekreterlerin işe alınmasında aranan niteliklere yönelik bir araştırma: Kariyer.Net örneği. *Süleyman Demirel Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi 2013(1) Büro Yönetimi Özel Sayısı*, 235-245.
- Choi, Y. & Rasmussen, E. (2009). What qualifications and skills are important for digital librarian positions in academic libraries? A job advertisement analysis. *The Journal of Academic Librarianship*, 35(5), 457-467.
- Erkarıslan, Ö., Kaya, N. A. & Dilek, Ö. (2013). Comparative analysis of recruitment qualifications of industrial designers in Turkey through undergraduate education programs and online recruitment resources. *International Journal of Technology and Design Education*, 23, 129-145.
- France, A. (2010). Management accounting practices reflected in job advertisements. *Journal of New Business Ideas & Trends*, 8(2), 41-57.
- Gerek, I. H. & Efeoglu, I. E. (2015, 27-29 May). What qualifications and skills are important for civil engineers? A job advertisement analysis. *Proceedings of the makeLearn and TIIM Joint International Conference*. Bari, Italy, 689-695.
- Kariyer.net (2016). İş İlanları. <http://www.kariyer.net> adresinden erişilmiştir.
- Messum, D., Wilkes, L. & Jackson, D. (2011). Employability skills: essential requirements in health manager vacancy advertisements. *Asia Pacific Journal of Health Management*, 6(2), 22-28.

- Özdemir, S. & Aras, M. (2015, Mayıs). İnsan Kaynakları Uzmanında Aranılan Nitelikler: İş İlanları ve Meslek Standartları Karşılaştırması. 14. Ulusal İşletmecilik Kongresi, Aksaray.
- Wise, S., Henninger, M. & Kennan, M. A. (2011). Changing trends in job advertisements. *Australian Academic & Research Libraries*, 42(4), 268-295.

AESTHETIC AND ETHIC ELEMENTS IN SHELLEY'S REVOLUTIONARY POEMS

FATBARDHA DOKO *
ARDITA DOKO _

Abstract: In this paper we tried to give a brief analysis of the aesthetical and ethical elements in some of P.B.Shelley's best revolutionary poems. His literary opus is very wide and various, so among many meditative poems, love poems, revolutionary poems, etc, we decided to discuss some of his best revolutionary poems. Shelley is known as a revolutionary soul, and that is clearly expressed in his revolutionary poems, where he discussed politics as one of the major themes. We can see it in *The Song to the Men of England, England in 1819, Ode to Liberty, Ode to Naples, Political Greatness*, etc. Shelly discussed his view on global politics, not only British politics. So, this paper discusses the revolutionary and political ideology of Shelley, how politics influenced people's life, whether it is related to modern politics, and if yes, how it is related, etc. However, the poetical structure of the poems is discussed as well, having in mind the poetical devices, meter, rhyming patterns, number of stanzas and their length. This is how we have a clear view of Shelley's greatness and mastery as a lyrical poet, who is a part of many anthologies of literature.

Key Word: *Shelley, poems, revolutionary, politics, romanticism*

1. Introduction

Romanticism is one of the most intriguing, the most productive and the most interesting literary movement. It is a movement which in-

* State University of Tetova – Tetova [fatbardhadoko@gmail.com]

* Iliria College, Prishtina, Kosova [arditadoko33@gmail.com]

volves a lot of emotions and feelings, it includes a great interest in individualism, but it is also a revolt against the social, economical and political reality mass of people faced with in the 19th century. One of the most noticeable poets of this time is P.B.Shelley, whose literary work reflects romanticism in its best. He belongs to the second group of romantic poets, together with Keats and Byron. Shelley died very young, leaving behind a great and valuable literary works, which secured him a position in the world of great and unique poets.

No matter how young he died, Shelley experienced many things during his short life, and although he matured his youth ideas, he still worried about the same issues and he was not less worried about the human fate in general.

He was not indifferent towards people's suffering, and expressed his interest for the real world, and thus he was a great protector of freedom. His ideas about social standing of people and the state of his own country, Britain's relations with other countries, and especially ideas about the power of politics and monarchy, were widely known since they were expressed in his poems through which he opposed the arrogance of political power.

2. Song to the men of England

One of these poems is *Song to the Man of England*, written in 1819, written in four line stanzas, dedicated to the people of England, and where he expressed his revolutionary and patriotic ideas:

*Men of England, wherefore plough
For the lords who lay ye low?
Wherefore weave with toil and care
The rich robes your tyrants wear? 1-4*

This stanza is related to the greatest social and economic issue of today, the issue of possession. Shelley believed that everyone should have equal right on possession, fought for this idea, since he hated the injustice done to the real owners – they had to work in their own land but for someone else, the feudal.

In the second stanza Shelley addresses the nation saying:

*Wherefore feed, and clothe, and save,
From the cradle to the grave,
Those ungrateful drones who would
Drain your sweat—nay, drink your blood?*

The state is a parasite for Shelley, and he uses this to stress the motive of profit – desire of the rich to get more from people and give them as less as possible, thus weakening them so that they can use them for their own benefit and progress. This was unreasonable for Shelley. Between lines of the whole poem we can feel the question of possession, who owns, what do people work for? To serve the others and make the others who don't work rich. Another question arises from this poem- what does a person deserve? Shelley in fact answers by pointing out that all people are equal; they deserve decent existence – a shelter, food, free time, leisure, a good and regular health care. However, according to Shelley, if people work too hard, earn no money for living, they cannot express nor feel love.

Later in the poem Shelley describes what according to him an economical madness is:

*The seed ye sow, another reaps;
The wealth ye find, another keeps;
The robes ye weave, another wears;
The arms ye forge, another bears..17-20*

This important social issue is also expressed through Shelley's great poetic language and style. He uses examples of archaic language, like *wherefore* instead of why, than ye instead of you.

He uses a stark, wild language when talking about how the economic issue was ignored by the authorities, and on the other hand there is sweetness, kindness that comes from the musical verses written in blank verse.

In "*Or what is it ye buy so dear / With your pain and with your fear?*" - we feel some trembling, and with the long sounds ee and r Shelley gets into people's feelings.

In general, this poem expresses the struggle between Shelley's feelings and the reality, and its aim is to make the people aware of the

injustice they were experiencing. This in fact represents Shelley's healthy aesthetic state, a unity of his *self* and the world.

3. England in 1819

Shelley's revolutionary ideas and his commitment to justice and equality among people can be also seen in a very powerful poem *England in 1819*. This poem is from the mature period of Shelley's work, where he bursts describing all the weaknesses and wrongs of England in a very powerful and irregular sonnet. In fact, it is a '*list of charges and attacks comparable only to Pain's criticism on English Monarchy and aristocracy, as well as Shelley's republican criticism expressed in verses* (Kuić, 1974, f. 84)' It is also Shelley's harshest attack on monarchy:

*An old, mad, blind, despised, and dying King;
Princes, the dregs of their dull race, who flow
Through public scorn, — mud from a muddy spring;
Rulers who neither see nor feel nor know,
But leechlike to their fainting country cling
Till they drop, blind in blood, without a blow.
A people starved and stabbed in th' untilled field;
An army, whom libercide and prey
Makes as a two-edged sword to all who wield;
Golden and sanguine laws which tempt and slay;
Religion Christless, Godless — a book sealed;
A senate, Time's worst statute, unrepealed —
Are graves from which a glorious Phantom may
Burst, to illumine our tempestuous day.*

It is a list of vices or the flows in the structure of the English society. He described King George as *An old, mad, blind, despised, and dying King*, the noblemen are described as leeches that drain their own nation, and the people are oppressed, hungry, with no hopes for

a better life. Shelley also describes the army as corrupted and dangerous, the laws as useless, and the parliament as '*Time's worst statue unrepealed*'.

We notice wild and violent metaphors that Shelley uses in the poem, and with this he expressed his own feelings and attitude towards the state, the country.

However, the ending couplet has a tone of passionate optimism, since from *-graves-*, *-glorious phantom-*, may '*burst to illumine our tempestuous day*'. The author does not specify what a phantom is, but it may refer to Spirit from his *Hymn to Intellectual Beauty*, and the possibility of braking free through a revolution similar to the one in France. Shelley believes that the phantom can make the necessary changes however it is as blur and unclear as Demagorgon from his *Prometheus Unbound*, and also not related to reality.

This sonnet is written in Iambic pentameter

Ān óld /, mǎd, blínd/, dĕspísd/, ānd dý/íng kíng,-

Príncés/ thĕ drĕgs/ ōf thĕír/ dŭll ráce,/ whŏ flów...

JSHS|87

But it does not suite the rhyming pattern that Shelley uses in his other sonnets. It means that the ordinary Petrarchian form is not used, and the specific rhyme appears in the two parts of the sonnet: ABABCDCDCDD, which resembles to an overturned Petrarchian form, what best suits the thematic structure of the sonnet: the first six lines are about the English leaders, the king and princes, and the other 8 verses deal with everybody else. Thus, the structure of the sonnet is not connected, or tied, the same as England.

So the irregular, unconnected rhyming pattern represents or shows England as seen by Shelley's eyes.

4 Ode to liberty

The unstable situation in Europe in 1820 and 1821, especially in Spain when Ferdinand restored the Inquisition but due to a very powerful revolution he had to accept the liberal government, influenced Shelley a lot. He wanted to go to Spain and feel the power of people, so he described this enthusiasm in his poem *The Ode to Lib-*

erty. According to this, the major theme of this poem is the declaration of Spanish constitution in 1820. No matter this event left no big trace in history, Shelley expanded his idea in the poem. He described the chaotic nature and society before Freedom came, pointing out that only Anarchy, Tyranny and priestess ruled before, and he considered it a whole different phase of humanity. When Freedom came, a new life appeared, a phase when order and art were introduced, and it is the Greek period. This order and cultural upheaval continued in Rome, when Christianity appeared. Than Shelley continued dealing with the French revolution in the XVIII century, that brought slavery and tyranny, which were present in England as well. The English lived under difficult conditions but they were not brave enough to raise their voice and fight for their freedom. With this poem Shelley scorned all European nations, except Spain, for not fighting for their freedom, thus praising Spain only for not being indifferent towards tyranny.

This ode is Shelley's view on freedom's history, where he *'he voices problem of the revolutionary who believes in the natural goodness of man, he gives utterance in the same breath to his belief in the artists as 'the unacknowledged legislators of the world'* (King-Helle, 1960, f. 248), and he expresses his own theory of the One.

The major characteristic of this poem is its vision for a new society, which reminds us of Queen Mab, where the dogmatic voice comes from the depth. However, in Ode to Liberty this voice continuously decreases in the last stanza, where the Ode ends with a tone of deep despair but covered with a magnificent appearance

*o'er it closed the echoes far away
Of the great voice which did its flight sustain,
As waves which lately paved his watery way
Hiss round a drowner's head in their tempestuous play. 279-284*

It is a call to fight for freedom. It is Shelley's the most successful Pindaric ode, where he adopts the required rhetoric tone for 19 times through the mazy rhyme pattern *ababcdddcecedee*.

Shelley successfully avoids the risk of a formal ode, and uses minimum of 18th century abstractions, like Mercy and Hope, and makes the poem vivid with images as:

*O'er the lit waves every Aeolian isle
From Pithecusa to Pelorus
Howls, and leaps, and glares in chorus:*

Beside its structural flaws, Shelley's ode stresses his poetic qualities and points out the differences between his genius and other poets who wrote about principles of classicism.

5. Ode to Naples

After *Ode to Liberty* that was inspired by the Spanish Revolution Shelley wrote Ode to Naples, which was inspired by another liberal revolution and the constitution of constitutional government, which happened in Naples, Italy, and which arose Shelley's liberal feelings. The poem starts with a very fine description of poet's feelings about the city and the city itself. Romantic theme of the poem is set in centre of the ruined and deserted city, Pompeii. The landscape, natural forces, ruins, all penetrate and get filtered in the eyes of each individual observer, thus becoming objects of individual perceptions, they change and '*It is notable that the sense of sight and the omnipotent scientific, analytic eye is absent or less trusted, since subjective emotional response is the Romantic way for grasping experience* (Lea, 1945, f. 77)'

After this description, the poet starts revealing '*prophesyings*'; turning his interest to the fate of the revolt. He openly declares '*prophesying...seize me* 49-50. Naples can be foreteller of this revolution, a signal for a general uprising against anarchy.

No matter Shelley was a realist to understand the danger of Naples's uprising, he still believed in rebirth, and thus he fed his own idealism, and believed that freedom's enemies will be '*devoured by their own hounds*' and the revolution will be used only to , "*gaze on Oppression*", and not to shed blood.

This poem is consisted of strophes and antistrophes, so that the author follows the conventions of a formal ode, or '*his seizure takes the form of an elaborate sequence of Strophes and Antistrophes; and this*

time he falls heavily into the traps of the formal ode (King-Helle, 1960, f. 250), and her pompous and ardent tone culminates with exclamations 'Hail', a technique taken from Macbeth:

*Naples! thou Heart of men which ever pantest
Naked, beneath the lidless eye of Heaven!
Elysian City, which to calm enchantest
The mutinous air and sea! they round thee, even
As sleep round Love, are driven!
Metropolis of a ruined Paradise
Long lost, late won, and yet but half regained!
Bright Altar of the bloodless sacrifice
Which armed Victory offers up unstained
To Love, the flower-enchained!
Thou which wert once, and then didst cease to be,
Now art, and henceforth ever shalt be, free,
If Hope, and Truth, and Justice can avail,--
Hail, hail, all hail! (ll. 52-65)*

The Strophe begins with a powerful praise of the magical beauty of the city which will regain its own freedom through a bloody war.

The Best verses of the poem may be considered those which relate Italy to Paradise. Shelley stresses his view on this paradise, on the fact what this paradise is: destroyed -

"Long lost, late won, and yet but half regained" 58. At the end, the ode becomes extremely abstract and philosophical, pointing out that forces of nature come together with the good spirit, aiming the freedom of the city.

In the aspect of form and technique, Shelley presented some innovations, for example the abstract nouns which are capitalised and create a festive and serious humour, that is totally different from the episode when the author describes all the disasters the oppressor did, *"the anarchs of the North"*. In 126 verses of the poem, there are over 40 abstract nouns which are capitalised and there are 34 exclamation marks.

It is consisted of 10 epodes, Strophes and Antistrophes of various lengths, and as such it represents a different style than other Shelley's poems.

6. Political greatness

Shelley valued everyone's freedom and wellbeing, and he strongly opposed all kinds of injustice towards people and believed in the importance of the individual personality and one's ability to rule over oneself and create one's own fate. This ideology of his is expressed in his different lyrical poems, as for example in *Political Greatness*, a sonnet, also named *To the Republic of Benevento* which can be considered a great social overview. Here, in 14 lines Shelley tells than all the crowds, which are simply masses, are nothing, and only an individual who learns how to lead one's will, hopes, anxieties and fears, is the one who can be called a human- a man.

In the first two lines Shelley numbers the lost years from those who tend to tyranny, and when they are masses, they resemble herds of animals, with no reason. These kinds of crowds are not happy, have no greatness, no fame, no peace, no force, and the worst is that no one of them is able to lead the crowd's will, thus they submit to tyranny. This can be noticed in "*Verse echoes not one beating of their heart*"v.4 which expresses a declaration that all of them are empty, without voice, without soul, simply said, those who have no poetry in their soul are invaluable. "*History is but a shadow of their shame*"v.5 shows crowd's failure to change history, no matter they had opportunities. Shelley says that they subdue to tyranny, they have no ability to see art and feel its beauty. Art is for him a reflection of human beauty.

A turning point of the sonnet is the rhetorical question "*What are members knit by force or custom?*" v.9-10, with other words, if a group of people gets together only because they have to, or because of their tradition, this union is not strong enough, not real . Shelley answers to this question saying that everyone who wants to be a human, a part of human race, has to see oneself as an empire where he would be an absolute ruler. Later Shelley analyzes the three aspects over which we should rule: our will, our hopes and our anxieties. Than he says that in tyranny, our will is usurped by tyrants, our

hopes are imposed from the tyrant, and our fears, anxieties are generalised by the tyrant.

With this we see how visionary Shelley was, because eventhough the poem was written 200 hundred years ago, we can find the truth that is related to the present. And as a bottom line of this poem we can say that people should avoid all kinds of tyranny and become ones' own rulers, if not, we are not real humans. This is a must.

As one of the greatest poets of romanticism, Shelley became an inspiration to many poets and writers. His revolutionary spirit and poems motivated many people raise their voice for their rights, so in this way he proved his idea that Poets are the unacknowledged leaders of the world.

References:

English Romantic Poets, Modern Essays in Criticism, ed. by M.H. Abrams, 1973; Oxford University Press, New York,.

The Works of P.B.Shelley, 1994, Wordsworth Poetry Library, London
Karagjozi, Afrim Q; *Persi Shelli, monografi*; 1998, Botimet enciklopedike, Tiranë

King-Helle, Desmond; *Shelley, The Man and the Poet*, Thomas Yoseloff, publisher, New York, 1960,

Kuiç, Dr. Ranka; *Šelijevi pogledi na politiku, religiju i poeziju*; Minerva, Subotica, 1974,

Lea, F.A; *Shelley and the Romantic Revolution*; George Routledge & Sons Ltd., London, 1945, f.77

Watson, J.R; *English Poetry of the Romantic Period 1789-1830*; 1985, Longman Inc., New York,

Internet sources:

www.bartleby.com/cambridge/-internet.

www.online-literature.com/shelley_percy/.

www.victorianweb.org/previctorian/shelley/shelleyov.html.

FORCED DISPLACEMENTS IN A CLIMATICALLY CHANGED WORLD: LITERARY AND VISUAL REPRESENTATIONS OF CLIMATE REFUGEES

FATMA AYKANAT *

Abstract: Anthropogenic environmental changes, mostly caused by burning fossil fuels, emission of greenhouse gases, the use of pesticides and herbicides, etc., have wide ranging consequences on Earth, such as soil degradation, loss of biological diversity, ocean acidification, melting ice-caps, rising sea-levels, etc. In order to foreshadow long-term effects of humans' actions sometimes science needs the help of humanities. Thus, literature's role as a bard/ storyteller/ wise man to explain the serious, complex environmental threats as well as to make hardcore scientific data easier to be digested by the masses has come to the foreground. With a particular emphasis on the mass migrations and displacements due to human-induced environmental changes, this study will explore the reflections of climate change on the human relationships and politics, and analyse the alterations in the pre-existing social order, discourses, and socially constructed dichotomies. Through illustrative examples selected from real and fictional cases, such as British novelist Maggie Gee's dystopian Cli-Fi novel *The Ice People* (1998), *Climate Refugees* (2010), the documentary written and directed by Michael P. Nash, and *The Beasts of the Southern Wild* (2012), the movie directed by Benh Zeitlin, the case of climate refugees and nature-culture entanglements in a climatically changed world will be discussed.

Key Word: *climate refugees, climate change, forced displacements, mass migration*

* Bulent Ecevit University Faculty of Science and Letters

[erleicha@gmail.com]



1. Forced Displacements in a Climatically Changed World: Literary and Visual Representations of Climate Refugees

Anthropogenic environmental changes, mostly caused by burning fossil fuels, emission of greenhouse gases, the use of pesticides and herbicides, etc., have wide ranging consequences on Earth, such as soil degradation, loss of biological diversity, ocean acidification, melting ice-caps, rising sea-levels, etc. (Whitehead, 2014). In order to foreshadow long-term effects of humans' actions sometimes science needs the help of humanities. Thus, lately, literature and media's role as the storyteller explaining the serious, complex environmental threats as well as making hard-core scientific data and statistical figures and numbers easier to be digested by the masses has come to the foreground. In this respect, with a particular emphasis on the mass migrations and forced displacements due to human-induced environmental changes, this paper explores the reflections of climate change on the human relationships and politics, and analyse the alterations in the pre-existing social order, discourses, and socially constructed dichotomies. In this study, three illustrative examples of literary fiction and visual media will be used to highlight the fictional and real situations in which the climate refugees have been struggling. With a particular emphasis on the mass migrations and displacements due to human-induced environmental changes, this study will explore the reflections of climate change on the human relationships and politics, and analyse the alterations in the pre-existing social order, discourses, and socially constructed dichotomies. Through illustrative examples selected from real and fictional cases, such as British novelist Maggie Gee's dystopian Cli-Fi novel *The Ice People* (1998), *Climate Refugees* (2010), the documentary written and directed by Michael P. Nash, and *The Beasts of the Southern Wild* (2012), the movie directed by Benh Zeitlin, the case of climate refugees and nature-culture entanglements in a climatically changed world will be discussed.

Refugee is simply a person, who has been displaced, from their home, from their livelihood, by some set of events. The word "refugee" usually refers to victims of political violence or dictatorship (Dun, O., and Gemenne, F. 2008). But today the word "refugee" began to be used in a in a larger context. With the increase in the frequency and intensity

of disasters associated with climate change, it is anticipated that the number of people displaced in the context of disasters will rise and issues such as the relocation of people at risk, the need for adaptation to the effects of climate change and the legal challenges around people displaced by climate-related threats are all being widely debated and researched. In such as context, the term “refugee” began to be used in a totally new context giving birth to new usages as “climate refugees” “environmentally-induced migrants,” or “environmental refugees.” There are various alternative terms, which have been introduced, developed, and/or circulated by researchers and policy-makers, who anticipate changes to international law regarding refugees and resettlement including “environmentally displaced person,” “environmental displacee,” etc. However, the American environmental analyst, and the founder of the Worldwatch Institute Lester R. Brown used the term climate refuge for the first time in 1976 (Brown, L., Mcgrath, P., and Stokes, B., 1976).

The common ground for being labelled as political and environmental refugees is that both categories have been created by a situation beyond their control. In the case of environmental refugees the reasons are environmental disasters, flood, hurricanes, fires, land loss, and lack of capacity to grow food. According to the latest data of *Forced Immigration Review* (May 2015), worldwide sudden environmental disasters such as earthquakes, floods, landslides and tropical storms displaced some 165 million people between 2008 and 2013, and the numbers are rapidly increasing. These climate-related disasters combined with rapid urbanisation, population growth and pre-existing social vulnerabilities, such as poverty, are likely to increase climate-related displacements and migrations in the future across international borders. According to Lester R. Brown (2011), argues that in the long-term, “rising-sea refugees will likely dominate the flow of environmental refugees,” and will threaten “many low-lying cities, major river deltas, and low-lying island countries” (169). Among the early refugees will be millions of rice-farming families from Asia’s low-lying river deltas, those will watch their fields sink below the rising sea (Lester R. Brown, 2011, 169).

This topical environmental threat has recently become a popular concern of literary and visual media. As an example of climate change fiction, or cli-fi, British novelist Maggie Gee's *The Ice People* (1998) portrays two different climatic phases of the Earth: a globally warmed world, which is slowly falling into a global freeze. The first part of the novel, which is narrated from the perspective of the black male protagonist Saul in his young age, portrays a globally warmed world and the problems rise in this context. As a result of the anthropogenic changes in the biosphere, the sea levels dramatically rise, and, in the long run, those human induced changes lead to plagues, sudden appearance of dangerous viruses like a new type of Ebola virus, shortage of food and fresh water. In this dystopian setting of the novel, those ecological problems turn out to be the major concerns of mankind and serious challenges to human survival as well as the preservation of nonhuman species -of animals and plants. Moreover, seeking for the materials for their survival, people begin to migrate from the more populated parts of the world to the less populated parts, like Africa. Such an eco-centric mass migration movement creates a new group of people who have to leave their homelands or local environments because of various ecological threats, and are forced to take shelter in more ecologically secure regions (Özyurt Kılıç, 2013). Those people who are displaced due to environmental concerns are referred to as climate refugees. In the novel, those eco-centric population movements also trigger important challenges in the existing discourses; such as the dichotomy of the First World countries and the Third World countries. In the second part of the novel, Saul, in his old age, dramatizes the condition of the Earth in the Ice Age. This time the reason of environmental displacement in *The Ice People* is the global freeze. Now the whole Earth has been experiencing a new human-induced geological age with its dramatically worsening consequences, and people try to cope with the changing ecological circumstances. The black male protagonist of the novel, Saul, his white Scottish wife Sarah, and their half-cast son Luke are among the large number of environmental refugees who are referred to as the Ice People in the novel, and whose experiences in this climatically challenged world are narrated in *The Ice People* from Saul's mouth.

The Ice People depict how radically the pre-existing norms and social constructs have been challenged and gradually altered as the climate changes. As the Earth gradually gets cooler, the life on Earth becomes harsher:

“The Wicca World decided to evacuate the Hebrides [islands on the western coast of Scotland] after the supply ships couldn’t get through [the ice-covered sea] for three months. [...] cruisers bringing would-be immigrants from Sweden. [...] There had been reports from the Hebridian netters that some elderly islanders were freezing to death, while others were bringing their cattle or horses into the house and sleeping with them in a desperate attempt to keep warm. [...] Lochs on the mainland began to freeze over, rivers stopped flowing, food crops failed, orchards whitened and weakened with frost, cars wouldn’t start, there were endless power cuts from the grids that couldn’t cope with the surge in demand, deliverymen died in exposed country places, and there was a spate of suffocations in cities among people who had over-insulated [staying indoors for a long time] their houses. (Gee, 1998, 119) “In the meantime “the Indonesian volcano exploded,” [but] “Sumatra got very little international aid though half of its population stifled or starved.” (Gee, 1998, 120)

JSHS|97

In order to adapt to the changing climatic conditions, and to survive under these conditions, human beings develop alternative solutions. For instance, “[...] farmers switched their crops to frost-resistant kinds, computers built to withstand low temperatures.” (Gee, 1998, 120). These temporary and local solutions enable certain groups of people stick to their homelands a little longer, but not for all, not for long. Despite people’s efforts to develop alternative, temporary solutions for the consequences of the increasingly harsh climate, certain parts of the world become impossible to inhabit. Thus, people are forced to mass migrations.

The Hebridean islanders were sticking to their homes but elsewhere in the world people felt less rooted. A great movement of human beings began from north to south from the poles to the equator, slowly at first, like the first leaves falling, then more and more like an autumn storm, like the sky darkening into winter, and the noise was

thousands of running feet, panicking voices, massed birds wheeling. [...] I watched them on the screen, great swirls of black ants, crowding the airports, overloading the boats... They were real people, though they looked like insects. (Gee, 1998, 120)

The black protagonist of *the Ice People*, Saul, and his son Luke, are among those environmentally displaced people. Commenting on the climate-induced mass migrations, Saul underlines an irony, that is, the reversed direction of migration as follows:

Then I remembered. When I was little, the scenes on the screen that had scared me to death, showing hordes of black people pouring into Britain, coming to take away all we had, with the brave white soldiers holding them back. Only this time, it was all happening in reverse, the negative image of the long-forgotten photo. This time the desperate people were white. This time the people with the power were black. And a long-lost art of me started to laugh: it was *my* turn now. *Our* turn now! *Black man's turn!* (Gee, 1998, 121)

Thanks to the second ice age, the hot climate of Africa will be cooled enough to make it a suitable place to live and to cultivate land. This will reverse the geographical poles eliminating the geographical advantage of the countries located in south of the equator. On the other hand, these climatically inhabitable countries in the south are under the heavy pressure of requests of asylum by the citizens of the climatically uninhabitable countries in the north. In this respect, the existence of national borders is one of the crucial issues in dealing with climate refugees. Unlike the nomadic people of about a thousand years ago, today, there are nation states and thus, permanent national borders. People who have to move cannot move beyond their national borders that easily. In order to handle with the high number of requests African countries ask for visas. As Saul explains, "you couldn't fly to Africa without a visa, so my plan was to drive down through France and Spain and make a sea-crossing to Africa" (Gee, 1998, 127). The criteria for the qualification vary from country to country:

Each African country was doing things differently, though all were overwhelmed with requests of asylum. Ghana was intending to close its borders within six months to those special cases allowed to immi-

grate because they had Ghanaian blood. The Cameroons, by contrast, had set no time limit. Sierra Leone would accept no one with any admixture of European blood. A phrase recurred: 'the ice people.' We cannot take in all these ice people... the ice people are coming here in ever greater numbers... a growing concern that we shall be swamped.. thousands maybe millions of ice people... ice people, ice people...So now Europeans were ice people. (Gee, 1998, 122).

Being black African descendants Saul and his son Luke have no problem of qualification for visa. Saul explains

I could go there. Though no one suspects it, I have black blood, I could just walk in and claim my kingdom. He [Luke] had Ghanaian blood, his grandfather's blood. He was part-Ghanaian. [...] If you had one Ghanaian great-grandparent, you are qualified" (Gee, 1998, 122)

Though his ancestors have been discriminated due to their skin colour and race for ages, now Saul somehow relieved and happy to be a black:

Now Samuel's [Saul's father, Luke's grandfather] blood was going to save Luke's life. Opening the gates of Africa. Giving us the key to the last warm places, the retreating deserts where fruit would grow, the great grassy plains that had once been sand, the blueing hills, the returning streams, the sapling woods of the new green Sahara. (Gee, 1998, 157)

Apart from being only a matter of physical detachment, relocating people is a serious issue, which will bring along various conflicts, such as religious conflicts, cultural conflicts, economic conflicts. In *the Ice People*, Saul's son Luke hesitates to migrate to Africa saying that, "I don't want to go to Africa. In any case Africans hate white people. They won't let us in" (Gee, 1998, 141). Despite his dark skin colour, which is a genetic trait shared with Africans, and which is assumed to eliminate physical differences to some extent, Luke is still anxious about being treated as an unwelcomed intruder by the Africans. The reason for his anxiety is his cultural upbringing. He was born in the northern hemisphere in a white country and raised like a white person, and naturally he feels and thinks like a white no matter he is and looks partly black. Such a forced displacement will cause cultural conflicts.

Yet, finding alternative places for people to move is not the solution. Not only their lives but also their entire culture will be in jeopardy and create cultural conflicts and identity crises. In *Climate Refugees*, the documentary Andrew Simms, director of New Academic Foundation and the author of *Ecological Debt*, asks: What does really mean to move a country? Simms states “if you ultimately lose your nation, if your nation goes underwater or become uninhabitable, you’re not just a temporary refugee; you are permanently relocated. And those people would eventually want to settle on a different corner of the world and recreate their nation there.” So, we need to rethink about climate change and stop treating it as “some remote environmental issue that scientists will work out” in their laboratories, “because it’s going to touch our lives.”

In addition to the cultural conflicts, which are expected to rise out of the forced co-habitation of the people from various backgrounds, economic conflicts can also be regarded as one of the most important the possible outcomes of the climate-induced, forced mass migrations. In this respect, *Climate Refugees*, the documentary (2010) delves into the case of Bangladesh. As the documentary informs the viewers, in Bangladesh, there are millions of people living essentially at sea level. The number of people who live just a little bit above the sea level is very few. Considering the fact that Bangladesh is a country, which is frequently and severely hit by storms that cause sea level rise, literally millions of people are forced to be on the move. Even if there is only 1 metre sea level rise, Bangladesh, a country of 55 million people, would lose 40 per cent of its rice land. So, they will have to import rice to fill the gap in the country’s food supply. Otherwise, there will be economic conflicts and anarchy. Under these circumstances, Bangladeshi climate refugees would move to the next available place. The probable for route for them are towards up-countries, and their destination is India. That means, these are millions of Muslim who will not be welcomed in a Hindu country, and create serious religious conflicts.

Most scholars point to population growth, urbanisation, and industrialisation as the stressors of the ecosystems and the triggers of the increasing climate change. Accommodating larger populations and meeting their needs certainly put a pressure on the natural resources as well as on the economies based on agriculture. In *Climate Refugees*, the documentary (2010), Dr. Robert Watson, the chief scientific advisor of DEFRA (The Department for Environment, Food and Rural Affairs of the United Kingdom and Northern Ireland) states that many people argue that population growth is the major driver of climate change, but we also have to look at economic growth. We have a larger population; that means more demand for energy, more demand for natural resources, which put pressure on the climate system. For example, water stress becomes a cause of conflict in these regions. What is going to happen is people competing over limited resources; that means climate wars.

Another striking real case of climate refugees can be observed in the Islands of Tuvalu, which is a long and narrow strip of island. Scientists predict that in ten years Tuvalu will be under water. A few years ago Tuvalu was filled with trees and life, but now it is like a lost island. As the geographically closest safe place New Zealand is accepting Tuvaluan climate refugees, but not all of them. New Zealand has certain criteria for Tuvaluan climate refugees who would like to migrate to New Zealand: old, poor, uneducated, non-employment skilled Tuvaluans would have no chance at all. Only the young Tuvaluans, not the ones over 50 are welcomed, because they will be only economic burden for the New Zealand government.

In *Beast of the Southern Wild*, the movie (2012) portrays a similar case to Tuvaluans. In the movie, the melting ice caps due to global warming and the consequent sea-level rise is presented from the point of view of a six-year-old child named Hushpuppy, whose hometown, the Bathtub, which is a delta community at the southern edge of the world, is gradually swallowed by the ocean. As her father, Wink, dies of an infectious disease, Hushpuppy has to travel on floating platform along the flooded disaster zone in order to survive. This orphan girl's journey, which end in Hushpuppy's reaching to the mainland, can be treated, in a way, as a child's notes from a catastrophe zone. The movie includes hardly any talk, but striking scenes

portraying a climate disaster and the struggles of climate migrants for their life. In addition to its significance as a visual instrument highlighting the condition of the relatively environmentally less guilty peoples inhabiting in the south of the equator in a probable case of sea level rise mostly due to the industrial activities of the developed countries, *Beast of the Southern Wild* (2012) also depicts the reflections of climate change not only on human beings but also on the livestock which die either of drowning or scarcity of food and fresh water leading many biological species extinct.

The crucial question, which is highlighted by the above-mentioned literary and visual illustrative examples, is how we will deal with the phenomena of environmental migration. Clearly, the numbers will grow and the world is not ready for this, neither institutionally nor in term of necessary norms and standards of international cooperation. So, the world needs a serious system of helping climate refugees across the planet. What they do right now is persecuting them according to their race, ethnic origin, nationality, religion, membership on a particular social organisation or a group, and political views. But, it is too difficult and too late to help a person effectively once the event happened. That's why our emphasis should be on trying to find ways of pre-empt the phenomena of becoming a refugee as a result of environmental changes.

To conclude, the climate clock is ticking. Urgent preventive cautions need to be taken in the first place, such as constructing a low-carbon economy, and making cuts in climate changing gases, such as carbon dioxide to prevent more global warming, and using "biofuels" instead (Vigil, 2015, 43). For this, the developed countries, as the biggest contributors to climate change, must definitely take responsibility. Moreover, global financial support is vital since climate refugees will create overwhelming pressure on the infrastructure of local economies in such a way that no government can deal with alone (Vigil, 2015). Climate change is a globally contingent threat, thus it requires intergovernmental collaboration. As it is emphasized in *Climate Refugees* documentary as well, "that's not a spectator sport; we all have to be involved."

References

- Brown, L., McGrath, P., & Stokes, B. (1976). "The Twenty-two dimensions of the population problem." *Worldwatch Paper 5*, 1-86. Online. <http://files.eric.ed.gov/fulltext/ED128282.pdf>
- Brown, Lester R. (2011). "Environmental refugees: the rising tide." *The world on the edge*. (pp. 167-191). New York, the USA: W.W. Norton & Company.
- Dun, O., & Gemenne, F. (October 2008). Defining environmental migration. Couldrey Marion & Maurice Herson (Eds.). *Forced Migration Review, Issue 31: Climate Change and Displacement*, 10-12. Online. www.fmreview.org/climatechange.htm
- Gee, Maggie. (1998). *The Ice People*. London, the UK: Richard Cohen Books.
- Nash, Michael P. (Dir.) (2010). *Climate Refugees Documentary*. The USA: LA Think Tank.
- Vigil, Sara. (May 2015). Displacement as a consequence of climate change mitigation policies. *Forced Migration Review, Issue 49: Disasters and Displacement in a Changing Climate*, 43-46. Online. www.fmreview.org/climatechange.htm
- Whitehead, Mark. (2013). *Environmental transformations*. (pp. 1-176). New York, the USA: Routledge.
- Zetlin, Benh. (Dir.) (2012). *Beasts of the Southern Wild*. The USA: Cinereach, Court 13 Pictures & Journeyman Pictures.
- Özyurt Kılıç, Mine. (2013). *Maggie Gee: Writing the condition-of-england novel*. (pp.1-179). London, the UK, Bloomsbury.

A COGNITIVE CONSTRUCTIVIST APPROACH IN USING PHRASAL VERBS AS COHESIVE DEVICES IN ESSAY WRITING IN ENGLISH

FLORIM V. AJDINI *

Abstract: Albanian as an old and solely Indo-European language does not have a real verb equivalent which could be matched to the English phrasal verbs and other languages which have this lexical category. Officially this grammatical category is referred to as a verbal group or literally translated as verb phrase in English. This paper aims to shed more light in terms of improving the conceptual use of these words in essay writing, approached by a deeper cognitive perception regarding their use in essay writing. In order to clarify the students' confusion upon their use, this type of approach, aims to make difference between traditional i.e. literal and conceptual cognition of these verbs. As such, it will reveal the impact they have in the writing product intelligibility, seen through the overall textual cohesion and the logical functionality of paragraphs they generate in Essay writing process as whole. Further on, it will set up techniques of facilitating cognition obstacles, encountered as a result of their multi semantic perception to the nonnative learners, i.e. Albanian Students of English.

Key Word: *Cognitive, phrasal verbs, essay, cohesion, conceptual cognition*

1. Introduction

English Phrasal verbs have always triggered a variety of difficulties in terms of both, learning and using them in almost all language skills and the overall student communication in English. The fact that this lexical category does not exist *officially*, in Albanian, it represents a

* English Language and Literature Department
Philological Faculty, State University of Tetova
[florim.ajdini@unite.edu.mk]

constant barrier towards learning outcomes with these students. The focus of this paper will be put on the use of English Phrasal verbs, in Essay writing, with special focus on the *cognitive approach* of perception and its impact in writing English essays.¹ The issue to be tackled is their role in terms of *setting ground for good and stable and functional essay text wholeness*, which must be reached as a result of their *appropriate content cognition*, seen from the perspective of cognition functionality effect, which as such must decipher the content of these verbs, by ignoring the L1 impact completely². In the focus, there will be two target groups (each 50 students). One of these groups matches the B1, while the other B2 language level of the CEFR. In these research terms, there will be used a comparative, qualitative as well as quantitative method of research, which will focus the problem generator, seen from the perspective of traditional learning techniques of *grammar translation method*, which has been identified as a phenomena occurring primarily acting from the efficiency of *the cognitive process* of finding an equivalent of phrasal verbs in L1, i.e. Albanian. Both target groups are 1st year students of English. They are not acquainted with the purpose of the research, so they are left alone for an academic hour to produce one 400 words (5 paragraphs in total) essay each.

2. Questions to tackle

- a) What's the cognitive approach towards finding their appropriate equivalent in essay writing?
- b) As they are unpredictable and confusing to students, most of time they reflect an illogical content and convey a wrong message; which raises the question making possible a real and functional routine of possibilities, as to how to enhance the cognitive approach, aiming to reach a higher degree of cognitive operational effectiveness, on the

¹ Cohen, J. (1988). *Statistical power analysis for the behavioral sciences* (2nd ed). Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, p.222

² Cornell, A. (1985). Realistic goals in teaching and learning phrasal verbs. *IRAL*, 23, 269-280.

level of a given essay, covered throughout the flow writing process as whole?

c) As they aren't necessarily informal or colloquial; they need to be approached via a '*hypothetic-deductive reasoning*', aiming a complete decipherment of the message in a given sentence, making it matching to the other paragraph supporting ideas and further on to the whole essay's wholeness. This action has been made possible through an *intense cognitive action in depth analysis of the works*.

3. *Verb quantum* in focus

As the research is of a complex character, in order to make it easier to understand to the reader, below has been given a table of the most frequently used phrasal verbs, used in the 20 analyzed essays. The verbs in focus are divided into: frequent, semi-frequent and of rare frequency of use: As such the ones in focus have been the following: to come off to fall on to fall off to bear out to give over run down to set out, to get down, to stand up. etc, etc.

In order to *facilitate the cognitive decipherment* of their meaning, the students' most frequent approach is revealing their meaning which goes through a *set of thinking (cognitive) activities of a constructivist character*, before they are filtered to be used in essay writing.³ This approach is a very complex one, but it has proved that it supports constantly the intensity of productiveness of phrasal verbs, even in moments when students may think they are not needed to be used. The *cognitive constructivist approach* in language learning is an efficient facilitator which puts on place a wide range of possibilities of using phrasal verbs, departing from the most frequent ones to the rare ones, acquired in learning English while being passively exposed. The technique mostly used is the one focusing the verb as a lexical unit, as content as well as linking it to the verbs previously known. This technique sees the verb as made of two logically contradictory parts i.e. the particle and the verb basis, which as such must made a single meaning content to be fit for the logical contextual

³ Dixon, R. (1982). The grammar of English phrasal verbs. *Australian Journal of Linguistics*, 2, 142.

linking in a given paragraph and finally matching the wholeness of the overall message to be conveyed in written.

4. Analytical part of the research

Essay text analysis regarding “Phrasal verbs’ use and their impact in the essay text wholeness (cohesion). According to Kleinmann, (1977:211, and Schachter, (1974:232), students usually hesitate to use L2 constructivist techniques in cases when they notice that their meaning is different from L1 system, i.e. Albanian. In this regard, 20 phrasal verbs to be used in the essay have proved to be *reduced into 16 ones*. This is valid with the Group 1 of students, who based on a previous diagnostic assessment, are qualified as belonging to the B2 level of the CEFR. Checked in terms of the semantic complexity the used verbs reveal, 8 of them are qualified as regular ones and the 8 others, are seen as complex ones, which have come into expression to be used in the text, as a result of a deeper thinking of the tested students, generated as a result of an intensive cognitive constructivism, based on Brunner’s theory of efficient learning (discovery learning).⁴ In this particular research, this approach has been used through discovering or *revealing unlearned but acquired phrasal verbs*, by which the tested students have solved the so called situations of unfamiliarity of finding the way out of situations where they are required to perform as close as possible to the experiences and the knowledge of the native speaker.

Further on, according to Jordens (1981:111) and Kellerman (1977:67), the hesitation in using English phrasal verbs appears complex, as such it is ongoing and it is present and noticeable in essay writing with these students, is seen to come as a result of the fear of effecting the all wholeness (cohesion) of the essay they are supposed to produce. This happening, would have a huge impact in the overall *semantic as well as grammatical engineering structure* of both all paragraphs and the essay as whole. The paragraphs would derail from the general statement of the essay, meaning that the essay will

⁴ Darwin, C. M., & Gray, L. S. (1999). Going after the phrasal verbs: An alternative approach to classification. *TESOL Quarterly*, 33, 65-83.

not be supported by the appropriate ideas, and neither by the right phrasal verbs matching the main statement. The analysis from the database (2x20 essays, with both target groups), focusing the overall essay constructiveness, effected by the functionality of the cognition process regarding the phrasal verbs to be used, has been seen as a result of the so called *free contextual approach* to feet into the overall meaning of a given paragraph and finally of the essay as whole. This cognitivist approach of deciphering the phrasal verbs, constantly supported by the constructivist thinking, has been performing differently with the two groups. This means that the Group 1, has performed using these techniques with the same intensity and in a coordinated way, which has shown that the essays produced by them, are characterized of a higher degree of comprehensibility, and as such they are easily understandable by the reader. The rate of the *essay wholeness functionality* (EWF) has reached 15% of the whole essay wholeness (text cohesion).

As to the target Group 2 of students, the number of 20 phrasal verbs to be used in the essay, have proved to drop *into 9 ones*. This is valid with the Group 2 of students, who based on a *previous diagnostic assessment*, are qualified as belonging to the B2 level of the CEFR. Checked in terms of the semantic complexity the used verbs reveal, 6 of them are qualified as regular ones and the 3 others, are seen as complex ones, which have come into expression to be used in the text, as a result of a superficial thinking of the tested students. This is generated as a result of a *slower and inactive cognitive constructivism*, based on Brunner's theory of efficient learning (discovery learning). Further on, from analysis the database content, focusing the *overall essay constructiveness* affected by the *functionality of the cognition process* of phrasal verbs to be used, results of a *lower free contextual approach* (LCA) in their use when they needed⁵. *The cognitivist approach of deciphering the phrasal verbs*, constantly supported by the *constructivist thinking*, has been performing weaker

⁵ Dagut, M., & Laufer, B. (1985). Avoidance of phrasal verbs: A case for contrastive analysis. *Studies in Second Language Acquisition*, 7, 73-79.

with this respective groups.⁶ This means that they have performed using this technique rarely and in an irrational and unreasonable basis. The approach intensity makes the essays produced by them, to be characterized of a lower degree of comprehensibility, and as such they are not easily understandable by the reader. The rate of the *essay wholeness functionality* (EWF) has reached 30% of the whole essay wholeness (text cohesion)

5. Reasons for limited understanding and use of phrasal verbs in essay writing, seen from the cognitive point of view

According to gathered data regarding the problem of students restrain towards using phrasal verbs and Darwin and Gray (1999, p. 66), theory related to the problem, there is always a limited understanding of these verbs, which can be caused as a result of three different reasons. The first one does with the definition of phrasal verbs, for the very fact that teachers and linguists define the phrasal verb as a verb followed by a particle, which represents one single semantic unit. However, the application of this definition to the learners has always been confuse and problematic. This confusion among students has challenged the researchers to carry out deeper research regarding the problem. The third reason is related to the method of presenting phrasal verbs which groups them according to the verb proper. Frank (1993, as cited in Darwin & Gray 1999, p. 67), for example, presents five phrasal verbs that begin with *bring*, four with *make*, and five with *take*.

Finally, in the formal operational stage of adolescence, the structures of development become the abstract, logically organized system of adult intelligence⁷. When faced with a complex problem, the adolescent speculates about all possible solutions before trying them out in the real world.

⁶ Jordens, P. (1977). Rules, grammatical intuitions and strategies in foreign language learning. *Interlanguage Studies Bulletin*, 2, 5-76.

⁷ Kellerman, E. (1983). Now you see it, now you don't. In S. Gass & L. Selinker (Eds.)

The source of information for this paper is a database of gathered from a wide range variety of Essay produced by the 1st year students at the English Language department. It is a total number of a 100 essays consisting of cca 300-400 words each. The database is covering a time span of a year (two semesters). The whole process of data analysis has been overcome by the so called approach of contextual *linking and use of the Phrasal verbs*, from the grammatical and semantic point of view, which has proved to be a very fruitful approach regarding the overall identification of the problems these students are facing while they write an English essay⁸. This approach has proved to be rather difficult for the fact that in order to reach fruitful research results at first hand it has to be based upon the level of target student language skills, as participants in the research itself. As an approach it has stimulated the expected research outcomes.

All these difficulties in one way or another have been influencing the target students at a different scale and as such, for better research outcomes and envisaged expectations, they have been seen through the students' focus on the verb particle as well as students' focus on the verb literal i.e grammatical and semantic meaning. The chart below shows the scale of influence these approaches have reached concerning the overall avoidance of Phrasal verbs in the works used as source of research.

JSHS|111

6. Analysis / General Issues focused and expected outcome

To clarify how this phenomenon has been working in throughout the research and the related analysis carried out during this study; I must put into focus two things. The first one is the concentration in the problem and its nature in terms of written language reproduction, focusing on the scale it effects the overall essay writing quality and productivity, respectively essay writing with the tested students, and the second one is the so called *double purpose problem orientation* involving L1 interference and avoidance phenomena overshadowing

⁸ Kamimoto, T. Shimura, A., & Kellerman, E. (1992). A second language classic reconsidered the case of Schachter's avoidance. *Second Language Research*, 8, 251-277.

the writing process as whole. The 50% of the works have been compared and classified according to the amount of the phrasal verbs used while writing an essay. This means that, given the fact that tested group, according to the language skillfulness belongs to the low intermediate group of language proficiency, their essays which is 50% of them, consisting of 250-300 words, involve an average of 3-6 phrasal verbs per essay. The total number of used phrasal verbs for this group is 200-250 ones. On the other hand, the case with the other target group, in quantitative as well as qualitative point of view, has performed fairly better⁹. This means that the other 50% of the analyzed works involve a double quality of phrasal verbs used in their essays. Each analyzed essay includes 5-8 phrasal verbs which raises their total to 300-350 ones. This student group performance has exercised a pretty higher text cohesion compared to the 1st group essays. This is a sufficient indicator which shows that the avoidance phenomena with this group are rather high and as such it has constantly been controlled by the L1 interference¹⁰. On the other hand, with the 2nd group, the situation is slightly different, consisting of a total ranging between 350-400 phrasal verbs, according to the overall text cohesion functionality, is assessed to have been between around 400 ones, in text consisting an average 400-500 number of words. However, seen from the theoretical aspect, the overall process of phrasal verbs' meaning transfer from L1 to L2, with these analyzed works, with the 1st student group has shown to be addressed mostly as being influenced by looking for the equivalents in Albanian language, which is not the case with the 2nd group of students where the use of the phrasal verbs has predominantly been seen as an instinctive and automatic routine of thinking regarding the meaning which they students should convey regarding the topic they write. It can be described as an idea which comes as a need in fulfilling a sentence in order to make it sound more English.

⁹ Fraser, B. (1976). *The verb-particle combination in English*. New York: Academic Press.

¹⁰ Hulstijn, J. H., & Marchena, E. (1989). Avoidance: Grammatical or semantic causes? *Studies in Second Language Acquisition*, 11, 241-255.

7. Conclusions and discussion

These conclusions generally give a clearer picture revealing as follows:

1) Based on written essays, do Albanian learners avoid phrasal verbs? If so, what are the causes of avoidance of phrasal verbs among Arab learners? (a) Do L1-L2 structural differences contribute to the avoidance of phrasal verbs? (b) Does the idiomaticity of some phrasal verbs trigger the avoidance behavior? Above all, the cognitive approach they use when these verbs are to be deciphered, is rather based on the form of the verb than on the content they convey.

2) Based on classroom observation, to both target groups of learners, results that using phrasal verbs in essay writing in English, requires rather a deep cognitive insight of the verb content, rather than translating them in L1, and then using them in the writing process, whenever they needed. One of the factors which hampers and gets complex the cognition impact as such is the level of linguistic proficiency in English, which compared between both groups, results significantly different between group 1 and group 2 of target students.

As result, both intermediate and advanced learners remembered the original phrasal verbs correctly in most cases. If we would classify the avoided phrasal verbs in terms of the reached avoidance scores, we may say that avoidance phenomena, is predominantly showing up as an issue of students' language capacity and skillfulness, concerning their flexible use in terms of their *semantic decoding* in the text context they are producing.

References

- Cornell, A. (1985). Realistic goals in teaching and learning phrasal verbs. *IRAL*, 23
- Cohen, J. (1988). Statistical power analysis for the behavioral sciences (2nd ed). Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- Dagut, M., & Laufer, B. (1985). Avoidance of phrasal verbs: A case for contrastive analysis. *Studies in Second Language Acquisition*, 7

- Darwin, C. M., & Gray, L. S. (1999). Going after the phrasal verbs: An alternative approach to classification. *TESOL Quarterly*, 33
- Dixon, R. (1982). The grammar of English phrasal verbs. *Australian Journal of Linguistics*, 2, 142.
- Fraser, B. (1976). *The verb-particle combination in English*. New York: Academic Press.
- Hulstijn, J. H., & Marchena, E. (1989). Avoidance: Grammatical or semantic causes? *Studies in Second Language Acquisition*, 11
- Jordens, P. (1977). Rules, grammatical intuitions and strategies in foreign language learning. *Interlanguage Studies Bulletin*, 2, 5-76.
- Kamimoto, T., Shimura, A., & Kellerman, E. (1992). A second language classic reconsidered the case of Schachter's avoidance. *Second Language Research*, 8
- Kellerman, E. (1977). Towards a characterization of the strategy of transfer in second language learning. *Interlanguage Studies Bulletin*, 2, 58-145.
- Kellerman, E. (1983). Now you see it, now you don't. In S. Gass & L. Selinker (Eds.)

DETERMINATION OF PRESERVICE CHEMISTRY TEACHERS' CONCEPTIONS OF ACIDS AND BASES

HALUK ÖZMEN *

Abstract: The aim of this study is to determine the conceptions and/or alternative conceptions of preservice chemistry teachers on acids and bases by using a two-tier multiple choice test. *Acids and Bases Concept Test (ABCT)* was used in the study. ABCT consisted of 23 two-tier multiple choice questions related to acids and bases and was taken from the literature. The first tier of the test included 2 answer choices and tests the students' knowledge as a multiple-choice test. And the second tier consisted of 4 answer-choices asking students to justify their answers in the first tier. The second tier of the test involved multiple-choice options including students' alternative conceptions obtained from the literature review. The ABCT was administered to 36 preservice chemistry teachers during 2015-2016 fall semester. Collected data showed that although all of the teacher candidates had several chemistry courses and were in the last year of their training period, they had some alternative conceptions related to acids and bases concepts which are the most basic concepts of the chemistry curricula.

Key Word: *Acids and bases, preservice chemistry teachers, two tier multiple-choice question*

1. Introduction

Chemistry is a difficult topic for many students (Chang & Chiu, 2005; Lorenzo, 2005; Taber & Coll, 2002). Abstract nature of chemistry concepts, difficulty of language of chemistry, students' lack of formal

* English Language and Literature Department
Philological Faculty, State University of Tetova
[florim.ajdini@unite.edu.mk]



operational development, and students' poor visualization ability may be the most important reasons for this (Ben-Zvi, Eylon & Silberstein, 1988; Gabel, Samuel & Hunn, 1987). Taber and Coll (2002) note that because of the abstract nature of chemistry concepts, they require students to construct mental images of things they cannot see, and so find it hard to relate to. And also, several researchers report that chemistry is described at three levels which are macroscopic, submicroscopic, and symbolic and only one of them can be observed (Johnstone, 1999; Nelson, 1999; Tsaparlis, 1997). Results of the studies report that students have difficulties to associate the macroscopic and microscopic phenomena and this is also a source of difficulty for them (Rahayu & Kita, 2010; Sirhan, 2007). Based on these difficulties, students at all levels do not learn chemistry concepts as expected level and have different conceptions that are different from scientifically accepted ones and may hinder the learning of other scientific concepts (Palmer, 1999). Such student's views are called in the literature as common sense understanding, alternative frameworks, alternative conceptions, preconceptions, prescientific conceptions or misconceptions (Özmen, 2004); the most being misconceptions and alternative conceptions. Although students' views are different from accepted scientific ones (Özmen, 2004; Pakua, Treagust & Waldrip, 2005), they are logical, sensible, and valuable from the students' point of view. Therefore, in this study, the term *alternative conceptions* will be used to refer students' ideas.

Acids and bases are two important concepts in chemistry curricula and students begin to come across with these concepts from as early as upper primary school to various stages of secondary school and universities. And also, these concepts have essential importance for daily life because numerous daily life events are related to acids and bases and can be explained by the interaction of acids and bases. Therefore, acid and base are two of the most attractive concepts in chemistry for researchers to investigate students' understanding, conceptions, and success. In the literature there have been made several studies related to these concepts and most of the results show that students at different levels cannot be successful in desired level and have several alternative conceptions (Bradley & Mosimege, 1998; Demircioğlu, Özmen & Ayas, 2004; Nakhleh & Kra-

ıcık, 1994; Özmen, Demircioğlu & Coll, 2009; Sisovic & Bojovic, 2000). Although there have been made several studies, it is not able to encountered studies aiming to determine preservice chemistry teachers' understanding about these concepts. Because teachers will teach the way they learn, it is important to determine their understanding and alternative conceptions about these concepts. Based on this idea, it is intended to determine preservice chemistry teachers' understanding and alternative conceptions on acids and bases concepts.

2. Methodology

2.1. Sample

The sample of the study consists of 36 preservice chemistry teachers in their last year in Chemistry Division of Fatih Faculty of Education at Karadeniz Technical University in Turkey. They took a lot of course chemistry in context during their education such as General Chemistry-I, General Chemistry-II, Analytical Chemistry, Organic Chemistry, and more and all of these courses included acids and bases concepts in content. They are in their last year and there is no acids and bases content course in this level.

JSHS|117

2.2. Instrument

Acids and Bases Concept Test (ABCT) was used in the study to collect data. ABCT consisted of 23 two-tier multiple choice questions related to acids and bases and was taken from the literature (Sevinç, 2015). The first tier of the test included 2 answer choices - true and false - and tests the students' knowledge. And the second tier consisted of four possible reasons to justify their answers in the first tier. The second tier of the test involved multiple-choice options including students' alternative conceptions obtained from the literature review. These reasons include one scientifically acceptable answer and three alternative conceptions reported in the literature. The reliability coefficient of the ABCT based on Cronbach's alpha formula was found to be 0.851. The ABCT was administered 36 preservice chemistry teachers during 2015-2016 fall semester. Students were given 35 min to complete the test. One of the questions used in the study is given below.

Q6. All aqueous solutions of both acids and bases do not conduct electric current.

*A. True *B. False*

Reason:

(1) While acids are ionized in aqueous solutions, bases do not. So, while acids conduct electric current, bases do not.

(2) Because all of the acids are strong, their aqueous solutions conduct electric current. But, bases are not strong, so they do not conduct electric current.

**(3) Both acids and bases are ionized in aqueous solutions. So, acids and bases conduct electric current.*

(4) Electric conductivity is based on the pH value of acids or bases.

**: Correct response*

2.3. Data analysis

Responses of the preservice teachers for both tiers of the questions were analyzed as percentages. And, because the second tier of the questions contained the possible alternative conceptions, these conceptions were also determined.

3. Results and Discussion

Preservice chemistry teachers' responses for the both tiers of the questions are given in Table 1.

Table 1.

Preservice chemistry teachers' responses for the both tiers of the questions

Questions	Content	Reason (%)				Total (%)
		(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	
1	T	8.3	33.3	5.5	--	47.1
	F	2.7	5.5	52.7	--	60.9
2	T	8.3	8.3	<i>30.5</i>	--	47.1
	F	45.6	5.5	5.5	--	56.6
3	T	83.3	2.7	--	5.5	91.0
	F	2.7	8.3	5.5	8.3	24.8
4	T	<i>16.6</i>	66.6	8.3	5.5	97.0
	F	2.7	2.7	--	8.3	12.7
5	T	8.3	8.3	5.5	5.5	27.6
	F	58.3	8.3	8.3	8.3	83.2
6	T	8.3	8.3	8.3	5.5	30.4
	F	<i>13.8</i>	8.3	69.4	2.7	94.2
7	T	2.7	8.3	5.5	63.8	80.3
	F	8.3	8.3	5.5	8.3	30.4
8	T	5.5	5.5	8.3	5.5	24.8
	F	8.3	75	8.3	2.7	94.3
9	T	5.5	8.3	<i>13.8</i>	2.7	30.3
	F	8.3	5.5	77.7	5.5	97
10	T	2.7	2.7	88.8	--	94.2
	F	8.3	2.7	8.3	5.5	24.8
11	T	5.5	8.3	<i>25</i>	5.5	44.3
	F	8.3	5.5	8.3	63.8	85.9
12	T	5.5	8.3	72.2	5.5	91.5
	F	8.3	<i>11.1</i>	8.3	5.5	33.2
13	T	5.5	<i>16.6</i>	8.3	5.5	35.9
	F	69.4	5.5	8.3	5.5	88.7
14	T	5.5	8.3	5.5	5.5	24.8
	F	8.3	80.5	8.3	--	97.1
15	T	2.7	8.3	75	5.5	91.5
	F	8.3	2.7	8.3	5.5	24.8
16	T	5.5	8.3	5.5	5.5	24.8
	F	86.1	5.5	2.7	--	94.3
17	T	5.5	8.3	2.7	69.4	85.9
	F	<i>16.6</i>	5.5	5.5	8.3	35.9
18	T	5.5	8.3	2.7	5.5	22.0
	F	8.3	80.5	2.7	5.5	97.0
19	T	5.5	80.5	2.7	5.5	94.2
	F	8.3	5.5	8.3	2.7	24.8
20	T	5.5	8.3	5.5	5.5	24.8
	F	2.7	86.1	2.7	2.7	94.2
21	T	2.7	8.3	5.5	5.5	22.0
	F	80.5	2.7	8.3	--	91.5
22	T	5.5	--	8.3	8.3	22.1
	F	<i>16.6</i>	2.7	72.2	5.5	97.0
23	T	8.3	2.7	5.5	--	16.5
	F	5.5	--	88.8	2.7	97.0

T: True, F: False; Note: The correct responses are written in bold while alternative conceptions are written in italic.

As seen from the table 1, correct response combinations of preservice chemistry teachers vary from 52.7% to 88.8%. On the other hand, they have some alternative conceptions. Alternative conceptions determined in this study are given in Table 2.

Table 2. Alternative conceptions of the preservice chemistry teachers

Alternative conceptions	Percentage
When pH increases, acidity also increases.	33.3
PH is only the measure of the acidity.	30.5
If acid is added into the base, neutralization occurs and the pH value of the formed solution is 7	25.0
Acids melt everything.	16.6
All acids and bases conduct electric current the same	16.6
Acid rains accelerate the ripening of fruit	16.6
A strong acid is always a concentrated acid	16.6
While acids are ionized in aqueous solutions, bases do not.	13.8
Salts do not have a value of pH	13.8
Strong acids can react with all metals to form H ₂ gas	11.1

As seen from the table 2, ten alternative conceptions were determined in the study and these alternative conceptions are the similar as literature (Demircioğlu, Özmen & Ayas, 2004; Nakhleh & Krajcik, 1994; Özmen, Demircioğlu & Coll, 2009; Sevinç, 2015; Sisovic & Bojovic, 2000). Although the ratios of the alternative conceptions vary from 2.7% to 33.3%, table 2 only includes greater than about 10%. These results show that although preservice chemistry teachers' conceptions are high percent, they also have some alternative conception related to acids and bases. Although the ratios of their alternative conceptions are low, they are in the last year of their training and will not have the chance to change their alternative conceptions. So, this is an important data for us to alert preservice teachers on their alternative conception to give them an opportunity for changing them.


4. Conclusion

Students preexisting beliefs influence how students learn new scientific knowledge and play an essential role in subsequent learning (Tsai, 1996). Collected data showed that although all of the teacher candidates had several chemistry courses and were in last year of their training period, they had some alternative conceptions related to acids and bases concepts which are the most basic concepts of the chemistry curricula. Literature reports several alternative conceptions related to acids and bases at all levels, but that preservice teachers have them is more important than others. Because, if teachers and/or preservice teachers have alternative conceptions, it is possible to say that their students will also have alternative conceptions. Therefore, it is extra important to determine teachers' and/or preservice teachers' alternative conceptions. On the other hand, changing these alternative conceptions to scientifically acceptable ones is also as important as determining them. Based on the results of such studies, researchers, teachers, and teacher educators should develop new and alternative instructional techniques to change and/or to prevent students' alternative conceptions.

References

- Ben-Zvi, R., Eylon, B. & Silberstein, J. (1988). Theories, principles and laws. *Education in Chemistry*, 25, 89-92.
- Bradley J. D. & Mosimege M.D. (1998). Alternative conceptions in acids and bases: a comparative study of student teachers with different chemistry backgrounds. *South African Journal of Chemistry*, 51, 137-147.
- Chang, S.-N. & Chiu, M.-H. (2005). The development of authentic assessments to investigate ninth graders' scientific literacy: in the case of scientific cognition concerning the concepts of chemistry and physics. *International Journal of Science and Mathematics Education*, 3(1), 117-140.
- Demircioğlu G., Özmen H. & Ayas A. (2004). Some concept alternative conceptions encountered in chemistry: A research on acid and base. *Educational Science: Theory and Practice*, 4, 73-80.
- Gabel, D., Samuel, K. & Hunn, D. (1987). Understanding the particulate nature of matter. *Journal of Chemical Education*, 64(8), 695-697.
- Johnstone, A. H. (1999). The nature of chemistry. *Education in Chemistry*, 36, 45-47.

- Lorenzo, M. (2005). The development, implementation and evaluation of a problem solving heuristic. *International Journal of Science and Mathematics Education*, 3(1), 33–58.
- Nakhleh, M.B. & Krajcik, J.S. (1994). Influence of levels of information as presented by different technologies on students' understanding of acid, base, and pH concepts. *Journal of Research in Science Teaching*, 34, 1077-1096.
- Nelson, P. G. (1999). Levels of description in chemistry. *Journal of Chemical Education*, 76, 16–22.
- Özmen, H. (2004). Some students' misconceptions in chemistry: A literature review of chemical bonding. *Journal of Science Education and Technology*, 13(2), 147–159.
- Özmen, H., Demircioğlu, G. & Coll., R.K. (2009). A comparative study of the effects of a concept mapping enhanced laboratory experience on Turkish high school students' understanding of acid-base chemistry, *International Journal of Science and Mathematics Education*, 7, 1-24.
- Palmer D. (1999). Exploring the link between students' scientific and non-scientific conceptions. *Science Education*, 83, 639 - 653.
- Rahayu, S. & Kita, M. (2010). An analysis of Indonesian and Japanese students' understandings of macroscopic and submicroscopic levels of representing matter and its changes. *International Journal of Science and Mathematics Education*, 8(4), 667–688.
- Sevinç, B. (2015). Asitler ve bazlar konusunda REACT stratejisine göre materyallerin geliştirilmesi ve etkililiğinin araştırılması, *Doktora Tezi*, KTÜ Eğitim Bilimleri Enstitüsü, Trabzon.
- Sirhan, G. (2007). Learning difficulties in chemistry: An overview. *Journal of Turkish Science Education*, 4(2), 2–20.
- Sisovic D. & Bojovic S. (2000) Approaching the concepts of acids and bases by cooperative learning. *Chemistry Education: Research and Practice in Europe*, 1, 263-275.
- Taber, K.S. & Coll, R.K. (2002). Bonding. In: Gilbert J.K., De Jong O., Justi R., Treagust D.F., van Driel J.H. (Eds.) *Chemical education: towards research-based practice* (pp: 213-234). Kluwer, Dordrecht.
- Tsaparlis, G. (1997). Atomic and molecular structure in chemical education: A critical analysis from various perspectives of science education. *Journal of Chemical Education*, 74, 922–925.



RE-WRITING IN THE POST-COLONIAL CRITICS- A LITERARY STRATEGY WITH A CULTURAL MEANING




MARIJANA KLEMENČIČ *



Abstract: The Feminist and Post-Colonial orientation of the writers in the second half of the 20th century, resulted in the actualization of re-writing of narratives- classics from the past. These re-writings are diachronically located in the last five decades, from the 1970's till today and the focus is on the contemporary women's re-writing, in which narratives from the past are rewritten from a woman's perspective in the Feminist Critics or from the perspective of the colonized in the Post-Colonial Critics with a clear aim, to criticize the existing male or imperialistic dominance. These re-writings are formed as a specific cultural and emancipatory acts and the re-writing from a literary act, becomes an important cultural and critical strategy. The novel *Wide Sargasso Sea* by Jean Rhys is part of the Post-Colonial Critics and re-writings. This novel is an example of the contemporary women's re-writing by which the re-writing becomes a tool for intervention in the canon and has a great impact on the de-centralization, de-universalization and demystification of the literary canon.

Key Word: *Women's Re-Writing, Post-Colonial Critics, Cultural and Emancipatory Acts*



1. Introduction

Re-writing is an act of writing again or writing back. From the 1970's till today, a specific form of re-writing has emerged. This re-writing it is a contemporary women's re-writing of classical novels, with a specific aim, to make a de-universalization and demystification

* JOY M&O – Skopje [marijance.a@gmail.com]

of the literary canon. These re-writings are formed as specific cultural and emancipatory acts and the re-writing from a literary act, becomes an important cultural and critical strategy. Narratives from the past are rewritten from the perspective of the colonized/marginalized character and in doing so, re-writing becomes a strategy, an intervention and a tool for social change of the status of the colonized. It represents a rebellion towards the imperialistic view of the world presented in the classical novels. By giving voice to the colonized and marginalized characters post-colonial writers put the colonized/marginalized characters from the margins into the centre of the cultural debate.

Re-writing is a literary, cultural and an emancipatory act and it is a product of the cultural memory. By the re-writing a deconstruction of the colonial discourse is being done. In order to constitute a decolonized post-colonial awareness, de-universalisation and decentralization of the construction of the colonizer and its values is an imperative. By challenging the authorship of the traditional representations of the colonized and marginalized people and their roles in society in the past, the re-writing enables the post-colonial writers to change and correct the texts from the past. In doing so, re-writing becomes a strategy, an intervention and a tool for changing the status of the colonized people in society. Lideke Plate in *Transforming Memories in Contemporary Women's Re-writing* explains that *Women's re-writing is one change which transforms the narratives which served to shape cultural identity and to carve a space to women writers for the expression of female experience within literary tradition*. The focus is on the contemporary women's re-writing, in which narratives from the past are rewritten from a woman's perspective in the Feminist Critics or from the perspective of the colonized in the Post-Colonial Critics with a clear aim, to criticize the existing male or imperialistic dominance and to present things from a different perspective in order to initiate a change in our perception of the representations of the colonized and the colonizer in the imperialistic texts.

2. Jean Rhys- *Wide Sargasso Sea*; Jean Rhys's retelling of the life of Jane Eyre's Bertha in *Wide Sargasso Sea*

In the extraordinary novel *Wide Sargasso Sea*, Jean Rhys re-imagines and re-writes Charlotte Brontë's—*madwoman in the attic* restoring her rightful name and giving her a history- a past, a voice and identity. Rhys transforms this unsympathetic character into a decolonized and articulated woman and transforms our understanding of the novel *Jane Eyre*. By doing so, re-writing functions not only as a response, as a —writing back to the literary canon, but as a creative critical engagement with the canonical text and its presentations. The re-writing challenges the canon to correct the wrongs and omissions of the representations of the characters in the classical novels. *Wide Sargasso Sea*, as a re-writing of the novel *Jane Eyre* from Charlotte Brontë from the 19th century functions as a critical tool for demystification of the Literary Canon.

Jean Rhys explains that in the novel *Jane Eyre* Bertha Mason, Rochester's wife who is a Creole, a woman from the colonies, is presented as a repulsive woman, who either screams or howls and acts like an animal. Repulsed by this presentation of the Creole Women, Rhys decides to write a novel in which she firstly renames this "Bertha character" into Antoinette Cosway and gives her an identity and presents her with a history and a past. Antoinette is now a civilized, articulated and a decolonized subject, who is completely aware of the situation in which she is being put and acts accordingly. By the re-writing the suppressed and marginalized Bertha is given a voice and is enabled to tell her own personal story, which changes our overall perception of the past and the Euro-centered representations of the marginalized people in the classical novels.

By giving Jane Eyre's Bertha an origin and a history, it is also significant that Rhys gives to this colonized and silenced character a voice. *Jane Eyre* is narrated in the first person by Jane herself and *Wide Sargasso Sea* is told from the perspectives of three different narrators: Antoinette, Rochester, and Grace Poole. The narrative framework of Rhys's text is an example of what Hutcheon refers to as —*ironic inversion, in that Jane is displaced from her capacity as principal narrator by some of the characters that did not have narrating*

roles in Jane Eyre The narrative structure of *Wide Sargasso Sea* allows Rhys to –recover the hidden and buried stories// of these previously marginal characters (15). Julie Sanders argues in *Adaptation and Appropriation*, –we need to view literary adaptation and appropriation from this more positive vantage point, seeing it as creating new cultural and aesthetic possibilities that stand alongside the texts which have inspired them, enriching rather than robbing them. (10).

Edward Said in *Culture and Imperialism*, 1994, emphasizes that: *The Empire was constituted through the narrations and the novel was not simply a reflection of the non-literary political happenings in the Empire, on the contrary it has in advance created the conceptual imperialistic ideology and has embedded it in the metropolis. (11).*

The novel *Jane Eyre* is based upon the Euro-centered representation and beliefs of the Centre and Margins, whereas the novel *Wide Sargasso Sea* does the opposite, it tells and re-tells the story of the marginalized and the colonized. According to Linda Hutcheon – *The re-writing is not naive, neutral or objective. To initiate a process of re-writing can not be a random act, it is on the contrary, a designed manifesto with a strong motivation which aims to produce an effect, among the readers, in the literary hierarchy and in the cultural field.*

With the deconstruction of the classics, the re-writing gives a new political, ideological and cultural dimension, and as a literary act has an influence in the culture, cultural memory, politics and emancipation of women and the emancipation of the colonized people after their decolonization. The re-writing from a literary act becomes a cultural tool which contributes for the allocation of the margin and centre in the global cultural map.

In the postcolonial context, rewriting is associated with the theoretical approach toward the study of postcolonial literatures suggested by Bill Ashcroft, Gareth Griffiths, and Helen Tiffin in *The Empire Writes Back: Theory and Practice in Post-Colonial Literatures* (1989). Griffiths and Tiffin assert that postcolonial re-writings can be understood according to a model by which the- *Empire writes back to the imperial centre*. According to Bill Ashcroft, Gareth Griffiths, and Helen Tiffin *writers rewrite canonical works –with a view to restructure European realities’ in post-colonial terms, not simply*

by reversing the hierarchical order, but by interrogating the philosophical assumptions on which that order was based. In this sense, postcolonial rewritings of canonical texts can be understood as a form of counter-discourse - a discourse which runs counter to the established canon.(32). This conception of counter-discourse has important applications for postcolonial theory. It –suggests that *no discourse is ever a monologue...it always presupposes a horizon of competing, contrary utterances against which it asserts its own energies.*Tiffin explains that *there exists –a postcolonial literary tradition that is specifically interested in rewriting the fictions of...Empire.* (33).

In *Decolonising Fictions*, Tiffin and Diana Brydon explain that *–postcolonial writers write =decolonising fictions or–texts that write back against imperial fictions and yet simultaneously express a desire to replace the –old imperial fictions of the center and its margin with a more progressive model of –cross-cultural interactions. Rewriting on the other hand challenges notions of authority and priority, suggesting that derivations need not be derivative, nor works that appear second, secondary.*(55).

JSHS|127

In his work *Translating Literature: Practice and Theory in a Comparative Literature Context*, André Lefevere argues that translation is a form of rewriting, in that a translation aims to represent the text to which it refers. A translation is –a *culture's window on the world* (11), according to Lefevere, in that –*translations project an image of the work that is translated and, through it, of the world that work belongs to.* (125). Translation can thus be seen as a process of acculturation, because translation is in the contact zone of two literary traditions, in the space where the writer and the translator come together. When one culture is considered superior to another, as with colonialism, the exchange between the culture of the colony and that of the metropolis is unequal. According to Lefevere–*translations usurp...the authority of their source texts and confer that authority on the language of their target culture, such as when Shakespeare is translated into a so-called minor language* (122-23). Lefevere describes a process called –*reverse translation, where postcolonial writers choose to write in the language of the colonizer in order to appropriate the authority of the colonizer's culture* (118-19). In re-

writing canonical texts from the cultural and literary tradition of the West, post-colonial writers challenge the authority of the classics and the languages and cultures to which they belong to. Rhys transforms the plot, the characters and narrative structures of the source text, and reevaluates the canonical text and the values and assumptions it has promoted. In *A Theory of Adaptation*, Linda Hutcheon defines *adaptations as –deliberate, announced, and extended revisitations of prior works.*(11). Though adaptation is often conceived of as involving a shift in genre or medium, Hutcheon argues that adaptation also occurs when the context or frame of reference shifts, such as when a story is told from another perspective. (7-8). In this view, rewriting can be seen as a form of adaptation. Hutcheon wants to disrupt such readings of adapted texts by showing the ways in which adaptation is –*a process of making the adapted material one's own.* (20). Hutcheon explains that *adaptations across cultures, almost always, there is an accompanying shift in the political valence from the adapted text to the 'transcultured' adaptation.* (15). Lefevere and Susan Bassnett use the term –*rewriting to refer to the cases when a translated text is transported into a new culture, as the new context invariably means that the translation is used by different authorities and for different purposes.*(14). In all cases re-writing from a literary strategy, becomes a specific cultural and emancipatory act and an important cultural and critical strategy for de-universalization and demystification of the literary canon.

3. Conclusion

Re-writing is a literary, cultural and an emancipatory act and it is a product of the cultural memory. By the re-writing a deconstruction of the colonial discourse is being done and the novel *Wide Sargasso Sea* is based upon the post-colonial pattern of rewriting as a counter-discursive response and is part of the post-colonial re-writing. Rhys's novel is written as a response to the novel *Jane Eyre*, and its intention, as the author's statements in letters and interviews point out, was primarily corrective. In creating a history of the colonized subject, Bertha, and presenting her as an articulated and a de-colonised woman, Rhys's novel challenges the original narrative and her text refuses a feminist reading of *Jane Eyre* by showing the ways in which Jane's individual development comes at the price of Bertha's oppres-

sion. Rhys aimed to reevaluate Brontë's novel and its presentations of the people from the colonies and she has succeeded in her intention, because her novel has changed the way *Jane Eyre* is both read and taught in the academic circles today. In her essay, *The Sisterhood of Jane Eyre and Antoinette Cosway*, Elizabeth R. Baer suggests, *Rhys has commandeered Jane Eyre as her sequel and in doing so, forever 'revises' our reading of that text by the creation of hers.* (132). In this context, *Wide Sargasso Sea* is a classic example of rewriting according to Lefevere's use of the term, given the extent to which it is paradoxically both dependent on *Jane Eyre* as a source text and yet at the same time has itself reshaped its source text. As Hilkovitz Andrea Katherine states: *By engaging the canonical texts critically, the post-colonial writers not only call into question the cultural assumptions at their core, but they also force a critical re-reading of the canon, engaging readers in a dialogue that ultimately serves to enrich both works*(10.)


Rhys wrote of her reasons for rewriting *Jane Eyre* in a letter to Selma Vaz Dias, *—The creole in Charlotte Brontë's novel is a lay-figure, repulsive which does not matter, and not once alive which does. She is necessary to the plot, but always shrieks, howls, laughs horribly, attacks all and sundry off stage. For me (and for you I hope) she must be right on stage. She must be at least plausible with a past...*(114). Rhys explained *—I am fighting mad to write her story.* (115). Rhys's motivations for writing *Wide Sargasso Sea* comes mainly from her own dissatisfaction with Brontë's portrayal of the creole lunatic through the figure of Bertha Mason and her desire to right the wrongs done to this character. Interviewed by Elizabeth Vreeland, Rhys explained, *—I thought I'd try to write her a life.* (268) In addition to her desire to create a life for Bertha, Rhys also complained in a letter that *Jane Eyre represented —only one side—the English side.*(297).

Rhys engages some of the issues raised in the Brontë's text and hoped to introduce a distinct political and moral perspective into her rewriting by emphasizing more strongly than Brontë the issues of English imperialism and colonial Jamaica. In this sense, Rhys's efforts to rewrite *Jane Eyre* as *Wide Sargasso Sea* can be seen as an attempt to re-right a number of injustices. *Wide Sargasso Sea* is part of these re-

writings which are formed as specific cultural and emancipatory acts and therein the re-writing from a literary act, becomes an important cultural and critical strategy which changes our perceptions of the representations of the colonized people in the past.

References

1. Ashroft, Bill, Griffiths, Gareth and Tiffin, Helen *The Empire Writes Back :Theory and Practice in Post-Colonial Literatures*, New York: Routledge, 1989
2. Baer, Elizabeth R. "The Sisterhood of Jane Eyre and Antoinette Cosway." *The Voyage In: Fictions of Female Development*. Ed. Elizabeth Abel, Marianne Hirsch, and Elizabeth Langland. Hanover: U P of New England, 1983
3. Brontë, Charlotte, *Jane Eyre Norton Critical Edition*, 3rd ed. New York: Norton, 2000
4. Gilbert and Gubar. *The Woman Writer and the Anxiety of Authorship. Infection in the Sentence The Madwoman in the Attic: The Woman Writer and the Nineteenth-Century Literary Imagination* second edition. 1979
5. Hilkevitz Andrea Katherine. *Telling Otherwise: Rewriting History, Gender, and Genre in Africa and the African Diaspora*, 2011
7. Sanders, Julie. *Adaptation and Appropriation*. New York: Routledge, 2006. Print.
8. Lefevere, Andre. *Translation, Rewriting, and the Manipulation of Literary Fame*. London & New York : Routledge, 1992
9. Lefevere, André. *Translating Literature: Practice and Theory in a Comparative Literature Context* (New York: MLA 1992) 138.21
10. Plate, Liedeke. *Transforming Memories in Contemporary Women's Rewriting*. Palgrave Macmillan, New York, 2011
11. Rhys, Jean. *Wide Sargasso Sea*. Penguin Books, London, 1997
12. Rhys, Jean *The Letters of Jean Rhys*, eds. Francis Wyndham and Diana Melly New York: Viking, 1984
13. Tiffin, Helen and Brydon, Diana. *Decolonising fictions*. Dangaroo, University of Michigan. 1993
14. Veena Jain, "Jean Rhys's Wide Sargasso Sea: A Re-Writing of History," *Women's Writing: Text and Context*, ed. Jasbir Jain, Jaipur: Rawat, 1996



CITIZENSHIP EDUCATION ABOUT DEMOCRACY AND ISLAM AN EXAMPLE OF INTERDISCIPLINARY TEACHING MATERIALS FOR HIGH SCHOOL STUDENTS




MICHAEL AMEEN KRAMER *



Abstract: On the basis of the Islamic sources with all its values and principles, it can be concluded that an Islamic rule within the Islamic system of values could actually support a democratic ruling system, which of course is in compliance with human and equal rights and most importantly with the human reason. The Qur'an, the Sunnah of the Prophet and Islamic mechanism like the vow of fidelity (Arab. Al Bai'a) as basis for democratic elections or the Consultation (Arab. Shura) and other values and principles can be found in Islamic theory, as long someone follows the primary sources first and not the traditions, which arose after the Prophet's death. Since there is no consistent political theory in Islam, but the first leadership personalities have been selected, it can be concluded that in compliance with the Quran 4:58 competent, fair and kind persons should be voted for political offices in order to secure all principles in terms of the common good. The democratic principles found in Islam should be taught in school to ensure peaceful coexistence between more or less religious citizens.

Key Word: *Education, democracy, Islam*



1. The Project "Citizenship Education and Islam" and its Aims

The aim of the project "Citizenship Education and Islam" (CEAI) at the Institute of Islamic Studies in Vienna (University of Vienna) is the promotion of intercultural values that are composed of the Austrian Christian cultural history and the traditional religious attitude of Muslims in Austria. The CEAI-project wants to focus especially on

* Institute of Islamic Studies at the University of Vienna
[michael.kramer@univie.ac.at]

young Muslims and enable a content-related objective and personally emotional confrontation with two main questions: Which are the possibilities of an individual authentic participation in the Austrian society and in how far can Islam contribute to the identity building of young Muslims?

In this context the identity creation and the citizen consciousness have to be considered in order to guarantee the participation in the creation of the future of all children and adolescents in Austria and in that way build a solid ground for social peace. CEAI wants to give clear definitions and present different values, precepts, general principles and norms of democracy and Islam. However, democracy is not only to be considered in terms of a ruling system, but in connection with the Austrian constitution it is compared with a security of the rule of law, the protection of universal human rights, the permit of plurality and pluralism, the guarantee for peace, security and freedom.

The Austrian society including parents, teachers, other legal guardians, pastoral workers and imams has to support these individuals in becoming full members with regard to Austrian and European values and standards and Islamic values and principles, as well. A theological fundamental understanding of Islam has to be given by using religious and social values, principles and rules. This understanding is accompanied by the pluralist, libertarian and social conception of Europe that fulfils the self-image of a denominational view on Islam.

In reliance to the *17 Berlin theses of the "Muslim forum Germany"* the following text will first give a short overview of the key points of a humanist understanding of Islam that many German Islamic scientists contributed to, and that the Institute for Islamic Studies in Vienna independently embraced for further consideration. In the course of CEAI these will be developed on the basis of further specialist texts and will be arranged in teaching material that will serve for five to six lessons of an interdisciplinary school education in History, Political Education and Law and Islamic Religious Education for High School Students in the age between 14 to 18.

The Key Points of a Humanistic Understanding of Islam:

<p>1) Understand of Qur'an in the historic context: Qur'an is not free of history, and we should not blindly follow our fathers and forefathers. <i>"Why, even though their forefathers knew nothing, and were devoid of all guidance?" (Qur'an 5:104-105)</i></p>	<p>2) God created plurality: Get to know each other! <i>"O men! Behold, We have created you all out of a male and a female, and have made you into nations and tribes, so that you might come to know one another [...]" (Qur'an 49:13)</i></p>	<p>3) Timeless ethic-moralic principles: justice, mercy, solidarity, respect, humanity, etc. <i>"On Him depend all creatures in the heaven and on earth; [and] every day He manifests Himself in yet another [wondrous] way." (Qur'an 55:29)</i></p>
<p>4) God is the only truth: (exclusivism, inclusivism, pluralism - Muslim: submission to God <i>"[...] use your discernment, and do not - out of a desire for the fleeting gains of this worldly life - say unto anyone who offers you the greeting of peace, "You are not a believer" [...]" (Qur'an 4:94)</i></p>	<p>5) Freedom of Religion: freedom of opinion, of conscience and of thought <i>"There is no compulsion in religion. [...]" (Qur'an 2:256)</i> <i>"Unto you, your moral law, and unto me, mine!" (Qur'an 109:6)</i></p>	<p>6) Right of self-determination of women: equality - culture, patriarchal structures <i>"As for anyone - be it man or woman - who does righteous deeds, and is a believer withal - him shall We most certainly cause to live a good life [...]" (Qur'an 16:97)</i></p>
<p>7) Separation from Religion und Governance BUT political participation. <i>"NOW [as for you, O Muhammad,] We have not sent you otherwise than to mankind at large, to be a herald of glad tidings and a warner; but most people do not understand [this]" (Qur'an 34:28)</i></p>	<p>8) A peaceful religion: Islam is the counterpole of force and evil created by human weakness. <i>"AND [know that] God invites [man] unto the abode of peace, and guides him that wills [to be guided] onto a straight way." (Qur'an 10:25)</i></p>	<p>9) The pursuit of knowledge in culture, art, music, sport, philosophy, chemistry, astrology, medicine, religion, etc.. <i>"Read in the name of the Sustainer, who has created." (Qur'an 96:1)</i></p>

The Tenth Point "Democracy as part of a value system" will be taken out for presenting the specialist text of the CEAI-project about "Democracy and Islam" in the following, to understand that the historical-critical method shapes more an Islam liberated from external cultural influences, better known as "Islam of European coinage" or "European-Islam", which is influenced by Ulema in the European Fiqh-Council through *fiqh al aqalliyat* (Islamic Minority Jurisprudence). The societal situation and structure in Europe is different to

Muslim Countries all over the world, and therefore the handling with the Muslim challenges in Europe should not be ruled by some cultural groups connected with their original homeland. The challenges need to be faced from within the European countries, within their legal frameworks and within their educational system, especially to eliminate dangerous ideologies against the liberal democratic state.

For developing an Islam in Europe the idea of teaching the subject “critical thinking” could lead Muslims around the world to connect their religion with the loyalty to the state of residence. In this spirit the following part will show the result of analyzing Islamic sources in a historical-critical method.

2.The Leadership of the Islamic Community by the Prophet

The Islam developed in Arabic tribal societies, which were determined by anarchic and separatist tendencies. Back then the Prophet knew that it would be illusionary to replace these societies by a totally new society and therefore he aimed at the federation of Arabic clans and strains. Within a short time the Prophet was able, with the association of different Bedouin tribes, to extend the Islamic state system from Medina to west and central Arabia. The Prophet was the leader, the “messenger of God”. To be sure of his supporters he demanded a vow of fidelity (Arab. Al Bai’a) from the first Muslims. Therefore he used a pre-Islamic tribal ritual which was a trust pledge towards the leader. He repeated this ritual on special occasion such as the *Aqaba Promises*.

The first vow was a ceremonial vow of faith followed by an oral vow referring to the fundamental requirements of Islam such as to serve no other deity besides God (Arab. Tauheed), commit neither theft, nor adultery, nor childmurder and to utter no monstrous falsehoods. This vow (Quran 60:12) is called “*Bai’a al Nisa*” (oath of the women), because during the conquest of Mecca the Prophet put women upon a very similar oath. One year later in 622 the Prophet again put other Muslims upon his oath. With this oath the Muslims made a promise to defend the Prophet with their own lives, if it was necessary. Additionally, he demanded the godly oath (Quran 48:18).

Although the Prophet was able to come into power with the pre-Islamic rituals and strict principles and in that way be an exemplary

citizen and leader, he did not left behind any political system after he died. This was the trigger for many following conflicts within the Muslim societies.

3. Tradition of Ruling after the Death of the Prophet

After the death of the Prophet in 632 the first disputes over the emulation started. There had to be an election of the deputy. For that reason a larger group chose the first Caliph *Abu Bakr*, probably because in the lifetime of Mohammad he had been determined by the Prophet to be the leader of his parting pilgrimage and was the prayer leader (Arab. Imam) during the Prophet's illness. In 634 after only two years in office, Abu Bakr determined the second Caliph Umar Ibn Al Khat-tab. He was then followed by Uthman Ibn Affan and Ali Ibn Abi Talib. This very day it is not clear, if the decision making then was right. While the Sunnites believe that Abu Bakr was the first Caliph, the Shiites believe Imam Ali Ibn Abi Talib to be the first Caliph, because from their point of view the Prophet determined Ali as his deputy in Ghadir Chum.

Most of the first Muslim leaders made advantage of the ritual trust pledge and took the Bai'a as a legitimization for their rule in order to obtain a guaranteed loyalty from the people and at the same time to find out who was not acknowledging the leadership. The leader had to take the responsibility over the people. If the leader could not meet the requirements he was deprived of his claim to leadership. Nowadays this kind of ritual is no more existing and would not be of legal force, although it is a certain foundation for elections in terms of approving or rejecting the political parties, the presidents and chancellors.

JSHS|135

„Arrogance, hypocrisy and egoism are the devil's arrows in your hearts, wherefore a strategy against these attacks should be considered.”

(Abd al Qādir al Dschilani/ Muhtar Holland, Al Fath ur Rabbani, 150)

In the following there will be a classification of some values and principles referring to the idea of society and community, good life and good leadership from the perspective of Muslims. All these aspects are inevitable for the establishment of a democratic system and are

part of the Islamic system of values, although this does not reflect nowadays' reality in many Muslim countries.

4. The Principle of Values as a Political Theory

The development of democracy in countries with Muslim majority societies is very similar in their chronology to western countries. Even before the 20th century some of the principles and values of the present democratic system had a great significance for the social life and conduct of many Muslims around the world. Not least because of the *Prophet Mohammad* who lived after these principles and values, which can be found in the Quran. However, there is no exact and consistent creation of a political theory in the Quran nor in the Sunnah. These two primary sources of law contain certain values and principles: the principle of justice of the ruler, mutual consultation, the equal opportunity and universal equality, active participation in political life, critical thinking and education.

Due to the fundamental principles of the Islamic teaching Muslims have been ever since obliged to respect every human being and to give every person the right to individually create its life in compliance with social and legal standards. It also involves the political participation of those who have decided to take part in the decision making. Supporting political parties, sticking to political positions and voting are of great importance. In that way citizens have a guarantee of influence on the creation of laws in order to regulate the social and government structures. Back in the 7th century A.C. the establishment of Islam entailed the first democratic track in the tradition of the Prophet. To live the Islam in the 21st century in Europe it is necessary to understand the history, and therefore Muslims first of all need to read as overall principle, as the Prophet said:

„Aspiration for knowledge and lifelong education is a duty for every Muslim.“ (Ibn Madscha, Muqaddima, 17)

„ [...] and he who treads the path in search of knowledge, Allah would make that path easy, leading to Paradise. [...]“ (Muslim, Sahih Muslim, 48, 2699a)

Through school education pupils have the chance to develop and widen their skills, and to establish a reasonable, critically questioning, and well judging society. Only with these skills proactive and charitable members can form a good society. Due to the dynamic process of the modern world Muslims have to reflect the parental knowledge very critically in order to rethink traditions. Next to the parental house the school is the right place to additionally engage in dialogue, strengthen interpersonal relationships and build new relationships.

Justice and Responsibility as Supreme Principle

A responsible government takes care of its citizens and their well-being, but requires compliance with their rights and duties and respecting the rights of other citizens as well. Similar to the "Golden Rule" Islam requires from Muslims to treat fellow human beings in the same way they expect to be respected and to ensure their own rights and the rights of the others. The aim is the fair and respectful interaction between human beings. The Qur'anverse 5:8 for example underlines additionally the importance of justice in connection with piety. And the Verse 4:135 illustrates that respectful interpersonal interaction is characterized by fair conduct, no matter, if there are any differences between people. The protection of justice is regarded as a moral responsibility that applies not only to the community, but also to the state towards its citizens. The following sayings give detail of the types and levels of responsibilities Muslims have to take for all people, including related persons such as relatives, friends or enemies, etc. And it is about the responsibility and care of one Muslim towards the others what is being compared with the responsibility and care of a herdsman.

JSHS|137

Imam Ali said: „For your brother, offer your blood and your wealth; for your enemy your justice and fairness, and for people in general your joy and your good favor.“ (Al Madschlisi, Bihar al Anwar, 78, 50)

The Prophet said: "Indeed each of you is a shepherd and all of you will be questioned regarding your flock." (Al Tirmidhi, Jami' Al Tirmidhi, 23, 1705)

A herdsman takes care of his herd and he is responsible for the well-being of his herd. If he is not responsible, he will lose the milk, the wool, the skin and meat of his herd. This metaphorical illustration of the integrally related responsibility in terms of citizens in democratic societies, shows that Muslims have to be aware of their responsibility and duties when interacting with other human beings. A Muslim has to meet these expectations so that he or she can be respected in the same way by the others.

The Equality of Human Beings and the Equality of Gender

Another important democratic principle is the equality of citizens before the law. All votes in an election are equal in value. In Islam every human being is equal according to human dignity and equal opportunity and has the right to vote and participate equally in the political process. This is illustrated in the Quran 49:13 and the Prophet references to it in his *final sermon*. Furthermore, the Prophet reminded his followers to always have in mind a life in harmony and friendship with all people and never consider oneself better than other persons. This is expressed in the Quran 49:11 and in the following hadith:

The Prophet said: „The faithful gets along with every human being. There is no good in a person that never tries to get along with others or with whom people cannot get along.” (Ibn Hanbal, Musnad Ahmad, 9198)

The Prophet said: “Allah has revealed to me that you should humble yourselves to one another. One should neither hold himself above another nor transgress against another.” (Muslim, Sahih Muslim, 1, 602)

The equal relation between Muslims and non-Muslims is having an effect on the compliance with the rights of minorities, which are manifested in the *constitution of Medina*. This also amounts for the relation between men and women who are both having *equal rights* such as the right of divorce. From Qur'anverse 4:1 it is evident that the equality of men and women is based on their formation “from an only essence.” The nowadays existing equality of gender is reduced to the *women's rights movement* in the 20th century. Back then in the first communities in Mecca and Medina Muslim women were aware

of their rights and enforced them, mainly because they realized that the Quran is addressed to all Muslims regardless of gender, as it is typically mentioned in Verse 33:35 and 2:228.

Several Muslim women made use of their rights and hold the office as the head of the state:

Arwa Al Sulayhi ruled Jemen from 1067 to 1138 and *Schadschar Al Durr* in Egypt in 1250. *Benazir Bhutto* was the first prime minister in Pakistan from 1988 to 1990 and from 1993 to 1996. The first prime minister in Bangladesh from 1991 to 1996 and from 2001 to 2006 was *Khaleda Zia*. Soon after that she was followed by *Sheikha Hasina* who runs the office to this day. *Tansu Ciller* was the first woman to rule Turkey from 1993 to 1996. *Megawati Sukarnoputri* was the first female president from 2001 to 2004 in Indonesia. *Atifete Jahjaga* runs the office in Kosovo since 2011. *Mame Madior Boye* was the first female prime minister in Senegal from 2001 to 2002 and *Aminata Toure* was the first from 2014 to 2014. *Cisse Mariam Kaidama Sidibe* was the first woman runs the office as the prime minister of Mali from 2011 to 2012.

JSHS|139

The Compliance with Law and Order

Loyal, sincere and good citizens conform to the legal principles and comply with the law and order. With this in mind Islam encourages Muslims to be in compliance with law and the treaty in the country they are living. This primarily includes a reasoned conduct and keeping apart the evil deeds from the good ones as illustrated in Quran-verse 16:90. The use of reason and rationality has always a priority which means that every obligatory and recommended action in the Quran can be easily separated from those actions that run counter to the religious freedom. This saying of the prophet (Arab. Hadith) reminds Muslims of not only to behave according to the rules in the Quran, but also to take into account all the positive and negative influences on their conduct:

The Prophet said: „Love every person in the same way you love yourself. Are you not ashamed that your neighbor respects your rights, but you neither acknowledge nor respect his?“ (Al-Kulayni, Al Kafi, 10, 635)

The Quran tells people to be kind and generous, to do the right, to help their fellow human beings and to respect their rights. Only in that way it is possible to empower the social cohesion and to secure the peaceful coexistence

5. Mutual consultation and joint decision making

In a democratic system citizens are required to participate in the decision making and the mutual consultation that includes team work in which every opinion, suggestion and perspective has to be respected and compromises are made together. Different ideas and disagreements have to be accepted and at least tolerated, even if a joint decision making is not possible. This way of consultation and decision making is also of validity for Muslims. The Qur'anverses 3:159 or 42:36-40 give an Islamic perspective on the consultation and the decision making. The Arabic word "*shura*" can be found in the Quran 42:38 and means "consultation in all matters of common interest." The meaning of "shura" excludes despotic system of rule. Shura involves consultation on different opinions between people with knowledge. However, all citizens should have the right to freely express their opinion and put forward their ideas. The mutual consultation and the common decision making is the suggested way in Islam to handle difficult situations within the family, in school, in communities and societies and in the government as well. Muslims are required to actively participate for the common good, whether on a local, national or international level based on humanity as a priority principle.

Other elements within the context of Islamic political theory are "Profound Decisions and Responsible Conduct", "Building Relationships and Engaging in Dialogue" and the "Active Citizenship". Muslims have to obey God's rules as prescribed. Never should Muslims hate or show aggression towards somebody who could prevent them of following God's instructions. Otherwise Muslims would object to the

compliance with freedom and the peaceful cohabitation. The following verse is a reference to the process of change of life circumstances and oneself:

„[...]Indeed Allah does not change a people's lot, unless they change what is in their souls. And when Allah wishes to visit ill on a people, there is nothing that can avert it, and they have no protector besides Him.“ (Quran 13:11)

Ali Ibn Abi Talib said: „Be careful of your duty to Allah with respect to His people as well as His places, for verily you will be answerable even for the places [you frequented] and the animals. Obey Allah and do not disobey Him.“ (Nahdsch al Balaghah, Sermon, 167)

References

- Al Fadl Abou, Islam and the Challenge of Democracy (2004)
- Asad Muhammad, Die Botschaft des Qur'an (2009)
- Aslan Adnan, Achlaq - Grundlagen der islamischen Morallehre (2005)
- Aslan Ednan/Hermansen Marcia, Islam and Citizenship Education (2015)
- Cavuldak Ahmet/Hidalgo Oliver/Hildmann Philipp W./Zapf Holger (Hrsg.), Demokratie und Islam: Theoretische und empirische Studien (2014)
- European Council for Fatwa and Research (ECFR): <http://www.e-cfr.org/>
- Heller Erdmute/Mosbahi Hassouna, Islam Demokratie Moderne – Aktuelle Antworten arabischer Denker (1998)
- Krämer Gudrun, Demokratie im Islam: Der Kampf für Toleranz und Freiheit in der arabischen Welt (2011)
- Küng Hans, Der Islam – Geschichte, Gegenwart, Zukunft (2004)
- Lewis Bernard, Die politische Sprache des Islam (2002)

Mitterauer Michael, Parlament und Schura Ratsversammlungen und Demokratieentwicklung in Europa und der islamischen Welt – Wiener Vorlesungen im Rathaus Band 144 (2009)

Muckel Stefan, Der Islam im öffentlichen Recht des säkularen Verfassungsstaates (2008)

Muslimisches Forum Deutschland, <http://www.muslimisches-forum-deutschland.de/>

Yousefi Hamid Reza, Demokratie im Islam: Analysen-Theorien-Perspektiven (2014)

NARRATIVE VOICE IN THE *STORY OF AN HOUR*

SEZEN ISMAIL *

Abstract: *Story of an Hour* is a short story in which the main character Louise Mallard, experiences a completely new dimension of freedom within a 60-minute period. Using a third person limited narrator, and carefully chosen, simple yet suggestive vocabulary, Kate Chopin reflects on the preconceptions that the society has internalized in regards to marriage and spouse relationship. This paper will look at Chopin's choice of dense structure of narrative style that masterfully conveys the issues of a patriarchal society by doing it through a limited scope.

Key Word: *narrative voice, narrative structure, marriage, patriarchal society*

1. Introduction

Kate Chopin's two paged *The Story of an Hour* published in 1894 in the *Vogue* magazine is about a woman who enjoys her unexpected freedom upon the "news of her husband's death". Through Mrs. Mallard, Kate Chopin represents the evolution of a character within an hour. She brings this about by using a specific point of view and unique plot to carry out her idea. Chopin skillfully blends the elements of plot and point of view in order to tackle the theme of woman's forbidden joy of independence resulting from the inherent oppressiveness of marriage in the 19th century. Mrs. Mallard, who as the narrator reports: "was afflicted with a heart trouble", seems to live an apathetic and monotonous life until she hears the news of her husband's death. Her husband's friend Mr. Richards learned the news

* International Balkan University [sezeni81@gmail.com]

about the accident, and “It was her sister Josephine who told her, in broken sentences; veiled hints that revealed in half concealing”(193). However, when Mrs. Mallard hears the shocking news she closes herself in a room where she undergoes a profound transformation that empowers her with a “clear and exalted perception...of living a life for herself in the years to come” (194).

Perhaps that which is most clear to almost all of the readers is Chopin’s economy, the symbolic of the open window and the spring setting, the power that she assigns to “self-assertion”, and the dramatic irony in the denouement. However, as posed by Deneau there has been a continuing debate about one issue: Is Louise normal, understandable sympathetic woman, or is she an egocentric selfish monster? (Deneau, 210). Berkowe suggests that the key to recognizing the deeper level of irony is to distinguish between the story’s narrator, author, and unreliable protagonist.

2. The Narrative Voice

According to Susan Lanser, in the poetics of narratology, the term “voice” is equally crucial but very often regarded as the element that draws a distinction between the author and the narrator, further designating tellers as distinct from both author and the non-narrating characters of the narrative. Many critics acknowledge that both “voice” and “teller” signify something written, whereas, narration requires a social relationship and thus involves far more than the technical requirements for getting a story told. Lanser, further explains that the narrative voice and the narrated world are mutually constitutive, and that this interdependence gives the narrator a liminal position that is both dependent and privileged, meaning that the narrator can’t exist outside the text, yet it is the entity that brings the text into existence. Narrative speech acts cannot be said to be mere “imitations” like the act of the characters, because they are the acts that make the imitations possible. Further, Lanser acknowledges about two types of voice: the naratological and the feminist, the one specific, semiotic and technical the other general, mimetic and political (Lanser, 4).

Taking this perspective into account the narrative voice in Chopin’s story may be regarded from a feminist point of view. However, it is

the limited omniscience of the narrator that greatly contributes to the “political” rather than “technical” aspects of the story. Female oppression is one among other themes in the story, and it is the narrator’s scarce information that leads to such a conclusion. The fact that the reader lacks detailed information about the marital relationship of Mr. and Mrs. Mallard is a reflection to the general circumstances of women in the 19th century. Just as women had limited freedom of expression so does the narrator. In the patriarchal world of the nineteenth-century United States that Chopin depicts, a woman was not expected to engage in self-assertion. As Norma Basch observes of the American legal and economic scene of the period, the patriarchy of that time “mandated the complete dependence of wives on husbands,” making marriage “a form of slavery” (349, 355). The virtuous wife, in Mrs. Mallard’s world, was the submissive woman who accepts the convention that her husband has “a right to impose a private will” upon her—as Mrs. Mallard realizes has been true of her marriage (194). Jamil further adds that so insistent is this artificial life of empty conventions for Mrs. Mallard that it tries to assert itself even after its barriers are broken, as she sits in her room and begins to comprehend the freedom that awaits her as a widow: “She was beginning to recognize this thing that was approaching to possess her, and she was striving to beat it back with her will” (194). But the excitement in her heart, which is supposed to be weak, is uncontrollable, and her fear soon transforms into joy (193, 194). That is, the power of her emotions conquers the force of conventionality (Jamil 216).

Culminating in the doctors’ diagnosis, that she has died of “joy that kills” Louise Mallard is clearly the subject of, and subject to the masculine discourse of the story. This masculine discourse, which finally declares her dead, is fixed at the beginning of the story. She is introduced as “Mrs. Mallard” and referred to as “she” for most of the narrative. Only when Louise has become “free! Body and soul free!” is she addressed directly in the text and by her own name. But this denomination, as well as the change it embodies, is short-lived. Louise’s status as “wife” is reestablished at once in the story’s language and in Louise’s life when Brently comes in “view of his wife.” This kind of approach can be used in order to argue that perhaps the gender of

the narrator is a male, who is not capable of narrating the story outside the frame of the masculine discourse.

Lanser observes that as a naratological term “voice” attends to the specific forms of textual practice and avoids the essentializing tendencies of its more casual feminist usages. As a political term “voice” rescues a textual study for a formalist isolation that often treats literary events as if they inconsequential to human history. She further notes that when these two approaches to “voice” converge in what Michail Bakhtin called a “sociological poetics” it becomes possible to see narrative technique not simply as a product of ideology, but as ideology itself (Lanser, 5). Considering this perspective, it could be argued that Louise’s medical condition is the narrative construct of a masculine world as well: The male-dominated medical profession identifies, yet is impotent in treating, her heart trouble. It is her perceived frailty that prompts Richards’s chivalric intervention. Even the narrator observes that Louise sobs “as a child who has cried itself to sleep.” Likewise, her marriage exemplifies the status of women in the early twentieth century in that the woman is subject to the patriarch’s “powerful will bending hers.” Although Brently “had never looked save with love upon her,” he disregarded Louise’s happiness: The “lines [of her face] bespoke repression.”

The irony occurring at the end of the story is yet another outcome related to the limited masculine narration. Mrs. Louis Mallard is depicted as a wife with a physical heart trouble. Berkove argues that “there is evidence of a deeper level of irony in the story which does not regard Louise Mallard as a heroine but as an immature egoist and a victim of her own extreme self-assertion” (152). Even though Berkove may have a few good points in reading the story and develops his argument with some textual references, he has really twisted many important references to suggest that Mrs. Mallard’s heart trouble is not only a physical illness but also an emotional one: “In truth, Louise is sick, emotionally as well as physically” (Berkove 156.) He even goes on to argue that “Louise is not thinking clearly” (Berkove 157). “What Chopin is doing, very subtly, is depicting Louise in the early stages of the delusion that is perturbing her precariously unstable health by aggravating her pathological heart condition” (Berkove156).

As a refutation to Berkoves argument, Wang argues that “it is quite obvious that Chopin does not depict Louise as a mentally or emotionally ill woman despite the fact that she describes her as an idealistic innocent woman having a heart trouble physically and symbolically. Rather she presents us with a picture of a complicated and complex development of Louise’s spiritual journey to her selfhood triggered by the false news of her husband’s death in a train accident”(Wang, 107). Right after hearing the tragic news of her husband’s death, Louise starts her spiritual journey by going upstairs to her own room. By going up the stairs to her own room, Louise symbolically elevates herself into a spiritual world where an inspiration becomes possible. In symbolic terms, the setting of Louise’s room with an open-window is full of signs of a potential new life. Outside the open window, there are the sprouting tops of trees, the fresh breath of air, the sweet song, the countless twittering sparrows, the open square and the blue sky with patches of clouds which are all filled with vigor, energy and liveliness that are symbolically pregnant with a potential new life. (Wang, 113)

When she hears the news of her husband’s death, Mrs. Mallard’s obliviousness to the beauty of life breaks down under the powerful impact of emotion. Until this moment, Mrs. Mallard hardly thinks it worthwhile to continue her existence; as the narrator of the story says, “It was only yesterday [Mrs. Mallard] had thought with a shudder that life might be long” (194). Her life until this point seems devoid of emotion, as the lines in her face “bespeak repression” (193). Upon hearing the news, her sorrow gushes out in a torrent: “She wept at once with sudden, wild abandonment” (193). The narrator points out, however, that Mrs. Mallard is not struck, as “many women” have been, by “a paralyzed inability” to accept the painful sense of loss (193). On the contrary, she is roused from her passivity by an uncontrollable flood of emotion. This “storm” that “haunt[s] her body and seem[s] to reach into her soul” (193) ultimately purges her of the sufferance of a meaningless life, as it becomes the impetus for the revelation that leads to her new freedom (Selina Jamil).

3. Conclusion

Just as her sister Josephine carefully reported the “bad news” in “veiled hints” so does the narrator report the feelings and emotions of the main character, thus leaving the reader puzzled about the true feelings of Mrs. Mallard. It could be argued that Kate Chopin through the means of her limited omniscient narrator, not only wanted to create a short story filled with ambiguities, but she was reflecting on the women’s inabilities to explicitly express their feelings and ideas on aspects that relate to them directly. The structure Chopin has chosen for “The Story of an Hour” fits the subject matter perfectly. The story is short, made up of a series of short paragraphs, many of which consist of just two or three sentences; The short, dense structure mirrors the way how males communicate, thus leading to the idea that the narrator is actually a male, based on the scarcity of information revealed. Kate Chopin wrote the story of an hour in 1894 when it was unconventional, as it is today, to suggest that a husband’s death should be the occasion for a wife’s rebirth. To give approve to this radical thought, the reader is allowed to see Mrs. Mallard come to a reluctant, unexpected awakening. Resseguie asserts that Kate Chopin allows a subversive point of view to come to expression that she freely embraces. The ideological point of view that Chopin wants the reader to accept is the view that a marriage, even a benevolent marriage such as Mrs. Mallard’s, is the imposition of one’s will upon the others (Resseguie, 6).

References

- Basch, Norma. (1979) Invisible women: The legal fiction of marital unity in Nineteenth-Century America. *Feminist Studies*. Vol. 5. (2) pp. 346–66. JSTOR. Web. 29 Sept. 2016.
- Berkove, I. Lawrence. (2000) Fatal self-assertion in Kate Chopin's The story of an hour. *American Literary Realism* Vol. 32(2), pp. 152-158
- Chopin, Kate. (2007) The story of an hour. Plot. In. Kirszner G. Laurie & Mandell R Stephen (Eds.)*Literature: Reading, Reacting, Writing*. (193–94) Boston: Thomson/Wadsworth


Deneau, P. Daniel. (2003) Chopin's the story of an hour. *The Explicator* Vol. 61(4), pp. 210-213

Jamil, S. Selina (2009) Emotions in the story of an hour. *The Explicator* Vol. 67 (3), pp. 215-220

Lanser, S. Susan (1992) *Fictions of authority: Women writers and narrative voice*. London: Cornell University Press.

Resseguie, L. James. (1998). *Revelation unsealed: A narrative critical approach to John's apocalypse*. Boston: Brill.

Xuding Wang, "Feminine Self-Assertion in 'The Story of an Hour'," English Department, Tamkang University, Taiwan



CLASH BETWEEN CHINESE AND AMERICAN VALUES IN AMY TAN'S “RULES OF THE GAME”




TEA DUZA *



Abstract: In theory, America is proclaimed to be the ‘melting pot of cultures’ but in practice, the process of integration does not prove to be homogeneous in the end. One of the 40 ethnic groups that underwent assimilation is the Chinese; and the clash between Chinese and American values has been inspiration for many Chinese-American writers, among which Amy Tan. Her book - “The Joy Luck Club” stands as a perfect example of this process of acculturation and confrontation not only between cultures but also between generations. This paper covers one such story, “Rules of the Game” and involves in the ways in which a game of chess is presented – as a metaphor of the clash between the two cultures. It will also point out the diametrical opposition between the American individualism and the Chinese family honor as two different values and ways of life; both of them epitomized in Waverly, the protagonist of the story. Using her own experience and “emotional memory”, Amy Tan skillfully mirrored the spirit of her time and the environment that shaped her principles. Her story, “Rules of the Game”, bears witness to the adoption of the American ways of life and indicates the two different states of mind that are part of the ‘multicultural mosaic’ called America.

Key Word: *Acculturation, immigrants, values, clash, identity*



* Faculty of Philology “Blazhe Koneski”, Department of English language and Literature Skopje, Macedonia
[teaduza@yahoo.com]

1. Introduction

In this paper, I will bring to the fore the clash between Chinese and American cultures illustrated in one of Amy Tan's stories - "Rules of the Game". But, before I begin interpreting the story, I would like to elaborate on one of the major differences between Chinese and American traditions, i.e. a key element that is prevalent, too, in the story: the confrontation between the American dream and the Chinese family honor.

2. The American dream vs. Chinese family honor

America lays its foundations on the social and political ideals of Individualism; a philosophy of self-reliance in the name of freedom. This ideal is one of the key components of the American dream, according to which "life should be better and richer and fuller for everyone, with opportunity for each according to ability or achievement, regardless of social class or circumstances of birth" (Adams, 1993). In other words, each person has the right of upward social mobility and the pursuit of happiness, which can only be achieved by labor, determination and sacrifice. Each individual is responsible for its position on the social scale; meaning that if one fails to accomplish one's dreams - it is not society to blame. It is due to this emphasized individualism why many Americans today live in close-knit, nuclear families and strive for financial independence from their parents. The American dream goes hand in hand with consumerism and materialism, and forms a vicious circle of conformist based society (where people are no longer celebrated for what they are capable of accomplishing, but what they own and might own).

Diametrically opposed to the American mind-set is the Chinese concept of family honor. This ideology can be found in the Middle East, Africa, Asia and North America, although it varies from country to country. The Chinese philosophy of Confucianism is the basis of this communal behavior. In her anthropological studies, Bruce (2001) claims that those "people who live in cultures of honor, perceive family as the central institution in their society and a person's social identity depends largely on their family". Contrary to the individualistic American dream (where each person fights for its own place in society), here the professional development of a person depends

largely on the other members of the family. Each individual success is perceived as a success of the whole family, and the opposite: dishonor or disgrace of a person means dishonor to the family. As a result, this credo imposes a lot of pressure over each individual. In China, as an illustration, family honor is considered more important than self-actualization and individual freedom.

By following the tracks of the American dream and the Chinese family honor within the short story "Rules of the Game", we can easily conclude that both of them are epitomized in Waverly, the protagonist of the story. She is thorn between these two ideologies and through her inner struggle, we can see the influence of the dominant culture over the subordinate one. The gradual Americanization of her Chinese traditions can be approached only by an in depth analysis of both Waverly and her mother.

3. Psychological portrait of Waverly Jong

The narrator and protagonist, Waverly Jong, is a six-year-old girl from San Francisco's Chinatown. As the story opens (the very first sentence), we witness how she embraces the Chinese ways of life by her mother: "I was six when my mother taught me the art of invisible strength. It was a strategy for winning arguments, respect from others, and eventually, though neither of us knew it at the time, chess games" (Tan, 2006). Being a second generation of immigrants, Waverly and her two brothers, Vincent and Winston, are slowly adapting to the American culture, while still preserving the Chinese wisdoms from their mother.

Although she is only six, Waverly is a very ambitious and intelligent girl. For instance, she attends the annual Christmas party at the First Chinese Baptist Church, and she comments on the other children's excitement about meeting Santa Claus, saying that: "I think the only children who though he was the real thing were too young to know that Santa Claus was not Chinese" (Tan, 2006). Moreover, some minutes later, she again observes the children picking their presents and says: "Having watched the older children opening their gifts, I already knew that the big gifts were not necessarily the nicest ones" (Tan, 2006). These two excerpts illustrate the traditional Chinese personality traits – modesty and humility.

As one of her brothers receives a second hand chess set at the Christmas party, Waverly starts spending all her free time in learning the rules of the game, the secrets of each figure, and strategies for defeating the opponent; and she does this successfully with the help of the “invisible strength” that her mother had though her. To put it another way, her mother teaches her the most important lesson in life – “bite back your tongue” (Tan, 2006). However, we witness the turning point somewhere in the middle of the story when Waverly says:

“I also found out why I should never reveal ‘why’ to others. A little knowledge withheld is a great advantage one should store for future use. That is the power of chess. It is a game of secrets in which one must show and never tell” (Tan, 2006).

From this quote we can sense the American doctrines of individualism and self-reliance that oppose the Chinese family honor and slowly direct Waverly’s future decisions. The process of Americanization of her traditional Chinese values is evident by the setting of her chess tournaments, too. After she starts competing on a national level, Amy uses the setting as a metaphor for her adaptation. Waverly says, “I attended more tournaments, each one farther away from home” (Tan, 2006). In a very subtle and discreet manner, Amy parallels the geographical distance between the tournaments and Waverly’s home with her slow embracement of American values.

Waverly’s complete transformation happens when she quarrels with her mother on their Saturday shopping. She says: “Why do you have to use me to show off? If you want to show off, why don’t you learn to play chess?” (Tan, 2006). At this point, the culmination of the rivalry between the mother and the daughter is also reached; and it introduces a different clash in the story – the clash between generations. Furthermore, this diametrically opposes the Chinese family honor tradition. Her self-actualization has become her success (that Waverly wants to keep for herself and not share with her family).

It is worth discussing the mother-daughter relationship from the mother’s point of view too, which is why the next section is dedicated to her role in the story, her impact on Waverly’s development, and her way of coming to terms with the American rules.

4. Psychological portrait of Waverly's mother

As a first generation of immigrants, Waverly's mother is an embodiment of the Chinese traditions and wisdoms. "The art of the invisible strength", as the narrator calls it, is a perfect image of the mystical truths that are deeply rooted in the Chinese customs and can be traced in the mother's ordinary everyday actions. Even though she is still maintaining her Chinese perspective, the mother encourages her children to embrace American culture. She is aware that one cannot succeed in a new culture without accepting its rules. That is one of the reasons why she named her daughter Waverly Place Jong, which is the name of the street they live on, in order to sound more American. Throughout the story, she teaches her daughter some very important lessons that later on Waverly uses to win on tournaments. Nevertheless, her mother, too, is not immune to the American rules.

The first wisdom that she teaches her daughter is on obedience and humility. She says, "Wise guy, he not go against wind. [...] Strongest wind cannot be seen" (Tan, 2006). This idea of the wind as an invisible strength may be paralleled with Percy Bysshe Shelley's "Ode to the West Wind", denoting power, but also obedience, and at the same time - secrecy. Later on, the second wisdom that she passes on to her daughter is to be curious and discover the answers to her questions by herself. When Waverly is puzzled by the chess rules at the beginning, her mother says:

"'This American rules', she concluded at last. "Every time people come out from foreign country, must know rules. You not know, judge say, Too bad, go back. They not telling you why so you can use their way go forward. They say, Don't know why you find out yourself. But they knowing all the time. Better you take it, find out why yourself" (Tan, 2006).

Considering this excerpt, we can see that it is not just Waverly who is struggling with the new culture, but also her mother, especially with the language. She speaks broken English which only adds to the real struggle that every immigrant family has faced at some point. The mother's language is a very powerful tool that Amy Tan uses, and it contributes to the richness and diversity in both cultures. When it

comes to content, it represents the endurance and determination that both Waverly and her mother have. Her mother encourages her to find the rules of the game, i.e. the rules of the American society, on her own.

The third lesson that the mother implicitly teaches her daughter is the lesson on humility and modesty. When Waverly is playing chess on the street against Lau Po and a crowd has surrounded them as Waverly is winning the game, she notes: "My mother would join the crowd during these outdoor exhibition games. She sat proudly on the bench, telling my admirers with poor Chinese humility, "is luck"" (Tan, 2006). She undervalues what her daughter does so that she will not become arrogant, prideful, rebellious, and too individualistic. Otherwise, her comment cannot be taken for granted, because chess is too strategic a game in order to be deduced to luck.

Towards the end of the story, when Waverly returns home after their quarrel, it is the mother who turns out to have the leading role in their game. In her room, Waverly is planning her next move, and although she has lost the battle, she still continues to compete with her mother. This mother-daughter rivalry is one of the interpretations of the chess set as a prevailing symbol throughout the story. Moreover, the best illustration of the clash between the Chinese and American values is in the title itself – "Rules of the Game", but also in the game of chess as a multi-faceted symbol that I will analyze in the last section of my paper.

5. Chess as a symbol of power

Amy's choice to use a chess set as a symbol is probably the bravest decision she has made while writing the story, because it is an over-familiar metaphor that can be very easily turned into a cliché. I agree, as Kelly (2002) argued, that "what keeps the comparison fresh and saves it from that worn-out feel that truly dead metaphors have is the ease with which Tan fits it to the situation that she describes in the story". In "Rules of the Game", chess is a multi-layered symbol that may be interpreted from different perspectives, among which: chess as a symbol representing the clash between the Chinese and American values; chess as a representation of the mother-daughter rela-

tionship (generation gap) and; chess as an embodiment of men and women's position in society.

Chess as a symbol representing the clash between Chinese and American values

Throughout the story, the chess set is the most vivid illustration of the confrontation between the dominant, American culture and the subordinate Chinese traditions - that stand for the white and black figures respectively. The fact that Waverly, who is Chinese-American, is competing Americans in chess tournaments stands for her will and determination to succeed in the American environment, no matter if that entails losing her cultural heritage in the process. Having slowly discovered the American rules, she has started bridging the two cultures to a point where she does not feel the power of the "invisible strength" (wind) anymore. In addition, the clash between the two cultures can be found at the Christmas party too, although it is not represented by the chess set. What Waverly says when she meets Santa is the following:

"When my turn came up, Santa man asked me how old I was. I thought it was a trick question; I was seven according to the American formula and eight by the Chinese calendar. I said I was born on March 17, 1951." (Tan, 2006)

JSHS|157

It appears that this incompatibility between the two cultures imposes a real struggle even for the simplest questions. The dominance of the American culture is also seen by the fact that Santa Claus, who is not part of Chinese history, gives presents to Chinese-American children in their First Chinese Baptist Church. The Americanization of the Chinese values is obvious: "In 1950s America, anybody who did not want to be considered an outsider embraced Christianity, and even young Waverly is aware that this is one of the "rules" of the American system" (Poquette, 2002). Religion is just one part of one's culture, thus this dominance of one religion over another may be seen as a metonymic superiority of one culture over another.

Chess as a representation of the mother-daughter relationship

"Rules of the Game" is also a story of the different pace at which generations accept a new environment. Normally, the first generation is

the one that does this more slowly than the second generation. The elders are unwilling to let go of their own value system, whereas the young are usually more enthusiastic and want to challenge both the old and the new customs. In this short story, Amy has showed this generational clash very skillfully. Waverly's mother continues to stick to her Chinese perspectives till the end of the story, even though we can still sense some American attributes towards the end. For example, while they are both walking down the market streets on Saturday, the mother is constantly showing her daughter off, and talks of her in a prideful manner. Her pride is a sign of vanity, a trait that contradicts the Chinese humility.

Nevertheless, the pace at which she is embracing the American values is significantly slower to that of her daughter, and that is why the gap between them deepens. As Waverly becomes more and more Americanized, her mother does the opposite – she keeps reminding her daughter of the Chinese humility, modesty, and family honor. Later on, Waverly's outburst on the street makes her mother question not only the American rules but the Chinese rules as well. Being aware that Waverly can only succeed by playing according to American rules, she realizes that she cannot stop her from becoming Americanized. In other words, if we take a look at both of them, we can conclude that Waverly is more American-Chinese than Chinese-American (which is her mother).


Chess as an embodiment of men and women's position in society

From a feminist perspective, in this story we can find traces of the battle between sexes in society. First and foremost, this is evident by the children's names. Waverly's Chinese/family name is Meimei, which means "Little Sister". She's the youngest among her two brothers, whose names are Vincent and Winston; which are typical masculine, victorious names while her Chinese name is a derogatory kinship term, and her American name is the name of the street they live on. Moreover, when she approaches Lau Po and asks him to play chess with her, he responds: "Little sister, been a long time since I play with dolls" (Tan, 2006) which undermines, underestimates, and objectifies Waverly.

What is striking is that she becomes a brilliant chess player, which is not really a girl's game. Men taught her how to play chess, and she later on played against boys, and not just boys – but American boys. This empowered her in the American society, but still, even today – chess is segregated. It is not a physical sport, it as a competition between minds, and there still are male and female chess leagues, which is probably the most discriminatory thing you can find in sports. Last but not least, after winning more and more tournaments, Waverly's photo appeared in Life magazine “next to a quote in which Bobby Fischer said, “There will never be a woman grand master”” (Tan, 2006). These examples illustrate the everlasting fight between the sexes and gives “Rules of the Game” another way of reading and interpreting. Waverly's chess tournaments may be regarded as an image of a woman's fight for her place in society. If we focus on the chess set only, we may argue that women and men stand for the black and white figures respectively.

To conclude, “Rules of the Game” is a multi-faceted story that enables different interpretations, and bears witness to the adoption of the American ways of life and indicates the two different states of mind that are part of the ‘multicultural mosaic’ called America.

References:

- Adams, J. Truslow. (1933). *The Epic of America*. (2nd ed.). New York: Garden City Books.
- Bruce, J. Malina. (2001). *The New Testament World: Insights from Cultural Anthropology*. (3rd ed.). Kentucky: Westminster John Knox Press.
- Kelly, D. (2002). Short Stories for Students: “Critical Essay on ‘Rules of the Game’”. *Literature Resource Center*, 16. Retrieved March 5, 2016, from Arizona State University database.
- Poquette, D. (2002). Short Stories for Students: “Critical Essay on ‘Rules of the Game’”. *Literature Resource Center*, 16. Retrieved March 5, 2016, from Arizona State University database.
- Tan, A. (2006). *The Joy Luck Club: A Novel*. United Kingdom: Penguin Books.
- 

USE OF WEB 2.0 TOOLS FOR THE PRODUCTION OF MATERIALS FOR VOCATIONAL ENGLISH CLASSES: KIRKLARELI UNIVERSITY CASE

UĞUR ALTINTAŞ *

HAYRETTİN TOYLAN *

Abstract: Web 2.0 and its tools have been attracting the attention of language instructors in terms of self-efficacy and authentic material preparation. With the developments that today's world is experiencing, importance of interactive online materials has proven itself as time and cost efficient. Especially in the crowded classes, web 2.0 originated materials constitute a very yielding and fun assignments for the out-of-class activities. Especially vocational English classes suffer immensely from the material related issues in Turkey. The aim of this paper is to offer a solution for this limitation of materials with the help of a free internet website, subzin.com. 2nd year students of Kırklareli University Pınarhisar Vocational School Department of Tourism have been asked to prepare an assignment by using this website, and at the end of the assignment process, they are asked to complete a questionnaire about how they feel about the efficiency of this website for the out-of-class activities. Apart from providing a fun environment for learning English for a vocational purpose and creating learner autonomy via subzin.com, this website is providing very good raw materials for in-class activities as well. With a very little effort, teachers can produce their own material library for future use.

Key Word: Web, vocational English, self-efficacy, out-of-class activities, authentic materials.

* Kırklareli University [uguraltintas@klu.edu.tr]

* Kırklareli University [hayrettintoylan@klu.edu.tr]



ICSSH2016
INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES

1. Introduction

With the developing internet tools available on the internet, it is easy to reach information at any desired time. This gives way to virtually endless opportunities to study almost all lessons and skills including but not limited to English language learning. With relatively less effort, both teachers and students can enjoy the facilities that Web 2.0 tools offer. Especially in vocabulary learning and authentic language use, Web 2.0 tools are very effective in-class and extramural realia. Also, joyful environment that these devices provide to the learner in the shape of gaming and/or multimedia contributes largely to learning and acquisition by lowering the affective filter and providing a positively challenging atmosphere. Combining these positive aspects of internet tools and teachers' creativity is believed to partially or fully meet the need for the joyful and fruitful learning environment that has been sought so far.

Learner autonomy and self-efficacy are two closely related traits which play key roles for achieving effective learning if used intelligently. Since Web 2.0 tools are a part of Computer Assisted Language Learning (CALL), it is true to some certain extent that they mainly target at individual learning; however, a group work is also achievable via these tools. One of the best outcomes expected from learner autonomy and self-efficacy is self-motivation. Depending on their design, Web 2.0 tools can be very effective in creating such motivation patterns.

Subzin (subzin.com) is a Web 2.0 search engine that searches the entry through thousands of movie subtitles, gives the name of the movie and the time when the subtitle appears in the movie. It is effective in two ways; (i) learners can see different and authentic language use which includes the entry, and (ii) learners can see different meanings and/or parts of speech that a vocabulary item may appear in. Some other creative activities like picture drawing and role-play can be carried out in class by using this website. Lastly, some cultural elements and idiomatic expressions can be analyzed through the sentences that appear in the dialogues. Video clips can be prepared by teachers who wish to colorize their classrooms with multimedia facilities.

Use of multimedia for language learning is a very common practice both among students and teachers. Barbee (2013) has found that students mostly use songs to learn language. It is followed by the internet tools. However, with development of smart mobile devices and expansion of the internet use among children and young adults, this information may not be true any more. Internet tools are on demand since they are easily accessible, generally free of charge, and of the feature that it can be modified and formed according to the needs of the user. All combined together, internet tools create a very efficient learning environment.

The aims of this study are (i) to test the efficiency of Subzin for increasing the efficiency of coursebook, (ii) to test the role of Subzin in making Vocational English lesson a colorful and enjoyable part of extramural life, and (iii) to enable teachers update their louvre and language knowledge in the professional field that they teach.

2. Vocationally Oriented Language Learning

This study has been carried out by asking the opinions of second year students who take Vocational English lessons in a college level. Vocational English lessons can be defined as the English language classes which aim to have students gain the necessary skills to survive in foreign language situations they may possibly encounter in their professional lives. Therefore the aims of the Vocational English classes are;

JSHS|163

Adequate English language proficiency for future professional life,

Situational and social language knowledge,

Acquisition of professionally required vocabulary and terminology,

Understanding of language that can be used for future career opportunities.

Vocational English classes, by definition, are Vocationally Oriented Language Learning (VOLL) environments. They aim to and need to undergo necessary changes so as to respond current professional environment. Nonetheless, VOLL does not constitute an absolute body on its own; it needs to be supported with lifelong and extramural learning facilities (Lindhal, 2015). Mickan (2013) states that

VOLL has an everchanging form in that an individual can be a professional (e.g. receptionist) in one situation; and in another, s/he can be a customer (e.g. in a supermarket). That is why language use gives signal about the social status or the role of the speaker, and VOLL should provide a learning environment that supplies learners with such tips and shows learners how to act in a certain professional situation (ibid.). Vogt and Kantelinen (2012) have tried to separate VOLL from General English classes which mainly focus on instruction of grammar. VOLL, on the other hand, focuses on vocabulary items and chunks and their appropriateness in a certain professional situation.

3. Methodology

Participants have first been introduced with the search engine Subzin. They have been asked to search some keywords that they have encountered in the coursebook. They have been asked to prepare a file that contains 50 vocabulary item results chosen randomly, and translated by the students. After 60 days, files have been collected and participants have attended to a multimodal survey which includes both Likert scale questions and essay type questions which ask about their general attitudes about Vocational English classes and their experiences related to the use of Subzin. Then, Likert scale questions have been analyzed in SPSS software.

Characteristics Of Participants

54 students of Kirklareli University Pınarhisar Vocational School Tourism Department have attended to the questionnaire. A gender balance have nearly been achieved with 30 males and 24 females. All of the participants were between the ages of 19 to 23. 64,8% of the attendants have taken English classes formally for 7 years or more; while 29,6% for 5 to 6 years, and slightly over 5% for 4 years or less. More than 70% of the participants have not taken any foreign language training other than English. Lastly, only 4 of all the participants have enjoyed the opportunity to experience a foreign country.

One of the main anticipated obstacles was the demographic and sociological interference on the results; however, after the data was collected, it was found that no gender-based interference had been of

an impact upon the results. Especially gender-based possible difference was put under a special focus, but no meaningful effect has been observed. No meaningful significance between genders has been found in the attitudes towards English language learning ($p=0,763$ and $p>0,5$); nor in attendance to the Vocational English lectures ($p=0,424$). All the gender-based differences are observed to be low in meaningful significance.

Findings

The questionnaire applied contains 30 questions related to Vocational English classes and the use of Web 2.0 tools. Cronbach Alpha for these questions is found as .862, therefore the replies are considered to be reliable. However, due to the low number of participants, the results have been reached through non-parametric tests.

In the Table 1, percentage of participants who have replied the questions related to the Web 2.0 tools is shown. Majority of the students are observed to find Web 2.0 tools useful for language learning. Almost all of them agree that Web 2.0 tools help them with their language learning process. Furthermore, there is a strong correlation of ,490 (at 0.01 level with Spearman's Correlation) between the items that ask about studying out of the class and enhancing effect of Web 2.0 tools.

JSHS|165

The samples have been chosen from tourism departments just as they need foreign language skills so as to successfully carry on their professional lives in their future careers. Therefore, authenticity in the English language materials is a must for acquiring necessary language competence and skills. Learners who have taken part in this survey are of the belief that in order to make Vocational English a part of their lives, positive effect of Web 2.0 tools is obvious with a moderate value of ,325 with statistically meaningful Linear Regression test.

Upon applying Chi Square Test with the two related variables; it has been found that there is a statistically meaningful difference between finding the coursebook material useful and using Web 2.0 tools for language learning with the significance of ,000 and ,002 respectively. It can be assumed that students see Web 2.0 Tools as an extramural

media in which they carry out their language learning process out of the class.

Table.1 Response Distributions of the Questions Related to Web 2.0 Tools

Questionnaire Items	Strongly Disagree	Disagree	Neither Agreee Nor Disagree	Agree	Strongly Agree
Web 2.0 tools enhance my Vocational English improvement	-	-	9,3%	51,9%	38,9%
Web 2.0 tools fuel my desire to learn English	1,9%	-	5,6%	50%	42,6%
I can understand Web 2.0 content	1,9%	-	11,1%	48,1%	38,9%
I like ever-updated Web 2.0 content	1,9%	-	14,8%	50%	33,3%

In the second module of the survey, participants were asked to give their opinions about Subzin and the assignment given to them. Majority of the participants emphasised the positive effects of the assignment related to vocabulary learning. One of the participants provided the comment that “Subzin has been useful for seeing different meaning of an item in different sentence structures”. Since they have searched for terminology, students were able to be exposed to real life situations portrayed in the movie clip. Another participant claimed that she was going to watch some of the movie clips in order to see the scene. None of the participants have made negative comments about the assignment or Subzin.

Interestingly, one of the participants has made a comment that “Subzin is like a magical tool which clearly shows me how to watch a movie; almost all the subtitles I have included in my file are from the movies I have seen before”. Therefore, it would not be utopic to claim that Subzin and the assignment have also taught learners to make the most of near surrounding as learning devices. Another participant wrote that Subzin assignment was like a puzzle; she found it as an “exciting” way to learn English vocabulary.

4. Discussion

In order to gain authenticity, dialogues which have been derived from Subzin should be put into analysis by the teacher as they are. Especially idiomatic expressions should be searched and emphasised for professional competence. Situational learning can be fostered through these dialogues.

Role-play activities can be attached to Subzin files. This can either be as in-class activity series, or as video capturing activities. Subzin dialogues can be kept as core dialogues, and students can be asked to add some sentences to the beginning and/or to the end of this dialogue and act out. Some creative writing and speaking activities can be elaborated around these dialogues. Cultural elements can be put under a special focus; because they will need such information for their future careers. Since VOLL also focuses on social status and role of the speaker, and the names of the speakers are unseen in the results that Subzin provides, students may be asked to guess the social status of the speaker, or they can be asked to tell what statement they could use in that sentential slot.

JSHS|167

Teachers can create and expand their own library or corpora through Subzin, and they can update their existing library with the results and movie clips which can create a great deal of fun teaching environment as well.

5. Conclusion

It is all but an undeniable fact that as Web 2.0 tools are becoming common and developing, they are opening new doors to virtually infinite learning opportunities and teaching tools. Since they include an environment that addresses to main acquisition channels (i.e.

hearing, seeing, etc.), their efficiency in almost all learning environments including but not limited to foreign language education is high. Amongst many benefits that Web 2.0 tools offer, this study has focused on extramural activities and enjoyable learning environment outside of the classroom. Although the number of samples included in this study may be considered as low, it has been clearly seen that appropriate Web 2.0 tools with creative and supportive manner can create a learning environment inside and outside of the walls of schools with considerably less effort and more gaining.

Moreover, coursebook materials that have been produced for commercial purposes are seen as satisfactory by the students who have taken part in the survey; however, they also say that these materials can be supported with Web 2.0 tools which they can enjoy while learning English. Web 2.0 tools have the feature of momentary adaptation which coursebooks do not have. Thus, these tools are beneficial both for learners and teachers so as to keep their knowledge up-to-date. Web 2.0 tools provide a personal learning environment and thus raise the motivation of the learner since it can be formed into what is desired by the user. This situation increases the level of joy which increases the level of learning by raising the level of learner autonomy and self-efficacy.

References

- Barbee, M. (2013). Extracurricular L2 input in a japanese efl context: exposure, attitudes, and motivation. *Second Language Studies*, 1-58.
- Lindhal, K. (2015). *Vocational English in Policy and Practice*. Retrieved May 25, 2016, from handle.net: <http://hdl.handle.net/2077/38413>
- Mickan, P. (2013). *Language curriculum design and socialisation*. Bristol: Multilingual Matters.
- Vogt, K., & Kantelinen, R. (2013). Vocationally oriented language learning revisited. *ELT Journal*, 62-69.

EL TEACHER TRAINEES' PRACTICAL WORK- AN ACHIEVABLE OBJECTIVE OR AN UNATTAINABLE CHALLENGE?

VIKTORIJA PETKOVSKA *

STELA BOSILKOVSKA *

Abstract: In the light of attempting to organize relevant practical work for EL teacher trainees, the paper addresses the objectives, needs and possibilities open to teacher training institutions, or, more precisely the Faculty of Pedagogy in Bitola as one such institution. It is based on the insights gained through conducting practical classes with ELT students in the period 2009-2016. Besides the observations based on the organization, realization and results of practical teacher trainees work, it also attempts to highlight the importance of the lesson plans, assessment protocols and group discussion concerning the conducted classes. In addition, the paper analyses the results of a questionnaire given to the students in the academic year 2015/16 intended to display teacher trainees' attitudes towards this aspect of their studies.

Key Word: *teacher trainees, practical work*

1. Introduction

EL teacher trainees generally look forward to experiencing the practical side of their profession and getting acquainted with the real life situation in schools. In other words, they are anxious to ultimately meet the situation when "the floor is theirs".

* Faculty of Technical sciences-Bitola,
University St.Kliment Ohridski,-Bitola [vpet40@yahoo.com]

* Faculty of Pedagogy-Bitola University St.Kliment Ohridski-Bitola
[bosilkovs@gmail.com]

Challenging as it may be, this is not necessarily a very pleasant experience as it might sometimes, on the part of the teacher trainees, trigger such feelings as uncertainty, discomfort and even nervousness.

On the other hand, teacher trainers need to put considerable effort into organizing the practical work, finding hospitable mentoring institutions and conducting their students' practical work in a manner that does not allow interfering with the institution prescribed educational routine.

2. Objectives, needs and possibilities

Among the objectives that need fulfilling in conducting teacher trainees practical work, the following seem to be of greatest importance:

- enabling students to become acquainted with schools, their management, organization, relevant school institutions (pedagogue, psychologists etc.), school units (i.e. departments, if any, such as for e.g. vocational versus comprehension classes), curricula and syllabi, as well as teaching materials and practical textbook assessment;
- acquiring insights into students' life, various forms of organization (clubs, if any), varied forms of contribution towards the school affirmation (competitions and alike)
- experiencing the ways classes are conducted (interactive, teacher vs. student centered etc.)
- observing the ways students are seated in the classroom and the possible impact this may have upon their integration and achievement (if applicable)
- observing EL classes and consequently teaching a certain number of classes on their own
- learning how to make an appropriate lesson plan (as instructed both by the school mentor and the university mentor)

- objectively filling in the assessment sheet for both the observed and conducted classes

- learning how to apply their previously obtained knowledge from the theoretical subject *Methods in ELT*

- assessing (their colleagues') and self-assessing their own achievement during classes

- participating in consequent discussions about the classes

Furthermore, needs of teacher trainees institutions form another relevant aspect in handling the matter in question:

- teacher training institutions need institutional assistance in organizing their students' practical work. However, for the time being, at least for the Faculty of pedagogy in question, the organization of this part of its work is left primarily to individual contacts and personal relations of teachers-colleagues from schools and the faculty. This narrows the choice of primary and secondary mentoring schools, and impedes the successful completion of this important and complex task

JSHS|171

- at present, there exists no institutionally established form of recruiting, motivating and rewarding teacher mentors (such as for e.g. any system of points that would ensure the successful teacher mentors better working positions as is common practice in some countries)

- this inevitably leads to an insufficient number of classes teacher trainees are allowed to attend, observe and conduct

- this, in turn, leads to an inability to meet the objectives previously stated.

Last but not least, let us look at the possibilities at our disposal:

- primary and secondary schools management should be involved in meeting the needs of teacher training institutions and explained that their participation in teacher training is of direct and crucial importance to the benefit of the society. However, it's important that state institutions give a hand in establishing closer collaboration between the parties concerned.

3. Achievements

It is our greatest concern to appropriately define, plan and realize all the expected achievements. Projected achievements are based on the supposition that students will benefit from practical work and will be ready to conduct classes on their own immediately after graduation from the Faculty. This expectation is, of course, severely undermined by the limited number of conducted classes which is why, it is still doubtful whether teacher trainees are capable of undertaking their serious professional task readily immediately after graduation.

4. Lesson plan

The first step towards accomplishing the desired goals is to provide the teacher trainees with a well designed detailed lesson plan that most precisely reflects their work during the class. A sample of the lesson plan given to the EL students at the Faculty of Pedagogy in Bitola is displayed hereafter:

University "St.Kliment Ohridski"-Bitola

Faculty of Pedagogy-Bitola

Practice in Methods of Teaching-English language

Lesson plan for conducting an English language class

Student:

File No:

Date:

Grade:

Teaching subject:

Teaching filed:

Teaching theme:

Teaching unit:

Class type:

Means of teaching:

Working methods:

Working forms:

Tasks:

Objectives:

Lesson plan:

Introductory part:

Main part:

Selection:

Grading:

Presentation:

Final part:

Practice:

Testing:

Homework:

5. Assessment sheet

Students' performance was assessed based on the provided assessment sheet. It comprises three general assessment areas:

- general competencies
- language and linguistic knowledge
- lesson structure

It also includes further notes on:

- observations, remarks etc
- strong points
- weak points
- which students, for various reasons, are reluctant to provide.

6. Data collection method

In order to gain certain insights into teacher trainees' opinions about the role and place of practical work in their overall qualification for competent EL teachers, data was collected with the help of the following:

Questionnaire

FACULTY OF PEDAGOGY-BITOLA

QUESTIONNAIRE FOR TEACHER TRAINEES academic

year:2015/16

Age_____ sex_____

1. Do you find practical work crucial to your studies and future career?

a) Yes b) No

2. Have you been appropriately hosted in the schools in which you attended classes?

a) Yes b) No

3. Has your mentor met your needs during the practical work?

a) Yes b) No

4. Does the mentor's response to your needs depend on their age and experience?

a) Yes b) No

5. Is mentor's age and experience proportional to the type and quality of assistance they provide?

a) Yes b) No

6. Did you manage to easily get accommodated to the school life and routine?

a) Yes b) No

7. How helpful were the principal, pedagogue and mentor to your integration in the school?

- a)very helpful b)sufficiently helpful c)not helpful
- 8.Do you find the school well organized from any possible aspect?
- a) very well organized b)sufficiently well organized
- c)unorganized
- 9.Were the students well prepared in advance to accept you and collaborate with you?
- a)all of them b)some of them c)none
- 10.Did you manage to establish good relations with the students?
- a)most of the time b)sometimes c)no
- 11.Did you get good response from the students during your classes?
- a)Yes b)No
12. Which education level do you find more appropriate and rewarding for teacher trainees?
- a)primary b)secondary
- 13.Did the assessment sheet contain all the aspects of the teaching process?
- a)Yes b)No
- 14.Did the assessment sheet help you in organizing your classes more successfully?
- a)yes b)No
15. Please give your suggestions for possible improvements of the assessment sheet.
-
-
-

7 Results analysis

In continuation are displayed the relevant data about the students who participated in the research, their age and sex. Then, there follow the results obtained by the questionnaire:

Age:21-2 students,22-11, 23 -1 and 1 didn't write total=15

Female:12; male-2 and 1 didn't write

1. Yes-14=93.4%; No -1=6.6%
2. Yes-14=93.4%;No-1=6.6%
3. Yes-14=93.4% No-1=6.6%
4. yes-11=73.4% No-4=26.6%
5. yes-10=66.7% No-5=33.3%
6. yes-15=100% No- /
7. a)5=33.3%;b)9=60%; c)1=6.6%
8. a)3=20%; b)10=66.7%; c)2=13.3%
9. a)3=20%; b)11=73.4% c)1=6.6%
10. a)10=66.7%b)4=26.6%; c)1=6.6%
11. Yes-13=86.7% No-2=13.3%
12. a)13=86.7% b)2=13.3%
13. yes-14=93.4% No-1=6.6%
14. Yes-14=93.4% No-1=6.6%

Students agreed that the assessment sheet completely covered for all the relevant aspects.

8. Conclusion

As it can easily be observed from the questionnaire, there is only minor, unimportant deviation in the students' answers regarding all the questions. There are only two deviations approaching 30% (26.6% -question No 4, and 33.3% for question No 5), while for the rest it is under 15%.

This shows that most of the students found their practical work rewarding, well-organized and within the limits of both their interest and professional development.

References

- Bailey, A. (2010). Implications for assessment and instruction. In M. Schatz & L. C. Wilkinson (Eds.), *The education of English language learners: Research to practice* (pp. 222–247). New York, NY: Guilford Press.
- Cummins, J. (1991). Language development and academic learning. In L. Malave & G. Duquette (Eds.), *Language, culture and cognition* (pp. 167–175). Clevedon, England: Multilingual Matters.
- McLaughlin, B. (1992). Myths and misconceptions about second language learning. *CAL Digest*. Retrieved from <http://www.cal.org/resources/digest/myths.html> (ERIC Document Reproduction Service No. ED350885)
- Richards, J. C., & Lockhart, C. (2005). *Reflective teaching in second language classrooms*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
- Schön, D. (1987). *The reflective practitioner: How professionals think in action*. San Francisco, CA: JosseyBass.
- Van Manen, M. (1977). Linking ways of knowing with ways of being practical. *Curriculum Inquiry*, 6(3), 205-228.
- Viáfara, J. (2004). The design of reflective tasks for the preparation of student teachers. *Colombian Applied Linguistics Journal*, 7, 53-74.
- Viáfara, J. (2005). Responding to observation: How student-teachers' use of their counselor's notes support their preparation. *PROFILE Issues in Teachers' Professional Development*, 6(1), 141-156.

TASTES AND OPINIONS: READING “SERIOUS GOSSIP” IN JANE AUSTEN’S LETTERS

YILDIRAY ÇEVİK *

Abstract: Judging from her novels Jane Austen communicates a democratic appreciation for a variety of values, tastes, etiquettes, social conventions and opinions. Potential information in her epistolary writings, the news Austen reports to mainly her sister Cassandra and the “serious gossip” she gives her can be evaluated functional in the knowledge, opinions and views highlighted in her novels. Letter writing was one of women’s major domestic duties; an important means not only keeping in touch with family and friends, but also of maintaining networks of useful acquaintances in a world dominated by patronage and personal influence. The 161 letters which have survived can be regarded as sources of information and functions, which Austen has also reflected as a source of power of words in her novels. Thus, this article aims at deliberating on the “significant gossip correspondence” majorly filtering the afore-mentioned points and on Austen’s epistolary writings that radiate out her teachings in the Regency’s “tastes and opinions”

Key Word: *Regency, epistolary correspondence, Austen, Cassandra, opinions*

1. Introduction

Letter writing was considered to be a female domestic duty as an important way to keep in touch with other family members and friends, and as a way of extending the potential network for acquaintances in a world dominated by patronage and personal influ-

* International Balkan University

[cevikyildiray@yahoo.com]

ence. The 161 letters which have survived are small numbers from many more that Austen much have written and received.

In deciphering Austen's letters, as Anderson states in her article, it is crucial that we consider the context. Austen wrote letters to close family and friends, "her first audience, constant and best audience", and they were basically about affection that is documented and generated by means of written correspondence (p. 75). An awareness of such intimate dialogic-epistolary relationship lends legitimacy to reader's interpretation of the letters as relations of author's ideology.

Austen seems to have fulfilled the best function of epistolary writing: as a messenger of news, or intelligence that is sometimes called 'serious gossip'. She is well aware of the status of communication that is provided by letters such as news on urgent family matters. For example, after the birth of their nephew Austen criticizes Cassandra for neglect: "I shall not take the trouble of announcing to you any more of Mary's children, if, instead of thanking me for the intelligence, you always sit down and write to James" (Letter 8, p. 14 – References hereafter are included in the text. Numbers refer to the numbering of the letters in the edition cited in this paper). In this way Austen sees it possible to incur obligations in the receiver, and thus letter-writing in such cases can become crucial power.

The exchange of letters between Cassandra, friends, family members, and those that Austen playfully wrote were more than just a duty. They were a form of pleasure to which women became addicted. From this term it is signaled that her awareness of the status of the letters, her concern with women's shared experience of letter-writing as a compulsion, and addiction to communication can be resembled to today's incessant texting and talking on mobile phones. (Intro, xiv). The exchanges were common so much that the then postage services had to revise pricing and format. The frequency of epistolary correspondence baffled the older generation used to a slower pace of communication and unable to understand the compulsion to keep up such a constant exchange.

Austen's reflections on letter-writing are expressions of intimacy, designed to maintain her relationship with the particular receiver. The delicate balance between intimacy and artfulness, obligation and

compulsion, awareness and spontaneity, is a defining line of the eighteenth-century familiar letter. The purpose for which letters are written is to sustain esteem or love, to excite love and pleasure, and to discover respect. Writing to Cassandra, Austen turns to her own advantage. She says, "I have now attained the true art of letter-writing, which we are always told, is to express on paper exactly what one would say to the same person by word of mouth; I have been talking to you almost as fast as I could the whole of this letter (20, p. 46).

The majority of the surviving letters are to her elder sister Cassandra, with whom she shared an intense friendship in her life. They both led a life within the general life which was shared only by each other. Through Austen's epistolary style, it is possible to understand private, artistic and individual quality of life full of opinions and feelings familiar with each other's views. Instead of screening though Austen's large numbers of work, we are let into her correspondence with Cassandra and in this way acquire the knowledge and styles that Austen has utilized. Yet, if the letters are seen as talks it is useful to think of the letters as approximating to gossip. Gossip is essentially a talk about other people. Associated with women and often dismissed as idle talk, gossip has been placed at the bottom of the conversational hierarchy. But like letters themselves, gossip has undergone a critical rehabilitation whose definition of 'serious gossip is helpful in evaluating the letters to Cassandra.

JSHS|181

A key factor of this serious and smart gossip accorded in letters is its skepticism about conventional by polite society to a particular people, events and experiences. As there is present a strong trust and support between Austen and her sister, it is much easy to derive Austen's perceptions and views from the letters. Cassandra offers an intimacy which provides relief from emotional exhaustion of empty social obligations. In Austen's accounts for public events, such intimate epistolary control shows comments and judgments on other people. Austen forces Cassandra to approve the judgments excited by the competitive, claustrophobic atmosphere of social assemblies. In one of many descriptions of the balls she attended, Austen entertains by presenting the portraits of the participants: "There were few Beauties, and such as there were, were not very handsome. Mrs. Blount

was the only one much admired. She appeared exactly as she did in September, with the same broad face, diamond bandeau, white shoes, pink husband, and fat neck" (18, p. 38).

From the letters we learn about the social status, conventional prestige of the Austens as well. They were a well-read creative family whose social status depended on cultural more than financial basis, on education and literary tastes. The taste of implicit knowledge in the letters is the product of her pride on her family members who value much social conventions. Some of Austen's serious gossip is triggered by the contrasting circumstances of her brother Edward and his family. Edward had been adapted at 16 by rich relations, and widowed Knight gave over to him their estate in Kent. "I am glad to hear that Edward's income is so good a one" (13, p. 26). Though Austen's letters to Cassandra are far from confessional mode of epistolary writing, they reveal much about the social pressures felt by other women. In this sense, the letters can be seen as sources for the subordinated. The primary resource is the intimate emotional bond between sisters. Cassandra was the implied audience for Austen's fiction the first reader whose shared tastes, ironic understanding and appreciation of the telling satirical detail could be relied on to judge her efforts appropriately.

The letters have been sources for biographers in establishing a basic timeline of Austen's movements between Kent, Bath, Southampton and London, and they have provided essential information about her brothers. They contain firm views about members of her family; her irritation at her brother James's conduct as a house guest (35, p. 84); or her anxiety that "Method has been wanting" in the upbringing of Charles's children (58, p. 146). We can find commentaries about the literary works and books: Charlotte Lennox's *The Female Quixote* or the work of Sydney Owenson, *Lady Morgan* (34, p.79; 44, p.112), or E. M. Forster's denial they do take account of politics and religion. Her surviving letters express a political judgment with an intense dislike of the Prince Regent (56, P. 141). Her letters also mock the narrative styles: "The shades of Evening are describing and I assume my interesting Narrative" (62, p. 162). The letters' fascination with the details of people's lives is that of the novel from itself. Gossip and fiction are after all very closely allied.

In the twenty years that the letters survived, we observe that Austen changed from a young woman to a mature individual content with her unmarried status. She changed from a clever daughter, whose writings were produced primarily to entertain her family into an established and popular author, with the measure of financial independence that implied. This primary shift in her public identity is reflected in some changes in her letters' content. Such correspondence includes the letters to publishers and others about her novels, and accounts of life in London where she stayed with her brother Henry. Yet the "gossip" nature of the letters remained constant. Such changes include subtle shifts of tone and mood, slight differences in her responses to the ordinary, habitual experiences which continued to dominate her existence in spite of her increasing fame as a writer.

The letters to Cassandra reflect her changing moods, though they do so for the most part in a characteristically indirect way. The amusing irony communicated with her sister is now mixed with self-confidence, and her mind set express commentary and quality of wit and humor. Five years later in her thirtieth year, and much more personally aware of financial dependency following her father's death, Austen's style and her attitude to Mrs. Stent are different: "Poor Mrs. Stent! It has been her lot to be always in the way; but we must be merciful for perhaps in time we may come to Mrs. Stents ourselves, unequal to anything and unwelcome to everybody" (31, p. 70).

JSHS|183

In a letter from late 1808, Austen is against explicit about time and its effects, but her mood has changed yet again. She describes a ball:

"The room was tolerably full and there were perhaps thirty couple of Dancers; the melancholy part was to see so many dozens young women standing by without partners, and each of them with two ugly young naked shoulders. It was the same room in which we dances 15 years ago! – I thought it all over – and in spite of the shame of being so much older, felt with thankfulness that I was quite as happy now as then" (41, p. 102).

Her mood is one of acceptance, a surprised recognition of a different, but equal kind of happiness to that experienced when she danced nine out of twelve dances, ' Merely prevented from dancing the rest

by the want of a partner' (18, p. 38). A similar content is experienced in a letter from Godmersham, written a few months earlier;

"In another week I shall be at home ... The Orange Wine will want our Care soon. – But in the meantime for Elegance & Ease & Luxury I shall eat Ice & drink French wine, & be above Vulgar Economy. Luckily the pleasures of Friendship, of unreserved Conversation, of similarity of Taste & Opinions, will make good amends for Orange Wine" (37, p. 92).

Austen's state of mind during the unproductive years when she lived in Bath was a source of speculations for many biographers. Some claimed that she was suffering from a depression caused by the move from Steventon. In 1809 Austen attempted to revive her writing career but it was unsuccessful. One year later she took up *Sense and Sensibility* for a publication. In a letter to Cassandra, in a frank manner, she reports; "I am never too busy to think of S & S. I can no more forget it, than a mother can forget her sucking child" (49, p. 123). Her excitement gives energy for a series of correspondence: "I have now Written myself into 250 pounds – which only makes me long for more", she wrote to her brother Frank (58, p. 147). Liberated from the financial dependency of her position as a middle-aged, unmarried daughter, Austen gained fresh confidence. In a professional assurance Austen writes;

"I could not sit seriously down to write a serious Romance under any other motive than to save my Life, & if it were indispensable for me to keep it up & never relax into laughing at myself or other people, I am sure I should be hung before I had finished the first Chapter" (82, p. 192).

Her self-assurance is striking when she mentions her place in family matters. In a context she refers to a visit she received from Godmersham:

"This will be an excellent time for Ben to pay his visit – now that we are absent. I did not mean to eat, but Mr. Johncock has brought in the Tray, so I must. – I am alone. Edward is gone into his woods. – At this present time I have five tables, Eight 7 twenty Chairs & two fires all to myself" (61, pp. 158-9).

Austen's self-mockery here mixes her power and status that she and Cassandra, the formidable maiden aunts, are assumed to hold at home, with her powerlessness, left alone amid excessive grandeur for the Godmersham furnishings. This is a self-mockery out of self-assurance; indulgent to the desires of a younger generation, and content to oblige the servant who has brought the unwanted food. She can joke about the social trappings of her status.

Austen's letters are seen formidable source of information regarding her professional life as a novelist in her maturity. The letters to Fanny are key documents in helping to create an intimate portrait of Austen. It is well known that she was devoted to her brother's children. She was known to be particularly fond of her two eldest nieces, born within three months of each other in 1793. Writing to James's daughter Anna, Austen offers supportive detailed commentary on her writing. Edward's daughter Fanny – "almost another sister", as Austen described to Cassandra (38, p. 94) – asked for her aunt's advice about men suitors. It might be that Fanny must have been triggered by Austen's expertise about marital issues as derived from her novels. Austen's replies to Fanny include some clear thoughts on women, love, and marriage. "Single women have propensity for being poor – which is one very strong argument in favor of matrimony; but anything is to be preferred or endured rather than marrying without affection" (90, pp. 205-5). Austen seems uncompromising in her warnings against marrying without love, affection or too early that might bring sudden pregnancies: "Anna has not a chance of escape ... Poor Animal, she will be worn out before she is thirty" (92, p. 209). Thus, Austen's sensitivity on the marital and interfamilial issues and their potential consequences are not more ensuring or visible than in the moments of serious gossips that are evident in the letters.

In her novels Austen is known to have referred to her culture's physiognomic, aesthetic and literary conventions to draw her characters whose physical being communicated important information about their natures. As Anderson remarks;

"She made the conventional her own and produced an endlessly intriguing narrative reality (her letters, like her novels, are narratives peopled with characters). For example, in letter after letter, "fat" connotes substance, health and vitality as well as the comically complimentary toward women" (76).

As we understand, Austen treats the fat "a more intriguing image for commentary in her letter-writing than the thin" (Anderson, p. 76), as touched on in her collected letters. Austen connects weight gain with beauty and health in her letters. In a letter to Cassandra that was written in 1796;

"Fanny is as handsome as ever, and somewhat fatter. We had a very pleasant day, and some liqueurs in the evening. Louisa's figure is very much improved; she is as stout again as she was. Her face, from what I could see of it one evening, appeared not at all altered" (cited in Anderson, p. 76).


Anderson in her article remarks that Austen combines the concept of good looks and female enlargement, as revealed in Martha's case that deserves appreciation because weight can be seen as a sign of financial well-being. She says similar words in a letter written in 27-28 October 1798 that her brother James' wife Mary's pregnancy in the eighth month, "Mary is still quite well & uncommonly large" (Anderson, p. 77). As we can see from these examples mentioned in her letters that woman's physical augmentation can be a good reference that contributes to her attractiveness and well-being.

2. Conclusion

Austen's earliest surviving letter was written when she was 20; the last, a few weeks before she died at the age of 41. In the first letter she wrote about social conventions at local balls, and of having spent all her money on the dress codes (1. p. 4). In the last letter, she described her physical weakness and appreciation to Cassandra as her "tender and watchful nurse", yet she still touched on the sharp interest in fashion and other people as she tried to hide her fear against death: "You will find Captain – a very respectable, well-meaning man, without much manner, his wife and his sister all good humor and I hope with rather longer petticoats than last year" (97, p. 215). Such gossip comments shed light on Austen and her core of her fiction,

where she examines "Little Matters" of lives with a discriminatory irony that shows the letters as very important.

References

- Anderson, Kathleen. (2005). "The Jane Austen diet: the weight of women in Austen's letters."
Persuasions: The Jane Austen Journal 27: 75+Literature Resources from Gale. Web. 23 Feb. 2013.
- Jones, Vivien. (2004). *Jane Austen Selected Letters*. Oxford World's Classics. Oxford University Press.
- Juhasz, Suzanne. (1987). "Bonnet and Balls: Reading Jane Austen's Letters." *The Centennial Review 31*. 1: 84-104.
- 

INTEGRATING CULTURE WITH ENGLISH LANGUAGE TEACHING WITH THE AIM OF IMPROVING SECONDARY SCHOOL STUDENTS' ACHIEVEMENT IN TARGET LANGUAGE

AYFER TANIŞ*
ÖZGE TUÇE GÖKALP*
FERRAH NUR DÜNDAR*

Abstract: The connection between language and culture has always been a concern of Foreign Language teachers, educators, learners, parents and administrators throughout the language teaching history. The purpose of this study is to investigate whether the integration of culture teaching with language teaching process effects students' achievement in foreign language learning. In this context, the answers to the research questions "What kind of activities and techniques should be selected to increase the students' achievement in target language in a restricted time? Does integrating culture with English Language Teaching have a positive impact upon students' achievement in target language" are examined. In this study, both qualitative and quantitative data were collected through classroom observation reports, interviews and pre-test and post-test results. Also, SPSS statistical program was used for T-test. The participants were secondary school students enrolled in MEV College, in İstanbul during 2014-2015 Academic Years. According to the findings, there is a significant difference between the pre and post test results of the students ($t(69) = -9.20, p=.000$) and the interviews with the students and the teachers and classroom observations indicated that the achievements of the pupils could be developed through culture integrated activities in a restricted period.

Key Word: English language teaching; culture; achievement

* Kırklareli University, [ayferaksut@klu.edu.tr]

* Kırklareli University, [ozgetucegokalp@klu.edu.tr]

* Kırklareli University, [ferrahnurdandar@klu.edu.tr]



ICSSH2016
INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES

1. Introduction

FL teachers and educators have always been concerned about the dialectical connection between language and culture. Hence, whether culture of the target language is to be incorporated into FL teaching so as to improve the students' achievement in foreign language learning has been investigated in recent years. The integration of cultural points through the language learning has been a subject of rapid change throughout language teaching history. In the course of time, the opinions of ELT scholars' has changed for teaching culture in context of language teaching. For example, while the researchers discussed the importance of including cultural components into L2 curriculum in the first decades of the 20th century (Sysoyev & Donelson, 2002); the advent of Communicative Language Teaching (CLT) in the late 70s marks a critical shift for teaching culture.(Pulverness, 2003).

Especially with the writings of scholars such as Byram (1997) and Kramsch (2001), recent studies focus on the significant relationship between L2 teaching and target culture teaching. Educators involved in language teaching have also understood the intertwined relation between culture and language (Pulverness, 2003). It has been emphasized that without the study of culture, teaching L2 is inaccurate and incomplete. For FL students, language study seems meaningless if they don't know anything about the people who speak the target language or the country in which the target language is spoken. Acquiring a new language means a lot more than the manipulation of syntax and lexicon. Therefore, the mutual relation between language and culture, i.e. the interaction of language and culture has long been a settled issue thanks to the writings of prominent philosophers such as Saussure (1966), Foucault (1994), Dilthey (1989), Adorno (1993), Davidson (1999), and Chomsky (1968). These are the names that come to mind when the issue is the relation between language and culture. However, the most striking linguists dealing with the issue of language and culture are Sapir (1962) and Whorf (1956). They are the scholars whose names are often used synonymously with the term "Linguistic Relativity" (Richards et al, 1992). The core of their theory is that a) we perceive the world in terms of categories and distinctions found in our native language and b) what is found in one

language may not be found in another language due to cultural differences.

In addition, the communicative competence model is based on this understanding of the relationship between language and culture. Linguistic, discourse, sociolinguistic, and strategic competence each incorporate facets of culture, and the development of these competences is intertwined with the development of cultural awareness. According to Bada (2000: 101), "the need for cultural literacy in ELT arises mainly from the fact that most language learners, not exposed to cultural elements of the society in question, seem to encounter significant hardship in communicating meaning to native speakers."

In the light of this information, the main premise of this study is to provide the language teachers some effective culture-integrated classroom activities and techniques.

1.1 Culture in Language Learning and Teaching:

In EFL classrooms, as we teach language, we would automatically teach culture. The forms of address, greetings, formulas, and other utterances found in the dialogues or models our students hear and the allusions to aspects of culture found in the reading represent cultural knowledge. Gestures, body movements, and distances maintained by speakers should foster cultural insights. Students' intellectual curiosity is increased and positively affected when they learn that there exists another mode of expression to talk about feelings, wants, needs and when they read the literature of the foreign country.

According to Tomalin & Stempleski (1993: 7-8), the teaching of culture has the following goals:

To help students to develop an understanding of the fact that all people exhibit culturally-conditioned behaviours.

To help students to develop an understanding that social variables such as age, sex, social class, and place of residence influence the ways in which people speak and behave.

To help students to increase their awareness of the cultural connotations of words and phrases in the target language.

To help students to develop the necessary skills to locate and organize information about the target culture.

To stimulate students' intellectual curiosity about the target culture, and to encourage empathy towards its people.

1.2. Incorporating Culture into the Foreign Language Classroom: Some Practical Considerations and Instructional Strategies for Teaching Language and Culture

The example of culture-integrated classroom activities, useful ideas, and techniques applied during this study in MEV College in order to increase the students' achievements in FLL process are described in the following:

1.2.1. Authentic Materials

Using authentic sources from the native speech community helps to engage students in authentic cultural experiences. Sources can include films, news broadcasts, and television shows; Web sites; and photographs, magazines, newspapers, restaurant menus, travel brochures, and other printed materials. For example, students can watch and listen to video clips taken from a television show in the target language and focus on such cultural conventions as greetings. The teacher might supply students with a detailed translation or give them a chart, diagram, or outline to complete while they listen to a dialogue or watch a video. After the class has viewed the relevant segments, the teacher can engage the students in discussion of the cultural norms represented in the segments and what these norms might say about the values of the culture. Discussion topics might include nonverbal behaviors (e.g., the physical distance between speakers, gestures, eye contact, societal roles, and how people in different social roles relate to each other). Students might describe the behaviors they observe and discuss which of them are similar to their native culture and which are not and determine strategies for effective communication in the target language.

1.2.2. Proverbs

Discussion of common proverbs in the target language could focus on how the proverbs are different from or similar to proverbs in the students' native language. Using proverbs as a way to explore culture also provides a way to analyze the stereotypes about and misperceptions of the culture, as well as a way for students to explore the values that are often represented in the proverbs of their native culture.

1.2.3. Role Play

In role plays, students can act out a miscommunication that is based on cultural differences. For example, after learning about ways of addressing different groups of people in the target culture, such as people of the same age and older people, students could role play a situation in which an inappropriate greeting is used. Other students observe the role play and try to identify the reason for the miscommunication. They then role play the same situation using a culturally appropriate form of address. Also during these activities, the teacher could help students understand socially appropriate communication, such as making requests that show respect; for example, "Hey you, come here" may be a linguistically correct request, but it is not a culturally appropriate way for a student to address a teacher. Students will master a language only when they learn both its linguistic and cultural norms.

1.2.4. Culture Capsules

Students can be presented with objects (e.g., figurines, tools, jewelry, art) or images that originate from the target culture. The students are then responsible for finding information about the item in question, either by conducting research or by being given clues to investigate. They can either write a brief summary or make an oral presentation to the class about the cultural relevance of the item.

1.2.5. Literature

Literary texts are often replete with cultural information and evoke memorable reactions for readers. Also, the short-stories and poems that reflect the target culture and society have a positive and effective impact upon students' learning process.

1.2.6. Films

Film and television segments offer students an opportunity to witness behaviors that are not obvious in texts. Film is often one of the more current and comprehensive ways to encapsulate the look, feel, and rhythm of a culture.

1.2.7. Projects

With the aim of having the pupils discover different cultures and practice the target language at the same time via raising their awareness and developing empathy through the cultural diversity in the world, projects should be taken into account by the teachers. For example, in the project applied in MEV College, the seventh and eighth graders searched topics such as famous people, cuisine, dances, traditions, customs, songs, well-known buildings, and daily life languages in terms of sentence structure and specific vocabulary for the countries. And the students prepared projects that include the following topics via working in pairs or groups:

- The slide-show that includes the biography of the famous people
- Recipe of local dishes and pictures of them
- Famous theatre and children's play
- Lyrics of songs and music and drama
- Models of famous buildings and information cards of them
- Designing a pocket dictionary for daily use need

The students shared all of the presentations and products such as pocket dictionaries, models of the historical and well-known places, flashcards consisting of children games unique for the countries, travel brochures and cookery books in Culture Festival Day with the other students and their parents.

In this context, the students gave their friends opportunity to learn the food, culture, tradition, famous people, and buildings of other countries without even travelling to them and improve their language skills at the same time.

2. Method

2.1. Research Group

The research group in this study consists of thirty-three seventh and thirty-seven eighth grade pre-intermediate level primary school students enrolled in MEV College, in İstanbul in 2014-2015 Academic Years.

2.2. Data Collection and Analysis

In this study, both qualitative and quantitative data were collected through classroom observations, interviews with the pupils and teachers, and one group pre-test and post-test design was also used to conduct numerical data. Pre- test and post-test are applied to students in order to determine whether integrating the cultural points with foreign language learning will be effective and facilitative so as to improve the achievements of the students in FL. Classroom observations were conducted by the teachers and the researcher and the students are observed in the classroom atmosphere during 2014-2015 Academic Years.

Preparing the Pre-Test and Post-Test

The pre and post-tests which are applied to students six months intermittently includes five sections as listening, vocabulary, use of English, reading and writing.

2.3. Findings and Results

T-test design is used in order to analyze the relationship between the pre and post test results. As indicated in Table 1 and 2, significant difference ($t(69) = -9.20, p=.000$) is found between the pre ($M=79.35$) and post test results ($M=89.66$) of the students. Thus, the results of the study indicated that the achievements of the pupils' in foreign language learning could be developed through culture integrated activities.

Table 1. Paired Samples Statistics & Correlations

	Mean	N	Std. Deviation	Std. Error Mean	Correlation	Sig.
Pair 1 Pretest & posttest	79.351 89.657	70 70	13.43264 7.58887	1.60551 .90704	.737	.000

Table 2. Paired Samples Test

	T	df	Sig. (2-tailed)
Pair pretest - posttest	-9.201	69	.000

Also, as indicated in table 3, 4, and 5, there is a significant and meaningful difference between the pre and post test results of the pupils and the post-test results of the students underlined the fact that culture integrated activities had an important positive effect on students' achievement in foreign language in a limited time. While the seventh graders scores were 75.60 before the application, their grades increase as 87.54 after the application of the activities. Also the eight graders' pre-test scores were 82.70 and post-test scores increased as 91.54 by means of culture integrated classroom practice.

Moreover, as shown in table 3, 4, and 5, there is a significant difference between the seventh and eighth grade students' achievements in foreign language learning. Eight grade students' pre-test results (M= 82.70) and post-test results (M= 91.54) are higher than seventh grade students' pre-test (M=75.61) and post-test results (M= 87.54).

Table 3. Group Statistics

class	N	Mean	Std. Deviation
pretest 7th grade	33	75.6061	11.58647
8th grade	37	82.7027	14.21631
posttest 7th grade	33	87.5455	5.87415
8th grade	37	91.5405	8.48395

Table 4. Independent Samples Test

	Levene's Test	
--	---------------	--

	for Equality of Variances		T-test for Equality of Means		
	F	Sig.	t	df	Sig.(2-tailed)
pretest	.331	.567	-2.272	68	.026
			-2.299	67.482	.025
posttest	2.321	.132	-2.263	68	.027
			-2.310	64.226	.024

Table 5. Independent Samples Test

	Levene's Test for Equality of Variances		T-test for Equality of Means		
	F	Sig.	t	df	Sig.(2-tailed)
pretest	1.282	.262	.940	68	.350
			.932	63.481	.355
posttest	2.893	.094	1.355	68	.180
			1.345	64.116	.183

As indicated in table 6, there is not a significant difference between the male and female students' achievement results.

Table 6. Group Statistics

sex	N	Mean	Std. Deviation
pretest female	37	80.7838	12.43457
male	33	77.7576	14.49575
posttest female	37	90.8108	7.05863
male	33	88.3636	8.05380

Moreover, the qualitative data conducted by means of the interviews with the students and teachers and classroom observations supported the previous research findings.

After the classroom observations, the students were interviewed about how they learn Foreign Language via cultural points and what they think about culture integrated activities and how culture-integrated activities effect their achievement through foreign language learning. The comments of the seventh and eighth grade students in MEV College were as follows:

Ece Aksoy: "I learn better with films and songs. I learn English people and their jokes."

Can Ertal: "Culture represents the country and people."

Selen Bal: "We like English and Turkish culture and lessons are interesting. We watched videos and films about England. We learned new words with different activities."

Barış Erol: "I like learning different cultures. The reading passages are not boring. I learned many things."

Azra Akbaş: "We learned new words in Literature Lesson. We prepared models about historical buildings. It is enjoyable."

Berkan Aysan: "We have roles in theatre. We played The Sleeping Beauty. It is interesting."

Dilara Ergun: "I loved projects. I made a presentation. My friends enjoyed it. It is about English and Turkish culture, traditions, food, famous people, places...."

Yiğit Duman: "I want to learn more about English people, their lives. The movie was good and funny. Learning English is easy."

Doruk Güneş: "I learn better in English lesson, because the lesson and activities are funny, different. We made models, posters and we prepared culture festival day at school."

As shown in the preceding comments of the students' in the research group, the students generally find language learning more enjoyable and interesting thanks to culture-integrated activities and this directly has a positive impact upon their achievement in foreign language learning.

The classroom teachers of the research group Aynur Erol, Didem Öztürk, Efsun Çağlıyan and Şelale Begüm Gökalp also point out that when they integrate the cultural codes and points to the lessons, the students become active participants as they enjoy preparing models, searching the internet, making power-point presentations, creating posters, playing games and watching films about different cultures. Generally, the students become more enthusiastic about learning different cultures and the target culture in the culture corner parts of the students' books and the short-stories they read during the lesson. When the pupils watch movies or attend role-play activities, they learn the language in use. Thus, this improves both their linguistic and communicative competence via facilitating students learning and achievement in FL.

3. Conclusion

In conclusion, as this study illustrates, students' achievements in MEV College are positively affected when the culture and language are taken as not separated but interrelated elements in both learning and teaching process. By means of this study conducted with MEV College students, it is indicated that language and culture are closely connected; pupils can hardly understand and use language correctly if they know nothing about its culture. In this context, as language is indicated to be the only one form of culture, it is impossible to learn English well without knowing culture. In addition, the deeper the pupils know one country's history, culture, customs and traditions, etc., the better they can use its language. That is why; the teaching of


culture should become an integral part of foreign language instruction.

In the light of the investigations in this study, it is observed that culture teaching should be integrated to foreign language teaching with the aim of allowing learners to increase their knowledge of the target culture in terms of people's way of life, values, attitudes, and beliefs, and how these manifest themselves or are couched in linguistic categories and forms. More specifically, when the teaching of culture is integrated to foreign language teaching process, it facilitates the learners to become aware of speech acts, connotations, etiquette, that is, appropriate or inappropriate behaviour, as well as provide them with the opportunity to act out being a member of the target culture and language via improving their communicative and linguistic competence in a parallel way. Hence, culture must be fully incorporated as a vital component of language learning and foreign language teachers should identify key cultural items in every aspect of the language that they teach. Then, the students can be much more successful in acquiring the foreign language and they will improve their skills and achievements in target language by means of developing their cultural and linguistic awareness when cultural issues become an inherent part of the ELT classroom.

References

- Adorno, T. (1993). *The Culture Industry: Selected Essay on Mass Culture*. Routledge.
- Bada, E. (2000). Culture in ELT. *Cukurova University Journal of Social Sciences* (6), 100-110.
- Byram, M. (1997a). "Cultural awareness' in vocabulary learning". *Language Learning Journal* 16. 51-57.
- Chomsky, N. (1968). *Language and Mind*. Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, Inc.
- Davidson, D. (1999). *The Philosophy of Donald Davidson*. (Ed) Lewis Edwin Hahn. Illinois: Open Court Publishing Company.
- Dilthey, W. (1989). *Introduction to the Human Sciences: An Attempt to Lay a Foundation for the Study of Society and History*. Wayne State University Press.
- Foucault, M. (1994). *The Order of Things: An Archaeology of the Human Sciences*. USA: Vintage Books.
- Kramsch, C. (2001). *Language and Culture*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

- Pulverness, A. (2003). Distinctions & Dichotomies: Culture-free, Culture-bound. Online documents at URL <http://elt.britcoun.org.pl/forum/distanddich.htm>.
- Richards, J. C., Platt, J., and Platt, H. (1992). *Dictionary of Language Teaching & Applied Linguistics*. Essex: Longman.
- Sapir, E. (1962). *Culture, Language and Personality*. University of California.
- Saussure, F. de. (1966). *Course in General Linguistics*. Edited by Charles Bally, Albert Sechehaye collaboration with Albert Riedlinger. Translated by Wade Baskin. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Company
- Sysoyev, P. V. & Donelson L. R. (2002). Teaching Cultural Identity through Modern Language: Discourse as a Marker of an Individual's Cultural Identity. Online documents at URL <http://www.actr.org/JER/issue4/11.htm>.
- Tomalin, B. and Stempleski, S. (1998). *Cultural Awareness*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Whorf, B. L. (1956) *Language, Thought, and Reality: Selected Writings of Benjamin Lee Whorf*. (Ed) John B. Carroll. Cambridge: MIT Press.



THE EFFICIENCY OF PROOFREADING SOFTWARE IN PROOFREADING SKILLS



ALEKSANDAR ANASTASOVSKI *

SEZEN ISMAIL *

RADMILA ŽIVANOVIĆ *

DELCO LESHKOVSKI *



Abstract: Writing error-free texts in English language by non-native speakers is usually a problem. Development of computer technology creates different tools to help and support the process of professional text proofreading. One of the most suggested software with the best performances for non-professional writers in professional writing is *WhiteSmoke*. However, using this software does not guarantee that non-native speakers will write texts without any mistakes, nonetheless can contribute to improving their proofreading skills. This research tries to explore the efficiency of the *WhiteSmoke* proofreading software on students with different English Language proficiency. A group of L2 students volunteers were involved in this research. They were examined via three types of tests. The first, “pen and paper” proofreading process, was set as test for their basic knowledge of English language and classification of their language level. The second test was proofreading of the same text by the use of a proofreading software, and the third was proofreading of a new text b using the proofreading software only. The obtained data has been evaluated by descriptive statistical methods. The results reflect the correlation between different professional profiles, student’s level of English proofreading skills, and the performed proofreading using the *WhiteSmoke* software. This research emphasizes the necessity of using new software solutions in assisting student’s education that further on can be included in their learning process, especially supporting students

* International Balkan University

* International Balkan University

* International Balkan University

* International Balkan University



who are non-native English speakers. The results were analyzed for certain type of mistakes as spelling, grammar and sentence construction. The spelling mistakes were corrected with high efficiency, as every writing software does it perfect. Other mistakes were less than “pen and paper” proofreading, but also depend on students` level of English proficiency.

Key Word: *proofreading software, education, English language*

Abbreviations

AL – average level

ESL - English as a Second Language is an educational approach in which English language learners are instructed in the use of the English language.

ESOL - English for Speakers of Other Languages

HL – high level

L1 – learners / writers in native language

L2 – learners / writers in no native language

LL – low level

SPED – special education

1. Introduction

As a result of the scientific development of electronics especially, creating various computer hardware and software has become very popular. Since it has been designed, computers became one of the most powerful tools for every human activity. It is the base for today`s communication in few ways. That means, there are many software tools for communications as writing, talking and video conferences. As for writing, word processors are mostly used for written communication. At the beginning, these software tools are used just to write texts without any additional options, since a written text could have many typing or grammar mistakes, the emergence of word processors gives additional option for proofreading. Proofreading, means to read and correct mistakes in a written or printed piece of writing (Mariem-Webster 2016). Due to the fact that non-native speakers of English language can make many writing errors, word processors as add-ins or specific software are very helpful. The

number of mistakes is related to their knowledge of English. Hypothetically, a higher level of a foreign language command will result in better use of these proofreading software and creating more professionally written text documents. Persons with lower knowledge of English could probably improve their texts, but not as persons with better English. This hypothesis is the base for the research presented in this paper.

A report published by Bangert-Drowns in 1993, acknowledges that first researches and analysis for using word processors for correct writing in languages for native and non-native writers begun in the last decade of the 20th century. They described the effects of word processing of writing in English as a mother tongue in producing high quality written documents. Bangert-Drowns (Bangert-Drowns 1993) found out higher effectiveness in creating longer compositions, and also more revisions of their writings by the users than they would normally do by pen and paper. They concluded that these proofreading software programs allow student writers to attend to higher-order decisions. Many papers discovered that grammar and spell checking are very significant for users whose English language is a non-native (L2 writers) (Li and Cumming 2001). The study of Berens (Berens 1986) and another study by Piper (Piper 1987) reported on the difficulties in handwriting of persons whose native alphabet is non-Roman, as they have fretfulness for the possibility to make spelling and grammar mistakes. All these anxieties are minimized with suggestions given by the proofreading software when they write on computers. Pennington (Pennington 1999) concluded that these word processors make L2 writers to write freely and with ease by further manipulating long texts, they may write more, write differently, and better. According to Phinney et al. (Phinney and Khouri 1993) writing on word processors could cause some problems even with L1 English writers (native English writers). These L1 writers are possessing weak writing skills and that fact is even worse with L2 writers with weak writing skills (Ching 1990). Goldberg et al. (Goldberg et al. 2002) analyzed writing via pen and paper method as well as the use of software. They compared the differences between these two types of writing. They used random student assignments, directly compared their paper/hand written writing, presence of pre-

and post-test, standardized/controlled writing conditions, intervention time/duration of study (less than six weeks, between six weeks and one semester, more than one semester), sample size (thirty or less, between thirty-one and one-hundred, more than one-hundred). They took into consideration the student's characteristics. They tested different grade level students (elementary, middle and secondary), gender (mixed and homogenous), race / ethnic description (homogenous, mixed), school setting (rural, suburban, urban), type of students (mainstream, SPED / at risk, gifted, ESL/ESOL) and their writing abilities (low, average, high).

Salomon et al. (Salomon et al. 2003) argued about reported mixed effects in students' writing with proofreading software. They suggest analysis of long lasting "effect off" vs. the direct "effect with" technology usage paradigm. According to them, the direct "effect with" word processors give easy production, but less planning and less meaningful revisions. Similar conclusions have been made by Tzotzou and Turabelis in their research (Tzotzou and Tourabelis 2015). Many researchers report the benefits of the use of proofreading software in language learning. Hyland (Hyland 1990) explained the few main functions of these kinds of software as: text manipulation, text creation and simulation activities. Furthermore, text manipulation means text transformation, substitution, indentation, reordering, deletion, and error corrections. The text creation contains further activities such as: paragraph completion, text completion, collaborative writing, parallel writing, text expansion; and simulation responds to news desk, consultants and assessors, job search, and life changes.

Recently, the development of some proofreading software has been on high level that can even recognize the suitability of some words in logical meaning in sentences. That means the possibility of mistakes in use of words "from" instead "form" and vice versa or similar examples (Pilotti et al. 2012). Further upgrades of proofreading software are expected to be more sophisticated and to be very close to human proofreader. Limbu and Markauskaite (Limbu and Markauskaite 2015) researched the online collaborative writing, that is also connected with proofreading. As a result, online collaborative writing gives effective environment for students who used it.

1.1 Advantages and disadvantages of proofreading software

The proofreading software is expected to work perfectly in determination of different kind of mistakes. But the usage of these proofreading software have many advantages and disadvantages. Li and Cumming identified the advantages and disadvantages of proofreading software (Li and Cumming 2001). They divide functions of proofreading software into:

Spell checking,

Block moving, block deleting and formatting,

Storage,

Highly readable screen displays and nearly printed hard copies,

Motor and mnemonic skills needed for operating a computer.

As advantages, they determined further that: software helps students in writing texts with a smaller number of spelling errors; it avoids copying of text and facilitates revising and editing; students can add their comments, thoughts and ideas in the text document; they can make in depth and surface level revision of texts. The determined disadvantages are possibilities of encouraging surface level revisions, focused on spelling of words; avoiding of recopying can cause fewer rereadings; software can complicate the task of writing (poor typing skills could result with poor essays).

JSHS|207

1.2 Short review of proofreading software existing in the market

There is a variety of proofreading software programs on the market that could be categorized in few groups, based on the way how it is used. Many commercial software contain proofreading tools such as software for writing or text publishing. Furthermore, there are software programs specialized only for proofreading that could be installed on personal computers and almost always have support to another commercial writing software. Proofreading software that are working only on-line is a separate group of software programs. All these software have many different and similar performances. The Purch company made a review of the best proofreading software in 2016 (PURCH 2016). Their review is based on the following categories:

Editing tools (grammar explanation, spelling, editing suggestions, basic grammar, analyze content / meaning, word processing add-on, advanced grammar, usage, web integration),

Performance (subject / verb agreement, articles, capitalization, punctuation, prepositions, commonly confused words, sentence structure, negatives, passive voice, modifiers, pronoun agreement, adjectives and adverbs, numbers),

Reference tools (thesaurus, document templates, dictionary, translator, writing tutorials) help and support (email, FAQs, phone, live chat) and,

Supported configurations (*Windows 8, Windows 7, Windows Vista, Windows XP, MacOS*). They determined that the best proofreading software for 2016 is *WhiteSmoke*.

The ranging of other software with their grades is shown on Table 1.

There are also other software programs that are free for use, like *1Click*, "*After the Deadline*", etc. Every free software is working by creating a personal account. *1Click* supports *MS Office* (Word and Outlook). "*After the Deadline*" is similar as *Grammarly*, and it has an extension or add-on for Chrome or Firefox, or with OpenOffice.org. *AutoCrit* analyzes manuscripts to identify areas for improvement, including pacing and momentum, dialogue, strong writing, word choice and repetition (The Write Life 2016). It is suggested for fiction writers. *ProWritingAid* analyzes writing and produces reports on areas such as overused words, writing style, sentence length, grammar and repeat words and phrases. Hemingway App. is a slightly different software that provides a readability score — the lowest grade level someone would need to understand the text — and analyzes writing to identify areas for improvement. Another add-in for Microsoft Word called *WordRake*, cuts out the unnecessary words or phrases that creep into writing. It works with Microsoft Word and Outlook, depending on the license. The *PaperRater* is another free online proofreading tool which checks grammar, spelling and word voice. Once uploaded text into *PaperRater* and chosen the option settings, it can start analyzing selected article. The speed of analyzing the document for punctuation, spelling and grammar errors will be decided in regard to the content length. However, the manuscript is

analyzed immediately in real-time. Another proofreading software is *SpellChecker* (WebSpellchecker.net) that provides a few great tools to check spelling and grammar qualities of the articles. One of those products is SpellChecker.net. It analyses articles and checks grammar mistakes as well as it finds synonyms. In addition, there is *Reverso Spell Checker* which is particularly a special proofreading tool for checking English spelling and grammar errors. Just like in the *Spell Checker* tool, in *Reverso English* grammar, spelling tool finds synonyms for each word in an article. It also suggests important changes/recommendations for the article such as removing words/text, adding new words, punctuation, etc.

Table 1. The best proofreading software ranging for 2016 (PURCH 2016)

categories	Editing tools	Performance	Reference tools	Help and support	Overall rating
WhiteSmoke	10.00	8.13	10.00	10.00	9.53
Grammarly premium	10.00	10.00	9.38	5.00	9.38
Writer's workbench	9.38	8.75	9.38	10.00	9.28
Microsoft Word	8.75	8.75	9.38	10.00	9.00
StyleWriter	9.38	10.00	7.50	7.50	8.97
Correct English	9.38	8.38	10.00	5.00	8.82
Word Perfect	8.13	10.00	7.50	10.00	8.65
Editor	9.38	8.13	5.00	5.00	7.75
Right Writer	8.75	8.13	5.00	2.50	7.23
ClearEdits	6.88	5.00	7.50	7.50	6.60

JSHS|209

As a result to its function, this software is widely used. *Ginger*, *GramMark*, *ProWritingAid*, *ProofHQ*, *ProofReadBot* are other software programs that are not mentioned here. More information about all this software could be found on the internet.

1.3 The WhiteSmoke software

Since it is a user friendly software which interacts with Microsoft Word as well as with other software from MS Office and other writing processors, writing and proofreading is easier when using the *WhiteSmoke* software. In case when some written text in MS Word should be corrected, *WhiteSmoke* must be active in the background. The cursor blinks on the paragraph of the text where *WhiteSmoke* is doing checking action. F2 button must be pressed in order to start the action. By doing so, the *WhiteSmoke* software copies the paragraph of text and automatically checks the text (Figure 1). As it can be seen, this software gives possible errors and suggestions for solving them.

This software is giving possible solutions, marked with green letters are the detected grammar errors, and red letters mark the spelling mistakes. By clicking on “More” (Figure 2), the software provides the user with possible solutions, synonyms, antonyms, etc. The complete report for checked text is on the right corner. This report contains the number of spelling, grammar and style errors, as well as the grading of “sentence length”, “sentence structure”, “redundancy”, “voice”, “informal expression”, “word choice” and the statistics about the number of sentences, words and characters. If the detected mistakes in the texts are corrected, the text could be changed in those parts where the software did not detect any errors. For another checking of the text after the correction, “Check Text” button, positioned on the right down corner needs to be pressed (Figure 1). That will show other possible mistakes that could improve the writing. If the proofreading is done, the user should hit on the “Apply Changes” button. That will transfer corrected text in the MS Office document. Furthermore, the software will ask “Do you like to check next paragraph?” If the answer is “yes”, it will continue with checking the next paragraph in the same procedure as described earlier.

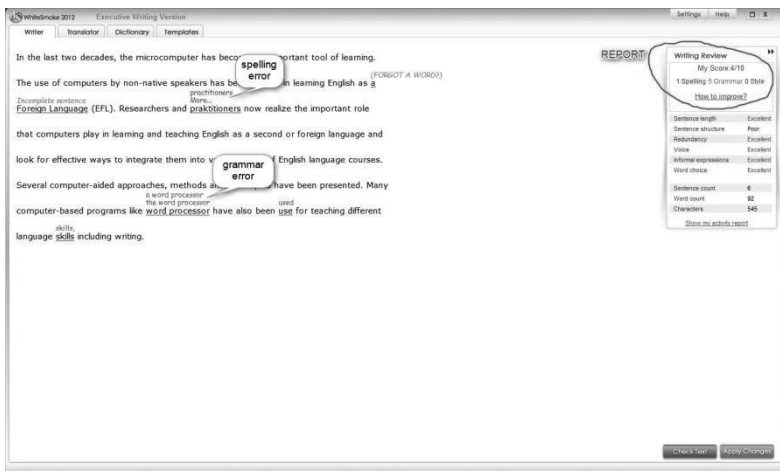


Figure 1. Screen shoot of WhiteSmoke with detected spelling and grammar error

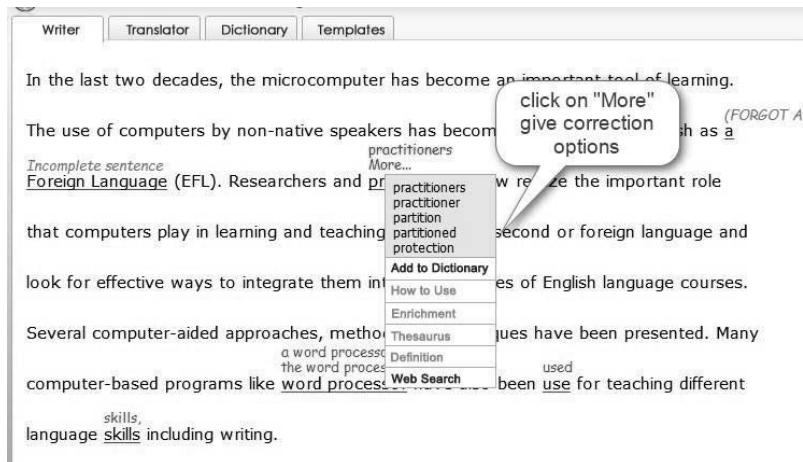


Figure 2. The suggested errors and their solutions

2. Materials and methods

This study is based on an experimental examination of student volunteers. These volunteers follow lectures, take exams and study in English language which is their foreign language. They are L2 writers.

JSHS|211

This experiment has been organized in three steps of examinations: classical (pen and paper) proofreading, proofreading of text that was already proofread in a classical way by using the software, and proofreading of new text with proofreading software. Authors suggest that the type of text should be an authentic text written by a L2 student. The examination text is given in following paragraph:

"Communication for me is a kind of transferred the informations from one person or place to another which can be in diferent ways. There can be meny ways like verbal and non verbal. I think verbal communication is the best way to explained your feelings and your opinions to the public. Non verbal communication is the way that you will do not use words but includes your acts, facial expresions, eyes contact and etc.

I think there are diferent people with diferent comunication process. For example there are a people that can explaining their opinion by writing, many people can be afraid to show their idea by explaining it

because they do not want to be wrong while introduced their opinions."

The first step is selecting the appropriate text in English that contains specific mistakes. That text was given to students to make proofreading in a classical way with pen and paper (SAMPLE 1). This testing of proofreading skills will identify the English language proficiency level. So, the number of mistakes in text that are fixed by students will categorize their writing skill as poor, average or excellent. The grading of their knowledge was determined by the percentage of corrected errors. Meaning that, if the percentage of found mistakes is between 0 – 35%, the students are categorized in the low level of English. If students found between 35% - 70% mistakes they are categorized as average. Finally, if the number of corrected mistakes is above 70% those4 students are categorized in the excellent level of English language proficiency group.

The next step is proofreading of the same text with the help of the proofreading software *WhiteSmoke* (SAMPLE 2). The categorizing of SAMPLE 2 used the same percentage system. The results of the text which was proofread via the software was compared with the text edited with pen and paper proofreading type. The results showed a slight increase of their writing skills, due to the software.

Afterwards, a new text paragraph was prepared only for software proofreading purposes. (SAMPLE 2). The purpose of this test was to measure the usefulness of software for unknown text, because the previous text was proofread with both methods. The new text that was given is as follows:

"Writing for someone may be seen as a very good thing for expressing their filings, thoughts, ideas, etc. For this kind of people writting process can not be hard, they just can wrote in a words all their ideas about whatever they need to writte. This depends how much we are spent to write something. There are also that type of people that does not like writing they can introduce their feeling while they are talking on it.

Writing can be seen different from each persson. I am using the writing communication process almost every day, while I am doing my homeworks or seminar projects. But as we are in this department I

think we should have both writing and verbal communications. Because the companies where we can work our part is to introduced our work to public. Also even if there is any topic that is not related to me I can write for it something after searching it a while."

After trials were completed, the results were analyzed. The analysis were made according to the English proficiency level (the pen and paper method). The changes of writing skills with software were matched, and the certain status of differences was given. The differences between SAMPLE 1 and SAMPLE 2 as well as the differences between SAMPLE 1 and SAMPLE 3 were exemplified as percentage of change, which give the effect size. An effect size represents the standardized differences between two groups on a given measures (Goldberg et al. 2002). Mathematically, that is the mean difference between groups expressed in standard deviation units. The effect size can be calculated as taking the mean performance difference between computerized and pen & paper proofreading and dividing it with standard deviation. Based on this, the overall effect size can be calculated.

3. Results

JSHS|213

All given samples were checked by the professional English language linguist. As it was mentioned in the previous chapter, the measured mistakes were characterized in three types: spelling, grammar and sentence construction (logical understanding of the sentence). The comparisons of SAMPLE 1, SAMPLE 2 and SAMPLE 3 were made according to the number of mistakes in the text determined by expert. All results as percentage of corrected mistakes for every participant are given in Table 2.

Students did the proofreading with *WhiteSmoke* software for given text. The mistakes found by the software are shown on Figure 3 (sample 2 text) and Figure 4 (sample 3 text).

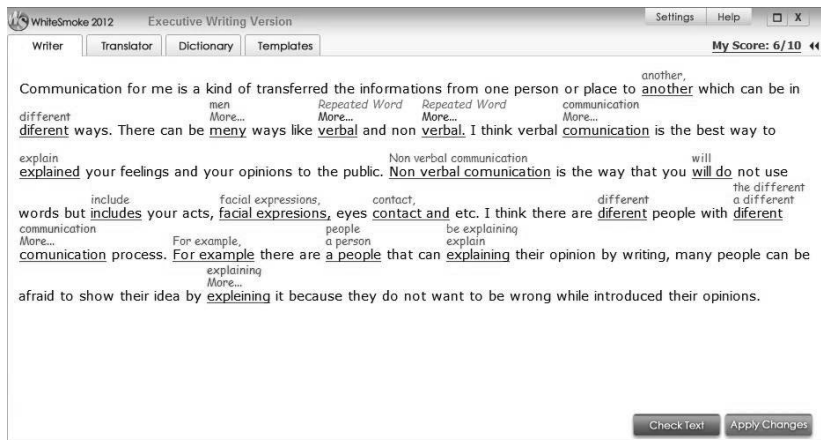


Figure 3. The mistakes find by WhiteSmoke proofreading software in text given as SAMPLE 2

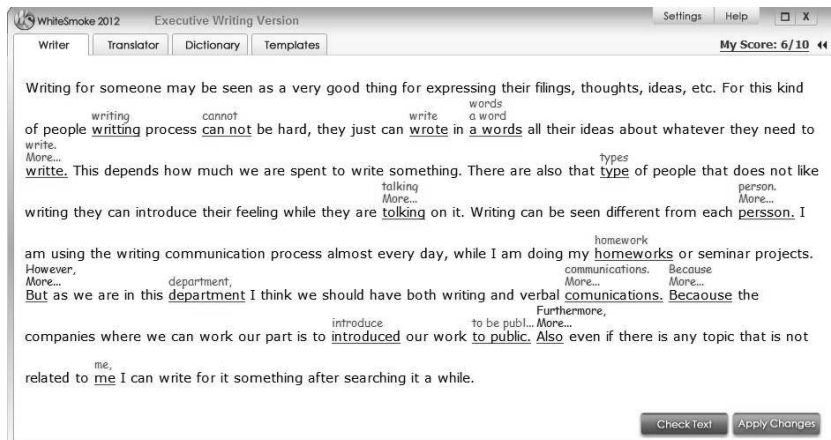


Figure 4. The mistakes find by WhiteSmoke proofreading software in text given as SAMPLE 3

Table 2. Success of participants in proofreading for all samples (spell. – spelling; gr. – grammar; sent. Cons. – sentence construction)

	Success in proofread for Sample 1 [%]			Success in proofread for Sample 2 [%]			Success in proofread for Sample 3 [%]		
	Spell.	Gr.	Sent. cons.	Spell.	Gr.	Sent. cons.	Spell.	Gr.	Sent. cons.
participant 1	100	100	89	100	91	100	100	78	80
participant 2	100	73	78	100	82	89	100	67	80
participant 3	86	82	78	86	91	78	89	67	80
participant 4	100	91	89	57	73	78	78	67	80
participant 5	86	45	67	71	64	56	89	78	70
participant 6	100	55	56	71	55	44	89	56	70
participant 7	100	45	33	86	36	22	78	44	70
participant 8	100	91	89	100	64	78	89	56	60
participant 9	100	73	44	86	73	67	100	56	60
participant 10	100	64	67	71	64	56	100	56	60
participant 11	100	73	67	86	64	56	89	56	60
participant 12	86	73	56	86	73	56	89	44	60
participant 13	100	55	67	100	73	78	89	33	60
participant 14	100	64	67	100	64	78	78	22	60
participant 15	100	82	78	100	64	56	100	44	50
participant 16	86	45	33	71	73	56	89	33	50
participant 17	86	55	44	43	45	56	89	22	50
participant 18	100	91	89	71	64	56	89	44	40
participant 19	86	64	67	86	64	78	78	33	40
participant 20	100	73	67	57	64	78	89	22	40
participant 21	100	73	89	86	55	56	89	33	30
participant 22	100	91	78	100	64	56	89	22	30
participant 23	86	55	67	71	55	78	89	11	30
participant 24	100	91	56	71	55	56	100	11	30

The pen and paper proofreading task give excellent results for spelling. All participants are categorized as “High Level” of English proficiency (Figure 5a). The grammar correction turned out more difficult, as a result 58 % were grouped as HL (Figure 5b). The rest were categorized as AL (Average Level). A major problem for proofreading of sample 1 was the improvement of sentence construction (Figure 5c). Sample 2 were proofread with lesser success (Fig. 6). This task was the software proofreading of the text given as Sample 1. At that point, some of the participants demonstrated confidence toward the software suggestions. Additionally, some spelling mistakes of words, correctly written, but with other meanings were not detected. That is the reason of slightly decreasing spelling mistakes correction for sample 2 and sample 3 (Fig. 6a and Fig. 7a). Similarly, the results for grammar (Fig. 6b and Fig. 7b) and sentence corrections (Fig. 6c and Fig. 7c) success decreasing. The self-non-confidence is the main reason for this. If the average success per category is calculated, percentage is very high for all of them. These values are close to the given high limits for high level category (Fig. 8). According to Fig. 8, average level success is between 50 – 60 %, and its given limits are between 35 – 70 %. So, that means the value is around the middling value.

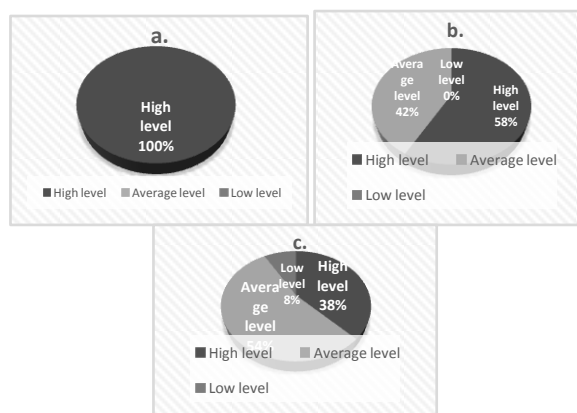


Fig. 5. The percentage of participants that successfully done the proofreading in sample 1, determined by success category (a. spelling mistakes, b. grammar mistakes, c. sentence construction)

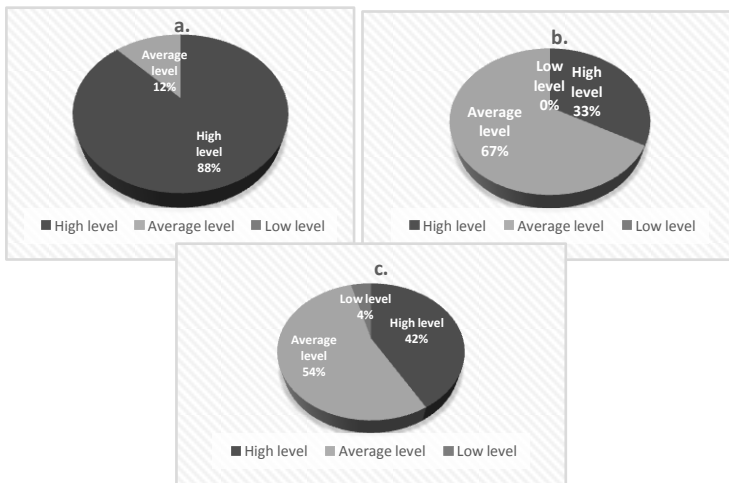


Fig. 6. The percentage of participants that successfully done the proofreading in sample 2, determined by success category (a. spelling mistakes, b. grammar mistakes, c. sentence construction)

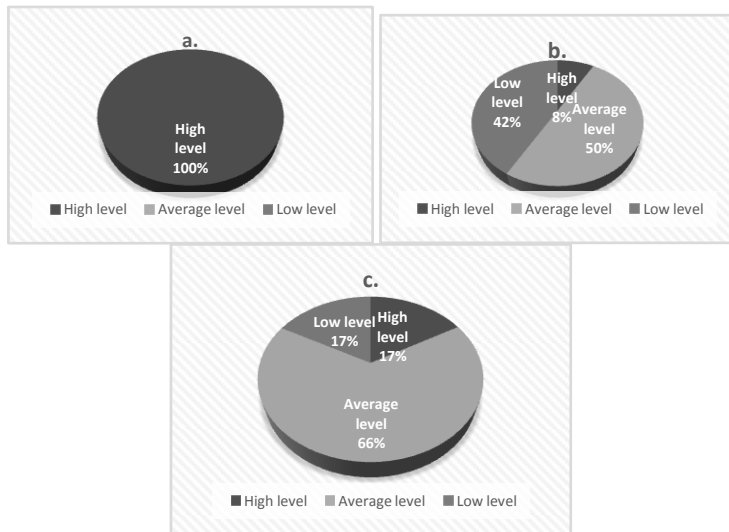


Fig. 7. The percentage of participants that successfully done the proofreading in sample 3, determined by success category (a. spelling mistakes, b. grammar mistakes, c. sentence construction)

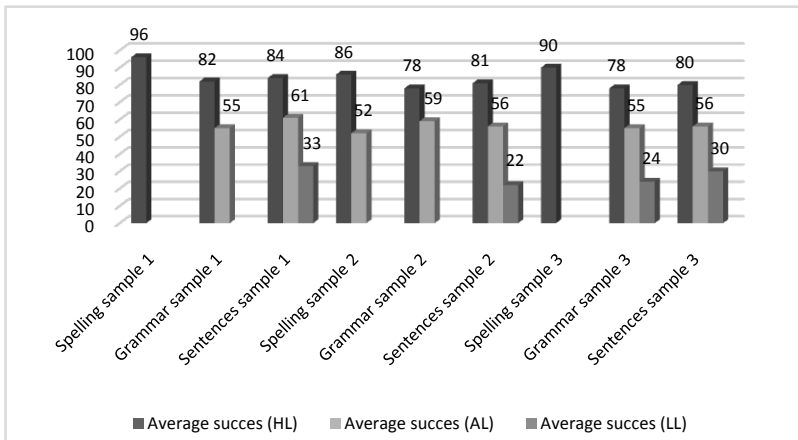


Fig. 8. Average success for all categorized mistakes

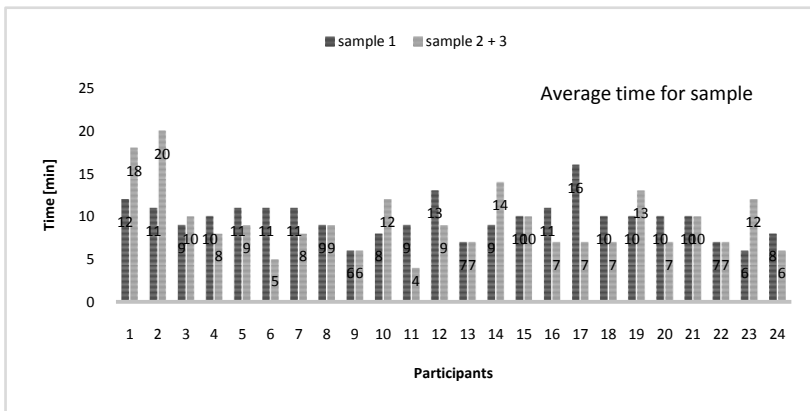


Fig. 9. The time that participants need for pen and paper proofreading (sample 1) and time for software proofreading (SAMPLE 2 + SAMPLE 3)

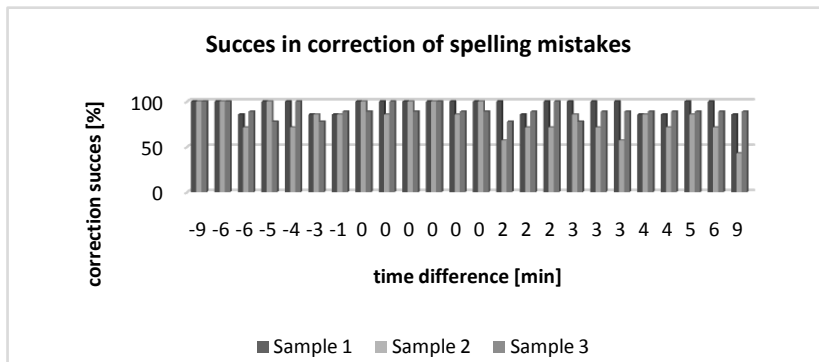


Fig. 10. Success of correction spelling depend on difference between time for pen and paper proofreading and time for proofreading with software

The efficiency of proofreading could be determined with measuring the time that participants need for these procedures. The time needed for pen and paper is higher than the time needed for software proofreading of sample 2 and 3 together (Fig. 9). The relation between the percentage of success and the time differences between classical way and software use is given in Fig. 10. As the time difference becomes more positive, the percentage of success becomes lower. The participants categorized as “high level” have a low time value for software usage. Other participants who have very high time difference, get low success. Most of them are categorized as low level. In the same way, there is a similar relation for grammar and sentences construction results (Fig. 11 and Fig. 12).

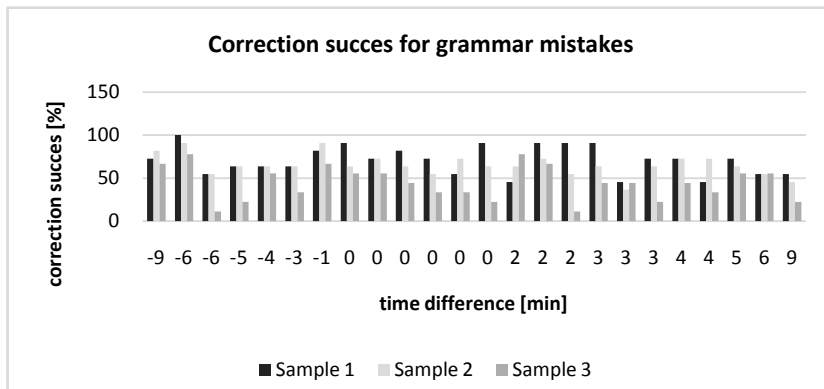


Fig. 11. Success of correction grammar depend on difference between time for pen and paper proofreading and time for proofreading with software

Nevertheless, there are some disadvantages of this research. None of the participants had previous experience with this kind of software. Practically, they did the proofreading with software from the same point of experience and software knowledge. This condition makes results better from experience point of view. However, if they had more experience with using the software, they could have shown better solutions in the proofreading process.

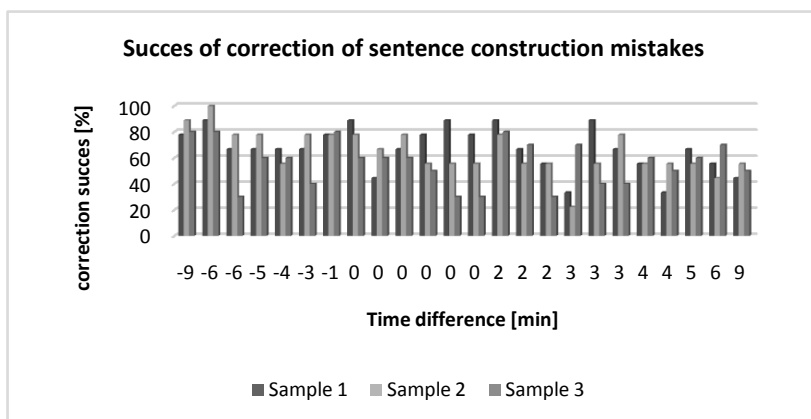


Fig. 12. Success of correction sentence construction depend on difference between time for pen and paper proofreading and time for proofreading with software

4. Conclusion

This research should help in future development of proofreading software. Some notations and conclusions made with these analyses show the weaknesses of *WhiteSmoke* as well as other software like this. This study compares classical way of proofreading (pen and paper) with using software for the same purposes. All participants were divided into three groups, based on their English proficiency. The examination of the gained results showed excellent results for the “high level” of participants, who showed exceptional effects for both types of tests. According to this, excellent English language expertise, can benefit a lot by the usage of *WhiteSmoke* software. In this case, software decreased the proofreading time for more than half, compared with pen and paper. The “average level” participants made the task with variations of their work. There were some results that give better solutions made with software, but mostly of them showed worse outcomes. Analogous to that, this group of contributors had some proofreading skills, however the software suggestions made confusions in their decisions. That corresponded with shown text corrections. The “low level” group of participants got the similar feedback in both types of used methods. They indicated that the software cannot help them to write better. Generally, the *WhiteSmoke* software and similar applications are able to help to improve writing skills only for persons with advanced English proficiency base. Also, editing software can decrease the time for improving texts.

JSHS|221

The future work eventually will continue with analysis of participants that possess good skills for editing software and different level of English proficiency.

References

- Bangert-Drowns, R. L. (1993). The word processor as an instructional tool: A meta-analysis of word processing in writing instruction. *Review of Educational Research*, 63(1), 69–93.
- Berens, G. L. (1986). Using word processing in the ESL composition class. *TESOL Newsletter*, 20(13).

- Ching, R. (1990). Making connections: Computer, tutors, and ESL students. In International TESOL Annual Convention. San Francisco: ERIC Document Publication Service No. ED 324 978.
- Goldberg, A., Russell, M., & Cook, A. (2002). *Meta Analysis: Writing with Computers 1992–2002*. Boston: Technology and Assessment Study Collaborative Boston College.
- Hyland, K. (1990). The Word Processor in Language Learning. *Computer Assisted Language Learning*, 3, 69–78. doi:10.1080/0958822900030107
- Li, J., & Cumming, A. (2001). Word processing and second language writing: A longitudinal case study. *International Journal of English Studies*, 1(2), 127–152.
- Limbu, L., & Markauskaite, L. (2015). How do learners experience joint writing: University students' conceptions of online collaborative writing tasks and environments. *Computers & Education*, 82, 393–408. doi:10.1016/j.compedu.2014.11.024
- Mariem-Webster. (2016). *Mariem-Webster dictionary*. Mariem-Webster dictionary. <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/proofreading>
- Pennington, M. C. (1999). The missing link in computer-assisted writing. In K. Cameron (Ed.), *Computer assisted language learning (CALL): Media, design, and applications* (Computer a., pp. 271–292). Lisse, Netherlands: Swets & Zeitlinger.
- Phinney, M., & Khouri, S. (1993). Computers, revision, and ESL writer: The role of expe. *Journal of Second Language Writing*, 2, 257–277.
- Pilotti, M., Chodorow, M., Agpawa, I., Krajniak, M., & Mahamane, S. (2012). Proofreading for Word Errors 1,2. *Perceptual and Motor Skills*, 114(2), 641–664. doi:10.2466/22.24.27.PMS.114.2.641-664
- Piper, A. (1987). Helping learners to write: A role for word processors. *ELT Journal*, 41(2), 119–125.
- PURCH. (2016). *Writing Enhancement Software Reviews (Top 10 for 2016)*. Software Reviews. <http://writing-enhancement-software-review.toptenreviews.com>. Accessed 1 January 2016
- Salomon, G., Kosminsky, E., & Asaf, M. (2003). COMPUTERS AND WRITING. In T. Nunes & P. Bryant (Eds.), *Handbook of children's literacy* (pp. 409–442). London: Kluwer.
- The Write Life. (2016). *From Grammarly to WordRake: A Review of 6 Automatic Editing Tools*. <http://thewritelife.com/automatic-editing-tools/>. Accessed 1 January 2016
- Tzotzou, M. D., & Tourabelis, M. (2015). Fostering EFL learners' writing skills using word processing within a computer-assisted process-writing framework. *International Scientific Conference eRA*.

GLOBAL FACTORS THAT EFFECT MBI 10 INDEX AND BIST 100 INDEX VALUES

AHMET OĞUZ AKGÜNEŞ *

FETTAH KABA *

Abstract: This paper examines the correlation between global macroeconomic factors and BIST100, MBI 10 Index values. We use S&P (Standard and Poors) 500 index, U.S. Non-Farm Employment, gold prices, U.S. Industrial Production, crude oil prices and US (United States) Money Supply as independent variables. We estimate two regression models via changing the dependent variables. In the first regression model BIST 100 index is calculated as dependent variable. According to the results two of independent variables are significant at %5 and %10 levels, respectively. SP 500 Index is positively significant at %5 level. Also US Non-Farm Employment is negatively significant at %10. In the second regression model MBI 10 Index calculated as dependent variable. According to OLS regression results three of independent values are significant at %5 and %10 levels, respectively. SP 500 Index is positively significant at %5 level. USM1 is negatively significant at %5. Also Crude Oil is positively significant at %10 level.

Key Word: *Macroeconomic Factors, BIST 100 Index, MBI 10 Index, Global Factors.*

1. Introduction

A brief overview of the studies using macroeconomic factor models that affect stock markets is presented in this section.

* Kırklareli University, Social Sciences Vocational School
Accounting and Taxing Applications Department
[ahmetoguzakgunes@klu.edu.tr]

* Kırklareli University, Social Sciences Vocational School
Accounting and Taxing Applications Department
[fettahkaba@klu.edu.tr]

Flannery and Protopapadakis (2002); are observed via Garch model the effect of macroeconomic factors on stock prices. They find that money supply has conditional effect on stock prices. Adjasi (2009), investigated the effect of macroeconomics on stock prices. He found that negative relation between money supply and stock prices. Singh at al. (2010), are investigated the effect of money supply, unemployment and exchange rates on Thailand stock prices. They found that there is a negative relation between money supply and stock prices. Chamberlain at al. (1996), is studied the factor that affect US and Japan bank stock prices. They observed a relation between US bank stock prices and exchange rates. Özer and Kaya (2011), are studied on IMKB-100 index. They found that money supply, industrial production index and gold prices have positive correlation on IMKB-100. Wongbangpo and Sharma (2002) investigate the relationship between stock prices and some macroeconomic factors in five ASEAN countries (Indonesia, Malaysia, Philippines, Singapore and Thailand). Results suggest that, stock prices are positively related to growth in output.

Sayilgan and Süslü (2011), are observed that Turkey, Argentina, Brazil, Indonesia, Hungary, Malesia, Poland, Chili, Russia and Jordan stock index levels area effected from SP 500 index and inflation, respectively. Sharma and Mahendru (2010), investigate the relationship between some macroeconomic factors and stock prices. They find a significant relationship with gold prices and stock prices. Kang, Ratti and Yoon (2015), are observed significant relationship between oil price shocks and capital markets. Broadstock and Filis (2014), investigate the effect of oil price variations to the US and Chinese capital markets. They find that the US capital market responses much more than Chinese capital market to the shocks in oil prices.

2. Data and Methodology

In this paper, the analysis is conducted by using monthly data for the period from January 2008 to December 2015. In this study 8 variables are used. They are United States Money Supply (USM1), United States Industrial Production (USIN), United States Non-Farm Employment (USE), Gold Prices, Standart and Poors 500 Index (SP500),

Borsa Istanbul Stock Exchange Index (BIST100), Macedonian Stock Exchange Index (MBI10), Crude Oil Prices.

In this study we use OLS (Ordinary Least Square) model for to observe any relation between our variables above. We estimate two different OLS models. In the first model BIST 100 variable considered as dependent variable, in the second model MBI 10 variable considered as dependent variable. We estimate our equation as;

$$BIST100 = C(1)*Log|GOLD| + C(2)*Log|CRUDEOIL| + C(3)*Log|SP500| + C(4)*Log|USM1| + C(5)*Log|USIN| + C(6)*Log|USE| + C(7)*Log|MBI10| + C(8);$$

$$MBI10 = C(1)*log|BIST100| + C(2)*Log|GOLD| + C(3)*Log|CRUDEOIL| + C(4)*Log|SP500| + C(5)*Log|USM1| + C(6)*Log|USIN| + C(7)*log|USE| + C(8).$$

Regression analysis are calculated by using Newey-West Estimator. Newey- West estimator serves reliable standard errors and allows consistent estimations in case the probability of heteroscedasticity and autocorrelation problem (Bozkurt, 2016, s.185-197).

In order to estimate the regression models stated above, stationarity of the series should be examined. In this study, Augmented Dickey-Fuller method is employed for testing the presence of unit roots which is developed Dickey and Fuller (1979).

3. Empirical Results

As a first step, summary statistics are examined. In the second step, the effect of independent variables on BIST 100, in the third step the effect of independent variables on MBI 10 is evaluated by estimating using OLS. Finally, granger causality test is computed. Summary statistics are shown in Table 1.

Table 1: Summary Statistics

Variables	Mean	St. Deviation	Median	Max.	Min.
BIST-100 index	6145762	1699091	6304602	8894582	2402659
MBI-10 index	2435.903	1203.917	1974.86	7106.99	1575.38
S&P-500 index	144975	38543.40	136361	210739	73509
Crude Oil	89.96579	25.46233	97.23	132.70	38.01
Gold	1266.561	274.4619	1241.45	1826.26	725.30
US Money Supply (1)	2185.495	548.7812	2175	3087	1381

US Industrial Production	1314545	34184.71	1302448	1386141	1270572
US Non-Farm Employment	135263.5	3905.602	134844	143146	129733

Summary statistics are shown in Table 1 above. Average BIST100 Index value is 6145762, while the maximum and minimum values of BIST 100 Index are 8894582 and 2402659, respectively. Average MBI 10 Index is valued approximately 2435, while the maximum and minimum values of MBI 10 Index are 7106.99 and 1575.38. All variables seem to be positive for the entire research period.

Augmented Dickey-Fuller test is computed for all variables to observe stationary and the results are shown below in table 2.

Table 2: The result of Augmented Dickey-Fuller test.

Variables	P-value	P-value (First Difference)
Gold	0.9818	0.0000**
BIST 100 Index	0.5863	0.0000**
Crude Oil	0.9878	0.0000**
MBI 10 Index	0.0041**	-----
S&P 500 Index	0.1029	0.0000**
USM1	0.3968	0.0000**
USE	0.0034**	-----
USIN	0.9837	0.0000**

Notes: *, ** denote significance at 10% and 5% respectively.

Since the null hypothesis of a unit root is accepted at 5% level in all variables except MBI 10 Index and USE.

In the first calculation, p- values of other variables except MBI 10 and USE are more than %5. So we accept the null hypothesis. MBI 10 and USE variables p-values are less than %5. We reject the null hypothesis for this variables. We calculate the first differences of the variables that have unit root and all variables are became stationary.

In this study we estimate two regression models and the outputs of first OLS model is shown in Table 3 below.

Table 3: OLS Regression Model (Dependent Variable is BIST 100)

Variables	Coefficient	Std. Error	t-Statistic	Prob.
Gold	-0.037707	0.170482	-0.221177	0.8255
Crude Oil	-0.023629	0.087069	-0.271388	0.7868
SP500 Index	0.857957	0.171143	5.013087	**0.0000
US Money Supply 1	-0.160359	0.583389	-0.274874	0.7841
US Industrial Production	-2.683132	4.548513	-0.589892	0.5568
MBI10 Index	0.098572	0.097347	1.012579	0.3141
US Non-Farm Employment	-4.499879	2.519164	-1.786258	*0.0776
C	0.008230	0.007145	1.151783	0.2526
R-squared	0.301400	Mean dependent var		0.005566
Adjusted R-squared	0.243869	S.D. dependent var		0.079760
F-statistic	5.238856	Durbin-Watson stat		2.313463
Prob(F-statistic)	0.000054			

Notes: *, ** denote significance at 10% and 5% respectively.

According to the findings Adjusted R-squared value is approximately 0.24 which means that our model represents %24 of all variation in BIST 100 Index. F statistics is 5.238856 and p value of F statistics is 0.000054 that is less than %5 which means coefficients of all independent variables are not equal to zero.

The results show that two of independent values are significant at %5 and %10 levels, respectively. SP 500 Index is positively significant at %5 level. Also US Non-Farm Employment is negatively significant at %10. BIST 100 Index is affected positively the increases or loses that occurring in SP 500. However, increases or loses that occurring in USE affect BIST 100 negatively.

The outputs of second OLS regression model is shown in table 4 below.

Table 4: OLS Regression Model (Dependent Variable is MBI 10)

Variables	Coefficient	Std. Error	t-Statistic	Prob.
BIST 100 Index	0.121794	0.124455	0.978617	0.3305
Gold	0.169430	0.182022	0.930821	0.3546
Crude oil	0.210119	0.111122	1.890878	*0.0620
SP 500 Index	0.300840	0.149624	2.010647	**0.0475
US Money Supply (M1)	-1.138405	0.508146	-2.240311	**0.0277
US Industrial Production	5.577276	5.202110	1.072118	0.2867
US Non-Farm Employment	4.566083	3.376465	1.352326	0.1799
C	-0.010392	0.009502	-1.093677	0.2772
R-squared	0.245465	Mean dependent var		-0.014257
Adjusted R-squared	0.183327	S.D. dependent var		0.085310
F-statistic	3.950306	Durbin-Watson stat		2.068554
Prob(F-statistic)	0.000885			

Notes: *, ** denote significance at 10% and 5% respectively.

According to the findings Adjusted R-squared value is approximately 0.18 which means that our model represents %18 of all variation in MBI 10 Index. F statistics is 3.950306 and p value of F statistics is 0.000885 that is less than %5 which means coefficients of all independent variables are not equal to zero.

The results show that three of independent values are significant at %5 and %10 levels, respectively. SP 500 Index is positively significant at %5 level. USM1 is negatively significant at %5. Also Crude Oil is positively significant at %10 level.

According to findings, %1 variation in SP 500 Index, USM1, Crude Oil affects MBI 10 Index %0.30, %-1.13, %21, respectively.

4. Conclusion

In this paper, we examine the correlation between the global macroeconomic factors and BIST 100, MBI 10 index using monthly data for the period from January 2008 to December 2015. In this study OLS regression model is employed to test for two times for the effects of macroeconomic factors on BIST 100 and NBI 10 index values. Macroeconomic variables used in this study are, S&P 500 index, crude oil, U.S. money supply (M1), U.S. Non-Farm Employment, gold prices and U.S. Industrial Production. In the OLS regression model BIST 100 and MBI 10 index values are used as dependent variables, while the macroeconomic variables are used as independent variables.

Empirical results of first OLS model reveals that two of independent values are significant. SP 500 Index is positively significant at %5 level. Also US Non-Farm Employment is negatively significant at %10. It means SP 500 affects BIST 100 index positively and US Non- farm Employment affects negatively.

Empirical results of second OLS model reveals that three of independent values are significant. SP 500 Index is affect MBI 10 index value positively. Also crude oil is positively significant which means that affect MBI 10 index positively. USM1 is negatively significant at %5.

References

- Adjasi, C.K., (2009). Macroeconomic uncertainty and conditional stock-price volatility in frontier African markets: Evidence from Ghana, *The Journal of Risk Finance*, Vol.10, No.4, p.333-349.
- Bozkurt, İ. (2016). Role of Negative Mood on Turkish Stock Market: Suicides. *Journal of Yasar University*, 11/43, p. 185-197
- Broadstock, D., Filis, G.Oil price shocks and stock market returns: New evidence from the United States and China, *Journal of International Financial Markets Institutions and Money* 33(11).
- Chamberlain, Sandra,L., Howe, s., John, Popper, H., (1997). The exchange rate exposure of U.S. and Japanese banking institutions, *Journal of Banking and Finance*, Vol.21, No.6, 1997, p. 871-892.
- Flannery, M., Protopapadakis, A., (2002). Macroeconomic Factors Do Influence Aggregate Stock Returns, *The Review of Financial Studies*, Vol.15, No.3, p.751-782.
- Kang, W., Ratti, R., A., Yoon, K.,H., (2015). Time-varying effect of oil market shocks on the stock market, *Journal of Banking and Finance*, Vol.61,p.150-163.
- Özer, A., Kaya, A., Özer, N. (2011). Hisse Senedi Fiyatları ile Makroekonomik Değişkenlerin Etkileşimi, *Dokuz Eylül University Journal of Economic and Administrative*, Vol.26, No.1, p.163-182.
- Sayılğan, G., Süslü, C., (2011). The Effect of Macroeconomic Factors on Stock Returns: A Study of Turkey and Emerging Markets, *BDDK Journal of Banking and Financial markets*, Vol.5, No.1, p.73-96.
- Sharma, G.,D., Mahendru, M., (2010). Impact of Macro-EconomicVariables on Stock Prices in India, *Global Journal of Management and Business Research*, Vol.10, No.7, p.19-25.
- SINGH, T., Mehta, S., Varsha, M., S., (2011). Macroeconomic Factors and Stock Returns: Evidence From Taiwan, *Journal of Economics and International Finance*, Vol.2, No.4, p.217- 227.
- Wobangpo, P., Sharma, S., C., (2002). Stock Market and Macroeconomic Fundamental Dynamic Interactions: ASEAN-5 Countries, *Journal of Asian Economics*, Vol.13, No.1, p.27-51.

SHADOW ECONOMY AND TAX EFFORT IN OECD COUNTRIES: PANEL COINTEGRATION ANALYSIS

ERDOĞAN TEYYARE *

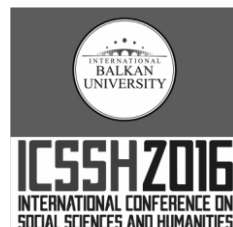
Abstract: The part of the gross domestic product of a country's economy that is above subsistence level is called as the tax capacity of such country. The part of this capacity that is actually collected is named as tax effort. Tax effort is the ratio of the amount of tax that can actually be collected to tax capacity. Many factors such as economic, financial, institutional, social, and psychological factors affect it. One such factor is shadow economy. In the most general sense, shadow economy is defined as economic activities that are left outside national income accounts through legal or illegal methods though they are among the economic activities conducted in the country. In other words, shadow economy refers to the difference between tax capacity and tax collected. As shadow economy grows, the tax burden of the tax payers under registration increases. As a result, tax effort decreases. This study analyzes the relationship between shadow economy and tax effort in OECD countries via panel cointegration method. The findings obtained indicate that shadow economy and tax effort have cointegration relationship in the long term.

Key Word: *Tax Effort, Shadow Economy, Panel Cointegration, OECD*

1. Introduction

In the most general sense, tax is 'an economic asset that a government collects from people or establishments that make up the society based on their ability to pay for nothing in return and by force in order to cover public expenditures'. As understood from the defini-

* Abant İzzet Baysal University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Public Finance
[erdoganteyyare@ibu.edu.tr]



tion, taxes, which are the most fundamental element of revenue for governments, and collection of taxes are of great importance for offering public services.

The part of the sum of ability of all the taxpayers in an economic system to pay tax (i.e. tax capacity) that can be taken as public revenue (i.e. actual tax revenue) is referred to as tax effort. More clearly, the value obtained through proportion of the actual tax revenue collected in a certain period to GNP of the same period indicates the level of tax effort of the country.

In the most general sense, shadow economy is defined as economic activities that are left outside national income accounts through legal or illegal methods though they are among the economic activities conducted in the country. In other words, shadow economy refers to the difference between tax capacity and tax collected. The bigger shadow economy is, the more tax loss there is.

The present study aims to determine whether or not there is a long-term relationship between shadow economy and tax effort. Research sample consists of OECD countries. The relationship between shadow economy and tax effort is analyzed through panel cointegration method.

In this paper, definitions of the concepts of tax effort and shadow economy as well as the relationship between them are given first. Then empirical analysis findings and results are interpreted.

2. Tax, Tax Burden, and Tax Capacity

The concepts of tax burden and tax capacity are covered first before the concept of tax effort, which is the main theme of the study, is dealt with.

There are a lot of scientific definitions of tax. Among these definitions, the most comprehensive one is as follows: "Tax is obligatory monetary amount that is collected by governments and similar public institutions from taxpayers in direct proportion to their ability to pay based on laws in order to meet the requirements of socio-economic life and finance public expenditures" (Türk, 1992:135).

In the simplest terms, paying tax constitutes a burden. This is because it reduces the economic power of taxpayers by transferring the revenue of taxpayers, at micro level, and the revenue of the society, at macro level, from private sector to public sector. In a broad sense, tax burden is the numerical relationship between the payments made to the government or public corporate entities in a particular period to the revenue obtained by taxpayers in such period. As understood from its definition, tax burden is taken as a function of tax paid and ability to pay tax. Burden changes in direct proportion to tax paid and in inverse proportion to ability to pay. As tax paid increases, tax burden increases. As ability to pay increases, tax burden decreases. Total tax burden, which is a macroeconomic concept, is the burden of all the taxes collected on the economy. That is to say, the ratio of all taxes paid in any country in a particular period to GDP in such period constitutes tax burden (Arslan, 1992). Personal tax burden is the proportion of the tax paid by a person to the revenue of such person; regional tax burden is the proportion of the tax paid in a region of a country to the revenue obtained in such region; and sectoral tax burden is the proportion of the tax paid by a specific sector in a country to the revenue obtained in such sector (Gürdali Altundemir & Şanver, 2015: 51-55).

Tax burden is one of the most important indicators to consider in the evaluation of the public finance of a country (DPT, 2007:3). This indicator shows the part of resources in a country's economy that is taken by government and other public institutions as tax or under other titles. That is, it gives information about the share of public sector in the economy (Öztürk & Ozansoy, 2011: 199). Table 1 presents total tax burden for OECD countries.

Table 1. Tax Burden in OECD Countries (%)

Country	2001	2002	2003	2004	2005	2006	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014
Australia	28.9	29.8	29.9	30.3	29.9	29.5	29.7	27.0	25.8	25.6	26.3	27.3	27.5	---
Austria	43.7	42.5	42.3	41.8	40.9	40.4	40.5	41.4	41.0	40.8	41.0	41.7	42.5	43.0
Belgium	43.5	43.6	43.1	43.2	43.1	42.8	42.6	43.0	42.1	42.4	43.0	44.0	44.7	44.7
Canada	34.3	32.8	32.7	32.5	32.3	32.6	32.3	31.5	31.4	30.4	30.2	30.7	30.5	30.8
Chile	19	19	18	19	20	22	22	21	17	19	21	21	20	19

ERDOĞAN TEYYARE

	.0	.0	.7	.1	.7	.0	.8	.4	.2	.5	.2	.5	.0	.8
Czech Republic	32.6	33.5	34.4	34.7	34.5	34.1	34.3	33.5	32.4	32.5	33.4	33.8	34.3	33.5
Denmark	45.9	45.4	45.6	46.4	48.0	46.4	46.4	44.9	45.2	45.3	45.4	46.4	47.6	50.9
Estonia	30.3	31.1	30.8	31.1	29.9	30.4	31.1	31.3	34.9	33.2	31.9	32.1	31.8	32.9
Finland	43.2	43.3	42.4	41.8	42.1	42.2	41.5	41.2	40.9	40.8	42.0	42.7	43.7	43.9
France	42.7	42.1	42.0	42.2	42.8	43.1	42.4	42.2	41.3	41.6	42.9	44.1	45.0	45.2
Germany	35.0	34.4	34.6	33.9	33.9	34.5	34.9	35.4	36.1	35.0	35.7	36.4	36.5	36.1
Greece	32.0	32.5	31.0	30.0	31.2	30.3	31.2	31.0	30.8	32.0	33.5	34.5	34.4	35.9
Hungary	37.8	37.4	37.4	37.2	36.8	36.7	39.6	39.5	39.0	37.3	36.5	38.6	38.4	38.5
Iceland	34.4	34.3	35.6	36.6	39.4	40.4	38.7	35.1	32.0	33.3	34.4	35.2	35.9	38.7
Ireland	28.8	27.4	28.3	29.1	29.2	31.0	30.4	28.6	27.6	27.5	27.4	27.9	29.0	29.9
Israel	34.9	34.2	33.5	33.5	33.8	34.4	34.3	31.9	29.7	30.4	30.8	29.7	30.6	31.1
Italy	40.3	39.7	40.1	39.3	39.1	40.6	41.7	41.6	42.1	41.8	41.9	43.9	43.9	43.6
Japan	26.8	25.8	25.3	26.1	27.3	28.1	28.5	28.5	27.0	27.6	28.6	29.4	30.3	---
South Korea	21.8	22.0	22.7	22.0	22.5	23.6	24.8	24.6	23.8	23.4	24.2	24.8	24.3	24.6
Luxemburg	38.1	38.0	38.1	37.0	38.3	36.3	36.6	37.2	39.0	38.1	37.9	38.8	38.4	37.8
Mexico	16.8	16.2	17.1	16.8	17.7	17.9	17.6	20.7	17.2	18.5	19.5	19.5	19.7	---
Netherlands	35.7	35.2	34.6	34.8	36.1	36.4	36.1	36.5	35.4	36.2	35.9	36.1	36.7	---
New Zealand	31.9	33.2	33.1	34.1	36.0	35.4	34.0	33.3	30.5	30.6	30.9	32.4	31.4	32.4
Norway	42.1	42.3	41.6	42.3	42.6	42.8	42.1	41.5	41.2	41.9	42.0	41.5	40.5	39.1
Poland	33.0	33.2	32.6	32.2	33.3	33.9	34.8	34.5	31.5	31.4	32.0	32.3	31.9	---
Portugal	30.9	31.4	31.5	30.3	30.9	31.5	32.0	31.9	30.0	30.6	32.5	32.0	34.5	34.4
Slovakia	32.7	32.7	32.4	31.4	31.2	29.3	29.2	29.1	28.9	28.1	28.7	28.5	30.4	31.0
Slovenia	36.8	37.2	37.3	37.4	38.0	37.6	37.1	36.4	36.2	36.9	36.5	36.8	36.8	36.6
Spain	33	33	33	34	35	36	36	32	30	31	31	32	32	33

	.0	.4	.3	.3	.3	.1	.5	.3	.0	.5	.3	.1	.7	.2
Sweden	46.8	45.2	45.5	45.6	46.6	46.0	45.0	44.0	44.1	43.2	42.5	42.6	42.8	42.7
Switzerland	27.0	27.5	26.8	26.5	26.5	26.4	26.1	26.7	27.1	26.5	27.0	26.9	26.9	26.6
Turkey	26.1	24.6	25.9	24.1	24.3	24.5	24.1	24.2	24.6	26.2	27.8	27.6	29.3	28.7
United Kingdom	34.7	33.3	32.9	33.4	33.8	34.4	34.1	34.0	32.3	32.8	33.6	33.0	32.9	32.6
USA	27.1	24.9	24.4	24.6	25.9	26.6	26.7	25.2	23.0	23.2	23.6	24.1	25.4	26.0
OECD Average	33.8	33.5	33.5	33.4	33.9	34.1	34.1	33.6	32.7	32.8	33.3	33.8	34.2	---

Source: OECD, 2016; <http://stats.oecd.org/>

As shown in Table 1, average tax burden in OECD countries is around 35%. In general, the country with the lowest tax burden is Mexico, whereas the country with the highest tax burden is Denmark.

Tax capacity can be defined as ability of a county to increase its tax revenues, which depends on structural factors such as economic development, diversity of types of taxes, and tax-paying habits of resident people (Chelliah, 1971:293). Tax capacity (i.e. taxation capacity) of a country is the part of its economy's GDP that is above the subsistence level. More clearly, it is the financial power of a person beyond minimum amounts that are needed to continue the life of his family. This indicates taxable capacity at individual level. To adapt it to the society, it can be said that tax capacity is the financial power beyond the minimum level that is needed to meet the minimum requirements of the society and help continue its life (Sağbaşı, 2013:44).

Tax capacity can also be defined as the limit above which a country cannot have tax burden. Tax capacity may differ from country to country depending on economic, social, institutional, demographic, and political conditions. Tax effort, on the other hand, differs depending on each country's tax capacity and revenue (Pessino & Fenochietto, 2010:65).

Tax effort is an element that shows the extent to which tax capacity is used. It is the ratio of the amount of tax that is actually collected to tax capacity (Bahl, 1972:582).

$$\text{Tax Effort} = \text{Actual Tax Collected} / \text{Tax Capacity}$$

Tax effort is a composition of tax administration's ability to levy taxes and taxpayer's compliance to pay tax. Many factors such as economic, financial, institutional, social, and psychological factors affect tax effort. It is influenced by factors such as efficiency of tax authority, effectiveness of tax legislation and fiscal jurisdiction, reactions coming out in the relationships between taxpayers and taxes, educational level, and existence of an effective control mechanism. One such factor is shadow economy.

3. Shadow Economy

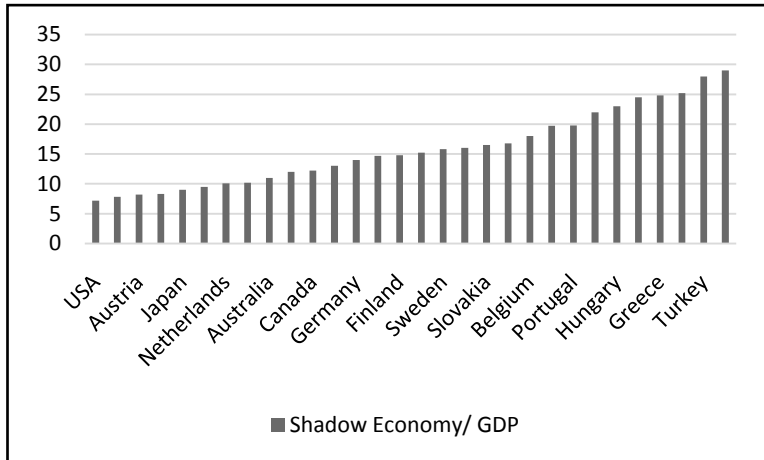
Shadow economy can be defined as activities that are hidden from the administrative authority and are not or cannot be recorded though they are actually carried out in the economic system. These activities, which cannot be recorded, cannot be inspected as well. In other words, shadow economy refers to those economic activities which do not contribute to the calculation of national income. Some shadow economic activities are illegal activities, whereas some others are those activities which are not banned but deliberately go unrecorded and untaxed (Schneider & Enste, 2000:78-79).

In a more general sense, shadow economy refers to the difference between tax capacity and tax collected. The bigger shadow economy is, the more tax loss there is. As shadow economy grows, those taxpayers who are under registration have more tax burden. As a result, tax effort decreases (Sağbaşı, 2013:45).

Though reasons underlying the emergence of shadow economy differ from country to country, they can generally be listed as financial and economic reasons such as inflation, unemployment, distribution of income, tax equity, economic instability, and economic crisis (Us, 2004: 16). There are also legal reasons such as high tax rates, existence of exceptions and exemptions, non-simple and unclear laws, and frequent amendment of laws (Tosuner 1995:65) as well as political, social, institutional, and psychological reasons.

2003-2015 average of the share of shadow economy in GDP in OECD countries is presented in Graph 1.

Graph 1: Growth of Shadow Economy in OECD Countries



Source: Schneider, 2015.

The average size of shadow economy in OECD countries is approximately 16%. While the highest rate (29%) belongs to Estonia, the lowest rate (nearly 7%) belongs to the USA.

4. Methodology

4.1. Data, Model, and Method

In the present study, prediction was made based on the data of 29 OECD countries from the 1993-2013 period through panel data analysis method. Among the datasets used, tax effort data were taken from World Development Indicators (WDI), the database of the World Bank, and shadow economy data were taken from the study titled "Size and Development of the Shadow Economy of 31 European and 5 other OECD Countries from 2003 to 2015: Different Developments", which was prepared and compiled by Friedrich Schneider (2015). The relationship between tax effort and shadow economy

was predicted through cointegration analysis, which is a panel analysis method.

Details about the variables used in the study and the sources of data are given in Table 2.

Table 2: Variables Used in the Study

Variable	Definition	Source	Quality
Tax	Tax Effort	World Development Indicators (WDI)	Dependent variable
SHA	Shadow Economy	Schneider (2015)	Independent variable

The variables used in the study are annual data.

The model below was created to explore the relationship between tax effort and shadow economy. The econometric model predicted in this study is showed in equation (1):

$$\text{Tax}_{it} = \alpha_{it} + \beta_1 \text{SHA}_{it} + u_{it} \quad (1)$$

Tax: Tax Effort

SHA: Shadow Economy

The existence of cross section dependence in the variables was predicted through unit root tests and cointegration analysis by use of Stata and Gauss codes.

4.2. Empirical Findings

Prior to starting to explore the relationship between tax effort and shadow economy, it was necessary to investigate whether or not the two variables were stationary. The level values of many macro-economic variables are not stationary. There must be a cointegration relationship between non-stationary time series so that regression analyses made through these time series are significant and reflect actual relationships.

Taking or not taking cross section dependence of the series into consideration significantly influences the results obtained (Breusch & Pagan, 1980; Pesaran, 2004). Thus, before analysis is started, whether or not there is cross section dependence in the series and cointegration equation must be tested. This is because this must be

taken into account when choosing unit root and cointegration tests to be performed. Otherwise, the analysis may yield wrong results.

4.2.1. Cross Section Dependence

The existence of cross section dependence is checked through Berusch Pagan (1980) CD LM1 test when time dimension is greater than cross section dimension ($T > N$); through Pesaran (2004) CD LM2 test when time dimension is equal to cross section dimension ($T = N$); and through Pesaran (2004) CD LM test when time dimension is smaller than cross section dependence ($T < N$).

As 29 countries ($N=29$) and 12 years ($T=11$) were in question, Pesaran (2004) CD LM test was used in the present study. This test statistic is calculated as follows:

$$CD LM_2 = \sqrt{\frac{2T}{N(N-1)}} (\sum_{i=1}^{N-1} \sum_{j=i+1}^N \hat{\rho}_{ij}) \quad (2)$$

The null hypothesis in these tests is as follows:

$H_0: u_{it} = \sigma_i \varepsilon_{it}$, $\varepsilon_{it} \sim IID(0, 1)$ for all i and t , there is no cross section dependence (Pesaran, 2004:6). CD LM test results are as follows:

Table 3: Cross Section Dependence CD LM Test

	Test Statistic	Probability Value
TAX	6.87	0.000
SHA	63.93	0.000
Cointegration Equation	11.99	0.000

According to the results in Table 3, as probability values are smaller than 0.05, there is cross section dependence in the series and equation. As such, there is cross section dependence between the countries making up the panel.

A tax effort change taking place in one of the countries or a shadow economy shock affects other countries as well. Hence, when carrying out panel unit root and cointegration tests, test methods

that take cross section dependence into consideration must be employed. In this regard, panel unit root test and cointegration analysis, which take cross section dependence into account, were used in the present study.

4.2.2. Panel Unit Root Test

The first problem encountered in panel unit root testing is whether or not the cross sections making up the panel are independent from each other. At this point, panel unit root tests are divided into two: first generation tests and second generation tests. First generation tests are also divided into two: homogenous models and heterogeneous models. While Levin, Lin, and Chu (2002), Breitung (2005), and Hadri (2000) are based on the homogenous model assumption, Im, Pesaran, and Shin (2003), Maddala and Wu (1999), and Choi (2001) are based on the heterogeneous model assumption (Göçer, 2013:5094).

First generation unit root tests are based on the assumption that the cross section units making up the panel are independent and all the cross section units are equally affected by a shock experienced by any of the units constituting the panel.

However, it is more realistic that the cross section units are differently affected by a shock experienced by any of the units constituting the panel. To eliminate this gap, second generation unit root tests, which analyze stationarity by considering the dependence between cross section units, were developed. Main second generation unit root tests are MADF (Taylor and Sarno, 1998), SURADF (Breuer, Mcknown & Wallace, 2002), Bai & Ng (2004), and CADF (Pesaran, 2006) (Göçer, 2013:5094).

As cross section dependence was detected between the countries making up the panel in the present study, stationarity of the series was tested via CADF, which is a second generation unit root test. It was assumed that, in CADF, error term consists of two parts: (1) common for all series, and (2) unique to each series.

When the CADF statistic calculated is smaller than the table critical value, the main hypothesis H_0 is rejected. That is, it is concluded

that there is no unit root in the data of the relevant country, and the shocks are temporary. CADF test is calculated with the following regression (Tatoğlu, 2012: 223-224):

$$\Delta Y_{it} = \alpha_i + \rho_i^* Y_{it-1} + d_0 \bar{Y}_{t-j} + \sum_{j=0}^p d_{j+1} \Delta \bar{Y}_{t-j} + \sum_{k=1}^p c_k \Delta \bar{Y}_{i,t-k} \varepsilon_{it} \quad (3)$$

The CADF statistics were calculated. The obtained results are given in Table 4.

Table 4: Unit Root Test Results-CADF

VARIABLE	t-bar	Z (t-bar)	p
TAX	-0.972	3.660	1.000
Δ TAX	-2.367	-2.719	0.003*
SHA	-1.362	1.751	0.960
Δ SHA	-2.475	-3.153	0.001*

*shows significance at 1% level.

The unit root test results indicated the existence of unit root in the series constituting the panel. As such, the series were not stationary at their level values. They were made stationary by taking their first difference. As the series were not stationary at their level values, it was concluded that the cointegration relationship between the series could be analyzed.

4.2.3. Cointegration Test

At this stage of the study, cointegration between the series of tax effort and shadow economy was analyzed. The existence of cointegration in the panel was tested through Westerlund (2008) Durbin-H method. This method allows independent variables to be I(1) or I(0) provided that dependent variable is I(1) (Westerlund, 2008; Göçer, 2013:5096).

The hypotheses of the test are as follows:

H_0 : *There is no cointegration relationship.*

H_1 : *There is a cointegration relationship.*

Table 5: Cointegration Test Statistics (2008) Durbin-H Test Results

	Test value	P value
Durbin-H Grip Statistic	668.170	0.000
Durbin-H Panel Statistic	6.751	0.000

The table values show that the hypothesis H_0 is rejected, and cointegration relationship exists between tax effort and shadow economy in all the countries in the panel.

5. Conclusion

This study analyzed the relationship between tax effort and shadow economy in 29 OECD countries based on the data belonging to these countries from the 2003-2013 period on the basis of cross section dependence via panel cointegration method.

Cross section dependence was tested through Pesaran (2004) CDLM method. Cross section dependence was detected both in the series and in the equation. As such, a change in tax effort and shadow economy size of one of the countries making up the panel affects others countries as well. In this regard, it can be said that when determining their policies, governments should consider the developments concerning the countries they interact with.

Panel unit root test and cointegration analysis, which take cross section dependence into account, were used in the study. According to the panel unit root test results, the series were not stationary at their level values. This shows that the shocks experienced by the relevant country economies maintain their effectiveness. When the series belonging to economic variables contain unit root, their linear combinations may be stationary and they may have a relationship in

the long term. Whether or not there is a long-term relationship between the series can be tested through cointegration tests.

The existence of cointegration relationship in the panel was tested via Westerlund (2008) Durbin-H method. It was found out that cointegration relationship exists between the series of tax effort and shadow economy in the countries making up the panel. In this regard, it can be said that tax effort and shadow economy act together in the long term in OECD countries. According to the cointegration test results, there is a long-term relationship between the variables.

References

- Arslan, M. (1992). Vergi Yüğü ve Türkiye'deki Durumu, Vergi Dünyası, (135).
- Bahl, Roy W. (1971). "A Regression Approach to Tax Effort and Tax Ratio Analysis." IMF Staff Papers. November: pp. 570-608.
- Breusch, T. & Pagan, Adrian R. (1980). "The Lagrange Multiplier Test and Its Applications to Modelspecification Tests in Econometrics", Review of Economic Studies, Vol. 47, pp. 239-53.
- Chelliah, Raja J. (1971). "Trends in Taxation in Developing Countries." IMF Staff Papers. July: pp.254-327.
- DPT (2007). Vergi Özel İhtisas Komisyonu, Dokuzuncu Kalkınma Planı 2007-2013, <http://www.kalkinma.gov.tr/Lists/zel%20htisas%20Komisyonu%20Raporlar/Attachments/51/oik685.pdf>, (Erişim Tarihi: 14.04.2016).
- Göçer, İ. (2013). Seçilmiş OECD Ülkelerinde Bütçe Açıklarının Sürdürülebilirliği: Yatay Kesit Bağımlılığı Altında Panel Eş-Bütünleşme Analizi, Journal of Yasar University, Vol 30 (8), pp. 5086-5104.
- Gürdal T., M.E. Altundemir & C. Şanver (2015). Maliye Politikası, Kitap Matbaası, İstanbul.
- Öztürk, İ ve Ahmet O. (2011). Ücret Gelirleri Üzerindeki Vergi Yükünün Analizi, Maliye Dergisi, (161), pp. 197-214.
- Pesaran, M. Hashem (2004). "General Diagnostic Tests for Cross Section Dependence in Panels," Cambridge Working Papers in Economics 0435, Faculty of Economics, University of Cambridge.
- Pessino C. & Ricardo F. (2010). Determining Countries' Tax Effort, Hacienda Pública Española/Revista de Economía Pública, 195 (4), pp. 65-87.
- Sağbaşı, İ. (2013). Vergi Teorisi, Kalkan Matbaacılık, Ankara.

- Schneider F. (2015). "Size and Development of the Shadow Economy of 31 European and 5 other OECD Countries from 2003 to 2015:Different Developments,"
<http://www.econ.jku.at/members/Schneider/files/publications/2015/ShadEcEurope31.pdf>, (Eriřim Tarihi: 18.04.2016).
- Schneider F. & Dominikh Enste (2000). "Shadow Economies: Size, Causes, and Consequences," *Journal of Economic Literature*, Vol 38, pp. 77-114.
- Tatođlu, F. Y. (2012). İleri Panel Veri Analizi Stata Uygulamalı, Beta Basım Yayın, İstanbul.
- Tosuner, Mehmet (1995). Vergi Kayıp ve Kaçakları Sorununa İliřkin Görüş ve Öneriler, *Vergi Sorunları Dergisi*, (85), pp. 65-72.
- Türk, İ. (1992). Kamu Maliyesi, Turhan Kitabevi, Ankara.
- Us, Vuslat (2004). "Kayıtdışı Ekonomi Tahmini Yöntem Önerisi: Türkiye Örneđi", *Türkiye ekonomi Kurumu Tartışma Metni 2004/17*,
<http://www.tek.org.tr/dosyalar/VUSLAT-US1-KAYITDISI.pdf>,
(Eriřim Tarihi: 15.04.2016).
- Westerlund, J. (2008). "Panel Cointegration Tests of the Fisher Effect", *Journal of Applied Econometrics*, Vol 23, pp. 193-233.

THE LEVEL AND STRUCTURE OF TURKEY'S INTRA-INDUSTRY TRADE WITH COUNTRIES OF ORGANIZATION OF THE BLACK SEA ECONOMIC COOPERATION

HAMZA ÇEŞTEPE *

HAVANUR ERGÜN *

SELÇEN ZORLU *

Abstract: In this study, intra-industry trade (IIT) level and structure between Turkey and Organization of the Black Sea Economic Cooperation (BSEC), which is a regional development movement which Turkey led its establishment and has recently tried to revive, have been analyzed. In the study, Grubel-Lloyd (GL) index, most widely used in the measurement of IIT, is used. According to the calculations made by using SITC classification foreign trade data for 2007-2014, it is observed that Turkey's intra-industry trade with this region is low according to GL index. In the specified period, intra-industry trade-intense industries are beverages and tobacco, machinery and transport equipment and chemicals industries. Besides, manufactured goods classified chiefly by material and miscellaneous manufactured articles industry have relatively higher intra-industry trade. As in other countries of the region, Turkey's increasing intra-industry level with this region which is low will be one of the important factors in inversion to a more advanced level of regional integration.

Key Word: *Intra-industry Trade, Black Sea Economic Cooperation, Grubel-Lloyd (GL) Index, Regional Integration.*

* Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Bülent Ecevit University, Zonguldak, Turkey

* Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Bartın University, Bartın

* Maritime Faculty, Bülent Ecevit University, Zonguldak, Turkey



ICSSH2016
INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES

1. Introduction

Economic integrations are also one of the factors that influence intra-industry trade which means that a country both exports and imports goods of the same industry group. First of all, economic integrations eliminate the trade barriers between member countries and pave the way for an increase in trade within the region and, in particular, in intra-industry trade. Besides, the fact that countries have similar preferences, the facility to make use of economies of scale and to increase their production on the basis of foreign capital flows are other factors that help expansion of intra-industry trade (Küçükahmetoğlu, 2013:44). Therefore, while regional integrations make an impact on intra-industry trade, they also influence the entire foreign trade in general and intra-industry trade in particular.

This study aims to reveal the level and structure of intra-industry trade between Turkey and the Organization of the Black Sea Economic Cooperation which was established in 1992 under the leadership of Turkey by countries having a coast to Black Sea or located within Black Sea basin and primary economic purpose of which is to transform into a regional economic integration like a free trade zone in the long term. Since Turkey is one of the several pioneering countries in the region, it is important to analyze the level and structure of foreign trade with the region as an indication of foreign trade potential to arise from the transformation into a regional integration, which is the primary goal of such integration.

When looked into similar studies done on the same subject in Turkey, it is seen that they rather measure and analyze intra-industry trade level between Turkey and European Union on a general and sectoral basis. There is scarcely any study analyzing intra-industry trade (IIT) of Turkey with the Organization of the Black Sea Economic Cooperation (BSEC).

The method used in this study is Grubel-Llyod (GL) index, which is the primary one among the most used indexes in the calculation of IIT. Standard International Trade Classification (SITC) 3-digit foreign trade data of 2007-2014 which were obtained from Turkish Statistics Institute (TSI) were used and index values were calculated and analyzed both by countries and by goods.

The study consists of three sections. The first section mentions the concept and importance of intra-industry trade. Then, general information concerning foreign trade between Turkey and BSEC is given. In the empirical analysis part of the study, firstly the empirical literature on the subject is put forward; information concerning method and data are given and then the calculated index values are analyzed. The conclusion section reveals general conclusions from the study.

2. Concept and Measurement of Intra-Industry Trade

Intra-industry trade may be briefly summarized as simultaneous export and import of goods and services of the same sector. Having emerged in 1960s, this form of trade is not grounded on comparative advantages as alleged by classical foreign trade theories. IIT arises from economies of scale together with diversification of goods. In this extent, economies of scale pave the way for production of different products within a single industry and enhance specialization and foreign trade (Krugman, 1981:960). Economies of scale can lead to, among other things, the innovation of new products including an increase in the variety of existing products (Murshed, 2001:99). Since economies of scale will not allow production of each kind of a product in the country, demands for such products will be met through import from other countries by means of IIT.

IIT, which is at a higher level between countries with similar factor endowments, provides parties better profits than those which would be gained in case of comparative advantages. The reason is that IIT gives countries the chance to utilize from broader markets (Krugman and Obstfeld, 2009:140). This also reveals itself in high levels of IIT in regional integrations like European Union.

Literature of economics offers many alternatives for measurement of intra-industry trade (Balassa, 1996:471). However, according to applied researches on measurement of intra-industry trade, generally Grubel-Lloyd approach has been used. Grubel and Lloyd (1971) developed the following index to calculate intra-industry trade values of 9 OECD-member industrialized countries and Australia by using the trade data of 1968-1969:

$$GL_{cd,i} = 1 - \frac{|X_{cd,i} - M_{cd,i}|}{(X_{cd,i} + M_{cd,i})}$$

Here, $X_{cd,i}$ and $M_{cd,i}$ reflectively shows, for i industry, import from c country to d country and import from d country in a particular year (Lloyd and Herbet, 1975; 20). Grubel-Lloyd Index shows the share of intra-industry trade within the entire foreign trade. With GL Index, IIT for n industries may be calculated as follows by adding up as weighted average rather than simple arithmetic average:

$$GL_{cd} = \sum_{i=1}^N w_{cd,i} GL_{cd,i} = \sum_{i=1}^N \left(\frac{X_{cd,i} + M_{cd,i}}{\sum_{i=1}^N (X_{cd,i} + M_{cd,i})} \right) GL_{cd,i} = 1 - \frac{\sum_{i=1}^N |X_{cd,i} - M_{cd,i}|}{\sum_{i=1}^N (X_{cd,i} + M_{cd,i})}$$

Corresponding to this definition, the following formula may be used:

$$GL_{cd} = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^N 2 * \min(X_{cd,i}, M_{cd,i})}{\sum_{i=1}^N (X_{cd,i} + M_{cd,i})}$$

With this formula, the country may be totalized on the basis of all trading partners and binary total IIT index may be calculated:

$$GL_c = \sum_{d=1}^{D_c} \left(\frac{\sum_{i=1}^N 2 * \min(X_{cd,i}, M_{cd,i})}{\sum_{i=1}^N (X_{cd,i} + M_{cd,i})} \right)$$

Here D_c , is the number of trading partners of c country.

Grubel-Lloyd Index $GL_{cd,i}$, has values between 0 and 1 ($0 \leq GL_{cd,i} \leq 1$). The index value being 1 or close to 1 shows that foreign trade of i product serves as intra-industry trade; such value being zero or close to zero shows that the entire trade between countries is intra-industry trade. In this case, either import or export value is zero. If it is close to 1, export and import levels in a certain product group are close (Küçükahmetoğlu, 2002:36).

In calculations of intra-industry trade, some significant problems arise depending on the aggregation¹ choice. Aggregation choice is of great importance for calculation of a more realistic IIT value. Aggregation level appears in forms varying from one to five depending on the number of digits which are taken as a basis in product classification. Therefore, the main point to be identified for calculation of intra-industry trade index for a country is on which digit the study will be done² (Başkol, 2009: 5-6). Where highly aggregated product groups are taken as basis for measurements, IIT index value may be found higher than it is (Mardas, 1992:6-7). In case of a low-level (highly detailed) aggregation, Intra-industry trade figures are found low.

3. Foreign Trade between Turkey and BSEC Zone

The Organization of the Black Sea Economic Cooperation (BSEC) is a product of political and economic restructuring conducted during dissolution of the Soviet Union for globalization in the world or international integration at the regional level or, briefly, for regionalism. Having found its position and timing in an environment of transition to a free market economy on economic terms and to pluralist democracy on political terms in Eastern Europe in the late 1980s, the idea of BSEC emerged as an attempt for a regional economic cooperation under the leadership of Turkey in the early 1990s.

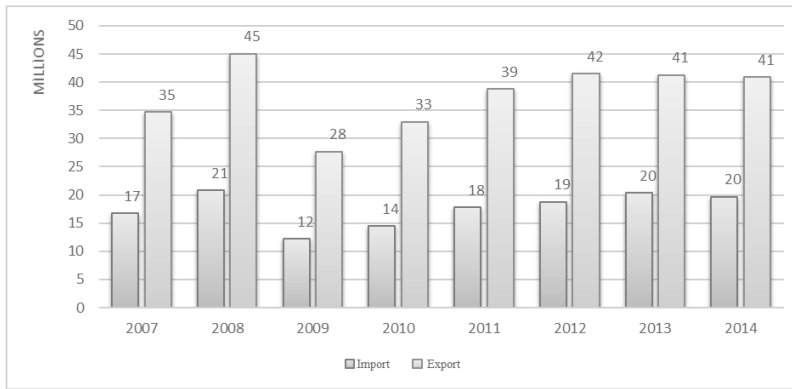
The first members of BSEC were 11 countries which have a coast to the Black Sea or are located within the Black Sea Basin. These countries are Albania, Azerbaijan, Bulgaria, Armenia, Georgia, Moldova, Romania, Russia Federation, Turkey, Ukraine and Greece. Upon participation of Serbia in 2004, number of KEI members reached to 12.

¹ Categorical aggregation occurs when goods with different production functions are within the same group of industrial goods in foreign trade statistics of a country and these statistics reflect simultaneous import and export values (Gray, 1979:88).

² There are two main types of classification in classification of foreign trade statistics, which are Standard International Trade Statistics (SITC) and International Standard Industrial Classification (ISIC): SITC makes a classification according to particulars of goods, while ISIC puts activities into a classification depending on how they are processed (Başkol, 2009:6).

Although share of EU within Turkey's foreign trade has declined when compared to the past, the current data show that EU is still the natural trade partner of Turkey (Kar, 2011:3). For BSEC region, the expected development has not been achieved in this period. As of 2015, share of BSEC in our total export is 10.1% and its share in total import is 15.2%. These rates were respectively 13.5% and 19.3% in 2006 (TÜİK, 2016). As seen in Figure 1, Turkey-BSEC foreign trade, which peaked up in 2008, started to slow down starting from the year when global crisis broke out. It should also be noted that we have a low level of foreign trade with some other countries in the region other than Russia.

Figure 1: Development of Foreign Trade between Turkey and BSEC (billion \$)



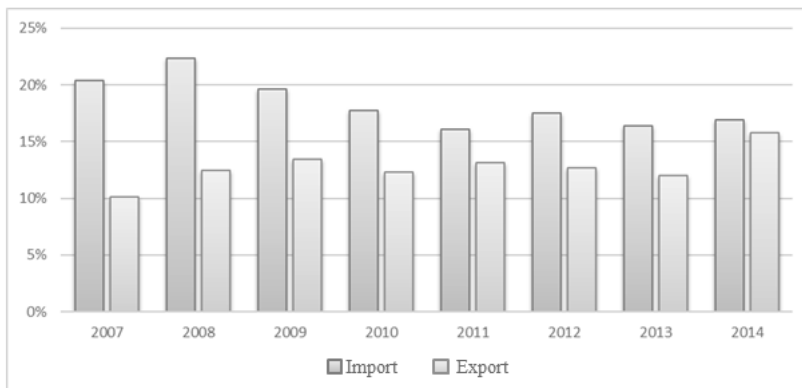
Source: TÜİK (2016), *Temel İstatistikler*, <http://www.tuik.gov.tr/UstMenu.do?metod=temelist>, 26.03.2016

The foreign trade balance between BSEC and Turkey shows that Turkey always has a foreign trade deficit. The most important reason behind this deficit is the high level of energy import from the region, particularly from Russia, since the region is one of the leading energy basins of the world. Despite the problems in our relationship due to the recent political tension between us, Russia, a country of the region, is one of the most important trade partners of Turkey and has a particular importance in Turkey's import. Indeed, it had the largest share, 10.4%, in our import in 2014 (TİM, 2015:87). Goods Turkey imports from the region are mainly crude materials and intermediate

goods and goods it exports are products of manufacturing industry. The first five products in our import (according to 2-digit classification of SITC) are oil, oil products and related substances, special processes and products not classified into a type, iron-steel, metals not containing iron and metal ores and scraps. The first five products in our export are textile yarn fabric and ready-to-wear products, vegetables and fruit, clothes and their accessories, land vehicles and electrical machines and their parts.

Between 2007 and 2014, BSEC's share in Turkey's annual export and import shows that the difference between export and import in favor of import gradually declined and import and export shares highly closed up in 2014. In other words, BSEC's share in our export had a steady increase over time.

Figure 2: BSEC's Share in Turkey's Foreign Trade (%)



JSHS|251

Source: TÜİK (2016), *Temel istatistikler*, <http://www.tuik.gov.tr/UstMenu.do?metod=temelist>, 26.03.2016

Behind the low level of foreign trade between Turkey and BSEC, there are both economic and political reasons. Economically, these reasons include differences between development levels of Turkey and BSEC countries, except for a few; high tariffs adopted by certain countries; and most of the countries subsisting economic and commercial relationships mainly with non-BSEC countries. Political reasons may include disputes between certain countries, impact of Rus-

sia on certain countries of the region and political instability and security problems in the region.

4. Empirical Analysis of Intra-Industry Trade of Turkey with BSEC Region

In this section, similar studies conducted in Turkey on the same subject and conclusions of these studies will be mentioned before empirical analysis.

4.1. Empirical Literature

There have been many studies conducted on intra-industry trade since early 1980s in the foreign literature. It is seen that, in Turkey, studies on this subject started in 2000s and those studies mostly aimed to identify and analyze IIT between Turkey and European Union. The literature contains no study on IIT between Turkey and BSEC. Table 1 includes a summary of studies on Turkey's IIT.

Table 1: Empirical Studies on Intra-Industry Trade of Turkey

Study	Scope	Period	Conclusion
Erk and Tekgöl (2001)	Turkey-EU	1993-1998	It is stated that trade between Turkey and EU countries are based on comparative advantages and a significant part of this trade occurs as vertical diversification of goods.
Erlat and Erlat (2003)	Turkey-EU	1969-1999	The study establishes that trade is generally in the form of inter-industry trade, but this form has turned, even if slightly, into intra-industry trade in the period following 1980.
Yenilmez and Bayraç (2005)	Turkey-Germany	1985-2001	It is found out that IIT between Turkey and Germany gradually increases and all variables in the model, except for European have an influ-

			ence on IIT between Turkey and Germany.
Kaya and Gacener (2005)	Turkey-11 Neighboring Countries	1996-2004	For many countries, IIT's share points to a trend of a simple crude material change in IIT.
Aydın (2008)	Turkey-EU and non-EU Countries	1989-2005	In the respective period, average IIT rate of Turkey is 40% and developments in foreign trade occur on the basis of comparative advantages.
Başkol (2010)	Turkey-Central Asian Turkish Republics	1992-2009	Foreign trade between Turkey and these countries stand out as inter-industry trade. Even though share of IIT was on the rise during the analyzed period, it is not possible to see IIT in a significant part of industries.
Çeştepe (2012)	Turkey-Chosen Middle East Countries	1999-2009	Turkey's IIT with this region is generally low. The most significant reason behind this low level of IIT is that economies of the region's countries are mostly complementary economies. IIT between these countries and Turkey is more related to intermediate goods like textiles, chemical substances, glass etc.
Yurttañıkımaz (2013)	Turkey-EU	1995-2009	In those days, IIT levels were on the rise in many products and Turkey's comparative advantage in sectors of industrial goods and machinery and transport equipment was generally increasing and this

			advantage was weakening for the sector of miscellaneous manufactured articles, including the textile sector.
Şentürk (2014)	Turkey-Chosen Countries	1990-2013	It is concluded that values of Turkey's IIT with countries chosen on the basis of all industries and manufacturing sector had a rising trend for 23 years, which was a consequence of the adopted foreign trade policies.
Şahin (2015)	Turkey-China	2000-2013	While trade in textile sector between Turkey and China is IIT, trade in ready-made clothing sector is in the form of inter-industry trade. However, level of IIT in textile sector in China is going down.

4.2. General IIT Values in the Trade between Turkey-BSEC

In the calculation of intra-industry trade values by industries, 2-digit and 3-digit foreign trade data of the period 2007-2014 were used which were compiled according to the United Nations Standard International Trade Classification (SITC) Revision 4.

Developed to be used in foreign trade statistics, SITC is a goods classification and a system consisting of 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5 digits. International organizations publish their foreign trade statistics generally on the basis of this classification.

General IIT measurements in Turkey-BSEC trade were done for each year at aggregation levels 2 and 3 for the 2007 - 2014 period. As explained before, which goods will be grouped in the same industry is an important and controversial issue in IIT measurement. If a highly detailed classification is taken as basis, low IIT figures are found; if the aggregation level is increased, high IIT results are obtained. Accordingly, in the analysis, Turkey's IIT with BSEC at SITC aggregation level 3 is found through calculation of Grubel Lloyd index and results

are given in the Table 2. Furthermore, a general measurement is done at SITC 2-digit level in order to determine both comparison and aggregation deviation; and individual calculations are made to see whether there is any differentiation between general index values (industries no. 0-9) and manufacturing industry (industries no. 5-9).

Table 2: IIT Values in the Trade between Turkey-BSEC on the Basis of GL Index

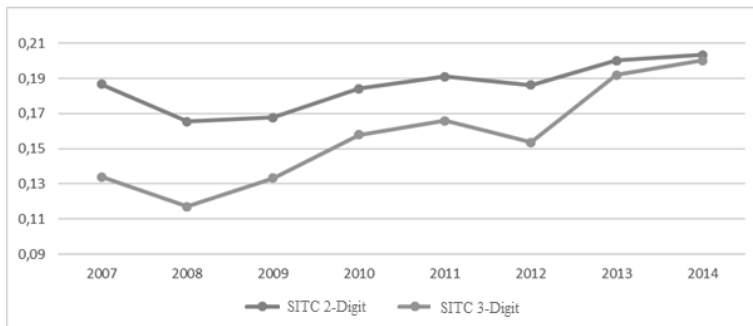
		2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014
SITC 2-digit level	GL Index (trade weighted average)	0,187	0,165	0,168	0,184	0,191	0,186	0,200	0,203
	GL Index (trade weighted average) (0-4)	0,123	0,125	0,091	0,092	0,132	0,114	0,100	0,097
	GL Index (trade weighted average) (5-9)	0,222	0,186	0,218	0,243	0,214	0,217	0,248	0,258
SITC 3-digit level	GL Index (trade weighted average)	0,134	0,117	0,133	0,158	0,166	0,154	0,192	0,200
	GL Index (trade weighted average) (0-4)	0,090	0,086	0,066	0,072	0,110	0,093	0,085	0,097
	GL Index (trade weighted average) (5-9)	0,158	0,133	0,177	0,213	0,188	0,179	0,216	0,226

Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.

The table shows that Turkey's IIT level increased over time during the period, but it was generally at a low level. In other words, Turkey's trade with that region was in the form of inter-industry trade in that period.

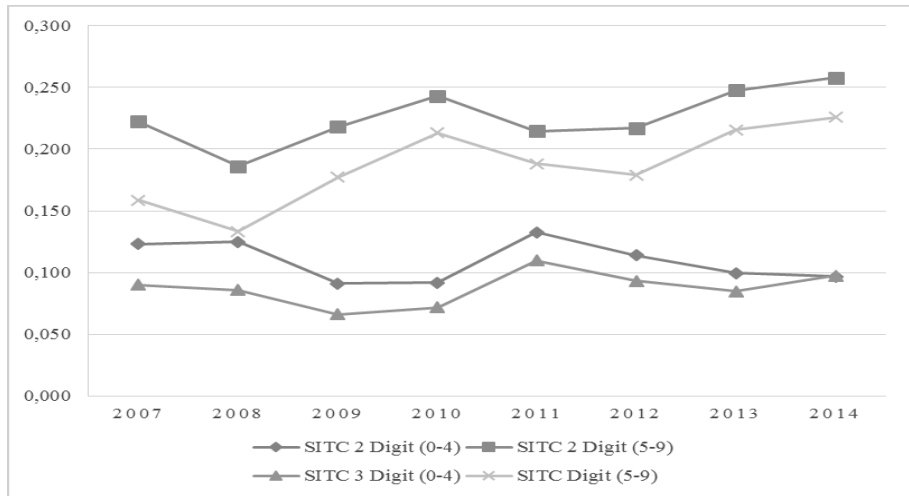
Figure 3: IIT Values in the Trade between Turkey-BSEC on the Basis of GL Index

Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.



Besides, as seen in the Figure 4, goods groups mainly covering the industrial goods (5-9) have a higher IIT value when compared to primary goods groups (0-4). This result is consistent with the theory. IIT values for industrial goods can be found higher on grounds such as the market structure, that labor force can be differentiated in terms of quality and skills, that economies of scales can be realized, and that production can be divided into stages (Küçükahmetoğlu, 2002: 44).

Figure 4: IIT Values in the Trade between Turkey-BSEC on the Basis of GL Index in Primary and Industrial Goods



Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.

4.2.1. IIT between Turkey and BSEC by Key Industries

In this section, intra-industry trade index values of sectors are calculated in weighted average by years. By this practice, it is aimed to determine which main industries have higher IIT rates in Turkey and, in the most general sense, monitor the sector-based development over years.

Table 3 shows rates of Turkey's IIT with BSEC countries by years and sectors calculated through GL index at SITC 3-digit aggregation level. Values in the table indicate trade weighted average of sub-industries

at 3-digit level of each key SITC industry. In the industry grouping based on SITC classification, sectors of chemicals and related products no. 5, processed goods divided into main classes no. 6, machinery and transport equipment no. 7 in SITC generally have high values in terms of IIT levels. In the group of manufactured goods no. 5-8, there is an uptrend starting from 2007 until 2014. The highest increase is in the industry of machinery and transport equipment no. 7. While the index value was 0.19% in 2007, it increased to 0.49% in 2014. According to the table, IIT in product groups no. (0-4) generally do not have any considerable change. From 2007 to 2014, beverages and tobacco had the highest increase in product groups no. 0-4. IIT in beverages and tobacco (1) sector, which was 0.10% in 2007, reached to 0.51% in 2014. While index values in food and live animals (0) were steady from 2007 to 2014, index values in mineral fuels, lubricants and related materials (3) and animal and vegetable oils, fats and waxes (4) had a decrease from 2007 to 2014. Index value for crude materials (except fuels, inedible) (2) was 0.06% in 2007 and it reached to 0.20 % in 2014.

Table 3: Trade Weighted Average of SITC 3-Digit GL Index

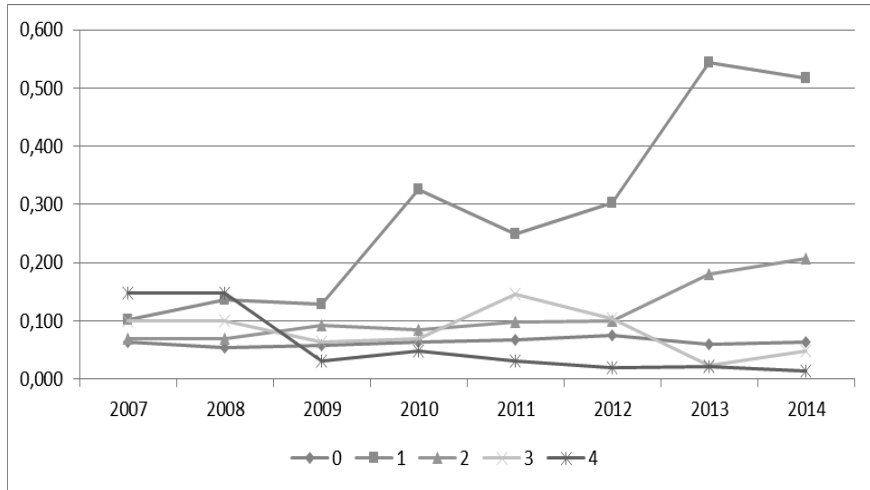
Code	Description	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014
0	Food and live animals	0.064	0.054	0.058	0.064	0.068	0.075	0.060	0.064
1	Beverages and tobacco	0.103	0.136	0.128	0.326	0.250	0.303	0.543	0.517
2	Crude materials inedible, except fuels	0.069	0.069	0.092	0.084	0.097	0.099	0.180	0.206
3	Mineral fuels, lubricants and related materials	0.100	0.100	0.063	0.068	0.146	0.103	0.024	0.048
4	Animal and vegetable oils, fats and waxes	0.147	0.147	0.031	0.048	0.032	0.020	0.021	0.013
5	Chemicals and related products	0.209	0.209	0.231	0.318	0.333	0.326	0.281	0.288
6	Manufactured goods classified chiefly by materials	0.203	0.203	0.209	0.218	0.221	0.204	0.248	0.277
7	Machinery and transport equipment	0.195	0.195	0.339	0.409	0.373	0.382	0.488	0.493

8	Miscellaneous manufactured articles	0.118	0.118	0.150	0.151	0.165	0.159	0.152	0.157
9	Commodities and transactions not classified elsewhere	0.020	0.020	0.040	0.050	0.037	0.044	0.060	0.065

Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.

Figure 5 and Figure 6 clearly show the change in IIT rates of key industries at SITC 3-digit level by years.

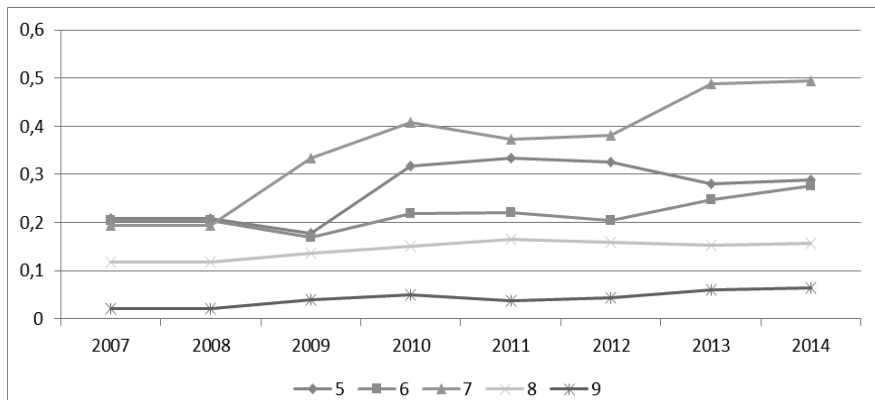
Figure 5: Sectoral IIT Index Measurements at SITC 3-Digit Level (0-4)



Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.

As seen in the figures, sector of beverages and tobacco no. 1 had the highest increase in group (0-4), and sector of machinery and transport equipment no. 7 had the highest increase in group (5-9).

Figure 6: Sectoral IIT Index Measurements at SITC 3-Digit Level (5-9)



Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.

4.2.2. IIT in Turkey-BSEC Trade by Countries

SITC 3-digit IIT index values (trade weighted) between Turkey and other BSEC countries are given in the Table 3. Data in the Table 4 show that the highest IIT rate in 2007 and 2008 was with Greece and the highest IIT rate in 2009-2014 was with Romania.

JSHS|259

It is found out that IIT level, which is calculated according to Grubel-Lloyd index, is highly low as seen in Table 4; in other words, it is determined that Turkey's trade with these countries is in the nature of inter-industry trade. Figure 7 clearly shows the change in IIT rates of countries at SITC 3-digit level by years.

In Table 4, intra-industry trade index values of sectors in BSEC countries are given in weighted average by years. According to 3-digit index values, the index value in primary goods (0-4) is higher than the index value in manufactured goods (5-8) in all country groups, except for Russia, in 2007. In 2014, the index value in manufactured goods (5-8) is higher than the index value in primary goods (0-4) except for Georgia and Ukraine. Accordingly, intra-industry trade is more intense in manufactured goods. Among BSEC countries, only with Armenia there is no trade.

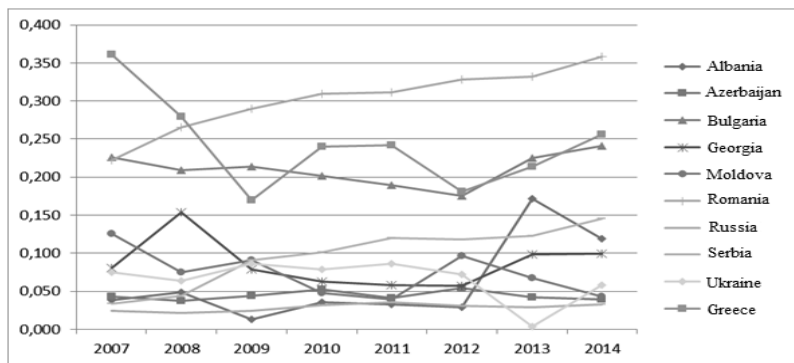
Table 4: IIT Index Values (Trade Weighted) of BSEC Countries at SITC 3-Digit Level

Countries	Code	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014
Albania	(0-9)	0.038	0.049	0.013	0.036	0.033	0.029	0.172	0.119
	(0-4)	0.157	0.161	0.003	0.001	0.009	0.003	0.003	0.004
	(5-9)	0.008	0.014	0.015	0.041	0.037	0.035	0.205	0.137
Azerbaijan	(0-9)	0.043	0.037	0.044	0.052	0.041	0.054	0.0425	0.039
	(0-4)	0.116	0.069	0.128	0.140	0.120	0.135	0.006	0.010
	(5-9)	0.030	0.030	0.033	0.039	0.027	0.043	0.046	0.042
Bulgaria	(0-9)	0.226	0.209	0.214	0.202	0.189	0.175	0.225	0.241
	(0-4)	0.273	0.105	0.167	0.120	0.064	0.038	0.098	0.118
	(5-9)	0.215	0.247	0.234	0.240	0.261	0.263	0.264	0.278
Armenia	(0-9)	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
	(0-4)	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
	(5-9)	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Georgia	(0-9)	0.081	0.154	0.079	0.063	0.058	0.057	0.099	0.099
	(0-4)	0.143	0.339	0.203	0.106	0.061	0.081	0.108	0.159
	(5-9)	0.047	0.028	0.037	0.047	0.058	0.054	0.097	0.092
Moldova	(0-9)	0.126	0.075	0.091	0.048	0.039	0.097	0.068	0.043
	(0-4)	0.147	0.114	0.110	0.014	0.011	0.075	0.034	0.034
	(5-9)	0.115	0.062	0.079	0.072	0.076	0.111	0.093	0.050
Romania	(0-9)	0.222	0.265	0.290	0.310	0.311	0.328	0.332	0.358
	(0-4)	0.095	0.142	0.093	0.105	0.047	0.100	0.067	0.108
	(5-9)	0.089	0.305	0.353	0.375	0.398	0.394	0.358	0.389
Russia	(0-9)	0.024	0.021	0.024	0.032	0.036	0.031	0.029	0.032
	(0-4)	0.013	0.019	0.018	0.025	0.065	0.050	0.029	0.029
	(5-9)	0.033	0.022	0.031	0.039	0.027	0.024	0.029	0.033

Serbia	(0-9)	0.034	0.044	0.091	0.101	0.120	0.118	0.123	0.145
	(0-4)	0.054	0.059	0.233	0.170	0.112	0.106	0.055	0.058
	(5-9)	0.031	0.042	0.065	0.087	0.122	0.122	0.131	0.158
Ukraine	(0-9)	0.075	0.064	0.086	0.079	0.086	0.072	0.004	0.058
	(0-4)	0.141	0.149	0.137	0.120	0.119	0.118	0.051	0.153
	(5-9)	0.054	0.039	0.055	0.055	0.062	0.051	0.063	0.060
Greece	(0-9)	0.361	0.280	0.170	0.240	0.242	0.181	0.214	0.256
	(0-4)	0.653	0.388	0.092	0.164	0.177	0.111	0.107	0.256
	(5-9)	0.227	0.234	0.216	0.292	0.317	0.307	0.256	0.256

With a general overview to IIT of Turkey with the region by countries, it is seen that IIT with 7 out of 10 countries is below 0.15 and IIT with the remaining countries varies between 0.20 and 0.35. In other words, IIT with Greece, Bulgaria and Romania, three Balkan countries, is relatively higher than IIT with others. However, theoretically, it is accepted that IIT is intense in the sector where IIT index value is above 0.50 and inter-industry trade is intense where it is below 0.25. Here, even IIT of Turkey with an EU country is below 0.50. Therefore, Turkey's trade with the region is mainly in the form of inter-industry trade.

Figure 7: Turkey's IIT with BSEC Countries (Trade Weighted)



Source: UN Comtrade data are used in the calculation.

The sector which made the biggest progress in terms of IIT increase from 2007 to 2014 is the sector of chemicals and related products no. 5. In that sector, number of sectors with an index value above 0.50 was 6 in 2007 and it reached to 11 in 2014 (Table 5). Following this sector, sectors having a high index value are sectors of processed goods divided into main classes no. 6, machinery and transport equipment no. 7 and inedible crude materials except fuels no. 2.

Table 5: Sectors with an Index Value > 0.50

Code	Description	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014
0	Food and live animals	023, 059, 061, 071	059	022, 061	022, 059, 061	043, 061, 071	011, 043, 075	001, 061, 071, 075	001, 071, 075
1	Beverages and tobacco	122	111	111	111, 122	111	111, 122	111, 122	122
2	Crude materials inedible, except fuels	223, 231, 278, 291, 292	223, 231, 266, 278, 291, 292	266, 277, 278, 288, 291, 292	265, 266, 278, 288, 291, 292	264, 274, 278, 288, 291	272, 278, 287, 288, 291, 292	278, 287, 288, 291, 292	212, 266, 272, 278, 287, 288, 291, 292
3	Mineral fuels, lubricants and related materials	322, 335	322	322					
4	Animal and vegetable oils, fats and waxes	431	411	422		411	411	422	422

TURKEY'S INTRA-INDUSTRY TRADE

5	Chemicals and related products	524, 533 551, 574, 592, 598	514, 515, 516, 524, 525, 542, 551, 574, 575, 592, 598	514, 515, 516, 524, 532, 542, 551, 573, 574, 575, 592	511, 514, 516, 523, 524, 532, 542, 551, 573, 574, 575, 592, 598	511, 514, 515, 516, 523, 524, 531, 532, 541, 553, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 592, 593, 598	514, 515, 516, 523, 524, 531, 532, 541, 553, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 592	514, 515, 516, 523, 525, 532, 541, 553, 572, 575, 579	515, 516, 523, 525, 531, 532, 541, 553, 572, 575, 579
6	Manufactured goods classified chiefly by materials	625, 634, 641, 654, 664, 665, 674, 679, 689, 696	625, 634, 641, 654, 665, 677, 679	611, 625, 634, 641, 654, 665, 674, 676, 677, 679	611, 625, 641, 664, 665, 674, 676, 679, 689, 696	611, 621, 625, 634, 641, 665, 674, 676, 679	625, 641, 665, 676, 677, 689, 696	611, 621, 625, 629, 641, 665, 675, 676, 677, 689, 696	621, 625, 629, 634, 641, 665, 675, 676, 677, 689, 692
7	Machinery and transport equipment	712, 716, 718, 731, 746, 792, 793	714, 718, 726, 731, 746, 759, 762, 764	714, 716, 718, 726, 741, 751, 773, 784, 792,	711, 714, 716, 718, 723, 726, 741, 744, 751, 759, 762, 773, 776, 784, 793	712, 714, 718, 751, 763, 773, 774, 784, 792, 793	714, 718, 746, 751, 764, 773, 781, 793	713, 718, 764, 773, 781, 791, 793	712, 713, 718, 759, 773, 778, 781, 793
8	Miscellaneous manufactured articles	882, 896	871, 896	871, 874, 896	874, 882, 896	874, 884, 896	874	874, 896	871, 874, 896

JSHS | 263

5. Conclusion

In this study, which examines the level and structure of Turkey's IIT with BSEC region, detailed analyses are done in terms of countries and goods. With regards to intra-industry trade, Turkey's IIT with this region generally appears to be low. It is seen that trade with BSEC countries is mainly in an inter-industry nature. Even with Greece, Bulgaria and Romania, the three European countries with a relatively higher IIT, IIT index is below 0.50. IIT with these three countries as well as some other countries shows an uptrend for the last couple of years.

When analyzed in terms of goods groups, it is found that IIT level is higher for goods of manufacturing industry in Turkey's IIT with the region. While the number of sectors with intense IIT was 38 in 2007, it had a slight increase and reached to 44 in 2014. In this period, sectors with an IIT value above 0.50 are Food and live animals (1), Beverages and tobacco (2), Crude materials inedible (except fuels) (3), Chemicals and related products (5), Manufactured goods (6), Machinery and transport equipment (7) and miscellaneous manufactured articles (8).

In the industry grouping based on SITC classification, industries of chemicals and related products no. 5, manufactured goods classified chiefly by material no. 6, machinery and transportation vehicles no. 7 in SITC generally have high values in terms of IIT levels.

These results are actually the expected results considering the level of trade between Turkey and the region. An increase in IIT level is possible if trade between Turkey and the region makes a progress in the forthcoming periods - which is highly expected - and level of integration can be improved.

References

- Aydın, A. (2008), Endüstri içi ticaret ve Türkiye: Ülkeye özgü belirleyicilerin tespitine yönelik bir araştırma, *Marmara Üniversitesi İ.İ.B.F Dergisi*, Cilt:25, Sayı:2, 881-921
- Balassa, B. (1966), Tariff reduction and trade in manufactures among the industrial countries, *American Economics Review*, Vol. 61 No:3, June 1966.

- Başkol, M.O. (2009), Türkiye'nin endüstri-içi ticaretinin analizi, *Uludağ Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi*, Cilt XXVIII, Sayı 2, 1-24.
- Çeştepe, H. (2012), Türkiye'nin seçilmiş Ortadoğu ülkeleriyle ticaretinin analizi, *Ekonomik ve Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi*, Cilt:8, Yıl:8, Sayı:2, 23-43
- Erk, N. & Tekgül, Y. B. (2000), Ekonomik entegrasyon ve endüstri-içi ticaret: Türkiye-AB ülkeleri arasındaki endüstri-içi ticaretin ölçülmesi ve ticaret tipinin belirlenmesi, *ODTÜ Uluslararası Ekonomi Konferansı V*, Ankara.
- Erlat, G. & Erlat, H. (2003), Measuring intra-industry trade and marginal intra-industry trade, *Russian and East European Finance and Trade*, Vol:39, No:6, 5-38
- Gray, P. (1979), Intra-industry trade: The effects of different levels of data aggregation, Herbert Giersh (Ed.), *On the Economics of Intra-Industry Trade*, Tübingen: Mohr.
- Kar, M. (2011), İslam dünyası Türkiye'nin doğal ticaret ortağı olabilir mi?, *Ortadoğu Analiz*, Nisan 2011, Cilt: 3, Sayı: 28, 68-75
- Kaya, A. A. & Gacener, A. (2005), Intra-industry trade of Turkey with the neighboring countries, *First International Conference on Business, Management and Economics*, 16-19 June 2005, Çeşme-İzmir, Turkey, 41-53
- Krugman, P. (1981), Intraindustry specialization and the gains from trade, *Journal of Political Economy*, Vol. 89, No.5 (October 1981), 959-973.
- Küçükahmetoğlu, O. (2002), Endüstri içi ticaret ve Türkiye, *İktisat İşletme ve Finans*, Cilt:17, Sayı:190, 34-50.
- Küçükahmetoğlu, O. (2013), Reel entegrasyon teorisi, *Ekonomik Entegrasyon Küresel ve Bölgesel Yaklaşım*, O. Küçükahmetoğlu, H. Çeştepe, Ş. Tüylüoğlu (Ed.), Bursa: Ekin, 53-91
- Mardas, D. (1992), Intra-Industry trade in manufactured products between the European economic and Eastern European countries, *Journal of World Trade*, Vol. 26, No: 5, October 1992.
- Şentürk, C. (2014), Türkiye'nin seçilmiş ülkeler ile endüstri içi ticaretinin endeks yöntemine dayalı analizi (1990-2013), *Süleyman Demirel Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi*, Yıl: 2014/2, Sayı:20, 207-230
- Şahin, D. (2015), Tekstil ve hazır giyim sektöründe endüstri-içi ticaretin analizi: Türkiye ve Çin örneği, *İşletme ve İktisat Çalışmaları Dergisi*, Cilt 3, Sayı 1, 2015, 1-9
- TİM (Türkiye İhracatçılar Meclisi) (2015), *Ekonomi ve dış ticaret raporu 2015*, İstanbul.

- TÜİK (Türkiye İstatistik Kurumu) (2016), *Temel istatistikler*, <http://www.tuik.gov.tr/UstMenu.do?metod=temelist>, 26.03.2016
- UN Comtrade Database (2016), *Trade statistics*, <http://comtrade.un.org/data/>, 10.04.2016
- Yenilmez, F. & Bayraç, H. N. (2005), Türkiye-Almanya arasındaki endüstri içi ticaretin gelişimi ve endüstri içi ticareti etkileyen ülke değişkenleri, *E-akademi*, 44, Ekim 2005.
- Yurttañıkımaz, Ç. (2014), Türkiye'nin AB pazarında endüstri-içi ticaret açısından avantajlı olduđu ürünlerin belirlenmesi, *C.Ü İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi*, Cilt:14, Sayı:1, 1-22

EVALUATING OLD AGE EMPLOYMENT POLICIES OF TURKEY FROM THE PERSPECTIVE OF DEVELOPED COUNTRIES

İDİL YILDIRIM *

Abstract: Globalisation has many impacts on employment relations. With the increasement of life expectancy and decrasement on pension payments, elder people want to work as much as they can afford. As a result of this changement in the labor market, developed countries started to carry out new policies for old age workers to protect their social rights in the work place. In Turkey, the old age employment practice has newly begun. Today with the implementation of Code number 5510, people who started to work after 2008, except of self-employed workers, do not benefit from these regulations. From the perspective of labor law, despite having a regulation to prevent discrimination based on age, there is not an effective protection for old age employees. In this study, it is made for a comparison of old age employment policies of developed countries and evaluate Turkey's social law regulations.

Key Word: *Globalisation, employment, policies*

1. Introduction

The ageing of people bring significant changements in all over the labour markets of the World. Especially active ageing, flexible working and special retirement schemes gain importance day by day. According to European Union ageing of workers can be seen as a drag

* Trakya University Economics and Administrative Faculty, Research Assistant at Labour Economics and Industrial Relations [hukukcuidil@gmail.com]

on economic growth through labour and skill shortages. In the Stockholm European Council meeting that held in 2001, it was discussed a strategy to cope with the principal economic and budgetary challenges linked to an ageing population, encouragingly Union member states to raise employment and productivity levels. In Europe the number of older people is rising. Especially baby boomer generation reaches retirement age. According to data in 2011 the median age of the EU population was 41 and in Germany, Italy, Greece, Austria and Finland more than %25 of the population is over 60s. The average median age of the EU27 population is expected to increase by an additional 7.3 years by 2060. Supporting the extension of working lives with the help of national policies and social partner initiatives search new ways on promoting work ability and introducing company bargaining on the national scale. Supporting the extension of active ageing in the labour market Show improvement to the quality of the work environment working conditions and work ability in some central European and northern countries. The lack of national level measures do not let workers continue in the same job beyond the age of 60. In several European countries there are guidances on how to improve and adjust the working environment of older workers and maintain work ability is provided by public, tripartite or bipartite bodies. Especially flexible work organizations for instance part-time work opportunities and flexible partial/phased retirement provisions seem as options in the today's labour market. There is a classification among European countries in the concept of participation of older workers in the labour market. In the Scandinavian countries that are in the first group includes demographic and employment challenges will be less strong than in the rest of the EU27. They have long-standing ageing policy and the involvements are part of their industrial relations tradition. Second group countries as Germany and France develop strategies at national and sectoral level. In the third group that include Greece, there are few initiatives and lack of implementation of national strategies on ageing. Lastly in United Kingdom there are small number of initiatives from government on social partners. In Spain it has been developed a new comprehensive programme (Eurofound, 2013:3, 41-42).

There are important reforms that are needed to improve on pension and labour market systems. For example restrictions of early retirement policies and postponement or abolition of the statutory retirement age, allowing a transition phase between worklife and retirement with part time work/pensions, revising pension systems where benefits are based on the final salaries, abolition of distinction between private and public sector, establishment and institutionalisation of education programs for adults to enable career mobility and create incentives for lifelong learning, creation of financial incentives both on the employers' and employees' side that make retention in the labour market profitable, make campaigns to counteract negative images of older workers at the level of public opinion, involving actors on local and regional level in order to network, giving guidance and support to older workers who are thinking about entering into self-employment in order to lower barriers and prevent precarious work (Bertelsmann Stiftung, 7).

2. Policies and Regulations for Aging Workforce in Developed

Countries

 JSHS | 269

In United Kingdom by the Equality Act 2010 old age workers are protected from discrimination at work. This regulation allows the claimant to define the disadvantaged age group and makes illegal all forms of prohibited conduct on grounds of age discrimination. According to this regulation direct discrimination on ground of age requires a comparator for example a person who is not of that person's age or a ge group and can be real or hypothetical. Indirect discrimination on arise include selection criteria, policies, benefits, employment rules or any other practices which although they are applied to all employees have negative effect on a particular age, unless this can be justified (Taylor/Astra, 2012:255,256).

The most negative consequences for older workers influence recruitment, hiring, training, working conditions and career development. According to ILO age discrimination legislations must be based on five different dimensions: first dimension requires that limit or impede hiring of older workers would be discriminatory. Second dimension is on employment protection which cover skills development and career opportunities. Third rule is developing workplace or

organizational policies that address age discrimination. Fourthly, it must be defined expansive definition of age discrimination. There are two international standards on age discrimination legislation. ILO Convention on Discrimination (Employment and Occupation) Convention, 1958 (no.111) is considered first and principal international standard. This Convention does not include discrimination on the grounds of age, however according to the Article 1 (1) b and 5, special measures or assistance to be taken for a variety of categories and fort he member countries' domestic purposes. Second important international regulation is ILO older workers Recommendation, 1980 (no.162). It calls on Member States to take action to promote equality of opportunity and treatment (Ghosheh, 2008:5,6,14).

In the United States of America the Age Discrimination in Employment Act 1967 forbids age discrimination against people who are age 40 or older. Law forbids any aspect of employment, such as hiring, firing, pay, jobs assignments, promotions, lay off, training, fringe benefit and any other other ter mor condition of employment. As it is mentioned in the case of Kephart v. Institue of Gas Technology, 1980 "Age need not have been the sole motivating factor but it must have been the determining factor in his discharge in the sense." In 2012, Maymouth Mnhattan College was sued by U.S. Equal Employment Opportunity Commission for Age Discrimination because of College refused to hire a choreography instructor for a tenure-track assistant professorship because of her age. College passed over 64-year-old applicant for an assistant professorship in dance composition and hired a 38 years old applicant. In this case it is violated the Age Discrimination in Employment Act. Hutchinson Sealing Systems company violated the law by selecting three engineers for termination during staff cuts based on their ages (48,51,62).This conduct vioted the Age Discrimination in Employment Act (www.eeoc.gov/30.03.2016).

In United Kingdom case of Perrin v Fred Christophers Ltd. (Employment Tribunal) Ms Perrin was employed as a receptionist at Fred-Christophers Ltd, as a funeral director. Company dismissed Ms Perrin on grounds on redundancy because a new role had created fort he company was not suitable for her. The claimant brought claims against the employer for unfair dismissal, direct age and sex discrimina-

tion. Employment Tribunal found that claimant had been directly discriminated against on grounds of her age when she was dismissed as there were no substantial differences between the old and new role, there was no evidence under-performance on Ms. Perrin's part. Tribunal also found that Ms. Perrin had been harassed on grounds of her age when she was told that she was not upto it. The Tribunal found that these comments were humiliating and accepted her evidence that she had lost confidence as a result of the treatment (Case no 1401278/2014, Employment Tribunals). In Dove Allan Brown&Newirth Limited Case, Mr. Dove was the oldest member of the sales team by more than ten years. He was 61 years old and unfairly sacked after being labelled "Gramps" by a younger colleague. The claimant was discriminated against because of his age both in relation to being called "Gramps" and by his dismissal (Case 3301905/2015, Employment Tribunals).

In the Felix Palacios de la Villa v. Cortefiel Servicios SA case Mr. Palacios de la Villa, concerning the automatic termination of his contract of employment by reason of the fact that he had reached the age limit for compulsory retirement, set at 65 years of age limit for compulsory retirement, set at 65 years of age by national law. Directive 2000/78 is found applicable to a situation such as that in the main proceedings before examining. Directive is designed to lay down a general framework in order to guarantee equal treatment in employment and occupation to all persons, by offering them effective protection against discrimination on one of the grounds covered by article 1. The legislation of issue in the main proceedings, which permits the automatic termination of an employment relationship concluded between an employer and worker once the latter has reached the age of 65, affects the duration of the employment relationship between the parties and the engagement of the workers concerned in an occupation. Prohibitions on any discrimination on grounds of age must be interpreted as not precluding national legislation, pursuant to which compulsory retirement clauses contained in collective agreements are lawful. Related regulation based on age is objectively and reasonably justified in the context of national law by a legitimate aim relating to employment policy and the labour market. It is stated

that aim of public interest do not appear to be inappropriate and unnecessary for the purpose (Case C-411/05, 16.10.2007).

Workplace flexibility is an other key issue in older age employment. There are some examples of workplace flexibility such as flexibility in the number of hours worked, flexible schedules, flexible place control over the timing of breaks, option for time off for example paid leave for caregiving, extra unpaid vacation days, paid/unpaid time for education, allowing employees to transfer a job with reduced responsibilities and reduced pay (bc.edu,01.04.2016).

In a study that seeks to explore how organizations might create flexible work programs to attract and retain older workers it is found that practical advice that will help organizations to prepare for the demographic changes coming and to develop effective flexible work programs for older employees. According to this there are three lessons for employers first one is to combine and integrate diverse dimensions of work flexibility, secondly offer flexible work options to retired employees, lastly align flexible work opportunities with pension scheme options (Koc-Menard,2009).

According to the thYnk Consulting Group that is a HR and Management consultancy and training firm, organisation must build an enabling organisational culture based on strong values and employees should be recognised for their contributions to the work regardless of age. The most important thing is to celebrate the loyalty and contributions of the older employees, work experience and insights. Beside of this they should connect and build meaningful relations to address older employee's physical emotional and social needs. Employers can use flexible work arrangements as a useful tool to attract, retain and re-employ older employees on a short or long term (UP-BEAT, 2010:6). For developing plans that would support the flexible employment of older workers, employer should avoid rigid design and structure of full time jobs which give priorities and needs of younger workers who accept to work with less flexible schedules, stereotype and stigmatize attitudes, give opportunities for older workers to update their skills for contemporary jobs, adopt policies that promote likelihood of longerworkforce engagement, facilitate appropriate job development and re-design, training, retraining and

placement for older workers and their employers, assure workplace and community based social, economic and other support needed to maintain work (iveybusinessjournal.com, 01.04.16).

According to a study of the center on aging and work in Boston over seventy-eight percent of the respondents to the Center's Age and Generations Study reported that having access to flexible work options contributes to their success as employees to a moderate or great extent and 90% of them reported that flexible work contributes quality of life to a moderate or great extent (bc.edu, 01.04.2016).

It is found that restrictive employment protection legislation may create disincentives for employment of old workers. Strict EPL contributes compression of working lives and this create an obstacle for a better reconciliation of work, family and the investment in human capital. In the study it is stressed the importance of life-long learning, to contribute high levels of employment and labour productivity on macro level. So, by increasing the attractiveness of old age workers, they should possess better skills (Vodopivec/Dolenc,2007:11).

Phased retirement schemes do not have any formal disclosure requirements. Due to this, for many workers this type of schemes do not seem a good idea. Indeed these arrangements have financial and lifestyle implications. Older workers while working after being a pensioner, continue to participate in their employers' retirement plan and they receive additional accruals or contributions (Penner/Perun/Steuerle, 88-89). In Europe many member states and sectors have facilitated partial retirement over the past years. Partial retirement schemes have frequently been implemented as part of broader reform packages. Also, these schemes may be established by collective agreements covering specific sectors or companies set their partial retirement scheme as Rubber Group in Germany, DSM, Shell and Unilever in Netherlands (Dubois/Runceanu./Anderson, 2016:11). Pensioners who work prefer to take their Money from social security systems and their new employers. In this case phased retirement can be seen as a solution. This type of retirement has no got a definition however it refers to a broad range of flexible retirement arrangements. So, employees reduce the hours worked or work in a different capacity after retirement. This programme should be a

routine employee benefit programme that permits employees to adjust their work gradually as they transition into retirement (assets.aarp.org,30.03.2016)

3. Analysing the Current Situation of Older Workers Turkey

The average age of retirement has increased much less than the average life expectancy of those retiring. In contrast to many other OECD countries, the unemployment rate has remained high over the past decade and drifted up even further over the past few years. The current state of the labour market makes reform on older age employment issue. While labour market outcomes remain unsatisfactory, the government has initiated comprehensive reforms in the right direction to raise the employment levels of older workers. Various measures were taken to help improve the labour market opportunities of older workers. The main early retirement pathways in Turkey are started to be seen in firstly in the 80s. In 6.05.1986 implementation of the social security support premium reduction from the pensions of employees arranged specifically in the social security system of Turkey. In 8.9.1999 social security premium reduction started to practice for self-employer older workers (Güzel/Okur/Caniklioğlu, 2014:688-695).

After the recent regulation which be held on 10.02.2016, government encouraged self-employer pensioners and ended the application of cutting Premium reduction for them pensioners who started to work after 2008, if they will be employed as a worker by employers, do not have chance to have part in the labour market with the social security premium reduction, while pensioners who set up an enterprise will work except of premium reduction and their pension will be paid. However there are not advantageous implications for the older age workers, especially on equality, life long learning and partial retirement.

4. Conclusion

The concept of productive aging promotes the role of the market in addressing individual based solutions and obfuscate the role of the state. The major problem is the job creation. Part-time working and self-employment are very predominant. It is important to recognise that older workers are a very diverse group. Beside of government,

social partners and other non-governmental organisations can propose creative solutions to improve opportunities for longer working lives

In Turkey in last years may initiatives have been launched at various government and social partner levels that aim to identify and certify good employment practice. The administration is aiming to develop a whole of government approach to address the low employment rates of the over 55s. The pension system already provides various possibilities for combining work and benefit income

Referances

- Bertelsmann Stiftung, European Policy Centre, Creating Second Career Labour Markets, Towards More Employment Opportunities for Older Workers.
- Eurofound.(2013).Role of governments and social partners in keeping older workers in the labour market.
- Dubois H./Runceanu G./Anderson R. (2016) Extending Working Lives Through Flexible Retirement Schemes: Partial Retirement, Publication Office of the European Union, Luxemburg
- Ghosheh N.(2008). Conditions of Work and Employment Series. Conditions of Work and Employment Programme. International Labour Organization. No:20.
- Güzel,A./Okur, A.R./Caniklioğlu N. (2014) Sosyal Güvenlik Hukuku. Yenilenmiş 15.Bası. Beta Yayınevi
- Koc-Menard S.(2009) Strategic HR Review, Vol.8, Issue 2, p.31-36.
- Penner R./Perun P./Steuerle E. Legal and Institutional Impediments to Partial Retirement and Part-Time Work by Older Workers. urban.org, 01.04.2016.
- Phased Retirement and Flexible Retirement Arrangements: Strategies for Retaining Skilled Workers. assets.aarp.org,30.03.2016.
- Taylor S./Emir A., (2012). Employment Law an Introduction. Oxford University Press.Third Edition.
- UPBEAT, (2010) An Employer Alliance Publication, Issue 3..
- Vodopivec, M./Dolenc P., (2007).Live Longer, Work Longer: Making It Happen In The Labor Market”. cef-sec.org/pension_reform, 05.04.2016
- www.bc.edu/research/aging and
work/about/work/flexibility.html,01.04.2016
- www.eeoc.gov,30.03.2016

İDİL YILDIRIM

www.iveybusinessjournal.com/publication/accomodating-older-worker-needs-for-flexible-work-options/, 01.04.2016
www.curia.europa.eu, 30.03.2016

TOURIST PREFERENCES RANKING OF HOTELS IN ANTALYA: TOPSIS APPLICATION

İLYAS AKHİSAR *
ÖZGÜR ARPACI *

Abstract: The aim of this study is to determine tourist preferences (choices) for the five star hotels in Antalya. To identify the factors that influence the tourists' choice to a hotel and evaluates the preferences of tourists are important for the tourism sector and the management of the hotels. Because tourism sector, especially for developing countries is a dynamic market. Turkey comes at a particularly attractive to tourists and tourist as a guest is the focus of the market. However preferences of tourist are an important issue in tourism literature. Therefore tourists' preferences are determined according to seven variables by ranking the hotels in Antalya.

Key Word: *TOPSIS, Antalya, tourism sector, tourist preferences, hotel ranking*

1.Introduction

In the study, tourists' preferences are determined according to seven variables by ranking the hotels in Antalya. The variables used in the research and sample for hotels are obtained from website called as Booking.com. And TOPSIS method is used to rank the hotels according to the variables.

* Kırklareli University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences [ilyasakhisar@klu.edu.tr]

* [ozqurarpaci@hotmail.com]

TOPSIS method tries to determine Positive Ideal Solution (PIS) and Negative Ideal Solution (NIS) points. Preferred alternative is not only closest to solution, at the same time, it is alternative that is most distant to negative ideal solution; basis underlies TOPSIS approach. In order to find the preferences ranks of the hotels established in Antalya according to ranking with seven variables such as Cleanliness, Location, Comfort, Facilities, Staff, Free Wi-Fi and Value for Money for each hotels by using TOPSIS method.

2.Literature Review

Centuries ago tourism destinations developed around unique natural features such as mineral healing waters, beach and mountain resorts and sacred sites (Sheldon and Park, 2009). In recent times hotels grow and vary in all aspects in a stepwise fashion. Literature explains that hotels are one of the most important elements constituting to tourism and travel industry. In this context, the rapid expansion of the hotel industry has produced an extremely competitive market (Lockyer, 2005). Therefore tourists preferences are significant for the hotel managers in a competitive environment.

Fast developing technology has made it crucial that businesses establish one-to-one communication with the customers to be leaders in the sector, even more than in the past. Today various criteria is determined in Booking.com by tourists' choices that carry vital importance for the hotels. With the data obtained from this web site, the status of the hotels in Antalya preferred by tourists may be revealed in this study.

Among the primary goals of businesses in the tourism industry is to provide quality services to customers and thus satisfied consumers. This purpose is vital importance for businesses in the sector in consideration of tourism sector's characteristics. It is possible for the businesses to service faulty instantaneous because of tourism services cannot be fully standardized. In addition, due to the unique characteristics of services, service products are tend to be complaints more than tangible goods. Furthermore there are some characteristics for tourism industry such as challenges in service standardization, simultaneous production and consumption, nondurable, heterogeneous and intangible services (Haverila and Naumann, 2009:74). On the

other hand in consideration of tourists usually communicate with each other with word of mouth or social media, the scores given by tourists on social media for the services of the hotels may be changed the status of the hotel preferred by tourists.

Today, with the advancement of internet technology online shopping has entered our lives and quickly gained a significant place. Thanks to information and communication technologies of today's consumers have become more knowledgeable and consciously. Consumers can find various comments about different products on websites. Similarly, consumers of touristic product can learn previous about the services and can have an idea about the services. Therefore internet is both a opportunity and a threat for hotel managers. Managers and marketing experts can reach to the consumers directly by internet however, internet allows the consumers to transfer their experiences as they wish. Therefore, if hotels give enough importance to technology-based approaches such as internet marketing (Lee and Hu, 2008:168), they can change the threat to the opportunity. Tourists evaluate the experiences about the services after the accommodation on the internet. In this study the scores are obtained from Booking.com used for the analysis. Thus preferred rate of the hotels are determined according to scores given by tourist about Cleanliness, Location, Comfort, Facilities, Staff, Free Wi-Fi and Value for Money

3. Methodology and Data

1.1. TOPSIS Method

The TOPSIS method developed by Hwang and Yoon (1981) basically depending on closest distance to positive-ideal solution and most distance to negative-ideal solution. TOPSIS method procedure steps as follows;

1. Step - The Constitution of Decision Matrix (A): Alternatives are positioned as decision points on rows and evaluation criteria about decision positioned on columns in the decision matrix. In the $A_{m \times n}$ decision matrix, m and n represent decision point number and evaluation factor numbers respectively (Rao 2008).

$$A_{mn} = \{a_{ij} \mid i \in (1, 2, \dots, m) \text{ and } j \in (1, 2, \dots, n)\}$$

2. Step - Normalized Decision Matrix (R): Normalizing by square root of the sum of the squares scores or features belong to decision matrix criteria, calculated from A matrix by applying following equation (Opricovic and Tzeng, 2004).

$$r_{ij} = \frac{a_{ij}}{\sqrt{\sum_{k=1}^m a_{kj}^2}}$$

where

($r_{ij} \in R$ and $i: 1, 2, \dots, n$: criteria numbers, $j: 1, 2, \dots, m$: alternative numbers).

3. Step - Weighted Normalized Decision Matrix (V): In this step firstly weighted values are determined (w_j :for each j. criteria, relative weight values of elements of normalized decision matrix) according to purpose, (Monjezi et al., 2010). V matrix is formed by multiplying elements in the R matrix each column with w_j value. It is obtained as follows:

$$V = \{V_{ij} \mid w_j a_{ij} \mid i \in (1, 2, \dots, m) \text{ and } j \in (1, 2, \dots, n)\} \quad \text{where}$$

$$\sum_{j=1}^n w_j = 1$$

4. Step - Construction of Positive Ideal (A^+) and Negative Ideal (A^-) Solutions: The biggest ones which are the weighted factors of the column values in the V matrix selected in order to get the ideal solution set, in other words (smallest value is selected if related evaluating factor have direction of minimization). Positive ideal (A^+) and negative ideal (A^-) solutions sets obtained from V matrix as follows respectively,

$A^+ = \left\{ (\max_i v_{ij} \mid j \in J), (\min_i v_{ij} \mid j \in J') \right\}$, represented by

$$A^+ = \{v_1^+, v_2^+, \dots, v_n^+\}$$

$A^- = \left\{ (\min_i v_{ij} \mid j \in J), (\max_i v_{ij} \mid j \in J') \right\}$, represented by

$$A^- = \{v_1^-, v_2^-, \dots, v_n^-\}$$

Furthermore set which will be calculated from formula can be showed as In both formulas, J demonstrates the benefit (maximization) and J' demonstrates the cost (minimization) value.

5. Step - Calculation of Distance Between Alternatives: Distance between alternatives is obtained by n sized Euclidean Distance Approach. Distance from Positive Ideal (S^+) and Negative Ideal (S^-) Solutions for each alternative are calculated by formulas which are given below respectively.

JSHS|281

$$S_i^+ = \sqrt{\sum_{j=1}^n (v_{ij} - v_j^*)^2} \quad \text{and} \quad S_i^- = \sqrt{\sum_{j=1}^n (v_{ij} - v_j^-)^2}$$

6. Step - Calculation of Relative Closeness to the Ideal Solution: Distinction measurements are used to calculation of relative closeness (C^*) to the ideal solution has shown in the following, (Olson 2004).

$$C_i^* = \frac{S_i^-}{S_i^- + S_i^*}$$

where $0 \leq C_i^* \leq 1$.

7. Step - Closeness of the Alternatives to the Ideal Solution: Closeness of the alternatives to the ideal solution is sorted according to the value C_i^* , alternative which have highest C_i^* is chosen.

3.2. Data

Data is taken from Booking.com five star hotels in Antalya in 2015. In the analysis of data is used weighted of experts. It is referred to the geometric mean in the statistics when the proportionally differences of observation's results are more important than the absolute differences. In other words, if each observation is changing due to a previous observation and, if desired, to determine the rate of change, geometric mean gives reliable results.

3.3 Findings

The performance of the hotels, according to seven variables such as Cleanliness, Location, Comfort, Facilities, Staff, Free Wi-Fi and Value for Money, are given below in the Table 1. Preferences of the tourists are ranked for the hotels in Antalya with different variables by using TOPSIS method.

Table 1. Ranking of Hotels according to tourists' preferences rating

Rank	Number of Data	Name of Hotel	Performance
1	94	Maxx Royal	0,999
2	3	MaxxR	0,993
3	16	Regnum	0,966
4	33	Calista	0,900
5	50	Fame Recidance Kundu	0,897
6	2	Akra	0,895
7	1	Barut Hotel	0,886
8	70	Robinson	0,875
9	23	Gloria	0,873
10	87	Melas Lara	0,871
11	24	Kaya Palazzo	0,866
12	111	Voyage	0,865
13	53	Ela Quality	0,861
14	12	Limak	0,857
15	13	Kempinski	0,855

16	34	Sealife Bu.	0,852
17	110	Titanic Beach	0,845
18	30	Gloria Verde	0,844
19	114	Azura Deluxe	0,840
20	32	Gloria Golf	0,838
21	64	Susesi	0,836
22	19	Limak Arc.	0,834
23	117	Akka Antedon	0,832
24	206	Robinson Club	0,826
25	42	Papillon B.	0,814
26	63	Fame Residence	0,809
27	44	Baia Lara	0,808
28	20	Aska Lara	0,807
29	99	Otium	0,804
30	47	Rixos Beldibi	0,796
31	36	Ic Hotel	0,792
32	102	Ic Hotel	0,789
33	22	Limak Atlantis	0,789
34	27	Bellis Deluxe	0,782
35	61	Titanic Deluxe	0,780
36	9	Liberty	0,780
37	56	Amara Wing	0,779
38	65	Granada	0,778
39	109	Pirates	0,775
40	15	Rixos Pre.	0,774
41	28	Papillon	0,774
42	21	Rixos Pre.	0,773
43	92	Sueno	0,771
44	18	The Marmara	0,770

45	71	Delphin	0,766
46	11	Rixos D	0,761
47	31	Crystal	0,759
48	29	Amara	0,755
49	46	Belek Beach	0,752
50	26	Limak Limra	0,748
51	100	Port Nature	0,748
52	6	Ramada	0,748
53	183	White City	0,744
54	41	Mardan	0,737
55	66	Utopia	0,733
56	141	Paloma Grida	0,727
57	78	Papillon Z	0,725
58	35	Crystal Tat	0,719
59	159	Crystal Hotel	0,711
60	208	Royal Wings	0,710
61	39	Aura Palace	0,708
62	195	Dinler Hotel	0,707
63	105	Sentido Palace	0,703
64	57	Long Beach	0,702
65	62	Heaven Beach	0,698
66	75	Royal Holiday	0,698
67	10	Hotel Su	0,685
68	8	Sherwood	0,684
69	54	White Gold	0,683
70	134	Adam eve	0,682
71	88	Sherwood D.	0,680
72	14	Crowne	0,676
73	120	Ali Bey Club	0,665

74	7	Porto B.	0,664
75	101	Adora Golf	0,663
76	188	Akka	0,663
77	144	Aventura	0,659
78	96	Dionis Hotel	0,658
79	203	Falesia	0,651
80	55	Sentido Golden Avsallar	0,649
81	146	Crystal	0,647
82	67	Aska Just	0,643
83	129	Sea World	0,642
84	116	Club Nena	0,639
85	145	Club Asteria	0,632
86	95	Orange C.	0,631
87	191	Ulusoy K	0,631
88	131	Sentido	0,631
89	202	Cristal Admiral	0,629
90	74	Concorde	0,627
91	4	Rixosssun	0,626
92	182	Alkoçlar	0,623
93	5	Sealife	0,620
94	40	Sirene	0,620
95	103	Sentido Z.	0,617
96	51	Spice Hotel	0,616
97	181	Crystal Flora	0,616
98	68	Presa Di	0,616
99	43	Belconti	0,609
100	104	Crystal Water	0,607
101	200	Mukarnas	0,605
102	85	Vera Mare	0,594

103	197	Sherwood	0,594
104	48	Karmir Resort	0,591
105	115	Raymar Hotel	0,585
106	164	Club Paradiso	0,583
107	37	Venezia	0,581
108	162	Hotel Grand	0,580
109	147	Max inn	0,578
110	60	Alaiye Hotel	0,559
111	72	Riu Kaya	0,559
112	49	Oz Hotel	0,556
113	185	Champion	0,550
114	84	Lykia World	0,549
115	25	Club Hotel	0,549
116	81	Wow Topkapı	0,546
117	187	Drita Hotel	0,534
118	118	Meryan Hotel	0,533
119	77	Maritim	0,523
120	52	GoldCity	0,518
121	166	Golcity	0,518
122	45	Aska Wash.	0,515
123	161	Novia	0,514
124	83	Helel	0,504
125	17	Harrington	0,498
126	112	Euphoria	0,493
127	90	Eftalia	0,491
128	201	Simena Hotel	0,490
129	82	Kilikya Palace	0,484
130	217	G.prem.	0,484
131	150	Çenger Hotel	0,482

132	157	Katya	0,458
133	127	Caleremon	0,456
134	86	Wow Kremlin	0,430
135	89	Grand Haber	0,414
136	160	Nox Inn	0,401
137	80	River Garden	0,344
138	209	Özkaymak	0,309
139	153	Justiniano Hotel	0,294
140	154	Rubi Hotel	0,287
141	172	Sinatra	0,262
142	218	Daima Res.	0,241
143	213	Ozkaynak	0,216
144	173	Arma's Hotel	0,143
145	163	Happy E.	0,009

It is important to see in these tables whether if the scores are different from the scores in Booking.com belong to each hotel. For example; Maxx Royal Hotel is the first in all hotels with 0,999 performance score according to the findings of the research. On the other hand the general mean is 0,89 according to Booking.com with the all variables such as Cleanliness, Location, Comfort, Facilities, Staff, Free Wi-Fi and Value for Money. For example, another hotel has 116th line in the study with the performance score 0,546; but according to performance score of web site general means (arithmetic mean) is 0,73 for the same hotel.

JSHS|287

4. Results and Discussion

The findings are especially important for the management of hotels. Because they would take the right position against to their competitors. While managers are taking strategic decision about market, customers and other hotels it is important to know reliable performance score. Also it is important not to fool the customers and to perform more quality services to the customers (tourists).

The results are also important in terms of actors who interested in the tourism sector in the scope of macro and micro like economists, marketing and sales specialists, hotel businesses, travel agencies, recreation and entertainment companies, health and medical businesses, hospitals and shopping centers etc. Especially in the macro scope the politics and planning about tourism must be formed according to this classification in the future.

References

- Haverila, J. M. and Naumann, E. (2009). Customer Satisfaction and Complaints: Is There a Relationship?. *Review of Business Research*. Vol:9, No:1, 77-84.
- Hwang, C. L. and Yoon K. (1981). *Multiple Attribute Decision Making: Methods and Applications*. Springer, Berlin, Heidelberg, New York.
- Lee, C. C. and Hu C. (2008). Analyzing Hotel Customers' E-Complaints from an Internet Complaint Forum. *Journal of Travel & Tourism Marketing*, 17:2-3, 167-18.
- Lockyer, T. (2005). The perceived importance of price as one hotel selection dimension. *Tourism Management* 26 (4), pp. 529-537.
- Monjezi, M., Dehghani, H., Singh, T.N. et al. Arab J Geosci (2012). Application of TOPSIS method for selecting the most appropriate blast design. *Arabian Journal of Geosciences*. Vol.5, 1, pp.95-101.
- Olson, D. L. (2004). Comparison of Weights in TOPSIS Models. *Mathematical and Computer Modelling*, Vol. 40, 7-8, pp. 721-727.
- Opricovic, S. and Tzeng, G. (2004). Compromise solution by MCDM methods: A comparative analysis of VIKOR and TOPSIS. *European Journal of Operational Research*. Vol. 156, 2, pp. 445-455.
- Rao, R.V. (2008). *A decision making methodology for material selection using an improved compromise ranking method*. Materials and Design. 29, 10, pp. 1949-1954.
- Sheldon, P. and Park, S.-Y. (2009). *Development of a sustainable wellness destination*. In: Bushell, R. & Sheldon, P.J. (Eds.) Wellness and tourism. Mind, Body, Spirit, Place (pp. 99- 113). New York: Cogniznat Communication.

EFFECTS OF HOTELS' LOCATION AND STARS ON PREFERENCES OF ALTERNATIVE CUSTOMER TYPES: ANTALYA CASE

K. BATU TUNAY *
NİLÜFER V. TOYLAN *

Abstract: In this study, it has been investigated effects of the number of stars and locations of some hotels according to different customer types. In the study findings have been presented obtained from hotels in Antalya that have different location and number of stars. By a picture that is taken from Booking.com in 2015, scores which are evaluated by different traveler groups as families, friends, couples and lonely travelers are compiled. Then the effects of the location and stars of the hotels on this score are analyzed statistically. Non-parametric tests such as Kruskal-Wallis and Mann-Whitney U have been carried out by the sample of 2968 observations. Thus, the differences between groups are determined according to the location and stars of the hotels. According to the conclusion the preferences of customers are varied by the number of stars and the location of the hotels. Some locations such as Antalya city center, Alanya, Belek and Beldibi have been preferred much more than the other locations. Alanya, Antalya city center and some areas such as Beldibi and Belek is preferred more than others. It is also preferred 3 or 4 star hotels relatively to others by almost all customer groups. This issue can be related that hotels offer a reasonable price- benefit balance.

Key Word: *Hotels, location, number of stars, preferences, nonparametrik tests, Antalya*

* Marmara University, Institute of Banking and Insurance, İstanbul
* Kırklareli University, Tourism Faculty, Department of Tourism Management

1. Introduction

Today, the development of technology has changed the purchasing behavior, thus the consumers increasingly started to shop online. This caused the consumers to express their satisfaction or dissatisfaction of goods and services online, following their purchase. Many industries choose the internet as one of the most important type of sales channel. However, travel industry uses internet for online sales channel and online sales in travel industry keep growing (Grau, 2006). Thus the hotel guests make their selection decision according to online reviews. Milan (2007) reveals that a majority of people find online travel websites that affect the choice of tourists. Also online travel websites are more convincing with pictorial interpretation and tips than other aspects of the hotel.

In recent times hotels grow and vary in all aspects in a stepwise fashion. Literature explains that hotels are one of the most important elements constituting to tourism and travel industry. Thus, the growth of the hotels industry can be connected to that fact relatively. In this manner, the rapid expansion of the hotel industry has produced an extremely competitive market. Distribution of resources and strategy of marketing effectively have become important for the survival of the company as well advanced customer loyalty (Lockyer, 2005).

In some studies it has been researched that what kind of hotel characterizations (star, service, location etc.) affect decision of hotel selection of different customer types. Different types of customers may trade off location and service quality for a given budget. Studies on compared to international customers with domestic customers, domestic customers are more informed about the city's transportation system and hotels' locations while international customers are more likely to consider hotels located in more popular or more convenient locations. However, domestic customers may prefer to stay at a hotel with high service (star) rating which is not located at the very heart of the city than to stay at a hotel with low service (star) rating at the city center (Pathak et al. 2010). Similarly in this study, attitude of different types of guests such as families, friends, couples and lonely

travelers are analyzed according to star rating and the location of the hotels.

Significant differences in scores were tested according to location and star rating based on customer preferences. The data set used in the research is taken from Booking.com in 2015, compiled from different traveler groups as families, friends, couples and lonely travelers. Then the effects of the location and stars of the hotels on this score are analyzed statistically. Thus, the differences between groups are determined according to the location and stars of the hotels by the Non-parametric tests such as Kruskal-Wallis and Mann-Whitney U with the 2968 observations on Booking.com.

2. Literature Review

Many scholars try to answer why different quest groups preffer different hotels. They also research any relationship between accommodation selection decisions, price, location, quality and some different factors of the hotels such as number of stars, distance or service quality. This is an important issue for scholars because of hotel preferences of tourists change greatly from a city to an another and also in the same city. In some studies indicate that the room rates decrease as the hotel's distance from the town center increases or star rate decreases according to some results of the scientific research (Bull, 1994) as well as customer characteristics may determine pricing decisions (Hung et.al, 2010).

On the otherwise star rating is traditionally considered one of the most distinctive features of the hotel selection decision. Star rating that put forward the assesment of hotel according to number of stars, also provides guidance on the assessment of the hotel for potential customers (Callan, 1998).

One of the variables affected the preferences of different types of customers/guests has been identified as the location. For example, while domestic customers have more knowledge about local hotels, the city, the environment of the city, transport system, culture and society and have more available hotel options, international customers prefer hotels in more favorable locations (Cezar and Ögüt, 2014: 225).

Ratings offer the same information to both local and international visitors. Both local and foreign tourists prefer lower service and location ratings instead of higher service and location ratings. However, opinions and ratings of customers can specify an expression of personal reviews and opinions and different customers convey different ratings about stars and location of the hotels (Pathak et al. 2010). Hence, the customer rating may have a differential impact on domestic and international customers.

In this study location and star rating are deterministic factors on preferences of hotel guests. Because one location has been chosen in the study and furthermore performance of hotel, quality of service, accomodation price and affiliation are key determinants for star rating in some studies (Wu, 1999; Israeli, 2002).

3. Methodology

3.1. Sample and Data

Data used in the study is collected from hotels in Antalya that have different location and quality. By a picture that is based on Booking.com in 2015, scores are ocured by customer evaluation ratings. The total number of observations is 2968. In the research the scores of the hotels are considered that are rated by families, friends, couples and lonely travelers and travelers for business as dependent variable. On the other hand independent variables are categorical variables such as locations of the hotels in Antalya and number of stars which reflect quality of the hotels respectively. Structure of the data is shown in Table 1.

Table 1. Structure of Independent Categorical Variables

Mevki	Grup	Yıldız	Grup
Alanya	1	1	1
Antalya (Merkez)	2	2	2
Beldibi	3	3	3
Belek	4	4	4
Kemer	5	5	5
Diğer	6		

3.2. Data Analysis

In the analysis of the data (Nonparametric) Kruskal-Wallis and Mann-Whitney tests are used as statistical techniques. Kruskal-Wallis test is used to determine whether medians of the universe of the research between independent groups are equal. It is basically a developed form of Mann-Whitney U test. It is usually used when the assumption of one-way ANOVA are not realized and need to analyze more than two groups. Whereas Mann-Whitney U test is used with the same reasons and used to test differences of medians between two groups.

Mann-Whitney U test is designed in order to analyze two independent groups called as M1 and M2. Null hypothesis expresses that these two groups are equal ($H_0: M1=M2$) however, alternative hypothesis expresses that the groups are not equal ($H_1: M1 \neq M2$). Two tests are analyzed statistically called as U1 and U2 and table value of these tests is compared to decide which hypothesis is acceptable. The calculation process can be summarized as follows: (Sridharan, 2015; Newbold, 2003):

$$U_1 = n_1 \times n_2 + \frac{n_1 \times (n_1 + 1)}{2} - T_1 \quad (1)$$

$$U_2 = n_1 \times n_2 + \frac{n_2 \times (n_2 + 1)}{2} - T_2 \quad (2)$$

At the Equations number (1) and number (2), T1 and T2 represent sum of rank value in the sample additionally n1 and n2 represent number of observations. When sample size is more than 10, it is called the normal distribution for the distribution of data. If Z value, which is calculated as follows, exceeds the table value, H0 is accepted, otherwise H1 is accepted (Newbold, 2003):

$$\mu_u = \frac{n_1 \times n_2}{2} \quad (3)$$

$$\sigma_u^2 = \frac{n_1 \times n_2 \times (n_1 + n_2 + 1)}{12} \quad (4)$$

$$Z = \frac{U - \mu_u}{\sigma_u} \sim N(0,1) \quad (5)$$

The test of Kruskal-Wallis explain that while null hypothesis is equal ($H_0: M_1=M_2=\dots=M_k$) for the groups much more two, alternative hypothesis is equal for the groups. Similarly in the calculation process of Mann-Whitney U test, rank value is given to all observations then these are summed up and T_1, T_2, \dots, T_k statistics are calculated (Neuhauser, 2012; Newbold, 2003).

$$H = \frac{10}{n \times (n+1)} \sum_{i=1}^k \frac{T_i^2}{n_i} - 3 \times (n+1) \quad (6)$$

The equation number (6) fit to chi square distribution. At this equation, k presents number of group, i presents number of observation in group ($i=1,2,\dots,k$), n_i presents number of observation group i and T_i presents sum of rank value in group i . If H value exceeds the chi square distribution, H_0 otherwise H_1 is accepted. The number of observation based on group is requested much more than five to be able to approach the distribution of test value. When significant differences are found between groups,

When significant differences are found, pairwise comparisons must make between groups. Therefore Mann-Whitney U test may be used. However alpha value (α') that is designated important level of the test is divided to current alpha value (α') number of pairwise comparisons and it is determined again. This is called as Bonferroni correction.

3.3. Findings

In the first step of analysis the structure of variables is analyzed. In this context, descriptive statistics of the scores of different customer groups are analyzed. However, test of normality is analyzed. The findings are presented in Table 2 and 3 respectively. When the results are evaluated together, all dependent variables are not distributed normally.

Table 2. Descriptive Statistics

	Minimum	Maximum	Mean	Std. Deviation	Skewness	Kurtosis
Families	0	486	31.7665	61.3861	3.8687	18.4032
Doubles	0	1004	42.2075	97.4095	5.4572	37.1026
Groups of Friends	0	329	15.2665	31.8202	5.1516	34.4975
Solo Travelers	0	470	18.5991	52.5513	6.0343	40.8709
Travelers for Business	0	471	14.3318	51.4917	6.3018	43.2322

Table 3. Normality Tests

	Kolmogorov-Smirnov			Shapiro-Wilk		
	Statistic	df	Sig.	Statistic	Df	Sig.
Families	0.3023	422	0.0000	0.5335	422	0.0000
Doubles	0.3321	422	0.0000	0.4193	422	0.0000
Groups of Friends	0.3153	422	0.0000	0.4633	422	0.0000
Solo Travelers	0.3614	422	0.0000	0.3347	422	0.0000
Travelers for Business	0.3904	422	0.0000	0.2734	422	0.0000

In the second step of the analysis, the significance of differences of groups' mean for independent variables is tested. In this framework one-way ANOVA is used usually if distribution is normal. However, Kruskal- Wallis test is used because of the distribution of the data is not normal and symmetrical. The location of the hotels and number of star are considered as grouping variable. Kruskal-Wallis test is applied separately to dependent variable according to both location and star The results are presented in Table 4. The test results clearly show that there are significant differences between means of groups for two different grouping variable.

Table 4. Kruskal-Wallis Tests

Group – Location	Families	Doubles	Groups of Friends	Solo Travelers	Travelers for Business
Chi-Square	51.242	23.996	22.179	51.867	71.549
Df	5	5	5	5	5

Asymp. Sig.	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Group - Star					
Chi-Square	17.369	13.324	15.368	41.720	49.813
Df	4	4	4	4	4
Asymp. Sig.	0.002	0.010	0.004	0.000	0.000

In the last step in order to determine which groups are different, non-parametric Mann-Whitney U test is applied in case of paired groups. Test results are presented in Table 5. Findings indicate that hotels have overall greater group differences according to location variable. In this framework Alanya has some differences from Antalya center, Belek and the other smaller locations. On the other hand there is significant differences between Antalya center and Kemer. There are significant differences between Beldibi and Belek in support of Beldibi, also among Belek, Kemer and other locations in support of Belek. All types of customer prefer Alanya, Antalya center and Beldibi. However, groups of friends prefer Belek, couples and travelers for business prefer Kemer greater.

In the analysis according to number of stars of the hotels, specific customer groups prefer one star hotels to five star hotels, two star hotels to three and five star hotels, three star hotels to four and five star hotels and four star hotels to five star hotels. In this context it is observed in the study groups of friends and lonely travelers prefer one star hotels to five star hotels. Families and couples prefer two star hotels to three and five star hotels. However, families, couples, lonely travelers and travelers for business prefer greater three star hotels than four and five star hotels. All types of customers prefer four star hotels to five star hotels.

As a result when customer preferences are evaluated overall, location and number of stars of the hotels have to evaluate together. It is understood that all types of customer groups demand much greater three and four star hotels in different locations such as Alanya, Antalya center and Belek. One and five-star hotels are much less desirable than others.

4. Results and Discussion

In the study the correlations investigated between accommodation choices of different customer types with location and number of stars of the hotels in Antalya and around of Antalya. Differences between customer groups according to location and number of stars are analyzed with the non-parametric tests in 2015 with a huge data sample. Then it is investigated that which groups are different with each other and what are the relations between the differences and customer preferences.

According to the findings guest preferences are shaped by location of the hotels. Thus, the locations such as Alanya, Antalya center, Belek and Beldibi are preferred much more than other locations of Antalya. However, grouping according to number of stars that reflects the quality of the hotels and analyzing the differences of these groups, guests choose different star rating according to their characteristics of groups that they belong. Furthermore, the trend is also seen to be higher in the three and four star hotels for all customer types.

Some studies indicate that star ratings effect significant factors for the hotels such as pricing, occupancy rate and quality. The results of the studies suggest that the variation in hotel room rates is explained by the star rating system. However, the impact of corporate affiliation on the pricing of hotels is inconsistent depending on the location of hotels (Lee, 2011) Knowing the attributes and preferences that determine accommodation choice, the features that are perceived as being important in a hotel and the hotel characteristics that lead to higher customer retention enables hotel managers to make optimal hotel development decision. For instance, if a swimming pool is not of interest for the target market served, the money for a huge investment can easily be saved without negative market consequences.

As a result, the research reveals that hotel locations and the number of stars need to be considered together. All customer groups, depending on the location of the hotel prefer three and four-star hotels that offer a fair price benefit balance. These preferences are considered as significant determinants of customer demand in the hotel market

Table 5. Mann-Whitney U Tests

Group Relations	Test Statistics	Group - Location					Group - Star				
		Families	Doubles	Groups of Friends	Solo Travelers	Travelers for Business	Families	Doubles	Groups of Friends	Solo Travelers	Travelers for Business
1 with 2	Z	-2.630	-2.902	-2.544	-3.524	-4.641	-0.149	-0.334	-0.706	-0.334	-0.561
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.009	0.004	0.011	0.000	0.000	0.882	0.738	0.480	0.738	0.575
1 with 3	Z	-1.280	-0.114	-0.305	-0.305	-0.645	-1.283	-1.237	-1.457	-0.406	-0.579
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.201	0.909	0.760	0.760	0.519	0.200	0.216	0.145	0.685	0.563
1 with 4	Z	-6.862	-4.144	-2.398	-3.034	-5.079	-0.669	-0.042	-0.822	-0.474	-0.908
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.000	0.000	0.017	0.002	0.000	0.504	0.966	0.411	0.636	0.364
1 with 5	Z	-0.178	-0.728	-1.296	-0.353	-1.371	-0.248	-1.197	-1.895	-1.636	-1.210
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.858	0.466	0.195	0.724	0.170	0.804	0.231	0.058	0.102	0.226
1 with 6	Z	-4.058	-0.455	-1.377	-3.099	-1.753					
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.000	0.649	0.168	0.002	0.080					
2 with 3	Z	-0.720	-1.967	-1.860	-2.660	-3.414	-1.949	-1.691	-1.444	-0.838	-1.333
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.472	0.049	0.063	0.008	0.001	0.051	0.091	0.149	0.402	0.183
2 with 4	Z	-1.848	-0.313	-1.058	-1.785	-1.280	-1.727	-0.068	-0.559	-0.151	-0.540
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.065	0.754	0.290	0.074	0.201	0.084	0.945	0.576	0.880	0.589
2 with 5	Z	-2.037	-1.924	-1.353	-3.181	-4.490	-0.068	-1.875	-2.444	-3.074	-2.975
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.042	0.054	0.176	0.001	0.000	0.946	0.061	0.015	0.002	0.003
2 with 6	Z	-0.736	-2.865	-3.382	-5.211	-5.796					
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.462	0.004	0.001	0.000	0.000					
3 with 4	Z	-2.706	-2.273	-1.387	-2.160	-3.492	-3.605	-2.251	-1.191	-1.571	-3.148
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.007	0.023	0.165	0.031	0.000	0.000	0.024	0.233	0.116	0.002

Table 5. (Continue)

Group Relations	Test Statistics	Group - Location					Group - Star				
		Families	Doubles	Groups of Friends	Solo Travelers	Travelers for Business	Families	Doubles	Groups of Friends	Solo Travelers	Travelers for Business
3 with 5	Z	-1.001	-0.581	-0.973	-0.096	-0.227	-2.318	-0.093	-1.342	-3.344	-2.568
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.317	0.561	0.331	0.924	0.820	0.020	0.926	0.180	0.001	0.010
3 with 6	Z	-0.393	-0.291	-0.320	-1.202	-0.051					
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.694	0.771	0.749	0.229	0.959					
4 with 5	Z	-5.106	-2.636	-0.904	-2.624	-4.840	-2.858	-3.154	-3.067	-5.887	-6.011
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.000	0.008	0.366	0.009	0.000	0.004	0.002	0.002	0.000	0.000
4 with 6	Z	-4.446	-3.676	-3.383	-5.510	-6.503					
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.000	0.000	0.001	0.000	0.000					
5 with 6	Z	-2.448	-0.461	-2.180	-1.715	-0.292					
	Asymp. Sig. (2-tailed)	0.014	0.645	0.029	0.086	0.770					

References

- Bull, A.O., (1994). Pricing a motel's location. *International Journal of Contemporary Hospitality Management* 6 (6), pp. 10-15.
- Callan, R. (1998). Attributional Analysis of Customer's hotel Selection Criteria by U.K. Grading Scheme Theories. *Journal of Travel Research*, Vol. 36, No. 3, pp. 20-34.
- Cezar, A. and Ögüt, H. (2014). Do domestic and international customers behave alike in online hotel booking?. *Journal of Electronic Commerce Research*. Vol. 15, No. 3, pp.225-240.
- Grau, J. (2006). Online travel sales to boom. Retrieved August 20, 2016, from <http://www.imediaconnection.com>
- Hung, W-T, Shang, J-K, Wang, F-C. (2010). Pricing determinants in the hotel industry: Quantile regression analysis, 29, pp. 378-384.
- Israeli, A. (2002). Star rating and corporate affiliation: their influence on pricing hotel rooms in Israel. *International Journal of Hospitality Management* 21 (4), pp. 405- 424.
- Lee, C. G. (2011). The determinants of hotel room rates: Another visit with Singapore's data. *International Journal of Hospitality Management*, 30, pp.756-758.

- Lockyer, T., 2005. The perceived importance of price as one hotel selection dimension. *Tourism Management* 26 (4), pp. 529-537.
- Milan, R. (2007). Travel reviews – consumers are changing your brand and reputation online. Retrieved August 23, 2016, from <http://www.travelindustrywire.com>.
- Neuhauser, M. (2012). *Nonparametric Statistical Tests: A Computational Approach*. Boca Raton: CRC Press.
- Newbold, P. (2002). *İşletme ve İktisat için İstatistik*. (Çev. Ümit Şenesen). İstanbul: Literatür Yayıncılık.
- Pathak, B., R.S. Garfinkel, R.D. Gopal, R. Venkatesan, and F. Yin. (2010). Empirical Analysis of the Impact of Recommender Systems on Sales. *Journal of Management Information Systems*, Vol. 27, No.2, pp.159-188.
- Sridharan, R. (2015). *Statistics for Research Projects. Lecture Notes – Chapter 5*, MIT.
- Wu, L. (1999). The pricing of a brand name product: franchising in the motel services industry. *Journal of Business Venturing* 14 (1), pp. 87-102.

PUBLIC DEBT, CORRUPTION AND ECONOMIC GROWTH RELATIONSHIP IN OECD COUNTRIES

MEHMET AVCI *

GIZEM MUKIYEN AVCI *

Abstract: Debt is the most important financial instrument after taxation for the public at the present time. Behind economic and fiscal factors, political, social and institutional factors also effect the public debt. Public debt should be used effective for economic growth. In this respect institutional structure is important for using public debt. Specially, it is expected that public debt has a positive impact on economic growth under control of corruption. This study investigates the relationship between public debt and economic growth under control of corruption in 33 OECD countries, using panel estimation approach and annual data over the period of 1996-2013. Results show that public debt has a negative effect on economic growth when excluding control of corruption, however a positive effect on economic growth under control of corruption.

Key Word: *Public debt, growth, corruption, panel data, OECD.*

1. Public Debt and Economic Growth

Public debt is occurred when public expenditures exceed public revenues. And this situation become common in current time specially after the Keynesian paradigm. Government size, shows government

* Assistant Prof, Bulent Ecevit University, Turkey,
[mehmetavci@beun.edu.tr]

* Research Assitant, Bulent Ecevit University, Turkey,
[gmavci@beun.edu.tr]



share of national economy, is also an important factor in the increase of public debt. On the other hand besides economic, fiscal, social and political factors institutional factors such as control of corruption are effect the size of public debt. Specially control of corruption has a vital importance for using the public fund in terms of efficiency.

Factors generally effect the size of public debt are; financing extraordinary expenses, financing public investments, financing budget deficits, debt financing, using as a fiscal policy instrument. And also an inefficient using public funds can effect the size of government which is directly related with public debt.

While public debt can stimulate aggregate demand and have a positive impact on economic growth in the short run, it crowds out private investment and deteriorates economic performance in the long run (Elmendorf and Mankiw, 1998). The long run impact generally occurs by raising long term interest rates which crowd out investment. A key issue relates to the extent to which large public debts are likely to have an adverse effect on capital accumulation, as well as productivity, and reduce economic growth. This can occur through a variety of channels including higher long-term interest rates, possibly higher future distortionary taxation, higher inflation, greater uncertainty and vulnerability to crises (Kumar and Woo, 2010).

There are two theories explaining the relationship public debt and economic growth. One of them is traditional view and the other one is Ricardian Equivalence view.

Traditional view of public debt, public borrowing reduces national savings and crowds out capital accumulation, close to neoclassical paradigm. So according to traditional view public debt has a negative impact on economic growth. And the other view on public debt is Ricardian Equivalence which assumes public debt doesn't influence national saving and capital accumulation. Ricardian Equivalence view claims that public debt doesn't effect economic growth because of the model's assumptions such as forward looking consumer assumption where consumers base on their spending not only their current income but also their expected future income. On the further side of these relationships there is a one more view on this relationship. The relationship between public debt and economic growth is nonlinear

and concave (Clements et al. 2003; Kumar and Woo, 2010; Reinhart and Rogoff, 2010). This implies that public debt can either have a positive or negative effect on economic growth (Mencinger et al. 2014). In this context the level of public debt is important instrument to show magnitude of the impact. Economic theory suggests that reasonable levels of borrowing for developing country are likely to enhance economic growth as it accelerates the pace of development infrastructure (Peng Lee and Ling Ng, 2015).

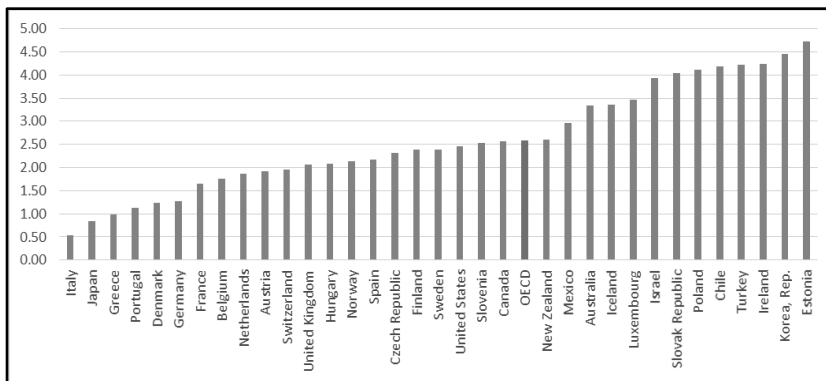
According to Ahlborn and Schweickert (2015) public debt levels have steadily increased over the past decades and reached unprecedented levels, especially in rich OECD countries. This statement also support the popular view of last years that public debt problem not only a problem for developing countries but also is a problem for developed countries. 2009 financial crisis shows that public debt not also a problem for developing countries but also for developed countries (Cecchetti et al., 2011). After 2009 financial crisis a lot of rich country applied expansionary fiscal policy that led to sharp increase in public debt level.

2. Public Debt Trend in OECD Countries

It is useful behaviour to investigate the trend of data related with public debt in OECD countries. In this context development of gdp, public revenue and expenditures, public debt data is analysed in this part.

Figure 1 shows average growth rates for OECD countries for period 1996-2013.

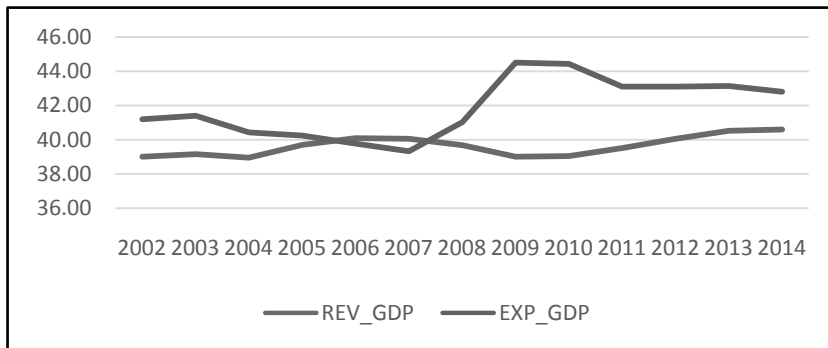
Figure 1: Average Growth Rates in OECD (1996-2013)



As seen in the Figure 1, average GDP of OECD for period of 1996-2013 is approximately 2.5%. 13 countries above this average while 21 countries are under this average. Estonia has the best average GDP growth with 4.5%. Italy has the worst average GDP growth with 0.50%. Especially it can be claimed that 2009 Financial Crisis has a negative impact on decreasing the GDP growth.

The other important indicators related with public debt are public revenue and public expenditure. Figure 2 shows the trend of these indicators on OECD for period of 2002-2014.

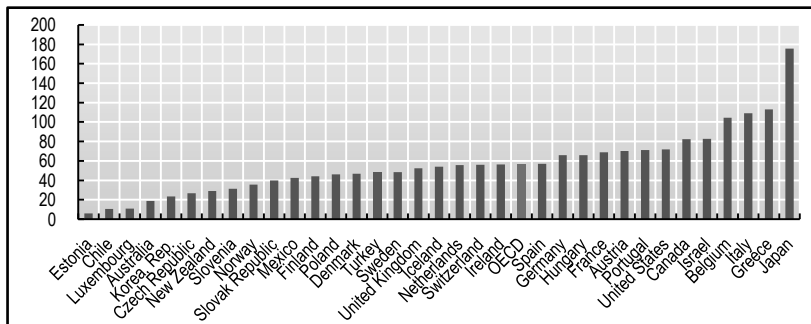
Figure 2: Public Revenue and Public Expenditure Development for OECD Countries



As shown on the Figure 2 when compare the growth rates, public expenditure over public revenues in recent years. Especially public expenditures has gained important upward trend by 2009 Financial Crisis. In spite of that public revenues initially decreasing and then increasing but it still can't catch the public expenditure level. Under this circumstance public debt level will increase.

Finally Figure 3 shows public debt GDP ratios for OECD countries for period 1996-2013.

Figure 3: Public Debt/GDP Ratios for OECD Countries (Average 1996-2013)



Average ratio for OECD countries approximately 60%. 13 countries above that average while 21 countries under that average. Especially Japan has an important public debt level. In that period the lowest average ratio belongs to Estonia. Figure 3 confirms that public debt is a problem not only for developing countries but also for developed countries.

3. Methodology of The Study

JSHS | 305

3.1. Method

In this study the impact of public debt on economic growth taking account of control of corruption is investigated. Basic hypothesis of this study is the impact of public debt on economic growth is more positive in lower corrupted countries than higher ones. There is an ambiguous relationship with public debt and economic growth. In this context, it is expected that if the relationship is negative this effect will be smaller in lower corrupted countries, but if the relationship is positive this effect will be bigger in lower corrupted countries.

In the study panel data analysis is used and the model is predicted by fixed effect. Firstly cross section independence is investigated in series and model by Pesaran CD test and then suitable unitroot test is applied and finally series are made stationary. According to Hausman Test results model should be predicted by fixed effect. Furthermore deviations from model assumptions are robusted by Driscoll-Kraay.

The model is;

$$GDP_{it} = \beta + \beta_1 DEBT_{it} + \beta_2 DEBT_COR_{it} + \beta_3 INVEST_{it} + \beta_4 POP_{it} + \beta_5 INF_{it} + \beta_6 OPEN_{it} + \beta_7 UNE_{it} + \alpha_i + \lambda_t + \varepsilon_{it}$$

($i=1, \dots, n$; $t=1 \dots t$)

Variables used in the study is explained in Table 1.

Table 1: Variables Used in The Study

Variable	Definition	Source
GDP	GDP growth rate	WDI
debt	Public Debt/GDP	IMF
debt_cor	Interaction of debt and corruption	IMF-WB
invest	Total investment/GDP	IMF
pop	Growth rate of population	WDI
inf	Growth rate of inflation	WDI
open	Openness (X+M/GDP)	WDI
une	Unemployment rate	IMF

Dependent variable in the model is GDP while independent variables are debt, debt_cor, invest, pop, inf, open and une. Specially debt and debt_cor variables are important for testing the basic hypothesis of the study.

Variables used in the study belong to 34¹ OECD countries for period of 1996-2013.

¹ Countries: Australia, Austria, Belgium, Canada, Chile, Czech Republic, Denmark, Estonia, Finland, France, Germany, Greece, Hungary, Iceland, Ireland, Israel, Italy, Japan, Korea Rep., Luxembourg, Mexico, Netherlands, New Zealand, Norway, Poland, Portugal, Slovak Republic, Slovenia, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland, Turkey, United Kingdom, United States

3.2. Findings

Table 2 shows descriptive statistics about variables.

Table 2: Descriptive Statistics

Variables	Observation	Mean	Standart Error	Minimum	Maximum
<i>GDP</i>	612	2.582	3.067	-14.737	11.735
DEBT	612	56.488	36.535	3.646	242.594
DEBT_COR	612	72.540	61.331	-52.549	399.554
INVEST	612	23.422	4.151	11.766	39.681
POP	612	0.637	0.665	-1.691	2.890
INF	612	3.905	7.766	-4.479	85.733
OPEN	612	87.018	51.290	18.756	371.439
UNE	612	7.459	3.850	11.766	39.681

JSHS|307

For 34 OECD countries; average growth rate of GDP is 2.5% and average public debt of GDP is 56%. On the other side minimum GDP is -14% and maximum GDP is 11% while minimum public debt of GDP is 3.6% and maximum public debt of GDP is 242% in the period of 1996-2013 for 34 OECD countries. This shows that some countries have an important public debt level.

Table 3 shows cross section independences for variables and model.

Table 3: Pesaran CD Test Results

Değişken	CD Test	P-value
GDP	57.88	0.000
DEBT	28.05	0.000
DEBT_COR	9.23	0.000

INF	28.49	0.000
OPEN	58.28	0.000
INVEST	25.54	0.000
UNE	14.67	0.000
POP	1.34	0.180
MODEL	18.84	0.000

According to CD test results all variables have cross sectional dependence except POP variable. Second generation unit root tests are suitable for investigating unit roots because of taking account of cross section dependence. In this context unit root test results are shown in Table 4.

Table 4: Unit Root Test Results (CADF)

Variable	t-bar	cv10	cv5	cv1	Z(t-bar)	P-value
GDP	-2.262	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-3.041	0.001*
DEBT	-1.371	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	2.051	0.980
DEBT_COR	-1.103	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	3.586	1.000
INF	-2.484	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-4.312	0.000*
OPEN	-1.582	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	0.849	0.802
INVEST	-1.723	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	0.043	0.517
UNE	-1.893	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-0.931	0.176
POP	-1.822	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-0.527	0.299
ΔDEBT	-2.110	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-2.172	0.015**
ΔCOR	-2.474	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-4.256	0.000*
ΔDEBT_COR	-2.529	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-4.570	0.000*

Δ OPEN	-2.328	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-3.417	0.000*
Δ INVEST	-2.765	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-5.916	0.000*
Δ UNE	-2.002	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-1.556	0.060***
Δ POP	-2.876	-2.030	-2.110	-2.250	-6.550	0.000*

*%1; **%5; ***%10

According to results GDP and INF variables are I(0) while other variables are I(1). Non-stationary series are made stationary by taking the first differences. After making series stationary the model becomes predicted. Table 5 shows the model prediction results.

Table 5: Model Prediction Findings

Independent Variables	Coefficient	P-value
DEBT	-0.187	0.000*
DEBT_COR	0.440	0.000*
INF	0.012	0.426
OPEN	0.074	0.006*
INVEST	0.439	0.000*
POP	0.361	0.172
UNE	-0.814	0.000*
_CONS	2.399	0.000*
<i>R</i> ²	<i>0.683</i>	
<i>F(7,16)</i>	<i>483.06</i>	<i>0.000</i>
<i>Hausman</i>	<i>25.97</i>	<i>0.000</i>
<i>Modified Wald Test</i>	<i>1317.25</i>	<i>0.000</i>
<i>Bhargava et al. D-W Test</i>	<i>1.506204</i>	

<i>Baltagi-Wu LBI Test</i>	1.6098194	
<i>Pesaran's test</i>	18.482	0.0000
<i>Number of observation</i>	578	

*%1; **%5; ***%10

The impact of public debt on economic growth is negative and significant. This result supports the traditional view. In this context public debt has a negative effect on economic growth. However the coefficient of interaction term (public debt and corruption) is positive and significant. According to this result, when taking under control of corruption public debt has a positive effect on economic growth. So the basic hypothesis of the study is confirmed with this finding. On the other statement, the impact of public debt on economic growth becomes more positive in the lower corrupted countries.

Total investment, openness and unemployment variables also significant. First two of them have positive coefficient and the third one of them has a negative coefficient. On the other hand inflation and population variables are insignificant.

4. Conclusion

There are two different views of public debt and economic growth relationship in the literature. First of them is traditional view and second of them is Ricardian Equivalence view. Traditional view claims that public debt has a negative effect on economic growth. In this study also similar result is found. However, when taking under control of corruption, is an important indicator of institutional quality, the relationship between public debt and economic growth gains more positive situation. In this context, a recovery in the institutional quality arises more positive result with regard to the impact of public debt on economic growth. On the other hand it is also important using aims and ways of public debt. An efficient using and sustainability characteristics of public debt determine the positive or negative impact of public debt on economic growth. At this point control of corruption gains an important. The mechanisms to take under control of corruption such as fiscal transparency, accountability should be developed for using public resources efficient. In this context legal regu-

lations on fiscal transparency and accountability, technical infrastructure and social consciousness to monitor public activities and decisions should be built. If these developments are provided public debt, is one kind of public resources, can be used efficiently and contribute positive impact on economic growth.

References

- Ahlborn, M. and Schweickert, R., 2015. Public Debt and Economic Growth-Economic Systems Matter. *Forschungspapiere Research Papers*, No 2015/02.
- Cecchetti, S.G., Mohanty, M. S. and Zampolli, F., 2011. The Real Effects of Debt. *BIS Working Papers No. 352*, Basel: Bank for International Settlements.
- Clements, B., Bhattacharya, R. and Nguyen, T.Q., 2003. External Debt, Public Investment and Growth in Low-income Countries. *IMF Working Paper 03/249*, Washington, DC: IMF.
- Elmendorf, D.W. and Mankiw G.N., 1998. Government Debt. *NBER Working Paper 6470*, Cambridge, MA: National Bureau of Economic Research.
- Kumar, M.S. and Woo, J., 2010. Public Debt and Growth. *IMF Working Paper 10/174*, Washington, DC: IMF.
- Mencinger J., Aristovnik A. and Verbič M.,2014. The Impact of Growing Public Debt on Economic Growth in the European Union. *Amfiteatru Economic*, 35, pp. 403-414.
- Peng Lee, S. and Ling Ng, Y.,2015. Public Debt and Economic Growth in Malaysia. *Asian Economic and Financial Review*, 5(1), pp. 119-126.
- Reinhart, C.M. and Rogoff, K.S., 2010. Growth in a Time of Debt. *American Economic Review*, 100(2), pp. 573-578.

CHANGING WELFARE REGIME OF TURKEY AFTER THE GLOBAL ECONOMIC CRISIS

MUSTAFA AYKAÇ *
İSKENDER GÜMÜŞ *

Abstract: Welfare states have similarities, but also certain distinctions. As a matter of fact, every state has an original culture, history and politic structure. While there is little difference between some welfare states, there is so much difference in certain states that they are qualified different. Therefore, every welfare regime has little or great difference when compared to others. The studies on welfare state mostly conclude that the welfare regime in Turkey is similar to the welfare regime of Southern European Welfare Regime, but it is distinguished for its certain characteristics. The fact that Turkish welfare regime is still a residual welfare regime, attaches central importance to the concept of family and is in the beginning of its development are some of Turkey's characteristics. On the other hand, the fact that there is a high level of black economy in Turkey is stands as one of the biggest obstacles against development of welfare regime in Turkey. This study is focused on certain changes that took place in Turkey's welfare regime after the global crisis. Social expenditure that increased by more than 100 in last 15 years, the changes in the family structure, the demographic transformation and the healthcare reform may be seen as the fundamental parameters of the reconstruction of Turkish welfare regime.

Key Word: *Turkish welfare regime, global economic crisis, demographic transformation, healthcare reform*

* Kırklareli University

* Kırklareli University, Faculty of Economic and Administrative Sciences



ICSSH2016
INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES

1. Introduction

Turkey's social protection regime has been facing new challenges since the end of 1990's. This study aims to analyze the reform and reconstruction process that started at the end of 1990's and left its marks in 2000's, being an important threshold for institutionalization of Turkish welfare regime.

Higher public expenditure, which shaped the world economy after the Second World War, had a key role in allowing the governments to provide full employment. However, the petrol shocks that took place at the beginning of 1970's and the stagflation that came along it, caused strong critics against Keynesian economic policies, what are based on governmental intervention. By the second half of the 1970's, the world economy started to shift to a liberal axis that is focused on the market mechanism. Starting from 1980's, governments' social protection regimes faced serious changes to that end, so many states had to reform their social protection systems.

Being a conjunctural crisis since the beginning of 1990's, Turkish economy was affected adversely from the income distribution as a result of high inflation, high unemployment and low growth rates, so the poverty increased rapidly. In that period, problems suffered by Turkey's social protection system started to get deeper. The economy policies followed to get out of the economic crises directly affected, among others, the social protection system. Reforms that started with restructuring in social security and retirement system was continued with the healthcare system. Beginning from the 2000's, Turkey's economy experienced an economic revival period, which was followed by institutionalization of social protection regime and a remarkable enhancement in social expenditure as a way of struggle against poverty. The global crisis, which started in the middle of 2009 and had impact on almost every country's economy in 2009, was also effective in Turkey, where unemployment rates rose rapidly. Public policies practiced for diminishing the effects of the crisis, caused increase of the social expenditure, as well.

With respect to Turkey's welfare regime, the fact that family solidarity has a leading role in the social protection system and that it has a corporatist structure, is identified with the Southern European coun-

tries. Though one can claim Turkey's welfare regime has some similarities with the Southern Europe welfare regime, one would see Turkey's welfare regime is one of a kind and is different from the Southern European welfare regimes, with a view to the family structure, demographic situation and the amount of social expenditure. This study defines the welfare regime by present typologies, first. Then, it handles the Situation in Turkish welfare regime before the 2000's, so that the reform period is reviewed in view of the historical process. The third part discusses in what way Turkey's welfare regime changed after the global economic crisis, considering the welfare regime arguments.

2. Welfare regime: conceptual framework and classification

Welfare states have both similarities and differences. It is a result of the fact that every state has its own culture, historical and political structure. This shows that every state has, more or less, a *different* understanding of welfare regime. It can be said that a welfare regime is an entirety of the social protection produced by the institutions of welfare (family, state, market and non-governmental organizations).

JSHS|315

Classifications of welfare regimes may be dated back to the works of Wilensky and Lebaux (1958). However, welfare regime classifications became popular with Esping-Andersen's work titled *The Three Worlds of Welfare Capitalism*. In that work, Esping-Andersen classified the welfare regimes into three: Liberal (USA, Switzerland, Japan, Canada, Australia), Institutional/Conservative (Germany, France, Italy, Austria, Belgium) and Social Democrat (Sweden, Norway, Denmark, Finland, Netherlands) (Esping-Andersen, 1990).

In this classification, Esping-Andersen included only Italy among the Mediterranean counties and characterized Italy as a Conservative Welfare Regime (Esping-Andersen, 1990). The work of Esping-Andersen was met with great attention in the academic community and became the most argues, cited and criticized study in the field of comparative welfare state (Leibfried ve Mau, 2008; Kautto, 2002; Arts ve Gelissen, 2002). Many different classifications were suggested based on the classification of Esping-Andersen. One of the earliest alternatives belonged to Stephan Leibfried. According to Leibfried'a (1992), Southern European countries form a separate welfare state

regime under the name *Latin Rim*. It includes Spain, Portugal and Greece, and to a certain extent, Italy and France. Like Leibfried, Ferrera (1996) also claimed the Southern European countries have a different welfare regime and he named it Southern European Model. According to Ferrera, as the members of this class, Greece, Italy, Portugal and Spain have certain typical characteristics. On the other hand, Gough (1996) included Turkey in this class of countries.

Labor markets of these countries are radically different from the Continental European Welfare Regime and has a strong agricultural tendency. Unlike the Scandinavian countries, these countries have no tradition of full employment (Kesgin, 2013). Southern European countries try to catch up with their northern neighbors in welfare state practice and family and church continue to have a key role in the social aids (Pierson, 1998). Despite the strong emphases of welfare state made in constitutions of these countries, the wording almost fails to be put into the practice. This makes the Southern European welfare states a regime of institutional promises (Leibfried, 1992).

Income substitution system has a seriously fragmental and broken nature in these countries. This fact causes a significant polarization. For instance, the retirement salaries may decrease from a high level to a negligible level. On the other hand, these countries separated from the conservative tradition in healthcare services and established a healthcare system, which is universal, in some aspect (Ferrera, 1996).

3. Building up the welfare regime in Turkey and the reform period

Earliest regulations for social protection system in Turkey were made in 1945. Workers' Insurances Agency was founded in 1946 and Retirement Fund was founded in 1949. The most outstanding development in improvement of social protection system in Turkey was under Constitution of 1961. The concept of 'social state' was introduced to the constitution by Constitution of 1961. The approach was maintained under the Constitution of 1982.

After Constitution of 1961, which provides for the social security as a constitutional rights, entered into force, many laws that concern the workers' social security and entered into force earlier, were reviewed and they were merged as "Social Insurances Law" no. 506 dated July 17, 1964. As this law entered into force by March 1, 1965, Workers' Insurances Agency was renamed as "Social Insurances Agency". In 1971, Retirement Fund for Self-Employed was founded, and, in 1983, important regulations were made concerning social security of agricultural workers.

The first wave of restructuring of social security system, starting in 1990's in Turkey, was establishment of unemployment insurance under law no. 4447, which entered force in 1999 and several changes in certain parameters like enhancement of retirement age. Though the 1999 reform was a result of the neo-liberal policies, it may be considered a return to the social state approach and a positive development for social security to become a common practice (Gümüþ, 2012). On the other hand, the attempt of 2000 for a new arrangement of social security organizations, through decree-laws, as a second phase of the restructuring failed as a result of the Constitutional Court's cancellation decision (TÜSİAD, 2004).

JSHS|317

The first period of reform also anticipated a new regulation for individual retirement system. The regulation that allowed the use of individual savings in compliance with multitude of the social security systems and based on voluntary contribution was under "Individual Retirement Savings and Investment System Law" no. 4632 that was issued in 2001 (Gümüþ, 2012).

Becoming the party in power in November 2002, Justice and Development Party, considering insufficiency of the 1999 reform, projected a new social protection model, containing fundamental changes in the system, as a solution to the current problems of the social protection system (Gümüþ, 2012). This model, whose main objective was providing a fair, available and financially sustainable social protection system that aims unity of norms and standards and a more efficient protection against poverty, was formed of 4 main components, basically. The first of these components is a plan for creating a General Health Insurance than finances provision of equi-

table, equal, protective, curative and high quality healthcare service to whole nation. The second is a plan for creating an exclusive retirement insurance regime, where short and long term insurance branches are involved aside from healthcare. The third component is a plan to create a system, based on objective benefit criteria and accessible by anyone in need, by combining the premium-free payments and social aids. The fourth and the last component is a plan of creating a new institutional structure that will allow provision of the services, relating to aforementioned three main functions, in a contemporary, efficient way that makes citizens' daily life easier (SGK, 2007).

In accordance with the projection, Social Insurances Agency, TR General Directorate of Retirement Fund and Directorate of Self-Employed Social Fund were merged under the name "Social Security Institution" under law no. 5502 on May 20, 2006. In this way, it was intended to correct the Turkish social security system and render it more efficient, to balance the rights and duties of the insured, so that the actuarial balance is provided and, as a result of all, to have a stable and sustainable social security system (Gümüő, 2012).

As a part of the reform, general health insurance was formed under "Social Insurances and General Health Insurance Law" no. 5510 on May 31, 2006, in parallel with the merging of different social security organizations as Social Security Institution (SGK). It was agreed to enter the law into practice by January 1, 2007. However, upon Constitutional Court's decision for cancellation of several articles of the mentioned law, it was amended and law no. 5510 could barely enter into force by October 1, 2008. Though the social protection policies' part concerning the premium-free regime was planned as a part of Social Security Institution, no regulation has been made on social aids and social services for a long time. Finally, all social services and aid organizations were merged as one entity upon establishment of the Ministry of Family and Social Policies in 2011.

In social protection regime reform period, transformation of Turkey's healthcare system started with take-over by Ministry of Health, of the hospital that were affiliated to Social Insurances Agency, by 2005. In addition, as a part of universalization of healthcare services, Family

Physician Practice was started in the same period and represented an important step towards transmission to General Health Insurance. This allowed the whole nation to access healthcare services under General Healthcare Insurance with law no. 5510, whereas access to healthcare services used to be dependent on the employment situation of the individual citizen of Turkey, before (Gümüş, 2012).

4. Turkey's welfare regime after the global crisis

Turkey's welfare regime is unique. Though it resembles, most closely, with the Southern European welfare regime (Grütjen, 2007; Gough, 1996; Buğra ve Keyder, 2003), its similarities are much less than its differences. One of the essential criteria in comparison and classification of the welfare states is the countries' level of social expenditure. Therefore, comparing Turkey with other welfare regimes in respect of social expenditure level would help clarification of the outlines of the matter.

4.1. Increase in social expenditures

Turkey's welfare regime is far behind other welfare regimes, including Southern European welfare regimes, in terms of the social expenditure level. While Social Democrat and Conservative welfare regimes' social expenditure level as around 24-25% in 2000's, the same figure was around 17% for the Liberal welfare regimes. For Southern European welfare regimes, the same figure was around 13% at the beginning of 1980's and it increased to 22-23% in 2000's. It is seen that the global economic crisis was followed by an increase, though small, in terms of social expenditure.

JSHS|319

Table 2. Southern European Welfare Regimes' Social Expenditure Percentage in GDP

Southern Europe	2000	2005	2006	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014
Greece	19.1	20.9	21.2	21.3	22.2	24.4	24.2	25.7	26.1	24.3	24.0
Italy	23.2	24.9	25.0	24.8	25.8	27.8	27.7	27.5	28.1	28.7	28.6
Portugal	18.8	22.9	22.9	22.5	22.8	25.3	25.2	24.8	25.2	25.8	25.2
Spain	20.4	21.4	21.4	21.5	22.8	26.1	26.7	26.8	27.1	27.3	26.8
Turkey	9.8	9.9	10.0	10.5	11.1	13.2	12.6	12.2	12.3	12.5	14.3

Source: OECD (2016a), Social Expenditure Database; TÜİK (2015), Sosyal Koruma İstatistikleri.

Despite the fact that Turkey has been increasing its social expenditure level since 1980's, it could barely reach to level of 9-10% by 2000's, which is quite below the rates of Southern European welfare regimes of the time. So, Turkey is quite distinguishable from South European welfare regime countries in terms of social expenditure level. Therefore, Turkey appears to be quite a backward welfare regime with respect to its social expenditure level. After the global economic crisis of 2008, Turkey's social expenditure percentage in GDP followed a turbulent course and decreased in 2010, when the effects of the crises was perceived in the heaviest sense, however it started in raise afterwards and reached 14.3 by 2014.

4.2. Demographic developments and change in family structure

Turkey experiences a rapid demographic transformation and it is thought that it will affect the welfare regime significantly. One of the data that one can best observe the demographic change is fertility rate per woman. This figure was 3.7 in 1990 in Turkey and decreased to 2.14 by 2015. In parallel, median age in Turkey was 22.2 in 1990 and it increased to 31 by 2015 (TÜİK, 2016a).

Average household population in Turkey has a decreasing tendency, too. While average household population was 5.05 in 1990, it decreased to 4.5 in 2000, 3.9 in 2010 and 3.6 in 2014 (TÜİK, 2016a). As seen, there is an important demographic transformation experienced by Turkey and it will have many social and economic consequences. Turkish welfare regime must transform itself according to the changing demographic conditions. On the other hand, the current demographic transformation renders Turkey's social structure gradually closer to social structure of the Continental Europe and Southern European countries, but Turkey's social structure is yet quite different from them. The facts that average household population gets smaller, the number of families with one parent increases and the median age rises clearly show that the cost of social protection regime will increase (Eurostat, 2016).

With a view to Turkey's social structure, one can easily see that the smallest constituent of the society is family. Indeed, family holds an important place in Turkey's social structure and intra-family solidarity is quite strong in Turkey. Though Turkey currently experiences a demographic transformation, family structure in Turkey appears to be very different from other developed countries, including South European welfare regime countries. For instance, rate of fertility per woman, as one of the basic dynamics regarding family structure, is 2.17 in Turkey by 2014. The same figure is 1.30 for Greece, 1.32 for Spain, 1.23 for Portugal and 1.37 for Italy, each being a Southern European welfare regime country. Therefore, it is evident that fertility rate in Turkey is quite above that of the developed countries (Eurostat, 2016).

One of the key factors in a society is the youth rate. Turkey's median age is 31 by 2015, which shows that it has quite young a population when compared with other Southern European countries. Turkey is distinguished from those countries also in terms of family size, which is another major indicator of family structure (TÜİK, 2016b). By 2014, average number of people living in a family is 3.6, which is significantly greater than average household in European countries and even Southern European countries. This shows that inter-family solidarity and togetherness is still important in an average Turkish family.¹ A similar situation can be observed in the fact that number of one-parent or one-person families is much less in Turkey when compared to other Southern European countries.²

JSHS|321

As seen, Turkey's family structure is quite different than OECD countries and Southern European countries (OECD, 2016b). Family, traditionally holds an important place in Continental European countries and Southern Mediterranean countries; existence of family is more or less observed in welfare regimes of these countries. Nevertheless, it is seen that classic family structure is quite dissolved in these countries and only a little more than the half of the society lives as a member of a family, in its classic sense. However, Turkey is yet a country, where family holds a very important place and vast majority of the

¹ For detailed statistics on EU countries, see (Eurostat, 2015).

² For detailed statistics on this subject, see (OECD, 2016b).

people live as a member of a family, in the classic sense; this distinguishes Turkey clearly from other countries.

Another characteristic of Turkish family structure is the fact that women's employment participation rate is quite lower than other European countries and majority of women's occupation is domestic works. Though women's employment participation rate has an increasing tendency, it is very low when compared to the developed countries.³ Therefore, it can be said that family, as the fundamental constituent of the Turkish society, is the reason for designing Turkish welfare regime based on family.

4.3. Level of decommodification in Turkey's welfare regime and clientelist policies

From a viewpoint of Esping-Andersen's (1990) *Decommodification* criteria, it can be said that Turkey's welfare regime has a very low level of decommodification. According to such criteria, retirement fee in Turkey's welfare regime requires payment of retirement contributions and working for a certain period of time. Unemployment salary, which entered into force by 2000, requires payment of contributions for 600 days during the preceding 3 years. Likewise, benefitting the health insurance requires payment of the contributions. On the other hand, income substitution in Turkey's welfare regime is considerably low. It can be said that social state practices, such as retirement salary, unemployment salary or old-age pension are pretty far from offering a certain level of welfare to its beneficiaries. That's why Turkey's welfare regime requires a series of rules for making the social benefits available and, additionally, social protection degree of these benefits is rather low. This shows that Turkey's welfare regime's level of decommodification is very low (Grütjen, 2007).

Clientelist approach is common in Turkey, just like the Southern European countries. Disengagement with agriculture, which took place from the beginning of 1950's, was followed by an accelerating migration from rural to urban areas. The fact that urban areas had insufficient to host the people coming from the rural areas created a special type of residence called shanty housing. Illegality of the

³ For detailed statistics on this subject, see (World Bank, 2015)

shanty houses and their deficiency of proper infrastructure were great problems for the migrants. As a Clientelist approach, the governments promised and then granted legal land titles to the shanty houses and provided infrastructure services, such as road, sewer system, electricity, to the shanty housing areas. This policy created a deep relationship based on mutual interest between the governments of the time and the citizens (Kesgin, 2012).

Another Clientelist approach was seen in the social security system. A law that entered into force in 1992 repealed the statutory retirement age (Gümüş, 2012). This act caused big problems with actuarial balances. However, the recent reform that was made in the social security system shows that the Clientelist approach on this matter is adopted no more.

5. Conclusion

Though Turkey's welfare regime has some similarities with the Southern European welfare regime, it can be said that it is, in essence, different from the Southern European welfare regime. The greatest similarity between Turkey's welfare regime and the Southern European welfare regime is the fact that families have a central role in both of them. According to this sense, the state considers the family the smallest unit of the society, provides social protection through the husband, being the family's head and tries to intervene in case the head of the family dies. Accordingly, Turkey's welfare regime is focused on the conception of family, just like other Southern European countries.

Still, there are some major differences between Turkey's family structure and Southern European countries' family structure. Additionally, Southern European countries have more in common in terms of family structure, with other welfare regime countries rather than Turkey. For instance, Turkey's average household size is considerably higher than other European countries and the rate of families with one parent and one-person families is quite lower. Whereas, Southern European welfare countries' such family indicators and other data are more similar to those of other welfare regime countries, by which Turkey is distinguished. This fact decreases the expected level of similarities between Turkey's welfare regime and the Southern European welfare regime in terms of being family-focused systems.

Reform of 2008 caused major changes in Turkey's healthcare system and expanded the universality of the system. However, black economy that is still at too high levels in Turkey, decreases the actual level of the universality, which would otherwise be quite high.

Apparently, the most outstanding difference between Turkey's welfare regime and Southern European welfare regime is the social expenditure level. Though the level of social expenditure increased in Turkey's welfare regime in recent years, it still has not reached even the half of the social expenditure level of Southern European welfare regime. In this respect, Southern European countries are similar to other welfare regime countries rather than Turkey. Turkey's welfare regime looks like a considerably backward welfare regime in terms of the social expenditure level.

References

- Arts, W., and Gelissen, J. (2002). "Three worlds of welfare capitalism or more? A state of the art report". *Journal of European Social Policy*, 12 (2), 137-158.
- Buğra, A. ve Keyder, A. (2003). *New poverty and the changing welfare regime of Turkey*. UNDP Project Report.
- Esping-Andersen, G. (1990). *The three worlds of welfare capitalism*. UK: Polity Press.
- Eurostat (2015). *Eurostat regional yearbook 2015*, Statistical Books, Luxembourg.
- Eurostat (2016). *The EU in the world*, Statistical Books, Luxembourg.
- Ferrera, M. (1996). "The 'Southern' model of welfare in social Europe." *Journal of European Social Policy*, 6 (1), 17-37.
- Gough, I. (1996). "Social Assistance in Southern Europe," *Southern European Society & Politics*, (1) 1, pp.1-23
- Grütjen, D. (2007). *Social security in Turkey: An example of the Southern model? The role of state, market, and the family in welfare provision*, (7) 1, Berlin: Netzwerk Türkei Working Paper No. 1.
- Gümüş, İ. (2012). *Devlet müdahalesi ve piyasalaşma kısılacında refah devleti: Türkiye'de sosyal güvenlik reformu*, Doktora Tezi: İstanbul: Marmara Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü.
- Kautto, M. (2002). Investing in services in West European welfare states. *Journal of European Social Policy*, 12 (1), 53-65.

- Kesgin, B. (2012), "Sosyal politikanın en önemli kurumu: Aile ve Sosyal Politikalar Bakanlığı", *TODAY İnsan Hakları Yılı*, (30), s. 41-54.
- Kesgin, B. (2013). *Kamu sosyal politikalarında sosyal yardım*. İstanbul: Açılım Kitap.
- Leibfried, S. (1992). "Towards a European welfare state? On integrating poverty regimes into the European community". In Z. Ferge & J. E. Kolberg (Eds.), *Social policy in a changing Europe* (pp. 245-279). Frankfurt/Main: Campus Verlag.
- Leibfried, S., and Mau, S. (2008). "Introduction". In S. Leibfried & S. Mau (Eds.), *Welfare states: Construction, deconstruction, reconstruction* (Vol. I). London: Edward Elgar Publishing Limited.
- OECD (2016a). "Social expenditure database", <https://www.oecd.org/social/expenditure.htm> , 31/07/2016.
- OECD (2016b). "OECD family database". <http://www.oecd.org/els/family/database.htm> , 31/07/2016.
- Pierson, C. (1998). *Contemporary challenges to welfare state development*. *Political Studies*, 46, 777-794.
- SGK (2007). *Sosyal güvenlik reformu: Uygulama öncesi yeni yaklaşım*, Ankara: SGK Yayınları.
- TÜİK (2015). "Sosyal koruma istatistikleri", http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreTablo.do?alt_id=1040 31/07/2016.
- TÜİK (2016a). "Doğum istatistikleri, 2015". <http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=21514> , 31/07/2016.
- TÜİK (2016b). "Adrese dayalı nüfus kayıt sistemi sonuçları, 2015". <http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=21507> , 31/07/2016.
- TÜİK (2016c). "İstatistiklerle aile, 2015". <http://www.tuik.gov.tr/PreHaberBultenleri.do?id=21523> , 31/07/2016.
- TÜSİAD (2004). *Türk emeklilik sisteminde reform, mevcut durum ve alternatif stratejiler*, İstanbul: TÜSİAD Yayınları.
- World Bank (2016). "World development indicators", <http://databank.worldbank.org/data/views/reports/tableview.aspx> , 31/07/2016.

A RESEARCH ON THE E-COMPLAINTS OF THE TOUR OPERATOR CUSTOMERS IN TURKEY

ÖZGÜR ARPACI *

İLYAS AKHISAR *

Abstract: The purpose of this study is to explore the customer complaints made to the tour operators through an online complaint website in Turkey. In this sense, the study has been conducted in order to determine the categories of the customer complaints against tour operators and the frequency of these complaints. In addition, the answers given to these complaints by the establishments are examined in the same direction. The data used in the study is obtained from the complaints against the tour operators are in servicing in tourism sector at the website www.sikayetvar.com, which is a platform where the consumer complaints in Turkey are voiced. The research data was examined with the content analysis method, based on the years and topics. The research results indicate that the complaint topics against the tour operators emphasize on accommodation, tour cancellations-changes and agencies, respectively.

Key Word: *online complaints, tourism, travel industry, Turkiye*

1. Introduction

Although the establishments aim to present the best commodities and services to their customers, it is possible to see in the tourism

* Kırklareli University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Kırklareli, Turkey [ozqurapaci@hotmail.com]

* Kırklareli University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Kırklareli, Turkey [ilyasakhisar@klu.edu.tr]



establishments, labor-intensive ones in particular, that mistakes, problems and failures occur most frequently (Ekiz, Ragavan, Hussain, 2011: 1). One of the ways for the establishments to provide feedback about the services that the consumers benefit from is complaints. It is possible to note that touristic consumers generally complain about tour route, transportation company or accommodation regarding a trip (Schiaffino and Amandi, 2009: 1293). Therefore, not only the service establishments encourage the suffered customers to voice their complaints, they also try to provide solutions for the service errors in several areas (Yavas et al., 2004: 32).

In the light of this theoretical information, the study investigates the complaints conveyed to the tour operators by *sikayetvar.com*, an online platform in Turkey as third party to which the complaints are made. In addition, the response ratios of tour operators to the complaints depending on several categories are presented.

Thus, determining the topics that the tour operators in Turkey are insufficient for internet users is important and investigating the responses of the tour operators to these complaints in a solution-based approach may make the study important in a different respect. The reason to choose the tour operators for research is that they are deemed the most important actors of the sector that bring various touristic products (transportation, accommodation, eating-drinking, entertainment, etc.) together, playing a connective role within the tourism industry.

2. Literature Review

E-Complaint Concept in Travel Sector:

Tour operators traditionally carry out the role of mediation between the suppliers and consumers, just like airports and hotels (Roney and Ozturan, 2006: 44). In modern terms, literature emphasizes that tour operators are important sources of information in choosing a tourism destination. Today, the Internet is an important source of information due to many reasons such as being more accessible compared to other sources, easy update, the ability to provide real-time information service and interactive communication. Such characteristics of the Internet makes it the sole source information with which in-depth analyses can be made (Frias, Rodriguez, Casta-

neda, 2008: 163-179). Furthermore, the Internet has become an important source where the complaints against the tour operators or tour operators are included in several complaint websites and therefore, where the tourists can obtain information thanks to these complaints (Yilmaz, Varnali, Kasnakoglu, 2015: 3).

In order to fulfill all these, the tour operators need personal consultants as well as well-established websites in order to reach bigger audiences. Tour operators need these websites in order to present the most satisfactory service to their customers, which they can also use to learn their satisfactions or complaints. In addition, it is observed in the recent year that the customer complaint platforms, called third parties, have been gaining importance apart from the complaints delivered to operator websites. Among these, TripAdvisor.com is known as the most recognized and most widely used all around the world.

It is possible to encounter many empirical researches oriented to the voicing of complaints in the tourism sector (Ekiz vd.2012; Inkumsah, 2011; Lam and Tang, 2003, Park, Lehto and Park, 2008; Sari, Alikilic, Onat, 2013; Tyrell and Woods, 2004). Meanwhile, it is observed that the complaints and service errors regarding the touristic product are generally focused on the airports, hotels and restaurants. It is possible to say that the complaints on the tour operators are not handled very much. On the other hand, it is inevitable for the complaints on the travel to cover these services as they provide the touristic products as a whole. Among these, the rooms are the primary concern of complaints in terms of service quality for the complaints directed to the tour operators, followed by the tour cancellations and the price increases after the deposit is paid (Lam and Zahng, 1999). The tourism sector managers try to determine these complaint forms and handle them professionally in order to prevent the expansion of the e-complaints (Buhalis and Law, 2008: 613).

www.sikayetvar.com is Turkey's first and biggest complaint platform where the consumers seek solutions to their complaints regarding the companies, the website visitors consult as a pre-shopping reference and make decision about the companies; the companies provide solutions to the complaints to win their customers back and

protect the company reputation that functions as a bridge between the customer and brand in an objective and reliable way (www.sikayetvar.com). The approaches for handling or resolving the complaints are vital for establishments.

3. Method

This research, having the characteristics of a descriptive research, tries to put forth some issues by means of analyzing the e-complaints made online against the tour operators in Turkey. As the overall objective of this study is based on the analysis of the content of e-complaints stated on a Turkish website designed to collect the complaints in the sector of tourism and on the detection of organizational responses and feedbacks of the companies, research questions (RQ) have been developed as follows:

Which topics do the complaints directed to the tour operators include?

What are the complaints that was received by tour operators most?

Which complaints do the tour operators respond?

What complaints are responded most among those directed to the tour operators by the establishments?

What are the gender frequencies of those conveying complaints to the tour operators?

What is the distribution of the education statuses of those conveying complaints to the tour operators?

In the analysis phase, the obtained data has been categorized more orderly by means of content analysis technique. The opinion that "many words in the text can be divided to less content categories" lies within the core of quantitative content analysis method (Kassarjian, 1977; Silverman 2001). The data used in tourism studies are increasingly based on qualitative data such as interviews, open-ended questions, advertisement brochures and web-based content and content analysis techniques are used to extrapolate the richness of text materials qualitative (Stepchenkova, Kirilenko, Morrison, 2008).

The complaints against the tour operators operating in the tourism sector at the website www.sikayetvar.com, which is a platform where the consumer complaints in Turkey, were subjected to content analysis in the research. Thus, the headlines that group the complaints and their frequencies are determined. All of the complaints have been made against the tour operators operating in Turkey. It is observed that multiple topics are included within the same complaint on the website. Therefore, since they include different services or subjects, they have been deemed and examined as individual complaints. Thus, it is determined that there were 3.405 complaints on tour operators in www.sikayetvar.com between 01.01.2013 and 31.12.2013 and these complaints were coded, categorized and their frequencies and ratios were determined. However, the research being between the specified dates and the assumption of the complaints being genuine are the other limitations of the research.

3. Findings

The data were analyzed in the research and findings are below.

RQ1. Which topics do the complaints directed to the tour operators include? JSHS|331

Table 1 includes the number of e-complaints on tour operators and establishments receiving e-complaints in 2013. Accordingly, it is observed that 178 establishments received 3405 complaints. Meanwhile, the number of complaints per establishments is *19,12* in 2013.

Table 1. E-complaints on tour operators and establishments receiving e-complaints in 2013

Tour Operator	Number of Complaints	Number of Establishments	Mean
	3405	178	19,12

Table 2 classifies the complaints against tour operators in 2013 based on their topics. This classification is oriented to specify the topics on which the consumers submit complaints against tour operators. It is observed that the complaints are classified as operator,

call center, price-advertisement-promotion, tour program, accommodation, guide service, tour cancellation-change, transportation, web services and other topics. Accordingly; it is observed that 17,36% of the complaints are on the operator, 12,51% are on the call center, 6,96% are on the price-advertisement-promotion, 3,17% are on the tour program, 20,23% are on accommodation, 10,66% are on guide service, 19,85% are on tour cancellation-change, 6,64% are on transportation, 1,29% are on web services and 1,32% are on other topics. Viewing the website indicates that wrong reservations, missing reservations, wrong information by the operator and operator personnel behavior were included under "operator" category and "other" category included topics with a direct relation to the operator, rather than an indirect relation.

Table 2. Distribution of subjects of E-complaint's directed to tour operators in 2013

Complaints	N	%
Operator	591	17,36
Call Center	426	12,51
Price-Advertisement-Promotion	237	6,96
Travel and Tour Programme	108	3,17
Accommodation	689	20,23
Guide Service	363	10,66
Tour Cancellation and Change	676	19,85
Transportation	226	6,64
Web Services	44	1,29
Other	45	1,32
Total	3405	100,00

RQ2. What are the complaints that was received by tour operators most?

Table 3 includes four topics with the highest number of e-complaints on tour operators. Accordingly, the complaints on accommodation rank 1st with a complaint ratio of 20,23%, tour cancellation-change complaints rank 2nd with 19,85%, complaints on operator ranks 3rd with 17,36% and call center complaints rank 4th with 12,51%.

Table 3. Most popular subjects of e-complaints against Tour operators in 2013

Rank	Subtopics of Complaints	Number of Com-plaints	%
1	Accommodation	689	20,23
2	Tour Cancellation-Change	676	19,85
3	Operator	591	17,36
4	Call Center	426	12,51

JSHS|333

RQ3. Which complaints do the tour operators respond?

Table 4 includes the number of e-complaints on the tour operators based on years, number of responded e-complaints and the e-complaint response ratio. Accordingly, e-complaint response ratio is 28,81% in 2013.

Table 4. The Number of E-Complaints Against Tour operators in 2013 and of Responded E-Complaints as well as The Respond Rate

	Number of Com-plaints	Number of Re-sponded Com-plaints	%
Tour operators	3405	981	28,81

Table 5 classifies the responded complaints against the tour operators in 2013 based on their topics. This classification is oriented to

specify the topics on which the tour operators respond to complaints. Based on this data, the response ratio of the complaints on operator is by 28,76%, complaints on the call centers by 24,65%, complaints on the price-advertisement-promotion by 37,13%, complaints on the tour program by 30,56%, complaints on accommodation by 32,22%, complaints on guide services by 36,91%, complaints on tour cancellation-change by 20,12%, complaints on transportation by 26,99%, complaints on websites by 52,27% and complaints on other topics by 20,00%.

Table 5. The Number of E-Complaints Against Tour operators on Subject Base in 2013 and of Responded E-Complaints as well as The Respond Rate

Subtopics of Complaints	Number of Complaints	Number of Responded Complaints	%
Operator	591	170	28,76
Call Center	426	105	24,65
Price-Advertisement-Promotion	237	88	37,13
Travel-Tour Programme	108	33	30,56
Accommodation	689	222	32,22
Guide Service	363	134	36,91
Tour Cancellation-Change	676	136	20,12
Transportation	226	61	26,99
Web Services	44	23	52,27
Other	45	9	20,00
Total	3405	981	28,81

RQ4. What complaints are responded most among those directed to the tour operators by the establishments?

Table 6 includes the most responded topics of e-complaints against the tour operators. Therefore, web services rank 1st with a response ratio of 52,27%, price-advertisement-promotion ranks 2nd with 37,13%, guide service ranks 3rd with 36,91% and accommodation ranks 4th with 32,22%.

Table 6. Most Responded E-complaint Subjects Directed to Tour operators in 2013

Rank	Subtopics of Complaints	Number of Responded Complaints	%
1	Web Services	23	52,27
2	Price-Advertisement-Promotion	88	37,13
3	Guide Service	134	36,91
4	Accommodation	222	32,22

JSHS|335

RQ5. What are the gender frequencies of those conveying complaints to the tour operators?

Table 7 includes the distribution of e-complaints on tour operators in 2013 according to gender. Accordingly, 58,88% of the individuals who have submitted complaints are male, 41,12% of them are female. In 2013, 1374 individuals submitted complaints against tour operators.

Table 7. Distribution of E-complaints Directed to Tour operators by Gender in 2013

Gender	N	%
Male	809	58,88
Female	565	41,12
Total	1374	100,00

RQ6. What is the distribution of the education statuses of those conveying complaints to the tour operators?

Table 8 includes the distribution of e-complaints on tour operators in 2013 according to education. Accordingly, 1,31% of the individuals who submitted complaints have graduated from primary school, 9,10% of them from secondary school, 59,17% of them have associate-bachelor's degree and 19,58% of them have postgraduate degree. 10,84% of those who submitted complaints did not specify their education status.

Table 8. Distribution of E-complaints Directed to Tour operators by Educational Status in 2013

Education	N	%
Primary Education	18	1,31
Secondary Education	125	9,10
Associate/ Bachelor's Degree	813	59,17
Postgraduate Degree	269	19,58
Unspecified Education	149	10,84
Total	1374	100,00

4. Conclusion and Suggestions

Acceptance of the complaints and their investigation by travel establishment is important in terms of tourism literature. Because a non-satisfied tourist leaves and does not come back. Therefore, managers should encourage the customers in the tourism sector to con-

vey their complaints directly to the establishment (Ekiz et al., 2012: 98). A way of doing this is to respond the consumer complaints immediately. In this way, the complaints against the establishments by the consumers will significantly decrease the learning costs that the establishments will spend in order to be better (Yilmaz, et al., 2015). Therefore the customer complaints in the online websites are deemed as one of the most appropriate platforms for the quick answers and adaptation. Thus, the main objective of this research is to investigate the customer complaints against the tour operators and evaluate the complaint management processes of the tourism establishments.

The primary complaint against the tour operators are the complaints conveyed regarding accommodation. According to a research made in Hong Kong, tour operators receive the most complaints from package tours (Lam and Zhang, 1999). The complaints are against the changes made in the establishment of accommodation during the tour program, the misleading behavior during purchase in terms of the features of accommodation establishments and demanding extra fees for the accommodation and food-drink services that have been stated to be included in the price within the tour program. Another complaint is the lack of required sensitivity by the operator regarding the cancellation or change of the complained tour. When the tour program is canceled or the information regarding some tours are not conveyed to the consumer, it is possible to aggrieve the consumer. Along with that, the establishments should consider and evaluate all the complaints and correct themselves accordingly. It should be able to respond all the complaints as quickly, effectively and productively as possible. In fact, the responses of the tour operators to the incoming complaints are substantial. Compared in particular with the responses provided by the accommodation establishments in the same sector and considering the fact that accommodation establishments respond 13 of the incoming 397 complaints in 2012 (Sari, Alikilic, Onat, 2013: 563), it is possible to state that tour operators are attentive in terms of responding to e-complaints. In other respects the study also claimed that companies wouldn't have the ability to change their procedure and to take corrective actions without the sufficient information related to the source of the complaints.

References

- Buhalis D. And Law R. (2008). Twenty years on and 10 years after the Internet: The state of eTourism research. *Tourism Management*, 29, 609-623.
- Dolores M. F., Miguel A. R. J. And Alberto C. (2008). Internet vs. tour operators on pre- visit destination image formation: An information processing view. *TourismManagement*, 29(1):163-179.
- Ekiz, E., Khoo-Lattimore, C. And Memarzadeh, F. (2012). Air The Anger: Investigating Online Complaints on Luxury Hotels. *Journal of Hospitality and Tourism Technology*, 3 (2), 96-106.
- Ekiz, E., Ragavan, H., Neethiahnathan A. and Hussain, K. (2011). How to Manage Guest Complaints: Global Implications from Hong Kong Hoteliers. *Global Journal of Management and Business Research*, 11 (1), 1-14.
- Inkumsah W. A. (2011). Measuring Customer Satisfaction in the Local Ghanaian Restaurant Industry. *European Journal of Business and Management*, 3(2), <http://www.iiste.org/Journals/index.php/EJBM/article/view/167>.
- Kassarjian Harold H., (1977). Content Analysis in Consumer Research. *Journal of Consumer Research*, vol. 4, 8-18.
- Krippendorff, K. (2004). *Content Analysis: an introduction to its methodology*. Second Edition, Thousand Oaks, CA:SAGE. pp.313.
- Lam T. And Zhang, H. Q. (1999). Service quality of travel agents: the case of travel agents in Hong Kong. *Tourism Management*, (20), 341-349.
- Lam T. and Tang V. (2003). Recognizing Customer Complaint Behavior. *Journal of Travel & Tourism Marketing*, 14:1, 69-86.
- Park O-J., Lehto X. and Park J-K. (2008). Service failures and complaints in the family travel market: a justice dimension approach. *Journal of Services Marketing*, Vol. 22 Iss 7 pp. 520-532.
- Roney, S. A. and Ozturan M. (2006). A Content Analysis of the Web Sites of Turkish Travel Agencies. *Anatolia: An International Journal of Tourism and Hospitality Research*, 17 (1), 43-54.
- Sari F. O., Alikilic O. and Onat F. (2013). E- Complaining: Analysis of Lodging Customers' e-Complaints from a Turkish Internet Website. *International Conference on Information, Business and Education Technology (ICIBIT 2013)*, 561-565.
- Schiaffino, S. and Amandi, A. (2009). Building an expert travel agent as a software agent. *Expert Systems with Applications*, 36, 1291-1299.
- Silverman, D. (2001). *Interpreting Qualitative Data: Methods for Analysing Talk. Text and Interaction*. London: SAGE Publication.

- Stepchenkova S., Kirilenko A. P. and Morrison A. M. (2008). Facilitating Content Analysis in Tourism Research. *Journal of Travel Research*, 1-16.
- Tyrell, B. and Woods, R. (2004). E-Complaints: Lessons to be Learned from the Service Recovery Literature. *Journal of Travel & Tourism Marketing*, 17: 2-3, 183-190.
- Yavas U., Karatepe O. M., Babakus E. and Avci T. (2004). Customer Complaints and Organizational Responses: A Study of Hotel Guests in Northern Cyprus. *Journal of Hospitality & Leisure Marketing*, 11:2-3, 31-46.
- Yilmaz C., Varnali K. and Kasnakoglu B. T. (2015). How do firms benefit from customer complaints?. *Journal of Business Research*, <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.jbusres.2015.08.038>.
- Wang K., Hsieh A. and Huan T. (2000). Critical service features in group package tour: An exploratory research. *Tourism Management*, 21, 177-189.
- <https://www.sikayetvar.com/home/hakkimizda/> E.T. 25.07.2015

THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN INCOME DISTRIBUTION AND DEVELOPMENT: THE CASE OF TURKEY

SAMI TABAN *
MEHMET ŞENGÜR *

Abstract: This study aims to determine whether income inequality in Turkey is an obstacle in economic development or not. For this purpose, the gini coefficient and real GDP are used as a measure of income inequality and economic growth, respectively. Johansen co-integration method is utilized in the analysis of the study. Co-integration analysis has shown a long-term relationship between the gini coefficient and economic growth. In order to determine the direction of causality, the error correction model is applied. The findings indicate that the direction of causality runs from economic growth to gini coefficient. This result shows that economic growth is an important factor in the reduction of income inequality. Empirical result reveals also that the reduction of income inequality through economic growth is the crucial factor for Turkey's economic development.

Key Word: *Income distribution, economic development, income inequality, economic growth, Turkey.*

1. Introduction

Providing equality in income distribution is one of the important concerns of most countries in the world. Income inequality has negative impacts on economic development and growth. It is generally accepted that income inequality has adverse effects on investments

* Eskişehir Osmangazi University [staban68@gmail.com]

* Eskişehir Osmangazi University

and this situation would negatively affect the development efforts of developing countries. Disturbances in the distribution of income would decrease expenditures such as feeding, education and health. This leads to reduce labor productivity and ultimately results in low level of economic development and growth.

Although there is numerous studies which examine the inequality-growth relationship in different countries, the empirical evidences in those studies are heavily complicated. For instance, Partridge (1997), Li and Zou (1998), Forbes (2000) founded positive relationship between the inequality and growth. In contrast, Perotti (1993), Alesina and Rodrik (1994), Persson and Tabellini (1994), Clarke (1995), Alesina and Perotti (1996), Ahituv and Moav (2003), Josten (2004), Davis (2007), Coll (2014) studies affirmed a negative relationship. There were also some studies which did not found any correlation between the inequality and the growth. Lee and Roemer (1998), Panizza (2002) and Castello and Domenech (2002) studies are some of them.

This study aims to determine whether income inequality in Turkey is a serious problem in the economic development or not. In this respect, the paper is organized as follows: Following the introduction, section 2 briefly discusses the theoretical literature. Section 3 informs data and variables used in the study. Section 3 presents econometric methodology and the results. Section 4 summarizes the paper's findings.

2. Theoretical Literature

The theory which explains the relationship between income distribution and development was first developed by Kuznets (1955). According to Kuznets, as percapita income rises, income distribution would firstly become more unequal and then less unequal. This situation was defined as Kuznets' inverted U-shaped hypothesis. Following Kuznets, Robinson (1976) developed Kuznets hypothesis and added employment mobility to that model. In this model, agriculture sector was seen as the leading sector and income inequality was relatively lower compared to the other sectors. The main reason behind this was the lower income of workers. On the other hand, because of the fact that percapita income level is higher in industry and urban

regions, income inequality is encountered frequently. In these regions. In the first stage of development, employment mobility from agriculture to industry increases the income inequality. However, during the development migration from agriculture to industry decreases the underemployment in agriculture and marginal productivity of workers would probably increase. In addition, workers' incomes would also increase in agriculture sector and also workers' positions and their incomes in industrial sector would develop. In other words, with the increasing the incomes of the employees, the convergence situation would probably be reflected in revenues.

Barro and Sala-i Martin (1997) who are among the endogenous growth theorists explained the public spendings which have significant role in the decreasing inequality of the income distribution. In this context, when we consider the wealth effects of public spendings such as education, health and social security, it is easily said to have improvement impacts on the income distribution of public spendings.

Increasing demand in the redistribution income is another approach on the relation between income distribution and development. According to this approach, the inequality in income distribution decreases per capita income and thus it increases redistribution demand. Increasing demand in redistribution income would probably bring social-political instability and the investments would be affected negatively with the threatening the property rights (Alesina ve Perotti, 1996). In addition, the inequality in income would lead economical units to increase rent activities and this situation would heavily negative impacts on capital accumulation and development.

The informal economy also affects the development via income distribution. For instance, high informal sector would result in decrease in tax revenues and social security spendings would be decreased. Reducing these kind of spendings would have a role on raising income inequality. Furthermore, decreasing tax incomes of informal economy also would decrease public spendings and this situation would limit household's income. This also would be a problem for development.

In recent years, another study which discusses and criticizes the some points of the Kuznets' hypothesis is the work of Nobel economist Piketty titled as 'Capital in the 21st Century'. This study differs from the other studies which provides the discussions held on the inequality based on historical process.

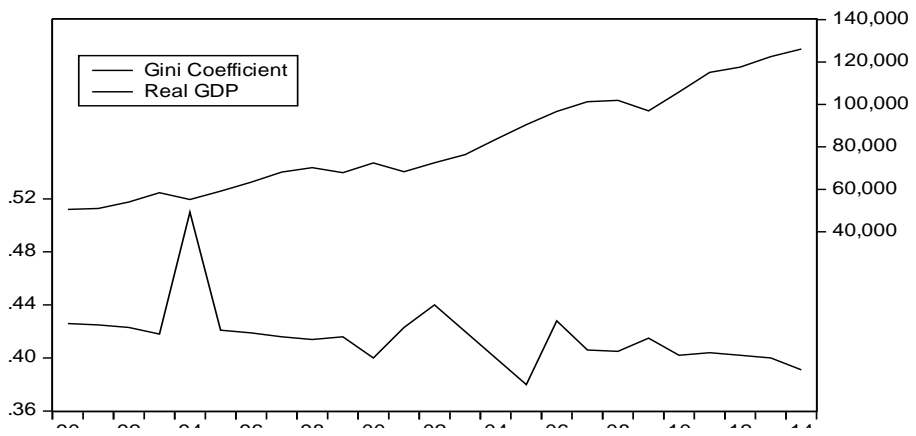
During the period of 1914-1945, the disturbances of inequality declined seriously in almost all rich countries. Due to this reason, Piketty put forward the impacts caused by the World wars which had severe economical and political shocks not only the mobility between social groups as depicted by Kuznets. Piketty emphasizes that Kuznets' data is limited for investigated period, and it is required to collect the tax records for analyzing the structure of income inequality (Piketty, 2014:16).

3. Data and Variables

Annual data for the period of 1990-2014 are used in this study. Real GDP (1998=100) is assessed as an indicator of economic development and gini coefficients are defined as a measure for income inequality. Real GDP data are collected from the Turkish Statistical Institution (TUIK) during the period of 1990-2014. Gini coefficients (GINI) between 2002-2014 acquired from TUIK, the other variables between 1990 and 2001 obtained from Dumlu ve Aydın (2008). We also use dummy variable (D1994) which is statistically significant in the models. All variables are measured in the natural logarithmic form, namely LGDP and LGINI stands for logarithms of real GDP and gini coefficient.

Figure 1 depicts real GDP and gini coefficient series in Turkey during the period 1990-2014.

Figure 1. Real GDP and Gini Coefficient Series in Turkey



4. Econometric Methodology and Results

We utilize the Johansen (1998) co-integration and error correction model in order to test the relations between income distribution and real GDP. Just like in othe time series data, the variables GDP and GINI coefficients must be tested for stationary before running cointegration. We use the Augmented Dickey Fuller (ADF) stationary test to examine the order of integration of the series.

ADF unit root test results obtained from above equations are reported in Table 1.

Table 1. ADF Unit Root Test Results

Variable	Level /	Intercept	Intercep and Trend	None	Result
	First Dif-ference				
LGDP	Level	0.848 (0)	-1.844 (0)	4.221 (0)	I (1)
	First Dif-ference	-4.586*(0)	-4.723*(0)	-2.919*(0)	
LGINI	Level	-2.426 (4)	-3.116 (4)	-0.434 (1)	I (1)
	First Dif-ference	-7.599*(0)	-7.431*(0)	-7.750*(0)	

Note: The numbers inside brackets denote the appropriate lag lengths. The lag for the ADF test is based on Schwarz Information Criterion.

* significant at the 1% level.

Unit root test results show that both variables are non-stationary at level. Having found that the variables are non-stationary at level, the next step is to differentiate the variable once. As seen from table, once the variables are differentiated, both the variables are affirmed to be stationary according to the ADF unit root test results. Since the variables, namely I (1), are integrated in the same order the series can be tested for the existence of a co-integration relationship between them.

Before co-integration analysis, the number of lags is important for the model to be determined. Because of the fact that the results of the model often depend on the numbers of lags included, appropriate lag lengths has been determined as 1. In this lag length, we have seen that the model has respectable diagnostic test results at the 5% level.

Table 2. Diagnostic Test Results for Residuals

Autocorrelation LM (1)	White Heteroskedasticity (Chi-sq)	Normality (Jarque-Bera)
0.499 (0.974)	19.927 (0.323)	8.576 (0.072)

Note: The numbers inside brackets denote p values.

In co-integration method, whether there is a long term relationship between variables or not is determined through trace and max-eigen statistics.

The results of Johansen Cointegration test are displayed in Table 3.

Table 3. Johansen Cointegration Test Results Eşbütünleşme Test Sonuçları

Series: LGDP-LGINI				
Exogenous Variables: D1994				
Hypothesis	Max-Eigen Statistic	Critical Value 5%	Trace Statistic	Critical Value 5%
$H_0: r = 0^*$	28.507	14.264	28.675	15.495
$H_0: r \leq 1$	0.168	3.841	0.168	3.841

Note: * denotes the rejection of H_0 hypothesis at the 5% significant level.

As seen in Table 3, the results indicates that according to both max-eigen and trace statistics, hypothesis is rejected at the 5% significant level. In other words, cointegration analysis have shown a long term relationship between the gini coefficients and economic growth.

Having found that long term relationship between variables, we need to determine the causality relation between them. In order to define the direction of causality, the vector error correction model (VECM) is applied.

VECM model is adapted into our model as follows:

$$\Delta LGDP_t = \beta_0 + \beta_1 \Delta LGDP_{t-1} + \beta_2 \Delta LGINI_{t-1} + \beta_3 ECM_{t-1} + \beta_4 D1994 + \varepsilon_t \quad (1)$$

$$\Delta LGINI_t = +\alpha_0 + \alpha_1 \Delta LGINI_{t-1} + \alpha_2 \Delta LGDP_{t-1} + \alpha_3 ECM_{t-1} + \alpha_4 D1994 + \varepsilon_t \quad (2)$$

where ECM_{t-1} shows the error correction term lagged one period in above equations.

There is an adequate evidence for causality if t statistic value of error correction term is negative and statistically significant in the models. Table 4 indicates that t value of error correction term is appeared to be a negative and significant at 1% level in the model which is dependent variable GINI. Findings indicate that the direction of causality runs from economic growth to gini coefficient. This result shows that economic growth is an important factor in reduction of income inequality. Significant relationship has not been found statistically run-

ning from gini coefficient to economic growth according to ECM_{t-1} and F statistics results.

Table 4. Causality Test Results Based on Vector Error Correction Model

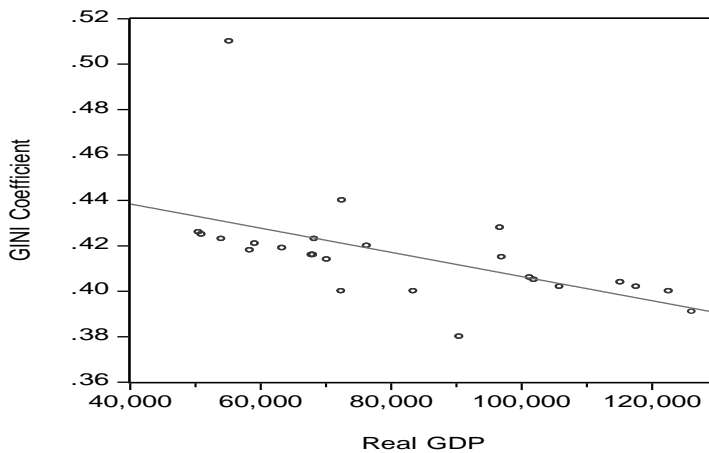
Dependent Variable	ECMt-1	F statistics	Result
$\Delta LGINI$	3.74E-07 (-6.439)*	0.367 (0.5519)	GDP → GINI →
$\Delta LGDP$	0.009 (0.483)	0.050 (0.8253)	No Causality

Note: The numbers inside brackets denote the t statistics values.

* Significant at the 1% level..

The direction of causality relation between real GDP and GINI has been indicated via scatter diagram. As can be seen from Figure 2, the relation between them is negative and correlation coefficient (-0,53) also verifies this relation. In other words, economic growth improves the income distribution.

Figure 2. Scatter Diagram of the Relationship Between Real GDP and Gini Coefficient.



5. Conclusion

This study aims to determine whether income inequality in Turkey is an difficulty in economic development or not. For this purpose by using annual data for the period 1990-2014 Johansen cointegration approach has been implemented. Cointegration analysis has shown a long-term relationship between the gini coefficient and economic growth in Turkey. In order to define the direction of causality, the vector error correction model is applied. Findings indicate that the direction of causality runs from economic growth to gini coefficient. These results show that economic growth is an important factor in the reduction of income inequality. Empirical results also explain that the reduction of income inequality through economic growth is an opportunity for Turkey's economic development. In this respect, government's social transfer spendings increased between 1990-2014 period. This situation has contributed to the social and cultural improvement of the household and has become supporting factor for the national growth. Decreasing gini coefficient has also limited the material deprivation rate¹ with the economic growth in Turkey. For instance, the material deprivation rate was 60,4% in 2006 and this ratio decreased to 29,4% in 2014.

JSHS|349

In addition, social transfer expenditures have positive effects on the income equality. The ratio of these kind of expenditures in GDP was %5,5 in 1990 and currently it has approached to 13%. Overall, it can be stated that social transfer expenditures support the economic development through social and cultural improvement of household.

References

- Ahituv, A., & Moav, O. (2003). Fertility clubs and economic growth. In Eicher, T. S. & Turnovsky, S. J. (Eds.), *Inequality and Growth: Theory and Policy Implications*. 61-87. Cambridge, London: MIT Press.
- Alesina, A., & Perotti, R. (1996). Income distribution, political instability, and investment, *European Economic Review*, 40(6), 1203-1228.

¹ It is defined as the ratio of population which face serious financial problem (www.tuik.gov.tr, 17.04.2016).

- Alesina, A., & Rodrik, D. (1994). Distributive politics and economic growth. *Quarterly Journal of Economics*, 109(2), 465-490.
- Barro, R.J., & Sala-i-Martin X. (1997). Technological Diffusion, Convergence, and Growth. *Journal of Economic Growth*, 2(1), 1-26.
- Castello, A., & Domenech, R. (2002). Human capital inequality and economic growth: Some new evidence. *Economic Journal*, 112(478), 187-200.
- Clarke, G. R. G. (1995). More evidence on income distribution and growth. *Journal of Development Economics*, 47(2), 403-427.
- Coll, J. A. C. (2014). Inequality and growth in the context of the Mexican economy: Does inequality matter for growth. *ECINEQ Working Paper Series*, No. 2014-331.
- Davis, L. S. (2007). Explaining the evidence on inequality and growth: Informality and Redistribution. *The B.E. Journal of Macroeconomics*, 7(1), 1-35.
- Dumlu, U., & Aydın, Ö. (2008). Ekonometrik Modellerle Türkiye İçin 2006 Yılı Gini Katsayısı Tahmini. *Ege Akademik Bakış*, 8(1), 373-393.
- Forbes, K. J. (2000). A reassessment of the relationship between inequality and growth. *American Economic Review*, 90(4), 869-887.
- Johansen, S. (1988). Statistical Analysis of Cointegration Vectors. *Journal of Dynamics and Control*, 12, 231-254.
- Josten, S. D. (2004). Social capital, inequality, and economic growth. *Journal of Institutional and Theoretical Economics-Zeitschrift Fur Die Gesamte Staatswissenschaft*, 160(4), 663-680.
- Kuznets, S. (1955). Economic Growth and Income Inequality. *The American Economic Review*, 45, 1-28.
- Lee, W., & Roemer, J. E. (1998). Income Distribution, Redistributive Politics, and Economic Growth. *Journal of Economic Growth*, 3(3), 217-40.
- Lee, W., & Roemer, J. E. (1998). Income Distribution, Redistributive Politics, and Economic Growth. *Journal of Economic Growth*, 3(3), 217-40.
- Li, Hongyi & Zou, H. (1998). Income Inequality is not Harmful for Growth: Theory and Evidence. *Review of Development Economics*, 2(3), 318-334.
- Panizza, U. (2002). Income inequality and economic growth: Evidence from American data. *Journal of Economic Growth*, 7(1), 25-41.
- Partridge, M. (1997). Is Inequality Harmful for Growth? Comment?. *The American Economic Review*, 87, 1019-1032.
- Perotti, R. (1993). Political equilibrium, income distribution and economic growth. *Review of Economic Studies*, 60(4), 755-776.
- Persson, T., & Tabellini, G. (1994). Is Inequality Harmful for Growth. *American Economic Review*, 84(3), 600-621.

- Piketty, T. (2014). *Yirmi Birinci Yüzyılda Kapital* (Çeviren: Hande Koçak). Türkiye İş Bankası Kültür Yayınları, İstanbul.
- Robinson, S. (1976). A Note on the U Hypothesis Relating Inequality and Economic Development. *American Economic Review*, 66, 437-440.
<http://www.tuik.gov.tr/Hbprint.do?id=18633> (17.04.2016).

SOCIAL RESPONSIBILITY AND SUSTAINABILITY - STRATEGIC BUSINESS IMPERATIVES OF NEW EPOCH

SAMIR LJAJIĆ *
NEBOJŠA BACKOVIĆ *
ELMA ELFIĆ - ZUKORLIĆ *

Abstract: Regardless of the fact whether they represent need, a competitive challenge or megatrend, social responsibility and sustainability play an important role in the strategic management concept of successful enterprises. The aim of this paper is to analyze the changes in the management concept of the company determined by the contemporary business challenges. Firstly, the paper indicates the new initiatives of the international community of the importance for the sustainable future of the global system. Then, it provides interpretation of the concept of management aiming at overcoming the current global challenges. Finally, the interactions are analyzed and the importance of harmonizing the development of inclusive institutions and processes of corporate governance changes in the direction of establishing models of environmental and social responsibility at all levels and spheres of business is emphasized

Key Word: *social responsibility, sustainability, strategic management, holism, inclusive institutions.*

1. Introduction

In the post crisis period the management capacity of managers of enterprises to respond to the environmental challenges plays a crucial role. It implies numerous risks of economic, ethical, human, eco-

* [ljajics@gmail.com]
* [g.menadzer@uninp.edu.rs]
* [nebbac@gmail.com]

logical and social character, which are the result of a domino effect of the activity of the companies at the open market.

Directing entrepreneurial energy and creativity only towards profit maximization in the short term has led to escalation of socially irresponsible behavior of company managements. Guided by the market management concepts in the creation of value, which are directly and primarily focused on profits, while neglecting the long - term objectives and interests, the management company could not adequately respond to the growing challenges of global multidimensional character. Management approach which subordinates all the profit reflects a serious impact on long - term economic and social development. The question then is what kind of management model, policy and strategy is the best to overcome this challenge?

New business conditions require social responsibility and sustainability. It implies most current business megatrends of new epoch. The business imperative for most companies is to align corporate strategy with the demands of modern megatrends. Like the famous megatrends of the past (the quality revolution, the information revolution, the globalization epoch), which was once promoted by John Nesbitt in his best seller with the same name (1982), today's social responsibility and sustainability is the most common thread and long - term business imperative for many companies. Therefore, we can qualify social responsibility and sustainability megatrends as emerging ones. This question touches the ability of management to accept new ways of strategic management, as well as new models of value creation for the company and its key stakeholders in a socially responsible manner.

If history is a teacher of life ("istoria magistra vitae est") as the old Latin said, then a look at the past shows us that companies wanting to gain a competitive advantage in the market in the new circumstances simply need to adjust their activities to the requirements deriving from the emerging megatrends. This process can be successfully terminated only if the inventive management solves two problems simultaneously: 1. formulate a vision, that is, intended direction of sustainable development which should operate in challenging and motivating way to all stakeholder enterprises; 2. implement a sus-

tainable business strategy through short - term operational plans, programs and actions in a socially responsible manner. This, however, is not a simple and easy task. Success will not be achieved if the level of social and environmental responsibility in all stakeholders, especially among managers of companies is not upgraded. This is in fact the first step towards changing management paradigms customized to the requirements of sustainability. We should not expect, however, that this step is carried out exclusively by self - awareness of the management structure. Therefore, this process of managerial accountability is necessary to build in parallel with the development of institutions. In practice, the important role of the international community becomes more and more evident which by adopting regulatory rules, policies and systems demonstrates determination to overcome resistance to change and achieves the goals and strategy of sustainable development (SD). A society that invests in good institutions also invests in the development of a healthy market, environmental, labor and social protection, and thus, has stimulating effect on the formulation and implementation of sustainable business strategies.

This paper presents an attempt to analyze the above stated issues. Thus, firstly, the importance and necessity of accepting the idea of holistic integrated efforts of all entities in community to achieve a sustainable future for the global system is pointed out. The second part of the paper focuses on the appropriate strategic management of the company in a socially responsible and sustainable manner. The contemporary business practice and implicit presence of the new management model in the corporate strategies of successful companies will be highlighted. The third part of the paper points out to the importance of building good institutions for ensuring SD trajectory. It is an evolutionary process aiming at encouraging all community subjects to participate in the process of change of corporate governance in the direction of establishing a model of environmental and social responsibility at all levels and spheres of business.

2. New signals of international community of importance for change of management paradigm at the company level

There are more and more supporters of the claim that many risks of a global character at existing institutional conceptual and theoretical foundations of neoliberal doctrine cannot be overcome.¹ It is about systemic threats resulting from the domino effect of the activities of companies in the free market. It turned out that the market is not able to achieve efficient allocation of resources towards the most desirable uses without major negative external effects on the community and the ecosystem. Such a context, in the long term, destroys vital prerequisites for sustainable growth and development.

The solutions for the current problems of the modern world are to be found in the change of a paradigm. At UN headquarters in New York in November 2015, the General Assembly of the summit on global sustainability launched the discussion on a new paradigm of development.

The three main streams were included in a new agenda for sustainable development²:

First, after two years of extensive consultations, the United Nations endorsed a new set of global targets to be achieved by 2030 (replacing the Millennium Development Declaration in 2000)³.

Second, key elements that integrate own efforts to achieve systemic sustainability were identified. In other words, a strategic response to global challenges should be universal. Acceptance of the idea of holistic integrated efforts of all stakeholders in the community to achieve systemic sustainability is not only a program for the eradication of

¹ Rodrik, D., (2006.) Goodbye Washington Consensus, Hello Washington Confusion? A Review of the World Bank Economic Growth in the 1990. Learning From A Decade of Reforming in Journal of Economic Literature, vol. XLIV, pp. 973 - 987

² Transforming Our World: The 2030. Agenda for Sustainable Development (www.unfpa.org.../transformingourworld)

³ Agenda 2030: The Sustainable Development Goals, UN Global Compact (www.unglobalcompact.org...sustainabledevelopment)

poverty, corruption and crime, nor the problem of the ecosystem. This is a project that reaches the core of a future strategic direction of development, which means accepting the idea of social and environmental responsibility of all people in the community for the provision of basic assumption for a better quality of life on Earth for present and future generations. In other words, it is necessary that every entity of the international community at the local and global level realize the need to be a part of the global effort to achieve long - term system sustainability (economic, environmental, social, institutional, personal) through the joint efforts of all relevant actors for the sake of a common future.

Third, additional efforts were made to improve the UN delegate institutional framework and adopt a legally binding instrument on the protection of the global ecosystem⁴.

These three documents provide a strategic basis for the realization of holistic ideas of SD at the international and national levels, as well as the funding of different projects aimed at resolving numerous global systemic threats.

JSHS|357

The years ahead are the challenges for the transition epoch of globalization in the era of corporate social responsibility and sustainable development. In order to achieve it, strong interaction among at least four things is required:

Firstly, it is essential that social awareness management at the local, regional and global levels, share the same values and ideas of the concept of SD;

Secondly, despite the existence of social awareness a total commitment of management structures is needed in terms of building social responsibility at all levels. It involves the formulation and implementation of their own policies, strategies and programs that are aligned with the goals of global sustainability;

⁴ United Nations, Climate Change Conference (30.11.2015.), (www.en.wikipedia.org/2015.)

Thirdly, the formulation and implementation of policies, strategies and programs of SD requires adequate planning and coordinated management activities at all levels in order to improve the process. In other words, the new context requires more coordination between the political and business management structures to achieve the proclaimed mission, vision and goals of sustainable development;

Fourthly, at the microeconomic level innovations in the management process are needed for the formulation and implementation of sustainable business strategies. These relate to the alignment of strategic enterprise management concept with the requirements of the society for the preservation of a sustainable future of the community. Ecological and social aspects of strategic management at all levels and spheres of business occupy growing importance. However, consideration of environmental and social dimension through all other dimensions and aspects of business requires not only the change of strategic management of the company concept. Successful implementation of new concept can be finalized only if there is full commitment of the management team to building of social and environmental awareness at all a management level of the company. One should not expect that the implementation of sustainable business strategies in a socially responsible way will be achieved only by stakeholders' self-awareness. It is necessary to build the given process in parallel with the development of such an institutional structure that encourages operators in the community to take responsibility for SD.

3. Innovation in management process aligned with the requirements of emerging megatrends

The elements of the new management concept

New signals of the international community determined by UN strategy map UN for achieving long - term global sustainability and the lack of adequate strategies for the realization of the objectives of SD at the enterprise level represent the greatest motivation for the business structure to introduce something new and to proclaim it as the concept that will function in such a way as to overcome current challenges and bring significant improvements in key areas of the business.

After the introduction of the concept of SD⁵, the issue of liability of enterprises became important in terms of achieving all economic goals in their hierarchy, including environmental and social goals that the company strives to achieve.

The integration of economic responsibility (profitable business), legal responsibility (compliance with the regulatory framework of the community), ethical responsibility (affirmation of moral codes, ethical values and principles which are above the law), philanthropic responsibilities (expressing concern for the welfare of the community through investments in various projects of social interest) represent the basis for the implementation of policies and strategies for sustainable development at the enterprise level⁶.

The question arises: What are the innovations in the process of strategic management that can lead to the implementation of the concept of SD at the enterprise level through the establishment of the environmental and social responsibility, and consequently a significant improvement of business?

The answer to this question is in direct correlation with increased pressure from international community to meet the requirements associated with all aspects of social sustainability (ethical, human, ecological, social, economic).

Solutions to current challenges are to be sought in the change of strategic management concept, with special emphasis on three things: *firstly*, the organization must be adapted to the new type of management that meets the requirements of SD; *secondly*, new concept of management that promotes SD requires the adoption of a new management approach to CSR, which promotes not only the achievement of environmental objectives but other no less important non - economic objectives (ethical, human, social) that interact with them; *thirdly*, the organization must be able to implement the strategy in a

⁵ The idea of corporate social responsibility and sustainable development is not new, however, its contemporary roots of this concept are from the 1972 UN Conference on the Human Development held in Stockholm.

⁶ Carroll, A.; (1996.) Business And Society: Ethics And Stake Holder Management, Cincinnati Ohio, Salt Western Colledge Publishing, pp.30.

socially responsible manner. It is the responsibility of the management company to meet the needs of its key stakeholders (customers, employees, owners, strategic partners, community) in the current period without compromising the ability (possibility) of future generations to meet their own needs.

These serious requirements can be achieved with the help of: 1. complete dedication of the management team in terms of building environmental and social responsibility at all levels and spheres of business; and 2. appropriate innovations in management concepts.

Socially responsible management that is committed to the implementation of the SD concept at the company level means choosing a new target function; selection of new strategy: adoption of new strategy management approach (integrated, holistic, stakeholders) management approach to CSR; as well as new management tools.

The new target function of the enterprise is the creation of "divided value". It shows the relationship between value creation, sustainable development and social progress. By investing in projects that are consistent with the goals of the SD and respecting the goals and interests of key stakeholders, the enterprise implements strategic concept of "creating divided value"⁷.

Integral (holistic) management approach to CSR is a strategic asset in the implementation of new target functions of the company. This approach emphasizes the need to define the mission, vision, strategic plans aligned to the economic, environmental and social perspective of the community. In addition, managers and employees are given tasks in a more explicit way and are encouraged to be more responsible in order to achieve the goals of the company and its stakeholders in accordance with the ethical, legal, environmental, social and other principles of fair business.

The strategic management approach to CSR provides balance between the pluralistic goals and interests of enterprises and social

⁷ Porter, M.; Kramer, M. (2011.), "Creating Shared Value: How To Reinvest Capitalism And Uncease a Wave of Inovation And Growth", Harvard Bussiness Review, pp. 64.

goals and interests. It integrates business, environmental and social responsibility of enterprises, increases competitiveness and market value as well as creates benefits for the community and the ecosystem. It is a strategic tool aiming at achieving business success, sustainable development and social progress.

Considering that besides economic, environmental and social components are main pillars of SD, management needs new tools that would perform adequate strategy. It is these moments that have crucial impact on the improvement (innovation) of classic model of balance scorecard in the direction of its extension by including dimensions of social responsibility and sustainable development in the system's management. This new concept of the map of relatively balanced performance of sustainable development (Sustainability balance score card - SBS) is a navigation tool in strategic management that enables broader perspective for management and helps in the identification and implementation of important strategic (pluralistic) company goals⁸. It is an important tool for the management of sustainable corporate strategy. It helps creating value for owners, employees, community and ecosystem.

4. Experiences of good corporate governance practices

In the modern business world characterized by new emerging megatrends the acquired competitive advantage is much more exposed to risks in relation to previous periods. In order to preserve it and achieve business success, it is necessary to continuously train management to face the global challenges in a new way.

The incorporation of social responsibility and sustainability into corporate strategy represents a challenge that opens up prospects for the company and the community. Innovation of management approaches and the development of CSR are the key success factors of modern companies that align their functioning with the requirements arising from the emerging megatrends.

⁸ Nicolau, M., Teodorescu, M., Constantin, L., Teodorescu, C.; Balanced Scorecard And Sustainable Enterprise Strategy, Project Title: Integrated Support For Sustainable Development of Chemical Industry Companies, Through Implementation Ecoefficiency Principles, Integl - it, 2005., pp. 1

The interest for the best business practices of companies in the emerging megatrends has never been greater than today. There is a small number of such companies in the world of business and they include: Unilever, 3M, Nestle, Dupont, Heineken, etc. Walmart. These are usually highly competitive companies in the business world that manage to incorporate environmental and social dimension in corporate strategy. The superior business performance in the global environment is achieved by including social and environmental dimension along the entire management process. It actually means "penetration" of the idea of social and environmental responsibility in the essence of the mission of the company.

After defining the current direction of enterprise development which emphasizes not only its intention to review the impact on the ecosystem and the community, but also the commitment of CSR to realize its goals, these companies formulate a sustainable business strategy. By using various planning decisions it regulates the ambit of social responsibility and eco - enterprises, and as such they represent the element of business strategy as a whole.

Sustainable corporate strategy as a long - term planning document is implemented after formulation by concretization of short - term operational plans and activities. Practically, this means that everything that was laid out as mission, and explained through vision and established economic, social and environmental goals is put into action using appropriate methods and means (instruments, initiatives, projects).

Unilever represents a good example of inclusion and compliance of social and environmental dimension along the chain of activities related to the formulation and implementation of the corporate strategy. This company does not consider introduction of environmental and social perspectives in business as a cost. It is a "smart investment" to increase the organization's effectiveness and efficiency and create a superior performance for the company and its key stakeholders as well as a strong positive image of the company in public. A good public image, in a longer period of time, creates a business reputation that contributes to the improvement of financial performance and long - term competitive advantage.

The environmental mission and vision in the best way explains total commitment of Unilever management team that builds a sustainable corporate responsibility at all levels and spheres of business operations: *"Our business model is designed to encourage more effective management of environmental and social performances with the purpose of creating a differentiated competitive advantage and supporting the requirements of social sustainability. For us, sustainability is an imperative way of doing business. In a world of limited natural resources (scarcity of clean water, disturbed ecology, limited energy resources of land and food) it is necessary to take responsibility and by means of strategic thinking and operational functioning provide the answer to the challenge of global ecosystems, focusing on key goals: sustainable growth and development; the growth of environmental efficiency and contribution to social well-being⁹."*

By adjusting and nurturing of a network of relationships with key stakeholders in a socially responsible and fair manner, Unilever harmonizes strategies, capabilities and business processes with the requirements of the emerging megatrends and makes necessary perspectives for prosperity in the new epoch. Therefore, it is emphasized that the formulation and implementation of sustainable business strategies must meet the needs of its stakeholders without reducing the capacity to meet their requirements in the future.

Those innovations in the management process, present in contemporary business practice of successful companies, send a clear signal of intent and commitment of management to face the global challenges in a new way. It means that strategically relevant environmental and social aspects should be accepted through all the other dimensions (economic, ethical, human) and spheres of business.

Development and implementation of a sustainable business strategy is no longer an option, it is a key determinant of long - term competitive advantage and business success.

⁹ Adapted from: Annual Report And Accounts 2015 - Unilever (www.unilever.com)

The above mentioned process is necessary to build continuously and in parallel with the process of "implantation" of environmental and social responsibility in the company's operations. We should not expect, however, that this process will be implemented exclusively by self – awareness of management structures of stakeholders. A society that invests in good institutions encourages companies to take responsibility to align its operations with the requirements of the emerging megatrends¹⁰. On the other hand, in this way, it successfully overcomes the current ethical challenges.

5. Importance of building inclusive institutions for security of a path of sustainable development

Multidimensional challenges that are made unsustainable by neoliberal concept of globalization are directly related to inadequate management system. The failure of management, as a rule, accompanies inadequate vision of the long - term sustainability of the system, and inefficient functioning of the institutions.

It is believed that the extractive institutions, the product of the social value of the neoliberal system, produce numerous limitations and long - term sustainability of the system. Such an institutional structure created "fertile ground" for: annuity conduct of business and political elite, the escalation of economic risks; the growing number of reported scandals; inadequate regulation of the market; problem of negative externalities and the collapse of the ecosystem; growing inequality, discrimination of various types, personal insecurity, instability and so on. In such an environment, there are more and more restrictions on long - term sustainability of the system. They have, besides economic, personal, ethical, humane, environmental and social dimensions. Thus, the crisis of neoliberalism ideology is de facto crisis of the institutional system that has produced erosion of ethical, moral and social values.

¹⁰ Martin, R. (2010.); The Age of Customer Capitalism, Harvard Business Review, pp. 143

There are some claims that if extractive institutions do not change, the development will be neither fair nor sustainable. In ensuring the global sustainability of the system social innovations are no less important than the process of innovation in the management of the company¹¹. One should not be surprised then that social innovations are recognized by building of good (credible) institutions that are closely related to the realization of the SD goals. Such a concept that introduces institutional dimension, as the fourth main pillar of SD, is known as prism model of sustainability¹².

In ensuring the long - term path of growth and development D. Acemoglu assigns central role to the construction of inclusive institutions that encourage companies in their business community to comply with the requirements of emerging megatrends.

It is believed that only in the context of inclusive (economic and political) institutional system it is possible to achieve the SD proclaimed goals, reduce uncertainty and establish sustainable stability¹³. On the other hand, extractive institutions destroy incentives for SD. They are usually constituted according to standards of annuity - oriented elites and their benefit. In the situation where extractive institutions exist, radical reforms are needed for the society to return to a path of sustainable growth and development¹⁴.

JSHS|365

Inclusive institutions as a target factor of competitiveness and SD are treated with significant instrumental variable of new reform course that ensures the long - term path of sustainable growth and development. Thus, in designing the various reform models inclusive institutions are added to the classical growth factors (investments in a

¹¹ Stiglitz, J., (2004); Public Economics, Faculty of Economics, Belgrade, p. 217-245

¹² Spangenberg, J. H., (2002.) Environmental Space And The Prism of Sustainability: Frameworks for Indicators Measuring Sustainable Development, Ecological Indicator 2(3); 295 - 309.

¹³ Acemogly, D.; Robinson, J.; (2012.) Why Nations Failed: The Origins of Power Prosperity And Poverty; Kruna Publishing Group., pp. 544; (isbn 0307719235,9783077/9232).

¹⁴ Acemogly, D.; Robinson, J., opcit, pp. 545.

new branch of activity). It is pointed out that modern societies devoted to construction of inclusive institution are directed towards wellbeing of both the individual and the community. Inclusive institutions are recognizing by the quality of the dioptr: 1. The governance of democratic rules (through performances indicating the effective protection of human rights); 2. Economic institutions (the legal protection of property and wider economic rights; the level of organization of integrated market); 3. Roles of informal rules in managing of human relationships (the strength level of moral and ethical codex under the new system of social values as the foundation of stability and long term sustainability).

The construction of inclusive institutions supports more or less social responsibility of all stakeholders to realize given SD goals, seals and opens the way to the victory of public interest over private greed. Such a social context encourages collaboration, interdependence, solidarity and transparency. On the other hand, it reduces uncertainty and affects strengthening of economic and political stability. It is, therefore, very important that the transition of globalization epoch in the era of socially responsible and sustainable development is recognized by the construction of political (democratic) and economic inclusive institutions (the set of regulatory and constitutive rules, policies and systems), which are closely related to the system of ethical, moral and human values as a foundation of stability. They maintain economic and social system sustainable, justifiable and vital.

The development of inclusive institutions is necessary to build continuously and in parallel with the development of social and environmental responsibility. Inclusive institutions encourage company management to harmonize strategies, capabilities and business processes with the requirements of social responsibility and sustainability, and opens a new perspective necessary for achieving business success. For a new business perspective new socially responsible initiatives based on the concept of sustainability are needed. This concept does not imply affirmation of economic and legal responsibility but ethical responsibility as well valorized in doing what is morally right (fair), transparent, and justifiable. Therefore, it is emphasized that inclusive institutions contribute to proper and successful "planting" of new socially responsible initiatives in corporate

strategy and thus contribute to smart, sustainable and inclusive growth and community development.

6. Conclusion

Bearing in mind that the new value is primarily created at the micro-economic level, it is the management of the company that should contribute not only to improvement of the competitive position and business success (profit growth, growing capital), but also to the welfare of the key stakeholders (consumers, business partners, community). The experience of contemporary business practices of successful companies points out to this fact. The management that succeeds in harmonizing the corporate mission and strategy with the interests of the society in which it operates increases competitive advantage, business success and market value of the company.

The principles of social responsibility and sustainability integrated within business processes, policies and strategies become one of the most important elements of improving the innovative performance of enterprises.

A strategy that integrates economic, environmental and social imperatives in order to achieve long - term business success contributes to the sustainable development of a society because the current needs are put in function of future generations' needs.

Performance of formulating and implementing sustainable business strategy is associated with an adequate system of social management at the local, regional and global levels. This concept touches the essence of the future development process. It allows the growth, but not necessarily economically optimal one. Besides, it implies a greater willingness of society to substitute economic optimality in the short term, for the sake of greater safety for the sustainable future of the community as part of optimal environmental and social corridors protected by institutional system that should satisfy SD goals.

The institutions are treated with significant instrumental variable of new reform course in ensuring the path of long - term sustainable growth and development. By investing in building of good institutions of the system it is possible to reduce uncertainty, and create a

sustainable stability and encourage all community subjects to accept responsibility for SD.

References

- Rodrik, D., (2006.) Goodbye Washington Concensus, Hello Washington Confusion? A Review of the World Bank Economic Growth in the 1990. Learning From A Decade of Reforming in Journal of Economic Literature, vol. XLIV, pp. 973 - 987
- Transforming Our World: The 2030. Agenda for Sustainable Development (www.unfpa.org.../transformingourworld)
- Agenda 2030: The Sustainable Development Goals, UN Global Compact (www.unglobalcompact.org...sustainabledevelopment)
- United Nations, Climate Change Conference (30.11.2015.), (www.en.wikipedia.org/2015.)
- Carroll, A.; (1996.) Business And Society: Ethics And Stake Holder Management, Cincinnati Ohio, Salt Western Colledge Publishing, pp.30.
- Porter, M.; Kramer, M. (2011.), "Creating Shared Value: How To Reinvest Capitalism And Uncease a Wave of Inovation And Growth", Harvard Bussiness Review, pp. 64
- Nicolau, M., Teodorescu, M., Constantin, L., Teodorescu, C.; Balanced Scorecard And Sustainable Enterprise Strategy, Project Title: Integrated Support For Sustainable Development of Chemical Industry Companies, Through Implementation Ecoefficiency Priniciples, Integl - it, 2005., pp. 1
- Annual Report And Accounts 2015. - Unilever, (www.unilever.com)
- Martin, R. (2010.); The Age of Customer Capitalism, Harvard Bussiness Review, pp. 143
- Stiglitz, J., (2004.); Ekonomija javnog sektora, Ekonomski fakultet, Beograd, str. 217 - 245
- Spangenberg, J. H., (2002.) Enviromental Space And The Prism of Sustainability: Frameworks for Indicators Measuring Sustainable Development, Ecological Indicator 2(3); 295 - 309.
- Acemogly, D.; Robinson, J.; (2012.) Why Nations Failed: The Origins of Power Prosperity And Poverty; Krupa Publishing Group., pp. 544; (isbn 0307719235,9783077/9232).

CONTEMPORARY TECHNOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENTS IN HEALTH CARE FINANCE AND THEIR EFFECTS ON FINANCIAL SYNERGY

SEDA KARAGÖZ ZEREN *

Abstract: In last decades health care expenditure have been increasing. According to the rise in these expenditure, the importance of health care finance concept increase as well. Another concept affecting on health care finance in techonological developments is financial synergy. As it is assumed that techonological developments increase the efficiency of health care finance, the usage of techonological developments in health care finance has became the primary purpose for government. The usage of techonological developments in health care finance not only increases the efficiency but also helps to create financial synergy. In these research it is aimed to analyze the effect of usage of techonological developments in health care finance on create financial synergy. For these purpose, health care finance, techonological developments in health care finance and financial synergy concepts are explained. In order to analyze the effect of techonological developments in health care finance and financial synergy, content analyzes method is used.

Key Word: *Health Care Financing, Technological Developments, Financial Synergy*

1. Introduction

The World Health Organization (WHO) have been defined health in its broad sense in its 1948 constitution as "a state of complete physical, mental, and social well-being and not merely the absence of dis-

* Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Trakya University, Edirne/Turkey [sedakaragoz@trakya.edu.tr]

ease or infirmity (WHO, 2002:982). In 12 September 1978, An international conference about primary health care have been edited in Alma Ata and have been published reports in order to achieve exactly in the name of all people to maintain a healthy life and the protection of the health. According to an article published in this paper, among the objectives of the government is seen to be delivered the most appropriate and adequate health care services to the whole population. For this purpose, the countries attach importance to the issue of health financing which is a fundamental component of the national health system.

Health finance can be defined as creating the necessary resources to meet the cost of health care (Gottret ve Shieber, 2006:1). The provision and financing of health care can be simplified as an exchange or transfer of resources:the providers transfer health care resources to patients and patients or third parties transfer financial resources to the providers (Figure 1) (Mossialos and Dixon, 2002:2).

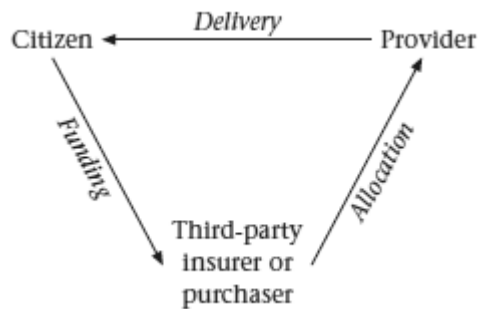


Figure 1. The health care triangle

Source: Mossialos, E. and Dixon, A., (2002a), Funding Health Care: An Introduction, Mossialos, E. Et al (eds.), Funding Health Care: Options for Europe, p.1-30, Open University Press, Buckingham Philadelphia, p.2.

Financial synergy is when the combination of two firms together results in greater value than if they were to operate separately. Financial synergies are most often evaluated in the context of mergers and acquisitions. These type of synergies relate to improvement in the financial metric of a combined business such as revenue, debt capacity, cost of capital, profitability, etc (www.divestopedia.com, 11.08.2016). The presence of increased current developments and updated technology facilitate the creation of financial synergies. Technology that is production equipment, production methods, products 'innovation' creativity; In this innovation, increase production, efficiency upgrades, are described as switches that provide competitive advantage and increase profits. Technology is not just for the company and the sector competitive advantages but also in terms of efficiency for the country has a vital importance and plays a determining role in the level of development or undevelopment in terms of the resulting impact. Health technology refers to any kind of technological applications in the health field that uses advanced technological structure. Chaudhry and et all. (2006) stated health information technology infrastructure as shown in Table 1.

Table 1. Health Information Technology Frameworks*

Framework	Basis (Reference)	Elements
Complements of an HIT implementation	Expert consensus	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> Technological (e.g., system applications) Organizational process change (e.g, workflow redesign) Human factors (e.g., user-friendliness) Project management (e.g., achieving project milestones)
Types of HIT systems	Expert consensus	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> Electronic health records Computerized provider order entry Decision support (stand-alone systems) Electronic results reporting

		(standalone systems) Electronic prescribing Consumer health informatics/ patient decision support Mobile computing Telemedicine (data interchange-based) Electronic health communication Administration Data exchange networks Knowledge retrieval systems HIT in general Other
Functional capabilities of an HIT system†	Institute of Medicine's "key capabilities" of an electronic health record (5)	Clinical documentation (health information/ data) Results management Order entry management Decision support Electronic communication and connectivity Patient support Administrative processes Reporting and population health

* HIT = health information technology.

† Assumes the electronic health record is the foundation for a comprehensive HIT system.

Source: Chaudhry B., Wang J., Wu S., Maglione M., Mojica W., Roth E., Morton S.C. and Shekelle P.G., (2006), "Systematic Review: Impact of Health Information Technology on Quality, Efficiency, and Costs of Medical Care", *Annals of Internal Medicine*, Vol.:144, N.:10, p:14.

With the growing interest in the health technology, health technology is needed to study examined all sizes. Research under the name of health care financing technological development, making the content analysis in order to determine deficiencies in terms of research issue, methods and data collection tools are important. In addition, previous studies may reveal a holistic view of work and is expected to create a steps of need analysis for further research. In this direction, the aim of this work is to the examine research between the years 2004-2016 that the regarding of health financing, technology and synergies according to publication type, research methods, the research topic, the researchers field of study and data collection tools. In accordance with the specified purpose is to answer the following research questions;

How is the number of publication distribution according to the years?

How do they use the research methods?

What are the issues dealt with research according to the years?

What are the data collection tools used in publications?

2. Methods

This study is based on content analysis of data collected through document review. Document analysis is evaluated as a qualitative research approach. According to this aspect, research is a qualitative. Document analysis method use to achieve the purpose of the research and detecting data obtained (Çepni, 2007). Content analysis is to be using the scientific method text or the content in another format, summarize the message classification, compared and quantified (Cohen, Monion, and Morrison, 2007).

In this study, national and international thesis, articles, papers, book chapters that are made between the years 2004-2016, with the keywords "health financing, health financing technology, medical technology, health care finance, technological developments in health care finance, health care technology, financial synergy" is scanned in EBSCO, Science Direct, Google Scholar, Higher Education Board index, Ulakbim broadcast national thesis center. In the second phase, university journals, academic publications that considered not scanned by the name directories were investigated Endnote database by mak-

ing the software and internet browsing. The third stage, the article, papers, theses, book chapters obtained in screening activities that focus on the issues assessed in accordance with the objectives of the study were excluded. In this study, accordance with the aims 45 the number of articles, theses, papers, book chapters were subjected to content analysis with Nvivo analysis program.

Data Collection Tool and Analysis of Data

Publication classification form developed by the researcher was used to collect data in this study (Appendix 1). In the development process, Firstly draft form created, after the necessary adjustments were made to the exchange of views between researchers and their peers about this form. The article examined the form, which is used as a data collection tool was collected information regarding the research tool; title, authors, journal, year, genre, writing language, subject, methods, data collection tools, method.

The resulting data which obtained 45 publication of the study results in the classification coding form are transferred to NVIVO package. After the accuracy of the data and the ensuring control of errors, according to the research questions descriptive statistical calculations are made in the form of a percentage and frequency.

Results

The data obtained in the working direction of the research questions in this section is presented in titles.

The number of publications by year

The number of publication that review of 45 studies by year are shown in Figure 2.

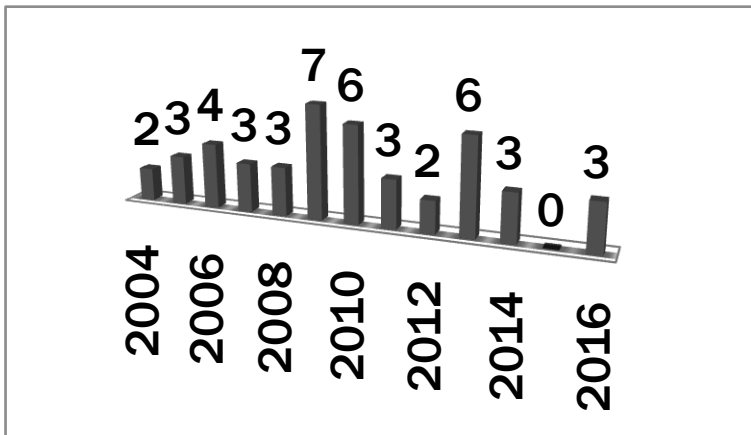


Figure 2. The number of publications by year

Considering Figure 2, While the most publication is shown in 2009 between the years 2004 to 2016 but the fewest publication is shown in 2015.

The number of publications by post type

The number of publication by post type are shown in Figure 3.

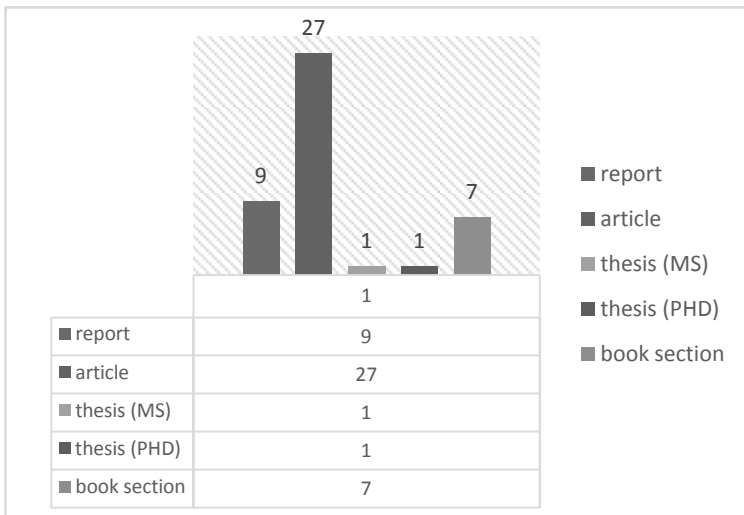


Figure 3. The number of publications by post type

As shown in Figure 3, When the number of publication by post type examine, The article number seems to be higher than the others.

Number of authors

The number of authors are shown in Figure 4

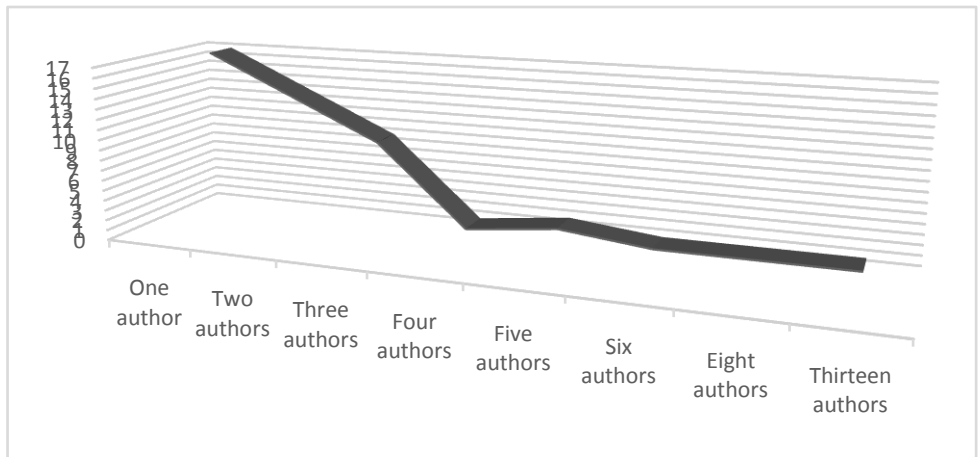


Figure 4. The number of authors

Considering Figure 4, In reviewed publications, There are one authored 17 publications, two authored 13 publications, three authored 9 publications, four authors of 1 publication, five-authored 2 publications and six, eight, thirteen authored 1 publication.

Research Methods and Patterns Used by Publishing Method

Research methods and patterns used by publishing method are shown in Figure 5.

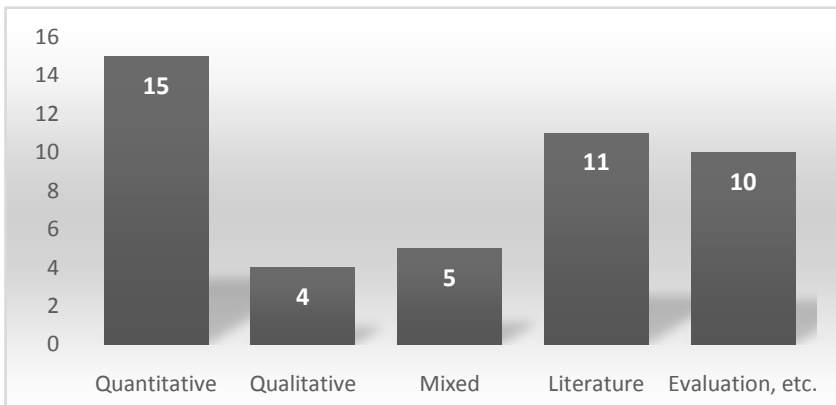


Figure 5. Research Methods and Patterns Used by Publishing Method

In Figure 5, research publications are being used in the most quantitative research methods. Publications that used the literature review and evaluation comes after the publication of quantitative research methods used. Then come the publications that mixed method is used. Finally comes the publications that used qualitative research methods.

JSHS|377

Data Collection Tools Pattern and Methods of Analyzes

Data collection tools pattern and methods of analyzes are shown in Figure 6.

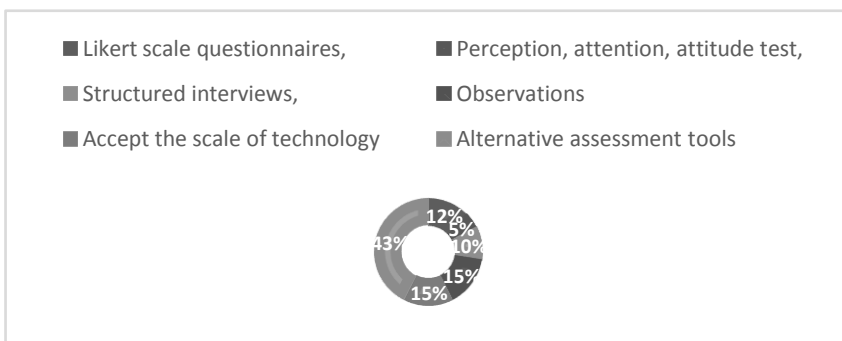


Figure 6. Data Collection Tools Pattern and Methods of Analyzes

There are used five likert scale questionnaires, two perceptions, attention, attitudes test, four structured interviews, six observation, six technology acceptance scale and seventeen alternative assessment tools as data collection tool in the examination of research, There are used thirty-three of data analysis, seventeen of forecasted analysis, thirteen of descriptive analysis, three of content analysis, two of experimental methods, twenty-three of unit research and five other qualitative data analysis methods.

3. Grouping of Keywords Used in Publications

The words examined in the publication are grouped under four keywords. The keywords are “health financing, health financing technology, health technology and financial synergy”. The words that are grouped keywords, the words character length and the frequency of used the word are shown in Table 2, Table 3, Table 4 and Table 5.

Table 2. Health Financing Keywords

	Words	Word Length	Word Frequency Count	Word Frequency Weighted Percentage
Health Financing Keywords	health	6	14	16.26%
	finance	7	6	6.98%
	effectiveness	13	6	6.98%
	public	6	5	5.81%
	special	7	4	4.65%
	insurance	9	4	4.65%
	sector	6	4	4.65%
	system	6	4	4.65%
	analysis	8	3	3.49%
	budget	6	3	3.49%
	evaluation	10	3	3.49%
	transformation	14	3	3.49%
	economic	8	3	3.49%
financial	9	2	2.32%	

funds	5	2	2.32%
expenses	8	2	2.32%
performance	11	2	2.32%
program	7	2	2.32%
insurance	9	2	2.32%
flow	4	2	2.32%
growth	6	2	2.32%
pocket	6	2	2.32%
punishments	11	2	2.32%
state	5	1	1.18%
order	5	1	1.18%
low	3	1	1.18%
equalization	12	1	1.18%

Table 3. Health Financing Technology Keywords

	Words	Word Length	Word Frequency Count	Word Frequency Weighted Percentage
Health Financing Technology Keywords	bio-banking	10	4	7.86%
	health	6	4	7.86%
	information	11	2	3.92%
	equal	5	2	3.92%
	technological	11	2	3.92%
	utopias	7	2	3.92%
	data	4	2	3.92%
	efficient	9	2	3.92%
	productivity	12	1	1.96%
	search	6	1	1.96%
	connection	10	1	1.96%

computed	8	1	1.96%
digital	7	1	1.96%
teeth	5	1	1.96%
economy	7	1	1.96%
electronic	10	1	1.96%
effective	9	1	1.96%
finance	7	1	1.96%
financial	9	1	1.96%
fund	4	1	1.96%
safe	4	1	1.96%
patient	7	1	1.96%
hospital	8	1	1.96%
tracing	7	1	1.96%
codification	12	1	1.96%
spherical	9	1	1.96%
cost-based	9	1	1.96%
model	5	1	1.96%
reform	6	1	1.96%
provider	8	1	1.96%
set	3	1	1.96%
system	6	1	1.96%
systemic	8	1	1.96%
technical	9	1	1.96%
technology	10	1	1.96%
encouragement	13	1	1.96%
application	11	1	1.96%
innovator	9	1	1.96%
timing	8	1	1.96%

Table 4. Health Technology Keywords

	Words	Word Length	Word Frequency Count	Word Frequency Weighted Percentage
Health Technology Keywords	health	6	33	19.87%
	information	11	16	9.63%
	system	6	13	7.82%
	technology	10	11	6.62%
	IT	2	8	4.81%
	electronic	10	7	4.22%
	tele-medicine	12	7	4.22%
	data	4	7	4.22%
	record	6	6	3.62%
	six-sigma	8	6	3.62%
	bank	4	4	2.41%
	hospital	8	4	2.41%
	special	7	4	2.41%
	medical	7	3	1.81%
	smart	5	3	1.81%
	arge	4	3	1.81%
	computers	9	2	1.21%
	devices	7	2	1.21%
	support	7	2	1.21%
	activity	8	2	1.21%
	card	4	2	1.21%
medulla	7	2	1.21%	
measuring	9	2	1.21%	
organizational	14	2	1.21%	

governance	10	2	1.21%
flow	4	1	0.60%
analysis	8	1	0.60%
tools	5	1	0.60%
research	8	1	0.60%
dependency	10	1	0.60%
core	4	1	0.60%
Answers	7	1	0.60%
distribution	12	1	0.60%
changes	7	1	0.60%
information	11	1	0.60%
access	6	1	0.60%
equal	5	1	0.60%
activity	8	1	0.60%

Table 5. Financial Synergy Keywords

	Words	Word Length	Word Frequency Count	Fre- Frequency Weighted Percentage
Financial Synergy Keywords	cooperation	11	3	6.83%
	public	6	2	4.56%
	commissions	11	2	4.56%
	special	7	2	4.56%
	projects	8	2	4.56%
	health	6	2	4.56%
	accreditation	13	1	2.27%
	contract	8	1	2.27%
	research	8	1	2.27%
	bank	4	1	2.27%

mergers	7	1	2.27%
work	4	1	2.27%
interdisciplinary	17	1	2.27%
effectiveness	13	1	2.27%
developer	9	1	2.27%
development	11	1	2.27%
need	4	1	2.27%
dual-relations	13	1	2.27%
comparison	10	1	2.27%
organizations	13	1	2.27%
center	6	1	2.27%
multisectoral	13	1	2.27%
organizations	13	1	2.27%
partner	7	1	2.27%
partnerships	12	1	2.27%
automation	10	1	2.27%
payment	7	1	2.27%
party	5	1	2.27%
reform	6	1	2.27%
synergy	7	1	2.27%
system	6	1	2.27%
network	7	1	2.27%
contract	8	1	2.27%
team	4	1	2.27%
fixing	6	1	2.27%
National	8	1	2.27%
international	13	1	2.27%

4. Discussion

In the publications, while the concept of cost-effectiveness in health financing keywords come forward, the concept of public and private insurance create concepts that follow this concept. In the health financing technologies keywords emerge from concept of bio-banking. While there is in the foreground the concept of health information system in health technology keywords, it is seen that the concept of cooperation and commission in the financial synergy keywords.

In examining the publication on behalf to used efficiently and effectively health financing technology, although it is seen that the interest in the field of health technology does not aroused more curiosity, it is thought to be useful integrating the use of health technology in the process of creation and use of health financing.

It is thought that integration of health technology with technological advances into health finance is beneficial for health finance system and creation of public-private partnerships and cooperation. With the advancement of technological infrastructure, health financing systems are expected to provide productivity applications, which will be in the future and financial synergies are expected to be created.

It is thought that the results obtained from this study may reveal a lack of previous studies on the subject. Acoordingly, it is considered that the results obtained from this study may guide for further studies.


Appendix

Publication Classification Form


PUBLICATION INFO		
Publication title:		
Publication Year:	<input type="radio"/> 2004 <input type="radio"/> 2005 <input type="radio"/> 2006 <input type="radio"/> 2007 <input type="radio"/> 2008 <input type="radio"/> 2009 <input type="radio"/> 2010 <input type="radio"/> 2011 <input type="radio"/> 2012 <input type="radio"/> 2013 <input type="radio"/> 2014 <input type="radio"/> 2015 <input type="radio"/> 2016	
The author's name and number:		
Publication Type:	<input type="radio"/> Report <input type="radio"/> Article <input type="radio"/> Thesis (MS.) <input type="radio"/> Thesis (PHD) <input type="radio"/> Book chapter	
Publication language:	<input type="radio"/> Turkish <input type="radio"/> English <input type="radio"/> Turkish and English	
KEYWORDS		
1. Health Financing		
2. Health Financing Technology		
3. Health Technology		
4. Financial Synergy		
RESEARCH FEATURES		
Method:	<input type="radio"/> Quantitative <input type="radio"/> Qualitative <input type="radio"/> Mixed <input type="radio"/> Literature <input type="radio"/> Assessment and etc.	
The Sample:	Sample Type	Sample Size
	<input type="radio"/> Students <input type="radio"/> Academics <input type="radio"/> Hospitals <input type="radio"/> Hospital Employees <input type="radio"/> Information Technology Institutions <input type="radio"/> Insurance Agencies <input type="radio"/> States	<input type="radio"/> Between 1-10 <input type="radio"/> Between 11-30 <input type="radio"/> Between 31-100 <input type="radio"/> Between 101-300 <input type="radio"/> Between 301-1000 <input type="radio"/> More than 1000
DATA COLLECTION INSTRUMENTS		
1. Survey: <input type="radio"/> Open-ended <input type="radio"/> Likert <input type="radio"/> Other 2. Achievement Test: <input type="radio"/> Open-Ended <input type="radio"/> Multiple Choice 3. Perception, attention, round and similar tests <input type="radio"/> 4. Interview: <input type="radio"/> Structured <input type="radio"/> Semi-structured <input type="radio"/> Unstructured 5. Observation <input type="radio"/> 6. Technology Acceptance Scale <input type="radio"/> 7. Alternative Assessment Tools <input type="radio"/>		
DATA ANALYSIS METHODS		
QUANTITATIVE DATA ANALYSIS		QUALITATIVE DATA ANALYSIS
1. Descriptive: <input type="radio"/> Frequency / Percent <input type="radio"/> Average / Standard Deviation <input type="radio"/> Display Graphics 2. Forecasted: <input type="radio"/> Correlation <input type="radio"/> t-test, <input type="radio"/> ANOVA, <input type="radio"/> ANCOVA <input type="radio"/> MANOVA <input type="radio"/> MANCOVA <input type="radio"/> Factor Analysis <input type="radio"/> Non-parametric regression test <input type="radio"/> Other 3. Content Analysis <input type="radio"/> 4. Experimental Method <input type="radio"/>		1. Field Research <input type="radio"/> 2. Case <input type="radio"/> 3. Other <input type="radio"/>

References


- Chaudhry B., Wang J., Wu S., Maglione M., Mojica W., Roth E., Morton S.C. and Shekelle P.G., (2006), "Systematic Review: Impact of Health Information Technology on Quality, Efficiency, and Costs of Medical Care", *Annals of Internal Medicine*, Vol.:144, N.:10, p:12-22.
- Cohen, L., Manion, L., Morrison, K., (2007), *Research methods in education* (6th ed.), New York, NY: Routledge.
- Çepni, S., (2007), *Araştırma ve Proje Çalışmalarına Giriş* (3.Baskı), Pegem A Yayıncılık, Trabzon.
- Gottret P. ve Schieber G. (2006), *Health Financing Revisited: A Practitioner's Guide*, The World Bank, Washington, p:1-324.
- Key Capabilities of an Electronic Health Record System, (2003), Washington, DC: Institute of Medicine, Committee on Data Standards for Patient Safety Board on Health Care Services.
- Mossialos, E. and Dixon, A., (2002), *Funding Health Care: An Introduction*, Mossialos, E. Et al (eds.), *Funding Health Care: Options for Europe*, p:1-30, Open University Press, Buckingham – Philadelphia.
- World Health Organization. WHO definition of Health, Preamble to the Constitution of the World Health Organization as adopted by the International Health Conference, New York, 19–22 June 1946; signed on 22 July 1946 by the representatives of 61 States (Official Records of the World Health Organization, no:2, p:100) and entered into force on 7 April 1948. In Grad, Frank P. (2002), *The Preamble of the Constitution of the World Health Organization*, *Bulletin of the World Health Organization*, 80 (12): 982.
- Internet access source, 11.08.2016,
<https://www.divestopedia.com/definition/5005/financial-synergy>.



WHY EMPLOYEE'S SHAREHOLDERS FROM MACEDONIAN COMPANIES HAVE BEEN DISAPPEARING?




BLAGOJA SPIRKOSKI *
RADICA DISHLIESKA *



Abstract: The purpose of this paper is to investigate the relationship between workers and managers during the processes of transitions and privatization in the Republic of Macedonia. The major research question of this paper is: why employee's shareholders and the management of the Macedonian company failed to establish good cooperation between them to satisfy the principles of effectiveness, efficiency and justice? Our findings suggest that the main problem in this cooperation between the employee's shareholders and the managers was equalization of the initiatives between them. The initiatives must be appropriate, so that the labor force and the management can find common interest in working in the company – and consequently share the risk and determine the level of the employment of the capital and labor which contributes to the permanent development of the company. The results of our research in Macedonian companies have shown that employee's shareholders have been disappearing because the primary aim of significant majority of Macedonian managers is to become owners of the company, while not being good managers at the same time.

Key Word: *Cooperative enterprises, labour-capital partnerships, employee ownership*



* IBU University - Skopje, [bspirkoski@yahoo.com]

* FON University – Skopje, [radica.dishlieska@fon.edu.mk]

1. Introduction

In enterprises with employee share ownership of the workers and managers where they are on the same side as owners in terms of the share ownership, they obtain a role completely different of their "natural role" according to classical division of labour.

Since incentives play an important role in any pay plan, employers and managers use performance-based incentives to motivate employees. Employers use long-term incentives to inject a long-term strategic perspective into their executive's decisions. Popular long-term incentives include cash, stock, stock options, stock appreciation rights, and phantom stock. Although about 85% of large employers reportedly use some type of group- or team-based incentives, actually "many employers take the team incentive idea to the next logical level and institute incentive plans in which all or most employees participate,... organization-wide incentive plans are plans in which all or most employees can participate, and which generally tie the reward to some measure of company-wide performance."¹

Profit-sharing plans are plans in which all or most employees receive a share of the

Firms annual profits. There are several types of profit-sharing plans. ESOPs² are company-wide plans in which the employer contributes shares of its own stock to a trust established to purchase shares of the firms stock for employees.

ESOPs, profit sharing plans, and stock bonus plans are all governed by the Employee Retirement Income Security Act, in the USA. They all have the same rules for eligibility, allocation of benefits, and vesting. Contributions to all the plans are tax-deductible.

ESOPs have substantial additional tax benefits beyond the deductibility of contributions, most notably the ability of sellers to certain

¹ Dressler Garry, Human Resource Management, 13th Edition, Pearson, 2013, pp. 409

² See more Scott Rodrick: An Introduction to ESOPs, 14th edition, by the National Center for Employee Ownership (NCEO), 2014

ESOPs to defer capital gains taxes. Also, only ESOPs can borrow money on the credit of the company to buy employer stock. Stock bonus and profit sharing plans have somewhat less restrictive rules than ESOPs.

The end of 2015, the National Centre for Employee Ownership (NCEO) estimated there are roughly 7,000 employee stock ownership plans (ESOPs) covering about 13.5 million employees in the USA. Since the beginning of the 21st century there has been a decline in the number of *plans* but an increase in the number of *participants*.

According to NCEO, there are also about 2,000 profit sharing and stock bonus plans that are substantially invested in company stock and are like ESOPs in other ways. In addition, it estimates that roughly 9 million employees participate in plans that provide stock options or other individual equity to most or all employees. Up to 5 million participate in 401(k) plans that are primarily invested in employer stock. As many as 11 million employees buy shares in their employer through employee stock purchase plans.

Eliminating overlap, NCEO estimate that approximately 28 million employees participate in an employee ownership plan. These numbers are estimates, but are probably conservative. Overall, employees now control about 8% of corporate equity in the USA. About two-thirds of ESOPs are used to provide a market for the shares of a departing owner of a profitable, closely held company. Most of the remainder are used either as a supplemental employee benefit plan or as a means to borrow money in a tax-favoured manner.

JSHS|389

ESOP-like plans are defined as profit sharing, stock bonus, and other defined contribution plans that are substantially (at least 20%) invested in employer stock, and have at least five participants. Each kind of plan provides employees with some special consideration in price or terms.

In recent decades governments also EU “have sought to encourage such schemes and have actively promoted their establishment with advantageous tax arrangements”³. Actually, underlying government support is the

³ Derek Torrington, Laura Hall, Stephen Taylor and Carol Atkinson: Human Resource Management, 9th edition, Pearson Education Limited, 2014, pp 444.

belief that linking pay to profits increases the employee's commitment to his or her company by deepening the level of mutual interest.

2. Relationship between managers and employees shareholders in the process of privatization in Republic of Macedonia

The concept of employee shareholders existed in Macedonia before the process of privatization started, as a part of the process of privatization in former Yugoslavia. That process was dependant on the relationship between two actors - managers and workers in the case of the Macedonian process of privatization. The question arises why we had only two actors in the process of privatization in the Republic of Macedonia? Because the owners of social enterprises - the state - there was only an administrative role in the privatization process. The managers and employees had right first (had the priority) to buy the shares of the companies. The relations among those two actors had depended on the social context and tended to develop in two directions:

First, to agree the mutual interests and deals as one body, in attempt to create one new enterprising firm within levelling the initiative between them they created the strategy management orientated company.

Second, managers as shareholders have tried to return ownership control in the firms and in that case their existence and development was based on the principles of the classical capitalist enterprise, was and it created the conditions for marginalisation and disappearing of the employee shareholders.

In many enterprises with employee share ownership in Macedonian companies second directions dominated. There are very seldom examples where we can find the enterprises with articulate interest between employers, managers and employees, as relations in ESOPs.

In many enterprises with employee's ownership in Macedonian companies the connection among employees and managers faced distrust and absence of confidence.

To obtain clear idea of the reasons of the above distrust, it is very important to explain the relationship between employees as shareholders, in the case of the Macedonian enterprises.

There are very seldom examples where we can find the enterprises with articulate interest between employers. Namely, they seldom attack as one body ahead of the board of directors.

The employee shareholders during privatization process did not have good organisation and that is a result of the following facts:

During the transition managers have unlimited command without control by the state or any subjects or body within enterprises. If the supervisory board existed in some joint-stock company it was appointed by the proposal of the managers and in many cases that didn't function. This situation has contributed to the increase of the impossibility for any kind of organisation of the employee in conditions of the mass unemployment and daily bankrupts of enterprises.

In conditions of not existing stock exchange and also culture for financial markets, employee shareholding seems helpless and not organised.

Employee shareholders during the process of privatisation and growth often obtain incomplete information.

JSHS|391

The population employed in the public administration was excluded from the privatization process.

The legislator did not provide form of interest association - as employee share ownership trust - as the second legal entity within enterprise, where one part or all employee will join own interest or will channel own interest.

No political party in the Republic of Macedonia with their own political action contributed to strengthening the idea of protection and improvement of employee shareholder. The main political parties viewed the employee shareholder as going over the phase or process of capital concentration.

The Trade Union of Macedonia, as many other social organisations, makes certain steps in mobilisation of the employees shareholders, but their effects are small because they are alone in this action.

The Macedonian managers, however, are not ready to face with employee shareholders. They lack practical experiences of the employee's shareholders in the world. The confusion is bigger when the

society has not clear vision for further existence and development of the employee shareholding.

Actually, the managers in many companies, following the old system and current problems to secure existing on the market, they increased the level of bureaucracy in making and achieving the decisions, instead of realising the need of qualitative change of their own attitude in terms of privatisation of the ownership in their company.

And this leads us to the central question: can employee's shareholders and management operate in an efficient and fair manner? Or in other words: can employee's shareholders and the management cooperate between themselves to satisfy the principles of efficiency and justice?

The main problem in this co-operation between the employee's shareholders and the management, in terms of fair redistribution of the capital is equalisation of the initiatives between them so that the efficiency would be maximised. The initiatives must be appropriate, so that the labour and the management will find common interest in working in the company - to share the risk and to determine the level of the employment of the capital and labour which gives permanent development of the company.

The success in management with employee share ownership enterprise will depend on understanding the function of different roles for all employees. For example, it is essential to differentiate between management (strategic and tactics) and operative direction in achieving different activities.

In such cases it is very important to remember the words of Patrick Donald. He wrote: "The different roles on the employees - as workers and owners have to be implemented in the structure of the enterprise, which gives workers opportunity to use the rights of owners, and in same time gives freedom on the management to work efficiently".⁴

⁴ Patrick D. : "Managing own company", Job Ownership LTD, Landon, 1995, pp 11-12

In the the employee shareholding there are some difficulties in their function, but they are not based on the character of employee share ownership. Namely, the number of enterprises in Republic of Macedonia with employee share ownership that are bankrupt, as a result of discordant adjustment of the market exchange, lost the market, overemployment, insufficiently educated management and etc. is not insignificant.

With appearance and growth of the employee share ownership a possibility was established to build a new enterprising firm and with that also economic system based on the humanistic economic philosophy, based on these principles:

Human resources are the most important factor of production and are the ultimate origin of the market value of all goods produced;

People, unlike non-human resources, are intellectual (intelligence-carrying) beings in that they are capable of thinking, annualising, inventing, innovating, and developing information vital for the creation of wealth;

People are psychological (emotional) beings whose productivity may rise or fall depending on whether they are motivated or demoralised by their work environment.⁵

The base value of the now humanistic enterprising system in which labour and management are playing the main roles, is based on following:

sharing (right, responsibility, risk, information and outcomes of their work);

participation and co-operation;

recognise the people as intellectual and as psychological beings; and

review on the enterprise as economic and as social organisation.

In this economical system the managers and the employees identify themselves with their company. As results of their evolutionary de-

⁵ Robert S. Ozaki: "Human Capitalism", Kodansha International, Tokyo, 1991, pp. 10

velopment, highly developed countries created real presumptions for the beginning of creation of social market participatory economical system and they build new styles of management.

In the countries which were in transition these processes had more manifesting than essential character? Namely, during the process of transition companies were characterised by modest knowledge in the management and low accumulative ability. They also were forced to accept the classical development of the capitalism faster, rather than experiment with the employee shareholding and strategic thinking. This kind of social reality has been in the Republic of Macedonia too.

In the companies which have privatized in Macedonia, the employee ownership participants were with different percent in the structure of the capital in the company. According to this criterion, they can be classified (conditionally) in these groups:

Companies with total employee ownership or with significant participation of the employees in the capital of the company.

Companies where the package of shares belongs to the manager's team and where the participation of the employees in the capital of the company is small.

Companies which belong to insiders (employees and managers) and outsiders (people from outside who are owners of the biggest part of the capital in the company).

In all these companies the employee ownership have been developed differently and main factor has been the ability of the company to make profit which will be reinvested in the same company, so that have been created real conditions for their growing.

In those companies which were not capable to modernise the technical-technological equipment with their own accumulation, the next stage was involvement in debts or outsider's investors which, on the other hand, can create real chances for losing the independence of the company, because sooner or later the investment of the outsider can become dominant. Thus, there is a real danger to reduce or to disappear completely the employee shareholding in these companies.

Another important factor for the further existence of employee shareholding is the relationship between employee's shareholders and the managers. The development of the relations between them will be depending on their interest to build a stable company with long-team perspective, which will produce permanent work security and fair rewarding.

These relationships can be developed, if "every employee must be literally overwhelmed with the idea for the quality of each aspect of the business, and everybody must work continuously to improve the products and the services, as well as the production systems and processes."⁶

The following of these principles need a level of culture which makes the management more responsible task than a privilege, where the duty of the managers is to take care for good preparation of the employees. All this creates a horizontal structure of managing which is directed to the clients.

The companies in the first group, especially when there exists real an exchange stock, when they want to keep the function of control in their hands, they have to make a deal for limitation or prohibition of the selling plan shares to outside people. The shareholders and the Board of directors in the deal must predict special rules in case when shares change their owner. For example, if the employees leave the company or if they retire on a pension, then, they have an obligation to regulate the functioning of the inter market of share, as well as to ensure fair trade price of shares, which depends of the supply and the demand of shares in the company.

JSHS|395

The practice in these cases distinguishes two ways for selling the shares:

the shares can be bought by other employees, and

the only one who sells and buys shares is a special fund so called a trust, which is created with saving money from the net profit and controlled by specially formed Board of employees.

⁶ Patrick D.: "Managing own company", Job Ownership Ltd, London, 1995, pp.-16


Only Federation of Trade Unions of Macedonia (SSM) together with Job Ownership Ltd (“JOL”) from the UK, had tried to propose certain amendments to the Law on Commercial Law, that will be allowed in companies can staff to set up the Internal Trust Fund as a second legal identity within the company, in the 1999. It would enable workers common shareholders to protect their interests from various pressures. Nevertheless, the Macedonian Parliament rejected these proposals and created conditions for the gradual disappearance of the workers' shareholding in the country.

The manager teams, especially those from the second and the third group of companies, and also in the first group of companies there was a big pressure for gradual taking over of the company, by using different kinds of pressures and dishonest methods (blackmail, threat, act.) on the employees shareholders, in order to sell their shares with very low prices or to give the shares to arrogant managers, in order to keep their jobs.


In these companies the employee shareholding disappeared, because nobody had taken appropriate steps to protect the rights of employees as stockholders. In the early stages of the process of privatisation, this protection had realised only by the Federation of Trade Unions of Macedonia (SSM), but without satisfying results.

Conclusion


There was a big pressure for gradual taking over of the companies from managers or manager's teams, by using different kinds of pressures and dishonest methods (blackmail, threat, and act.) on the employee's shareholders, in order to sell their shares with very low prices or to give the shares to arrogant managers, in order to keep their jobs. The employee shareholding gradually disappeared, because nobody had taken appropriate steps to protect the rights of employees as stockholders.



THE IMPACT OF FINANCIAL SYSTEM DIVERSITY UPON ECONOMIC GROWTH IN EEC




RADIĆA DIŠHLIĚSKA *
BLAGOJA SPIRKOSKI *



Abstract: Economic theory suggests that an efficient financial system which channels capital to its most productive uses creates an advantageous climate for economic growth. Sound and efficient financial system is important for sustaining growth in developing Eastern European countries, because efficiency of investment will overshadow quantity of investment as a driver of growth in the region. Therefore, this paper examines the possible causal relationship between financial sector development and economic growth among Eastern European countries. Theoretical aspect points to presence of complex relationship between the financial system development and economic growth. Empirical evidence depends on the time period analyzed as well as the sub-samples of the possible correlation of the financial development with economic growth, which can be positive or negative. The annual data used indicate that the causality in Granger sense of this process can run one way or another, depending on the country in question.

Key Word: *financial system, financial development, Granger causality test, economic growth*



* FON University – Skopje, [radica.dishlieska@fon.edu.mk]

* IBU University - Skopje, [bspirkoski@yahoo.com]

1. Introduction

The main objective of this paper is to perform an analysis in order to examine the potential relationship between financial system diversity and economic growth in the sample of Eastern European countries. To reach the specific purpose, the subsequent steps have to be taken: first, an analysis of the theoretical relationship between development of diversified financial sector and economic growth; second, empirical projection of the theoretical relationship.

According to Levine (2005), financial institutions and markets can promote economic growth through particular channels: (1) facilitation of the exchange of goods and services through decreasing provision of payment; (2) creating the pool of disposable savings from significant number of different investors; (3) using the savings of the enterprises for the realization of the most productive investment projects; (4) monitoring investment and implementation of corporate governance, and (5) diversification through increasing liquidity and decreasing intertemporal risk. Therefore, those functions have significant impact on savings and investment decisions and correspondingly to economic growth.

In addition to this, many researchers indicated that the size of the financial sector is closely related to the integral economic performance of the country. It is considered the country with higher GDP per capita achieved the faster growth in the financial assets. Another significant point to the research points to the fact that the fast and tenable economic growth at the end of the 1990s becomes additional incentive for the increase of foreign capital inflows to EEC.

As a result of reforms undertaken in EEC on the economic, financial and institutional aspect, has been registered significant growth of direct and portfolio equity investments in those countries.

International capital inflows promote financial deeping through higher demand for financial services, which presents valuable instrument for financial sector development.

The key factors of permanently increasing depth of the internal financial sector in Eastern European countries are the following:

Increased level of financial liberalization started in the late 1990s accompanied by the macroeconomic stabilization in EEC.

Substantial foreign capital inflows due to continuous low domestic capital.

Replacement of the weak legal and institutional financial sector infrastructure with enhanced legal framework which enables increased efficiency of the financial system in order to stimulate the financial deeping.

Rising competition among internal commercial banks.

Softening conditions in monetary policy as a cause for decreasing domestic interest rates.

Sound and stable macroeconomic policies in order to enable long term growth of the financial sector.

Numerous studies indicate that there is a bidirectional link between financial development and economic growth. It is supposed there is a positive effect of financial development and economic growth.

In the study we examine the key aspects of the financial system diversity in eight EEC in the period 1995-2015 using vector error correction model. In order to achieve this goal we conduct a multivariate cointegration methodology established by Johansen (1988, 1991) as well as Johansen and Juselius (1990) to evaluate the relationships between financial system indicators and real output in the selected group of EEC. In addition, we test the time series in the period 1995-2015 to determine unit root presence in order to show integration of internal variables. Finally, for non-stationary series with a cointegrating relationship, the Granger-causality test has been applied, after the construction of vector error correction model (VECM).

2. Theoretical background

Many studies have confirmed that the relationship between financial system development and economic growth is a controversial issue. Some economists, like Goldsmith (1969) and McKinnon (1973) emphasized the significant benefits of financial sector development and financial liberalization. In this regard, since the 1990s, evolving empirical literature highlights that financial sector development is sig-

nificant factor for economic growth. On the other hand, at the moment when financial sector liberalization spread around the world, it has been noted diminishing influence of financial sector development on economic growth.

The estimation established in the empirical study by King and Levine (1993) comprises about 80 countries for the period from 1960 to 1989 and by using cross-country regression model, analysed the possible connection between certain indicators of size and relative importance of financial intermediaries and the accumulation of capital rate and the rise of productivity as the key factors of the economic growth. Their research found a positive and statistically significant relationship between several financial development indicators and GDP per capita growth.

La Porta *et al.*(1998) research, has been followed by increasing number of studies which indicated that the differences in the legal systems of the countries have impact on the level of financial system development with substantial consequences to economic growth.

The advancement in the financial system development and the financial diversity in European transition economies (Buiter – Taci, 2003) are conceived to be a key aspect of the permanently increasing process of the international financial integration. As a result on the impact of different institutional aspects, central planning period and transitional inflexibilities to the overall progress is extremely tough to assess general linkage and relationship between (a) the financial system development and the financial diversity and (b) the international financial integration. Eichengreen (1997) indicates that the financial integration causes the financial diversity which stimulates faster growth, higher investment and rising living standards.

Hasan, Wachtel and Zhou (2007) claim that the financial system diversity and the international financial integration may not be followed only with positive influence on the economic growth and the entire effect depends by the financial diversification features, as well as the structure of the external capital inflows.

Calderón (2002) used the Geweke decomposition test (Geweke, 1982) on unit data of 109 developing and industrial countries in the period 1960-1994 with aim to examine the trend of causality be-

tween financial development and economic growth and adopted the following conclusions:

3. Financial development induces the economic growth;

Coexistence of both opposite relations, such as: the Granger causality from financial development to economic growth and vice versa;

Financial diversity provokes more to the causality relations in the developing countries;

The longer interval of the sample contributes for more significant effect of financial development on economic growth;

Financial diversity stirs economic growth through intensive capital accumulation and growth of productivity.

Kenourgios and Samitas study (2007) have been focused on the transition economies, particularly on analyzing the long-run relationship between finance and economic growth for Poland and deduced that private sector credit has been one of the most stimulating forces of long-run growth.

JSHS|401

Winkler (2009) analyses the process of rapid financial diversification and coherent risks for Southeastern European countries and concludes that is impossible to guarantee financial stability through the rising entry of foreign banks.

4. Econometric model

With the aim to examine the effects of the financial diversification on the economic growth in eight EEC, we evaluate a vector error correction model (VECM). The paper applies a multivariate cointegration methodology established by Johansen (1988, 1991) and Johansen and Juselius (1990) to evaluate the possible relationship between financial depth indicators and real output of selected group of Eastern European countries. This method is based on a vector autoregression model (VAR) of order p (lags) to analyze the long run relationships that may exist among representative non-stationary variables:

$$Y_t = \mu + A_1 Y_{t-1} + A_2 Y_{t-2} + \dots + A_p Y_{t-p} + \varepsilon_t \quad (1)$$

where Y_t is a $n \times 1$ vector of endogenous variables that are integrated of order one – commonly denoted $I(1)$, μ is a $n \times 1$ vector of the constants, A_i are $n \times n$ polynomial variance-covariance matrix, $\varepsilon_t \sim N_n(0, \Sigma_\varepsilon)$ is a $n \times 1$ normalized vector of innovations (exogenous shocks).

In the case when at least two variables are cointegrated of the order one ($I(1)$), the VAR in the previous equation can be rewritten by deducting Y_{t-1} to the vector error correction model:

$$\Delta Y_t = \mu + \Pi Y_{t-1} + \sum_{i=1}^{p-1} \Gamma_i \Delta Y_{t-1} + \varepsilon_t \quad (2)$$

where ΔY_t is a $n \times 1$ vector of the first differences of stochastic variables Y_t , $\Pi = \sum_{i=1}^p A_i - I$, $\Gamma_i = -\sum_{j=i+1}^p A_j$, I is $n \times n$ identity matrix.

The VECM model comprises information on short-term and long-term adjustments to changes in Y_t , enclosed in projected Γ and Π appropriately. Γ represents the dynamic of the model in the short run, respectively adjustments to changes in Y_t , while Π represents the long run relationship among the variables included in the vector Y_t . Therefore, the matrix Π determines the number of error correction terms in the model and is called impact matrix. Π can be decomposed as follows:

$$\Pi = \alpha \beta' \quad (3)$$

where the elements of α represent adjustment parameters in the vector error correction model, while each column of β is the cointegrating vector. The variable r is the number of cointegrating relationships. If the coefficient matrix Π has reduced rank $r < n$, there exist $n \times r$ matrices α and β , each with rank r such that $\Pi = \alpha \beta'$ and $\beta' y_t$ is stationary. VECM requires presence of at least one cointegrating relationship.

Johansen recommends two different likelihood ratio tests of significance of respective canonical correlations and thereby the reduced rank of the Π matrix: the trace test and maximum eigenvalue test, shown in the following equations respectively.

$$\lambda_{trace}(r) = -T \sum_{i=r+1}^n \ln(1 - \hat{\lambda}_i^2) \quad (4)$$

$$\lambda_{max}(r, r+1) = -T \ln(1 - \hat{\lambda}_{r+1}^2) \quad (5)$$

where T is the sample size and $\hat{\lambda}_i$ is the i :th largest canonical correlation. The trace test tests the null hypothesis of r cointegrating vectors against the optional hypothesis of n cointegrating vectors. On the other hand, the maximum eigenvalue test, tests the null hypothesis of r cointegrating vectors against the optional hypothesis of $r+1$ cointegrating vectors.

The next step before projecting the model is related with testing the time series for stationarity. According to the study of Engle and Granger (1987) is required that all variables within the cointegration relationship have to possess the same order of integration.

The key point of our study is connected to testing the direction of the causality linkages between financial depth indicators and real output using linear Granger causality test defined by the equation:

x_t is said not to Granger-cause y_t , if

$$E(y_{t+p} | \Omega_t) = E(y_{t+p} | \Omega_t - x_t) \quad (\forall p > 0) \quad (6)$$

where x_t and y_t are two time series, E denotes the conditional distribution and $\Omega_t - x_t$ is all the information in the universe except series x_t . Therefore, x_t is said to not Granger-cause y_t , if X cannot help predict future Y .

Applying the projected VECM, the dynamic responses of the internal variables to the money stock, domestic bank deposits and domestic bank loans one standard deviation shocks are computed for any country from the group of EEC.

5. Data and results

In our paper, we used annual data ranging from 1995 to 2015 (21 observations) for the financial depth indicators (presented by the participation of broad money stock M2 (m), domestic bank deposits (d) and domestic bank loans (l) to GDP), GDP (y), inflation (p) represented by the adjusted domestic consumer price index, nominal effective exchange rate (NEER) (e) and short-term interest rates (i).

Time series for broad money stock (monetary aggregate) M2, domestic bank deposits, domestic bank loans and GDP are seasonally adjusted and with NEER are indicated as indexes with base line year 2010. From the other side, inflation rate and interest rate are estimated as an annual percentage change of adjusted consumer price index indicated on the quarterly base.

First of all, before computing the model, we test the time series for stationarity. To ascertain the order of integration of different variables we use augmented Dickey-Fuller (ADF) and the Phillips-Perron (PP) tests. The ADF and PP tests differ mainly in how they treat serial correlation in the test regressions. Namely, ADF test use a parametric autoregressive structure to capture serial correlation (trend-stationary) while PP test use non-parametric corrections based on estimates of the long-run variance of Δy_t (difference-stationary). Those tests were used to test the endogenous variables for the existence of the unit roots.

When all the endogenous variables order of integration is identified, it is necessary to test the time series for cointegration by Johansen cointegration test. The Johansen test and estimation strategy makes it possible to estimate all cointegrating vectors when there are more than two variables. A suitable lag length for endogenous variables is selected by usage of AIC (Akaike Information Criterion) and SIC (Schwarz Information Criterion).

Accordingly to the results of the unit root tests and cointegration tests, we apply Granger causality test and calculate the model using first differences of the variables. Toward assessment the responses of the real output (GDP) to the money stock, domestic deposits and domestic loans, we evaluate following three models for separate country from the group of EEC - model A ($Y_t = [m_t, y_t, p_t, e_t, i_t]$), model B ($Y_t = [d_t, y_t, p_t, e_t, i_t]$) and model C ($Y_t = [l_t, y_t, p_t, e_t, i_t]$) for each of the individual country from the group of EEC.

Unit root Test

The obtained results of ADF and PP tests for unit roots presence in the endogenous variables are exposed in the Table 1.

Table 1. Tests for Unit Roots

Bulgaria															
		M2_BG		D_BG		L_BG		GDP_BG		INF_BG		NEER_BG		IR_BG	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	1.533	1.533					-1.25	-1.577	-4.018***	-3.363***	-10.25**	-18.38**	-3.678**	-3.638**
	1.dif.	-3.198***	-3.198***					-3.477***	-1.039	-3.897***	-3.897***	-3.435**	-8.399***	-11.08**	-9.553**
model B	values			-1.506	-1.506			-1.25	-1.577	-4.018***	-3.363***	-10.25**	-18.38**	-3.678**	-3.638**
	1.dif.			-1.449	-1.449			-3.477***	-1.039	-3.897***	-3.897***	-3.435**	-8.399***	-11.08**	-9.553**
model C	values					-2.027	-1.946	-1.25	-1.577	-4.018***	-3.363***	-10.25**	-18.38**	-3.678**	-3.638**
	1.dif.					-3.284***	-2.946	-3.477***	-1.039	-3.897***	-3.897***	-3.435**	-8.399***	-11.08**	-9.553**

Czech republic															
		M2_CZ		D_CZ		L_CZ		GDP_CZ		INF_CZ		NEER_CZ		IR_CZ	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	0.396	1.076					-0.446	-0.505	-3.258***	-3.172***	-1.036	-1.044	-2.192	-1.947
	1.dif.	-2.887	-2.922					-2.794	-2.795	-3.008	-2.887	-3.912***	-3.911***	-2.02	-3.612**
model B	values			0.225	0.643			-0.446	-0.505	-3.258***	-3.172***	-1.036	-1.044	-2.192	-1.947
	1.dif.			-7.077***	-6.804***			-2.794	-2.795	-3.008	-2.887	-3.912***	-3.911***	-2.02	-3.612**
model C	values					-1.223	-2.084	-0.446	-0.505	-3.258***	-3.172***	-1.036	-1.044	-2.192	-1.947
	1.dif.					-6.463***	-6.439***	-2.794	-2.795	-3.008	-2.887	-3.912***	-3.911***	-2.02	-3.612**

Hungary															
		M2_HU		D_HU		L_HU		GDP_HU		INF_HU		NEER_HU		IR_HU	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	0.231	0.17					-1.33	-1.272	-1.807	-3.138***	-5.197***	-4.575**	-4.175**	-6.973**
	1.dif.	-3.182***	-3.184					-2.936	-2.925	-1.605	-1.428	-2.244	-5.523***	-2.02	-4.611**
model B	values			-1.13	-1.13			-1.33	-1.272	-1.807	-3.138***	-5.197***	-4.575**	-4.175**	-6.973**
	1.dif.			-4.117***	-4.106**			-2.936	-2.925	-1.605	-1.428	-2.244	-5.523***	-2.02	-4.611**
model C	values					-1.106	-1.074	-1.33	-1.272	-1.807	-3.138***	-5.197***	-4.575**	-4.175**	-6.973**
	1.dif.					-5.13**	-5.197**	-2.936	-2.925	-1.605	-1.428	-2.244	-5.523***	-2.02	-4.611**

Latvia

		M2_LT		D_LT		L_LT		GDP_LT		INF_LT		NEER_LT		IR_LT	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	-0.268	-0.182					-1.07	-1.195	-0.567	-0.941	-4.411***	-2.267	-2.466	-2.466
	1.dif.	-1.24	-1.097					-3.652***	-2.284	-2.645	-2.658	-4.481***	-2.510	-5.237***	-5.242***
model B	values			-1.64	-1.64			-1.07	-1.195	-0.567	-0.941	-4.411***	-2.267	-2.466	-2.466
	1.dif.			-3.218***	-3.194***			-3.652***	-2.284	-2.645	-2.658	-4.481***	-2.510	-5.237***	-5.242***
model C	values					-1.791	-1.278	-1.07	-1.195	-0.567	-0.941	-4.411***	-2.267	-2.466	-2.466
	1.dif.					-1.812	-1.835	-3.652***	-2.284	-2.645	-2.658	-4.481***	-2.510	-5.237***	-5.242***

Poland

		M2_PL		D_PL		L_PL		GDP_PL		INF_PL		NEER_PL		IR_PL	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	0.396	1.076					-0.445	-0.505	-3.258***	-3.172***	-1.036	-1.044	-2.192	-1.947
	1.dif.	-2.887	-2.922					-2.794	-2.795	-3.008	-2.887	-3.912***	-3.911***	-2.02	-3.612***
model B	values			0.225	0.643			-0.445	-0.505	-3.258***	-3.172***	-1.036	-1.044	-2.192	-1.947
	1.dif.			-7.076***	-6.804***			-2.794	-2.795	-3.008	-2.887	-3.912***	-3.911***	-2.02	-3.612***
model C	values					1.223	-2.084	-0.445	-0.505	-3.258***	-3.172***	-1.036	-1.044	-2.192	-1.947
	1.dif.					-6.463***	-6.439***	-2.794	-2.795	-3.008	-2.887	-3.912***	-3.911***	-2.02	-3.612***

Romania

		M2_RO		D_RO		L_RO		GDP_RO		INF_RO		NEER_RO		IR_RO	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	-0.483	0.055					0.06	-0.128	-3.919***	-1.659	-13.31***	-24.56***	-1.004	-0.952
	1.dif.	-3.234***	-1.736					-3.165***	-3.095***	-1.196	-1.543	-29.11***	-4.248***	-6.004***	-6.004***
model B	values			-1.924	-3.456***			0.06	-0.128	-3.919***	-1.659	-13.31***	-24.56***	-1.004	-0.952
	1.dif.			-4.999***	-5.015***			-3.165***	-3.095***	-1.196	-1.543	-29.11***	-4.248***	-6.004***	-6.004***
model C	values					-1.714	-1.47	0.06	-0.128	-3.919***	-1.659	-13.31***	-24.56***	-1.004	-0.952
	1.dif.					-2.766	-2.733	-3.165***	-3.095***	-1.196	-1.543	-29.11***	-4.248***	-6.004***	-6.004***

Slovak republic

		M2_SK		D_SK		L_SK		GDP_SK		INF_SK		NEER_SK		IR_SK	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	0.894	1.025					0.096	-0.096	-2.991	-2.311	-0.968	-0.586	-1.791	-2.834
	1.dif.	-1.626	-1.626					-3.561***	-3.54***	-2.127	-2.044	-2.433	-2.433	-1.459	-1.929
model B	values			0.251	0.477			0.096	-0.096	-2.991	-2.311	-0.968	-0.586	-1.791	-2.834
	1.dif.			-3.157***	-2.614			-3.561***	-3.54***	-2.127	-2.044	-2.433	-2.433	-1.459	-1.929
model C	values					-1.812	-1.805	0.096	-0.096	-2.991	-2.311	-0.968	-0.586	-1.791	-2.834
	1.dif.					-4.708***	-4.853***	-3.561***	-3.54***	-2.127	-2.044	-2.433	-2.433	-1.459	-1.929

Slovenia

		M2_SI		D_SI		L_SI		GDP_SI		INF_SI		NEER_SI		IR_SI	
		ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP	ADF	PP
model A	values	0.166	0.446					-1.748	-1.686	-4.52***	-4.52***	-3.884***	-6.892***	-0.204	-0.298
	1.dif.	-2.715	-2.896					-3.169***	-3.133***	-1.285	-1.213	-4.119***	-4.119***	-2.315	-2.194
model B	values			-1.38	-1.374			-1.748	-1.686	-4.52***	-4.52***	-3.884***	-6.892***	-0.204	-0.298
	1.dif.			-4.279***	-4.279***			-3.169***	-3.133***	-1.285	-1.213	-4.119***	-4.119***	-2.315	-2.194
model C	values					-4.434***	-4.434***	-1.748	-1.686	-4.52***	-4.52***	-3.884***	-6.892***	-0.204	-0.298
	1.dif.					-4.104***	-18.14***	-3.169***	-3.133***	-1.285	-1.213	-4.119***	-4.119***	-2.315	-2.194

Both tests show that the variables are non-stationary on the values i.e. the null hypothesis of a unit root presence can't be unadopted for any of the series. On the other hand, testing variables on the first differences shows the stationarity of the time series. Therefore, all variables in the paper can be tested for cointegration.

Cointegration Test

In order to test endogenous variables that contain a unit root on the values for cointegration, we use the Johansen cointegration test. The results of the test divided eight EEC in two groups.

Table 2. Johansen and Juselius cointegration rank tests

Hypothesized No. of CE(s)	Bulgaria						Czech Republic					
	model A		model B		model C		model A		model B		model C	
	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat
r=0	150.2871	76.32474	118.4506	59.13967	120.6897	56.74097	116.0025	42.42710	159.9676	76.76795	130.3431	57.89594
r≤1	73.96238	31.31320	59.31093	23.49856	63.94877	33.23015	73.57535	35.92360	83.19969	51.64523	72.44720	36.07253
r≤2	42.64917	18.71189	35.81237	17.65714	30.71863	18.64721	37.65176	21.09268	31.55446	18.19444	36.37467	24.42572
r≤3	23.93729	15.12778	18.15523	13.30015	12.07142	7.770807	16.55908	12.53239	13.36003	13.09270	11.94895	9.362091
r≤4	8.809501	8.809501	4.855076	4.855076	4.300611	4.300611	4.026688	4.026688	0.267330	0.267330	2.586858	2.586858

Hypothesized No. of CE(s)	Hungary						Latvia					
	model A		model B		model C		model A		model B		model C	
	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat
r=0	142.2313	71.76857	129.0596	59.26213	155.2941	77.41658	121.9107	53.46440	100.7744	45.37966	139.6918	56.40570
r≤1	70.46272	36.37979	69.79748	36.45872	77.87754	39.69182	68.44632	37.36053	55.39469	30.95154	83.28613	47.31539
r≤2	34.08293	16.22710	33.33876	18.66588	38.18572	17.24675	31.08579	19.58936	24.44315	11.04017	35.97074	20.36879
r≤3	17.85583	11.70058	14.67288	9.942837	20.93897	15.37785	11.49643	6.000347	13.40298	7.581290	15.60194	12.54568
r≤4	6.155251	6.155251	4.730043	4.730043	5.561123	5.561123	5.496085	5.496085	5.821687	5.821687	3.056269	3.056269

Hypothesized No. of CE(s)	Poland						Romania					
	model A		model B		model C		model A		model B		model C	
	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat
r=0	181.8360	76.79366	197.3861	101.6355	154.7323	80.26326	173.8283	86.67569	179.1771	103.3105	169.5422	91.00107
r≤1	105.0423	54.48179	95.75067	65.35682	74.46906	44.24335	87.15263	37.07468	75.86660	37.15839	78.54109	37.97352
r≤2	50.56052	36.56685	30.39385	16.30680	30.22571	20.27241	50.07795	29.00625	38.70821	20.64604	40.56757	18.18332
r≤3	13.99367	8.205750	14.08705	9.804776	9.953296	8.766841	21.07170	15.19273	18.06217	15.70110	22.38425	16.02523
r≤4	5.787922	5.787922	4.192275	4.192275	1.186455	1.186455	5.878965	5.878965	2.361074	2.361074	6.359015	6.359015

Hypothesized No. of CE(s)	Slovak Republic						Slovenia					
	model A		model B		model C		model A		model B		model C	
	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat	trace stat	max eigvalue stat
r=0	136.8194	69.53168	114.7842	65.16095	94.63536	42.19685	143.8417	80.06975	113.5945	46.56442	119.9918	47.85104
r≤1	67.28777	34.92983	49.62327	28.00603	52.43851	25.91764	63.77190	43.11321	67.03008	32.13029	72.14075	38.17254
r≤2	32.35793	19.13287	21.61724	14.42845	26.52087	13.32841	20.65869	10.49935	34.89979	18.03074	33.96820	18.49746
r≤3	13.22506	6.875364	7.188789	7.110796	13.19246	8.910139	10.15934	7.352148	16.86905	11.71955	15.47075	8.643782
r≤4	6.349697	6.875365	0.077993	0.077993	4.282323	4.282323	2.807193	2.807193	5.149497	5.149497	6.826967	6.826967

Both trace statistics and maximum eigenvalue statistics (both at 0.05 level) indicate the existence of two cointegration equation in Slovenia (model A), Slovak Republic (model B) and Latvia (model B). Mixed results of cointegration analyses indicate both tests in Bulgaria (model A and B), Czech republic (model A), Hungary (model A and C), Romania (model C) and Slovenia(model B). Namely, the trace test

statistics denotes that there is no cointegration among the analysed variables.

Granger Causality Test

In order to test for evidence of causality between variables we employ Granger causality test. One variable is Granger-caused by another, if the second variable enables to predict the first one, or if the coefficients on the lagged are statistically significant.

The results of Granger causality tests are shown in Table 3.

Table 3. *Granger Causality Tests*

Bulgaria

	null hypothesis	lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_BG does not Granger cause GDP_BG	3	18	0.1663	do not reject
	GDP_BG does not Granger cause M2_BG	3	18	0.5472	do not reject
model B	D_BG does not Granger cause GDP_BG	3	18	0.8272	do not reject
	GDP_BG does not Granger cause D_BG	3	18	0.5686	do not reject
model C	L_BG does not Granger cause GDP_BG	3	17	0.6472	do not reject
	GDP_BG does not Granger cause L_BG	3	17	0.3233	do not reject

Czech republic

	null hypothesis	lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_CZ does not Granger cause GDP_CZ	3	15	0.8578	do not reject
	GDP_CZ does not Granger cause M2_CZ	3	15	0.3479	do not reject
model B	D_CZ does not Granger cause GDP_CZ	3	18	0.5361	do not reject
	GDP_CZ does not Granger cause D_CZ	3	18	0.2194	do not reject
model C	L_CZ does not Granger cause GDP_CZ	3	18	0.5504	do not reject
	GDP_CZ does not Granger cause L_CZ	3	18	0.3479	do not reject

Hungary

null hypothesis		lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_HU does not Granger cause GDP_HU	3	18	0.2556	do not reject
	GDP_HU does not Granger cause M2_HU	3	18	0.0861	do not reject
model B	D_HU does not Granger cause GDP_HU	3	18	0.3375	do not reject
	GDP_HU does not Granger cause D_HU	3	18	0.0354	reject
model C	L_HU does not Granger cause GDP_HU	3	18	0.0035	reject
	GDP_HU does not Granger cause L_HU	3	18	0.0009	reject

Latvia

null hypothesis		lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_LT does not Granger cause GDP_LT	3	18	0.7875	do not reject
	GDP_LT does not Granger cause M2_LT	3	18	0.3661	do not reject
model B	D_LT does not Granger cause GDP_LT	3	18	0.2888	do not reject
	GDP_LT does not Granger cause D_LT	3	18	0.3881	do not reject
model C	L_LT does not Granger cause GDP_LT	3	18	0.1861	do not reject
	GDP_LT does not Granger cause L_LT	3	18	0.0358	reject

JSHS|409

Poland

null hypothesis		lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_LT does not Granger cause GDP_LT	3	17	0.2459	do not reject
	GDP_LT does not Granger cause M2_LT	3	17	0.2193	do not reject
model B	D_LT does not Granger cause GDP_LT	3	16	0.0021	reject
	GDP_LT does not Granger cause D_LT	3	16	0.5105	do not reject
model C	L_LT does not Granger cause GDP_LT	3	17	0.1974	do not reject
	GDP_LT does not Granger cause L_LT	3	17	0.5721	do not reject

Romania

null hypothesis		lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_RO does not Granger cause GDP_RO	3	12	0.0168	reject
	GDP_RO does not Granger cause M2_RO	3	12	0.6731	do not reject
model B	D_RO does not Granger cause GDP_RO	3	18	0.4689	do not reject
	GDP_RO does not Granger cause D_RO	3	18	0.004	reject
model C	L_RO does not Granger cause GDP_RO	3	18	0.5743	do not reject
	GDP_RO does not Granger cause L_RO	3	18	0.0597	do not reject

**Slovak
republic**

	null hypothesis	lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_SK does not Granger cause GDP_SK	3	6		
	GDP_SK does not Granger cause M2_SK	3	6		
model B	D_SK does not Granger cause GDP_SK	3	18	0.0659	do not reject
	GDP_SK does not Granger cause D_SK	3	18	0.6193	do not reject
model C	L_SK does not Granger cause GDP_SK	3	18	0.4062	do not reject
	GDP_SK does not Granger cause L_SK	3	18	0.4868	do not reject

Slovenia

	null hypothesis	lags	obs	prob	decision
model A	M2_SI does not Granger cause GDP_SI	3	9	0.8899	do not reject
	GDP_SI does not Granger cause M2_SI	3	9	0.5959	do not reject
model B	D_SI does not Granger cause GDP_SI	3	18	0.6441	do not reject
	GDP_SI does not Granger cause D_SI	3	18	0.2893	do not reject
model C	L_SI does not Granger cause GDP_SI	3	18	0.9083	do not reject
	GDP_SI does not Granger cause L_SI	3	18	0.7457	do not reject

Source: Authors calculations

There is no causality between financial depth indicators and real output in Bulgaria, Czech Republic, Slovak republic and Slovenia.

On the other hand, we obtained mixed results for Hungary, Latvia, Poland and Romania. In Hungary Granger causality test indicate domestic loans foster economic growth. On the other hand, in Poland domestic deposits granger economic growth. Our observation shows that money stock affect real economic activity in Romania.

From the estimated results per country, we may summarized that causality between economic growth and financial depth indicators doesn't seem very clear for the whole group of EEC.

6. Conclusion

In the paper we have examined the key aspects of the financial diversification in eight EEC in the period 1995-2015. We have used a multivariate cointegration methodology to estimate the relationship between financial diversification indicators and real output in selected EEC. To find the order of integration of endogenous variables, we have used ADF and PP tests. To assess the rank of cointegration, we have implemented Johansen cointegration test. We have tested the direction of the causality links between financial diversification indicators and real output using Granger causality test.

We may summarize our findings as follows: (1) countries with lower GDP per capita seem to benefit from financial diversification, as the financial diversification indicators affect real economic activity with higher intensity in the short-run and Granger cause real output in the long-run; (2) Whilst short-run effects of financial diversification indicators' on the real output development differs in intensity and durability, overall positive impact is clear in all EEC.

References

- Al-Yousif, Y.K. (2002) Financial development and economic growth: Another look at the evidence from developing countries, *Review of Financial Economics*, 11(2):131-150.
- Calderon, C. (2002) The Direction of Causality Between Financial Development and Economic Growth, Central Bank of Chile's Working Paper No.184, 20 p.
- Johansen, S. (1988) Statistical analysis of cointegrating vectors, *Journal of Economic Dynamic & Control*, 12 (2-3): 231-254.
- Levine, R., Loayza, N., Beck, T. (2000) Financial intermediation and growth: Causality and causes, *Journal of Monetary Economics*, 46(1): 72-82.
- Mirdala, R.(2011) *Financial Deeping and Economic Growth in the European Transition Economies*, Berlin:MPRA.
- Oks, A. (2001) *Efficiency of the financial intermediaries and economic growth in CEEC*. Tartu:Tartu University press
- Yarosan, E.(2015) Finance and Growth in Transition Economies: What Does Bootstrapping Tell Us?, *American Journal of Economics*, 5(6): 553-564.

EUROPE İN TURKİSH FOREIGN POLİCY AFTER NATO MEMBERSHİP

İLKER KEÇETEP *

HİKMET YAZICI *

Abstract: When we look at the history, Europe had tendency to describe itself related with civilization. Thus, we come access to Europe definition which is so many and sometimes conflicting, assuming roots in different geoghraphic zones. There is a Europe that has different geopolitical characteristics and cultural values which is parallel to advance of culture and civilization. Europe's identity is full of values which are advancing and changing because of the relation with other nations in historical era, but out of its own, they haven't taken certain and stable position especially to outer world. Evaluating its own and others according to gain and culture-civilization consideration, positively and negatively, preferences and actions have big role in this. This study will cover Turkish foreign policy for Europe after Cold War Era and NATO membersip which can be divided into 3 main periods such as 1959-1970, 1970-1980 and 1980 to modern days and will try to express foreign policy of Turkey for Europe, political changes and their results.

Key Word: *Europe, Turkish Foreign Policy, NATO, Political Changes.*

1. Introduction

Europe in Turkish Foreign Policy

When we look at the history, Europe had tendency to describe itself related with civilization. Thus, we come access to Europe definition which is so many and sometimes conflicting, assuming

* Bülent Ecevit University, Çaycuma Vocational School

* Bülent Ecevit University, Çaycuma Vocational School



ICSSH2016
INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES AND HUMANITIES

roots in different geographic zones. There is a Europe that has different geopolitical characteristics and culture values which is parallel to advance of culture and civilization. Europe's identity is full of values which is advancing and changing because of the relation with other nations in historical era, but out of its own, they haven't taken certain and stable position especially to outer world. Evaluating its own and others according to gain and culture-civilization consideration, positively and negatively, preferences and actions have big role in this. European Union was occurred as a peace and security project after long theoretical and political conflicts.

We should mention about those advancements when we talk about Europe after Second World War:

European Coal and Steel Community that is an international community which consists of 6 members was established to ally Western European countries during Cold War. This community took a major part in creating European democracy and development of today's European Union. European Coal and Steel Community is the first community which was established according to supra-national principles.

First suggestion to establish European Coal and Steel Community which came from French minister of foreign affairs aimed to put industries of coal and steel management together, prevent disagreements that might occur between members, especially France and Germany, because of coal and steel which are the most important raw materials in the industry and prevent the possibility of war that might show up between these countries. Thus, first supra-national community founded by France, Western Germany, Italy and three Benelux countries; Holland, Denmark, Luxemburg, The community was managed by deputies that were representing countries and independent arbitrators which were inspected by upper representatives.

With the Rome Agreement, signed in 25 March 1957, European Coal and Steel Community has turned into to European Economic Community. Community was predicted to establishment of the common market by the approximate to economy politics among the six founder countries, development of the economic activi-

ties with harmony, ensuring balanced and sustained development increase to stability, make tighter to relations between community member countries. European Economy Community's name was changed in 1992, with the Maastricht Agreement institutions joined to organization of European Union, began to referred with the name of European Community. Community has maintained its own identity until 2002.

Turkey-Europe relations were shaped in the Cold War atmosphere and political relations have continued after the Cold War. The fundamental dynamic of the Turkish foreign politics is the Westernization Project and the Greece factor which its importance increased in time, Westernization Project is observed as being member of European Economic Community and Western institutions after the Second World War. After membership of the NATO, European issue in the Turkish foreign politics could be discussed in three main periods;

2. 1959-1970 Period

This period involves the time between 1959, the year that partnership application to European Economic Community was made to 1970 the year that Additional Protocol is approved. 1. period is the period that the problems are least between Turkey-Europe relationship. The harmony between Turkey and Western Alliance in the war atmosphere, seen occurred in this period with the European Community too.

 JSHS|415

As it is known, after the Second World War, with the start of Cold war a bipolar structure came up in the international system and Europe was divide into two parts. Under these conditions, stepping up to Western Alliance have an important place in for U.S.A. In order to achieve this Europe which came out of war defeated, should be stepping up in terms of economic and politic, that was the condition for a powerful Western Alliance and in order to achieve this necessity of Europe integration was came up. U.S.A. ,supplied a large extent monetary assistance with Marshall Plan for create to projected Europe and pioneered to integration in every respect.

In Cold War atmosphere, Turkey's which is the boundary state position between proper basis for become a part of Western Alliance, Westernization Project, that is important for Turkey since its

foundation, in this period its seen as being part of the institutions and Western Alliance. This westward move is thought to bring along democracy, modernization and development.

Turkey, commentated to being a member of European Economic Community is the logical and natural extensin of being member of Western Alliance. European Economiv Community was seen as an organization that stepping up to Western Alliance in terms of economy and it was seen extremely normal that Turkey, which is a part of political and security institution of Western alliance is also part of this organization too. Because of the U.S.A's strongly supports to integration movement in Europe and European Economic Community, it was thought that Turkey's entrance to European Community wouldn't contradict with the aim of having warm relations with U.S.A.

When evaluated in general, right along with willing of being a part of Western civilization two expectations that shaping up to aim of being a member of Western Alliance and European Economic Community are the apprehensions of security and the willing of provid aid for Turkey's economic development. In the Cold War atmosphere ,upon security issues gain importance, Ankara thought that it could be hard to stay standing up without being a partner of a big alliance like Western Alliance.Turkey,as make a great effort, ensured to being a part of the Marshall Plan to get aid from West for the economic development.After the Marshall Plan, with the establishment of the European Community for strengthening Europe in terms of economic,Turkey attached priority to increase to economic relations with this community for economic development.

In the first period of the Turkey- European Community relations, right along with the aim of Westernization, the Greece factor was the important factor too to Turkey's apply to the European Community. Turkey's partnership aplly that made in the date of 31 July 1959, 2 months later after Greece's apply. Turkish Foreign Ministry, as take into account to competetion between Turkey and Greece thought Turkey should a member of institutions that Greece is.Underlying this idea there were concerns about Greece's could make activities against Turkey in the platforms that Greece revealed

with taking part of the Western Alliance and the European Community is the one of the important reasons to member associate apply of Turkey to European Community.

In Turkey's partnership application, even the concerns relieved that arising from the economic development levels negative influence possibility to Europe's integration, in the Cold War atmosphere concerns about security gained importance and Turkey's membership application was welcomed. In this period community directors chose the way of communicating equal and balanced to both countries as thinking the competition between Turkey and Greece.

Ankara Agreement that determined partnership relations between European Community and Turkey has signed 2 years later, after the Athene Partnership Agreement with Greece in 12 September 1963. When we analyse to agreements that made with both countries as distinct from the agreements that was made after these agreements we see the truth foresee of the process that prepares associate membership rights to Turkey and Greece. This case is the important demonstration of the value that given to both countries in cold war atmosphere.

JSHS|417

Ankara Agreement contained three stages that preparation transition and custom union would see the light of day. Preparation process was uneventful and Turkey made an application in May 1967 for start to transition process but in this timeframe that custom union matters gain importance it seemed to difficult to reach agreement on the second stage. After lengthy negotiations, Additional Protocol which determines this process, was approved in July 1970, in Association Council. The notification, inurement and implement process of Additional Protocol, raised to problems between Turkey-Europe relations and it showed that inconsistency showed up and thus second period was began in the Turkey-Europe foreign policy.

3. 1970-1980 Period

Major economic and politic problems arise in the international system increased in the 1970's. Fixed rate system which is the target to return international money market firmness and an important constituent regime of Bretton Woods putted out of commission.

Put out of commission at this system among U.S.A, Europe and Japan in 1950-1960 years disconcert, cooperation of economic policies decrease and increase of competition is important allottee. International monetary system's this instability more increased after the increase price of petrol in 1973. Increased of petrol prices which is after the second world war array's the main elements and stigmatize the term to automobile industry affect negatively and this case too reduced to eEuropean countries.

Economic developments in the political developments brought together, increasing the economic problems U.S.A and European countries, slanted the moderation with Soviet Union in its rapport, decrease to military spending and solve the problems with more diplomatic ways. Thus, between two super power's rappers remission soften terms appeared. There are the pole system with the softening of the blocks in the cold war years of internal strife within the discipline began to increase and decrease. So, between U.S.A and Europe problems increased, international political and economic topics different from one other began to occur. Europe's approach to international case different from 1950-1960 more than the security concerns, economic topics and strengthening to democracy topics in Europe bring into prominence.

Developments in the international area very affected to Turkey's rapport with Europe. In a body alliance with the disappearance. Accord among Turkey-Europe and Turkey-U.S.A is break down and different from cold war years with Europe which doesn't attach importance to main topics as earlier main problems began to occur. These are both as politic as economic problems and Europe has a finger in all of them.

Negative affecting in every respect to Turkey has began as Cyprus problem, minorities problem, supposed armenian genocide claims, establishment of pkk terror organ, and problem of custom unions as knowing from this term to Turkey by western nations. At this term the biggest problem that affecting to Turkey is problem of custom union. In Turkey - Europe foreign policy has arrived as urPlanning Organization and ministry of foreign affairs have fronted to comment different relation with Europe Community in westerniza-

tion and development projects. At this stage westernization may not bringing together industrialization and progress thoughts come up and arguments have been over to development axis.

In addition to negative developments, also Turkey and Greece's relation differentiated equal and balanced with community until this term and Turkey and Greece have started to break up.

4. From 1980 to Nowadays

Foreign policy between Europe and Turkey carry on negatively a new term began with military intervention on 12 september 1980 and problems increased. 1980 is a timeframe in which relations between Europe and Turkey started to become colder especially about civil liberty and democracy topics and in this topics between Europe and Turkey are still problems.

Apply in the period of Spain, Portugal and Greece, Europe community when specification as an indispensable provision to democracy, Turkey considered this approach as interfere of country's home affairs community's. Turkey while and internal problem that will be solved over time as transition to democracy, community asserted that sine qua non of Europeanness to democracy. Thus ongoing economic problems since 1970 's attached to this type political problems began to interwiew with Europe.

JSHS|419

A term began may be called second cold war with Iran Revolution and occupation of the Soviet Union to Afghanistan end of the 1970's. These developments increased to strategic importance as cold war term of Turkey and got reason to come closer with U.S.A. Turk - German relations which is marred with Cyprus trouble in 1974 is began to rise quickly and decreasing American help increased four fungible between 1978 - 1981 reached the highest level in 1985.

Turkey come closer with U.S.A because of increasing strategic importance relation with Europe Community any recovery happened, tension continued gainly. So, foreign policy with Europe of Turkey an important transformation happened. Different from the first cold war term it was understood good relation with U.S.A dont bring along good relations with European Community and a werster alliance as

one part seen impossible. In term of foreign policy, while Turkey affiliating to U.S.A entered on the process of retiring from Europe.

European Community after the 12 September 1980 military intervention as a policy regarding political developments in Turkey followed a policy of wait and see. Community attitude towards Turkey, National Security Council all parties began to harden after the decision repealing, democracy and human rights issue was brought agenda as priority issues. Turkey's military intervention to turn to an authoritarian regime to intensify Europe's attention on Turkey and led to the suspension of relations.

This attitude of the European Community in 1984 drove up to the local elections, Community banned the parties participating in the elections as a step towards democracy in the country interprets itself in the direction of normalizing relations have begun to take steps, Turkey and the European Community in its relations normalization process, September 16, 1986 the Partnership Council meeting began with, but during the Cold War security concerns in Turkey is quite hot ministers of European economic and political many problems due to Turkey now the same temperature did not look.

Enter into the process of normalization of relations with Turkey applied for full membership has been found, Greece has a significant share of the factor in this but it is a late application. Greece as a full member take the Aegean and Cyprus in the European Community and earlier in this topic Turkey and Greece equidistant to Europe's attitude has changed within and Greece is much closer to the start of a policy is seen.

On the one hand the impact of the Global Mediterranean Policy, the other hand, Greece, Portugal, Spain, Turkey, as similar to the products of the Mediterranean producing and exporting countries, members of the community to be Turkey's economic relations with Europe have led to a shortage. In addition, these countries in the European Community, social and regional funds through considerable support to get outsourcing, it is difficult to obtain the international environment in these countries provides great advantages and Greece in competition with Turkey, which adversely affected.

Made in such a negative environment, Turkey's application for full membership has remained elusive. The end of the Cold War and the international system has lost its importance in the East-West axis by creating Turkey's new regional policy environment and in developing close relations with its neighbors have emerged more flexibility. In this case strained relations with the European Community is a process coincided, In this era of regional relations in Turkey is more important and No need for closer ties with Europe as the former thought to have started to emerge. Application for full membership of the European Community in 1987 against the negative attitude has been very effective in this development.

Turkey in 1989, and especially since the dissolution of the Soviet Union in 1991, has entered into many regional relationship. The most important of the Black Sea Economic Cooperation Project gained independence after the dissolution of the Soviet Union and its relations with the Republic of Turkey. Ankara's relations Turkey - European relations does not contradict, even Turkey would help establish closer ties with Europe, despite specify, these new relationships outside of Turkey in Europe led to the emergence of the idea that the options.

JSHS|421

Requirement of the Cold War, this new option both as a result of problems in relations with Europe, Turkey between 1989-1992, a period when the European Union is lived moving away from the project. Greece's veto in this development process due to the failure of the Association Council and co-operation has been the impact of the abolition of the package on the shelf. This short and fuzzy relations in the period after the new regional option is an alternative to Turkey's European Union project can not be revealed. This situation improved in the emergence of strong economic links with Europe, as well as the expectations from the regional project has been sufficiently effective to happen. Thus, since 1992, regional relations with Turkey in terms of European policy has begun the search for adaptation. European Union's relations with Turkey without full membership form began to look for ways to continue.

In this context, since 1992 Turkey - European foreign policy normalization in the relations began to collect and Association Coun-

cil. Turkey and the European Union in terms of maintaining relationships as the minimum requirements of the customs union came into the agenda and studies have focused on this issue. Seen as the first stage of integration with the European Union to Turkey customs union on 1 January 1996 has entered. By EU members in 1999, Turkey was accepted as a candidate country, After lengthy discussions began full membership negotiations in 2005 and has brought together many political problems. No decrease in foreign policy agenda with Europe and the Cyprus problem, which is the most complex.

European Community after the 12 September 1980 military intervention as a policy regarding political developments in Turkey followed a policy of wait and see. Community attitude towards Turkey, National Security Council all parties began to harden after the decision repealing, democracy and human rights issue was brought agenda as priority issues. Turkey's military intervention to turn to an authoritarian regime to intensify Europe's attention on Turkey and led to the suspension of relations.

This attitude of the European Community in 1984 drove up to the local elections, Community banned the parties participating in the elections as a step towards democracy in the country interprets itself in the direction of normalizing relations have begun to take steps, Turkey and the European Community in its relations normalization process, September 16, 1986 the Partnership Council meeting began with, but during the Cold War security concerns in Turkey is quite hot ministers of European economic and political many problems due to Turkey now the same temperature did not look.

Enter into the process of normalization of relations with Turkey applied for full membership has been found, Greece has a significant share of the factor in this but it is a late application. Greece as a full member take the Aegean and Cyprus in the European Community and earlier in this topic Turkey and Greece equidistant to Europe's attitude has changed within and Greece is much closer to the start of a policy is seen.

On the one hand the impact of the Global Mediterranean Policy, the other hand, Greece, Portugal, Spain, Turkey, as similar to the products of the Mediterranean producing and exporting countries,

members of the community to be Turkey's economic relations with Europe have led to a shortage. In addition, these countries in the European Community, social and regional funds through considerable support to get outsourcing, it is difficult to obtain the international environment in these countries provides great advantages and Greece in competition with Turkey, which adversely affected.

Made in such a negative environment, Turkey's application for full membership has remained elusive. The ending of the Cold War and the international system has lost its importance in the East-West axis by creating Turkey's new regional policy environment and in developing close relations with its neighbors have emerged more flexibility. In this case strained relations with the European Community is a process coincided, In this era of regional relations in Turkey is more important and No need for closer ties with Europe as the former thought to have started to emerge. Application for full membership of the European Community in 1987 against the negative attitude has been very effective in this development.

Turkey in 1989, and especially since the dissolution of the Soviet Union in 1991, has entered into many regional relationship. The most important of the Black Sea Economic Cooperation Project gained independence after the dissolution of the Soviet Union and its relations with the Republic of Turkey. Ankara's relations Turkey - European relations does not contradict, even Turkey would help establish closer ties with Europe, despite specify, these new relationships outside of Turkey in Europe led to the emergence of the idea that the options.

Requirement of the Cold War, this new option both as a result of problems in relations with Europe, Turkey between 1989-1992, a period when the European Union is lived moving away from the project. Greece's veto in this development process due to the failure of the Association Council and co-operation has been the impact of the abolition of the package on the shelf. This short and fuzzy relations in the period after the new regional option is an alternative to Turkey's European Union project can not be revealed. This situation improved in the emergence of strong economic links with Europe, as well as the expectations from the regional project has been sufficiently effective

to happen. Thus, since 1992, regional relations with Turkey in terms of European policy has begun the search for adaptation. European Union's relations with Turkey without full membership form began to look for ways to continue.

In this context, since 1992 Turkey - European foreign policy normalization in the relations began to collect and Association Council. Turkey and the European Union in terms of maintaining relationships as the minimum requirements of the customs union came into the agenda and studies have focused on this issue. Seen as the first stage of integration with the European Union to Turkey customs union on 1 January 1996 has entered. By EU members in 1999, Turkey was accepted as a candidate country, After lengthy discussions began full membership negotiations in 2005 and has brought together many political problems. No decrease in foreign policy agenda with Europe and the Cyprus problem, which is the most complex.

5. Conclusion

“Continental Europe” and Europeanness concepts try to show Europe superior than Asia and Africa. But infact there is not such a seperate continent geographically named Europe because Europe is just a political region that is located in Western part of Asia. Only The United Kingdom and Ireland are not part of Asia. Superiority and privileged status are targets of European politics and this policy try to show their countries seperate from continent of Asia but geographically there is not a continent that is seperate from continent of Asia. Here European foreign policy than in the beginning, the first step refuse do politcs in part of Asian Continent, arbitrary processioning and completely political zone has formed, economic religious and cultural dimension on this region that we confront today in Western Asia Union so as the European Union energes and Turkish foreign policy has nearly concern and affects. Turkey has turned its westernward since its inception, first level of contemporary civilization has catch and after overshoot has had.

After the second world war in Turkish foreign policy when considering the subject about Europe's interest revealed. In times of security concerns, European policy became more closer with Turkey, reletions are worm and less problematic. When Europe's political

concerns reduced, problems come out and increase. Vicious cycles have been determined. Turkey's EU process has emerged, which cancels events in that time with Europe. These are; Cyprus Problem, Armenian Genocide, Kurdish issue and the PKK support. Turkey is affected with the Europe foreign policy.

Mentioned topics, barrier the full membership for Europe. Being subject to negotiation so process is prolonged. Without more candidates Turkey has caused great controversy in Europe. Having been raised Muslim country. Muslim population growth in Europe has been causing great inconvenience. Claiming to be secular Europe at the Pope is involved in this issue. And this affects Turkey's Europe an policy. Europe often ignore agreement. It's policy is to avoid the law. Between Turkey and Europe how healthy, how reliable, how efficient and well intentioned. These topics have always been problematic.

Until the present the policies put forward by the European it seems negative. Europe seeks to protect the interests as usual. To take advantage off all Turkey without removing also a part of itself has been policy. Turkey is inside but in the maze. Turkey won't get anywhere.

References

- BOZDAĞLIOĞLU , Y. (2003) , Turkish Foreign Policy and Turkish Identity , Routledge Yayınevi , New York & Londra.
- CEM , İ. (2001) , Turkey in the New Century , Rüstem Yayıncılık , Mersin.
- ÇELİK , Y. (1999) , Contemporary Turkish Foreign Policy , Greenwood Yayıncılık A.B.D .
- ERALP , A. (1997) , Türkiye ve Avrupa , İmge Kitabevi , Ankara.
- KARADELİ , C. (2003) , Soğuk Savaş Sonrasında Avrupa ve Türkiye , Ayraç Yayın Ankara.
- KEYMAN , E. F. (2005) , Değişen Dünya Dönüşen Türkiye, İstanbul Bilgi Üni. Yayınları , İstanbul.

LAÇİNER , S. , NECEFOĞLU , H. , ÖZERTEM , H. S. (2009) , Türk Dış Politikası Türk Dış Politikası Sempozyumu Tebliğleri , USAK Yayınları , Ankara.

MARTİN , L. G. , KERİDİS , D. (2002), The Future of Turkish Foreign Policy , MIT Yayıncılık , Harvard Üniversitesi , Massachusetts.

ÖZKAN , İ. R. , (1999) , Küresel Çıkar Oyunları İçinde Türkiye'nin Dış Politika Sorunları, Ümit Yayıncılık , Ankara.

SANDER , O. , (2000) , Türkiye'nin Dış Politikası , İmge Kitabevi , Ankara.

SANDIKLI , A. (2001) , Türkiye'nin Dış Politikasında Avrupa Birliği ve Alternatifleri, Harp Akademileri Basım Evi , İstanbul.

SÖNMEZOĞLU , F. (1996) , Değişen Dünya ve Türkiye , Bağlam Yayınları İstanbul.

YENİGÜN , M. C. (2004) , Soğuk Savaş Sonrasında T.B.M.M ve Dış Politika Nobel Yayın , Ankara.

<http://www.ait.hacettepe.edu.tr/egitim/ait203204/II12.pdf>

MULTICULTURALISM DEBATES IN THE CONTEXT OF MODERN PERIOD EDUCATION POLICIES IN LIBERAL DEMOCRACIES: THE UNITED STATES CASE

FİKRET ÇELİK *

Abstract: The “cultural recognition demands” within a country in the sense of different communities has become the main topic of agenda when the “vital” sources that should be used by individuals for group or its members have started to be followed. This situation is closely associated with the equal opportunity policies, positive action, and the process of a supportive policy action formation that are designed by modern period liberal countries to eliminate the effects of discrimination and disadvantages experienced in the great majority of world communities during the historical process. By these processes, if the USA is particularly handled, it has made great strides in both political consensus and revealing “adaptation models” in national basis, respectively, firstly in the ideal framework of republican liberal democrat and later in the reflection of “casting” the flow of immigrants to its country during modern era on education dimension. In this context, the main issue of the study is to handle the multiculturalism discussions at the modern education policies axes in the liberal democracies. In this problematic context, it is aimed to scrutinize the modernization, education policies, and multiculturalism issues argumentatively on the basis of the United States of America case. As part of the study, first of all, the multiculturalism theory will be evaluated in terms of social, political, and educational ways in order to draw a conceptual framework. Thereafter, USA, which has the largest immigrant population as a liberal democratic country and arouse curiosity about the policies it follows for multiculturalism as a state, will be handled to see how it practices education policies in general. The secondary sources which have been written about the issue and the views of sig-

* Kırıkkale University,
Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences
[fikretcelik@kku.edu.tr]

nificant authors who are representative of multiculturalism will be benefited in the study that will be prepared with a critical point of view and in the framework of discussion. In the study, it will be used a descriptive analysis method and explanatory/interpreter method.

Key Word: *Modern Period, Liberal Democracy, Education Policies, Multiculturalism, United States of America*

1. Introduction

“Socially specific identities, life styles and traditions” whose normative spirit liberal theoreticians today try to explain again comprise the core of the theoretical tradition comprised by the modern Western society based on the “liberal and democratic basic rights”. According to this, understanding of multiculturalism and the communitarian approaches, which are recently very controversial, can only have a character evaluable based on the “liberal” opinions understood properly (Wellmer, 2006: 309). The reason is that the debates of today due to the worries political stability over the “minority rights” gaining a meaning when conceptualized in the context of multiculturalism and the communitarian theories are a result of the liberal objections that emerged in the modern period. However, after this objection was also linked to the elimination of the problems related to racial discrimination, it also played an important role in the problem becoming a subject of “justice”. In this context, the most important problem of today, education, and the educational policies that the liberal democracies implement/try to implement in this context might show us the intellectual background of these systems based on philosophy, politics and society in the context of multiculturalism.

At this point, it is a matter of justice and then a matter of education, a barometer for freedom of the political system. Education is one of the main subjects in the discussions of how to solve “differences” constitutionally of the countries that describe themselves as liberal democratic systems. Particularly in public arena and in educational context, it is important to be able to solve problems politically and socially as well as legally and administratively. In this study, discussions for solution of the problems of the different in education in liberal de-

mocracies, as a philosophical and political area of problem, will be firstly discussed in the context of multiculturalism. Then, it will be discussed more philosophical and socially how the matter of education is addressed at a political, administrative and legal point at USA scale. The study will be concluded with an evaluation.

2. An Overview of the Problem of Education in the Context of Multiculturalism in Liberal Democracies

“Requests for cultural recognition” for minorities today have been known due to pursuit of “vital” resources individuals need to use generally for a group or its members. This is closely linked with the processes of formation of equal opportunity policies, positive action and supportive action policies designed by liberal states in the modern period. The reason is that the policies and the practices developed against discrimination have been considered as encouraging for recognition of the groups considered as “minorities” in society in terms of all of the public services. In this sense, liberal policies practiced in some countries today have become means of achieving both collective and individual goals for the ethnical identities in multicultural and communitarian societies (Fenton, 2001: 244). The liberal policies carried out via these means set the stage for us facing particularly pluralism as a historical fate. The pluralist society that developed on that stage would create a traditional environment where traditional life styles are common or which is more complex than a uniform life. Therefore, a more culturally featured life would become more important than a single social reality alleged to be universal (Gray, 2004: 347-348).

Taking the West as a ground especially, abolitionism after 1840s and then the efforts for the social equality of women intensified in the late XIX. century gained importance in liberal democracies. These efforts focused on the “right of property”, “right of voting” ad “improvements in social conditions”. The development in this course turned from the rights of women into a peak as the “right of employment” and “right of access to higher education” for women. However, obtaining these rights specifically was only achieved in the first quarter of the XX. Century (Heater, 2007: 186-189).

State schools and “private schools” considered as public schools were together in education throughout the twentieth century in liberal democratic systems and the aim was to separate the upper classes from the working classes comprising the majority of the society. In this way, it was seen that importance was firstly given to growing “patriotic” individuals by the “civic education” discussed at this point and given according to a standard although it brought up a specific problem between obedience and consciousness of the citizen (Heater, 2007: 200-201).

Liberal democracies sometimes firstly focus on theoretical solution of the problems of multiculturalism liberal societies with the understanding of growing “virtuous” citizens according to an approach inspired by the classic theory of philosophy of politics especially today. At this point, in the events/cases where it is seen that problem of “public space” is generally not solved over market economy, family and civil society, this subject is discussed in connection with the “educational system”, a matter related to acceptance of the diversity in liberal societies. In this context, states are thought to come to a point like “it should be taught how to obtain the ways of critical reasoning defining public rationality and moral perspective” at educational institutions with their school curricula to be developed according to liberal policies. At this point, it is discussed that education should not only grow individuals obedient to the authority, but also able to think critically about the authority. These subjects are largely opened to discussion in world’s systems considered as liberal. However, these discussions led to a new one in that educated individuals would discuss about their own “cultural” identities some time later (Kymlicka and Norman, 2008: 202-204).

At this point, it is believed that the claim that individuals might also criticise their cultural identities due to the education provided for them might completely lead to absoluteness of opening any authority or tradition up for discussion. According to Macedo, students grown in educational courses of democratic society addressed liberally are “destined to dissuaded with ‘free, open, pluralist and progressive’ attitudes encouraged by liberal education although presence of the groups based on an uncritical acceptance of tradition and authority

becomes no completely impossible” some time later (quoting from Macedo, Kymlicka and Norman, 2008: 204).

According to Rawls, this process emphasized by Macedo, “leads to a dead-end for liberals” (quoting from Rawls, Kymlicka and Norman, 2008: 204) and might lead to a consequence that may be against the groups that approved many legal regulations. At this point, a new setting of discussion emerges that might force individuals to “prefer” between society and good conditions of life as a result of an education in the frame of political and social theories according to liberal policies of states. The reason is that, as a result of educational understanding of liberal system, it might be inevitable for some groups trying to survive as a minority or a group to “disappear”. In this case, due to difficulties of design of “public education” as completely focused on individual and community, situations might emerge that would lead to no positive results in the frame of liberal policies. However, it might be stated that an educational system to be designed in the frame of the critical point of view of the political authority is not always able to unstick individuals from their families and traditions. At this point, the thesis that a sense of individual questioning all authorities cannot achieve a function socially is considered as a serious handicap for the liberal democracies of today (Kymlicka and Norman, 2008: 204-205).

3. Position of Educational Policies of USA, A Liberal Democracy, Within the Frame of Multiculturalism

The movement of American constitutionalism, as a liberal system, starting from its establishment, adopted a sense of “managed democracy” operating “temperately” in the frame of institutionalisation of social conflict and the phenomenon of “faction” and developing in itself (Kervégan, 2003: 193). Therefore, after a long-term change/transformation in itself, it led the educational understanding of the American legal system to stability. In this context, American High Court, with a decision of it in 1954, abolished the system based on racial discrimination in the education provided for the black and white students in the southern states of USA. This legal step is stated to have an important impact on the movements towards civil rights generally and especially on the American opinion about “racial equal-

ity” across USA. Even if it was at the racial level at first, importance was given to solution of a problem considered as a “paradigm of injustice”. This development was accepted as a milestone for considering the “color blind acts” described as a new racial justice model instead of the opinion of “seperated but equal treatment” in USA (Kymlicka, 1998: 105-106).

It is known that the American constitution known to contain unique practices suitable for such life form considering theoretically in general provides/can provide a frame that protects freedom of each of religiously and culturally big differences and that provides little same “political power” for each in public space. The American constitution, in this way, became an “agreement” that protected civil peace. According to Rawls, the American political structure designed in this way was built to not lead to religious, ethnical and similar oppositions. The reason is that USA was established for creation of a “public opinion” helping only to discuss political ideas while not causing hostility between different cultural forms (Rawls, 2007: 482-483).

In parallel with the political structure in USA possible to consider this way, the ideas considering the concepts of “individual freedom” as a political “moral ideal” seriously linked individual freedom to society before the state. The most original one is USA among the countries that produce/try to produce liberal policies for these purposes. From the modern period to date, USA is a “model” country continuously trying to make the concepts of freedom and equality sustainable, which is shown to be indicative of commitment to this moral ideal. The concept of individual independence in the country was seen as the most important part of the liveliness and strength of the modern period’s “American patriotism”(Taylor, 2006: 149). The reason is that all of the components of liberal democracy in USA were in an effort used for individual purposes in terms of practical “pluralist” implementation of the liberal democracy.USA created a large space for speech, press, religion and organization among the individual rights in the frame of liberal democracy for presence of the multicultural and communitarian culture in society. The freedoms considered in this context themselves helped especially the discussions over multiculturalism get new aspects in some way. While these discussions were setting a suitable stage for discussion of freedoms univer-

sally, aspect of liberalism reflecting state neutrality highlighted respect for basic individual rights of the citizens in all private areas. However, while this point of view indicated recognition in terms of representation of “cultural community” related to public space, it is an unsolved matter in terms of whether state neutrality was ensured or not in the state institutions regarded as reliable in a democratic state. It is stated that “state schools” is one of the most important institutions in the center of the discussions comprising the source of the problem here (Gutmann, 2005: 30-31).

USA employed a process of “casting” for the immigrants flowing into the country firstly in the frame of the republican liberal democrat ideal and then throughout the modern period. Important steps were taken for proposing “adjustment models” both at the basis of political agreement and nationally in reflection of this in education. Firstly, lesson of “civics” has been taught in the curriculum as one of the most important ones at primary and secondary school level in USA since 1840s. Then, in 1916, this lesson continued to be taught across the country as the basic foundation of the curriculum as “social sciences” as the combination of geography and history lessons. In the content of this lesson, it was emphasized that USA considered schools as the state policy and that it was important that students consider schools as a democratic element. Also, it was strongly stated that these lessons aimed to encourage students grown as citizens to reason and analyse instead of memorisation. In 1960s and 1970s, many “reforms” of curriculum were performed in education in USA. However, it is argued that these efforts have led to problems in the civic education of today. The reason is that the civic lessons telling to be proud of the liberal democratic traditions of republic in USA started to suffer from serious critics due to their negative contributions to “assimilation” of the immigrants (Heater, 2007: 196-198).

JSHS|433

According to some authors, this was assessed as a reflection of the opinion that education is “at the centre of American ideology”. However, this also led the groups seen as minorities in USA to consider schools as the only place to better teach the concepts such as politics, morals and society. The policy of state schools in USA assessed in this context has become the main focus of the constitutional conflicts strongly discussed over the last thirty years. The reason is that the

curriculum updated for a pluralist society particularly at state schools gets serious reactions from some sections of the society. Focus of these reactions are, “role of religion in state schools” and “abortion”. It is seen today that majority of American society think that the American High Court “took worship and Bible out of schools” with its decision on education. It is expressed that such state policies and legal decisions (with the belief that they were in favour of immigrants) led to a decline in American moral values (Gunn, 2007: 97). According to Gutmann, however, with an opposite point of view, at government institutions, schools giving fine arts education, colleges and universities affiliated to the state is an opposition today on the grounds that distinctive cultural identities of citizens are not recognized or that their identities are not respected properly (Gutmann, 2005: 23). This ambiguated and complicated the question which argument was right in USA. The reason is that efficiency of the educational policies changing and transforming globally and implemented by USA individually and socially became controversial.

4. Conclusion

The liberal policies implemented in USA in the above-assessed way have problems of theory and practice. In the context of the multicultural and communitarian point of view of USA, it is seen that the “educational policies” need overall analyses historically, theoretically and practically about to what extent USA cares for or ignores the minorities in terms of education.

Even though USA has many controversial aspects in education, it undoubtedly provides us with the appropriate data to achieve a theoretically “pluralist” society. Even on looking at one side of point of view of USA towards multiculturalism and communitarian cultures, it is a general acceptance that “... even if it is very different from what is claimed in myths ...a very healthy assumption is developing that different religious beliefs must protected by the state and that respect for (especially) freedom of religion would positively affect welfare and peace of the state”. Also, it is certain that USA deserves to be examined as a stable model in the world with its discourse that “these policies and approaches not only consist of the international standards of human rights that protect the freedom of religion, but also

they contain a strong respect for freedom of individuals devoted to religion and their honour due to being humans” (Gunn, 2007: 133).


Moreover, the emphasis on power that USA was established as a republic based on “popular sovereignty” with their rights and diversity in all aspects is very important. Although this establishing philosophy of USA appears to be the reflection of a new theory due to the period of appearance, it was the reflection of a general belief about institutionalisation of the traditional practices in general. This is based on a rooted tradition possible to date back to 1779 when the federal constitution created on request of all of the colonies was recognized. This is also accepted as the foundation for the “legitimate” idea in forming the federal structure in USA containing the acceptance of the traditional rights including the ancient periods (Taylor, 2007: 197-198). Due to such reasons, the evolution of the general educational policies in USA is an important example for the studies to be conducted on this subject in the world.

USA has a specific situation/position to establish a multicultural social structure as an integrative or discriminative approach in terms of shaping the educational policies in the world. The reason is that USA a constitutional structure that can reevaluate itself according to the world’s conditions changing/transforming in parallel with globalization. However, it is stated that there is a clear situation today about whether the educational policies generally dealt within the frame of the liberal “universalist” policies in the world will serve for a multicultural social structure or a social structure consisting of atomized individuals.

References

- FENTON, Steve (2001), *Etnisite ‘İrkçılık, Sınıf ve Kültür’*, Trans. Nihat ŞAD, Phoenix Yayınevi, Ankara.
- GRAY, John (2004), *Post-Liberalizm ‘Siyasal Düşünce İncelemeleri’*, Trans. Müfit Günay, Dost Kitabevi, Ankara.
- GUNN, T. Jeremy (2007), *Din Özgürlüğü ve Laisite ‘ABD ve Fransa Arasında Bir Karşılaştırma’*, Edit. Atilla Yayla, Liberte Yayınları, Ankara.

- GUTMANN, Amy (2005), "Giriş", Trans. Özcan Kabakçioğlu, *Çokkültürcülük Tanınma Politikası*, Edit. Amy Gutmann, YKY, İstanbul, s. 23-41.
- HEATER, Derek (2007), *Yurttaşlığın Kısa Tarihi*, Trans. Meral Delikara Üst, İmge Kitabevi, Ankara.
- KERVEGAN, Jean-Feançois (2003), "Demokrasi", Trans. İsmail Yerguz, *Siyaset Felsefesi Sözlüğü*, Edit. Philippe Raynaud-Stéphane Rials, İletişim Yayınları, İstanbul, s. 187-194.
- KYMLİCKA, Will (1998), *Çokkültürlü Yurttaşlık 'Azınlık Haklarının Liberal Teorisi'*, Trans. Abdullah Yılmaz, Ayrıntı Yayınları, İstanbul.
- KYMLİCKA, Will ve Wayne Norman (2008), "Vatandaşın Dönüşü: Vatandaşlık Kuramındaki Yeni Çalışmalar Üzerine Bir Değerlendirme", Trans. Can Cemgil, *Vatandaşlığın Dönüşümü*, Edit. Ayşe Kadıgözü, Metis Yayınları, İstanbul, s. 185-217.
- RAWLS, John (2007), *Siyasal Liberalizm*, Trans. Mehmet Fevzi Bilgin, İstanbul Bilgi Üniversitesi Yayınları, İstanbul.
- TAYLOR, Charles (2007), *A Secular Age*, The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts and London, England.
- TAYLOR, Charles (2006), *Modern Toplumsal Tahayüller*, Trans. Hamide Koyukan, Metis Yayınları, İstanbul.
- WELLMER, Albrecht (2006), "Demokratik Bir Kültürün Koşulları: Liberallerle Cemaatçiler Arasında Tartışma Üzerine", Trans. Mehmet Zafer Üskül, *Liberaller ve Cemaatçiler*, Edit. André Bertin-Pablo da Silveira-Hervé Pourtois, Dost Kitabevi, Ankara, s. 305-323.



URBAN ENCOUNTERS IN PUBLIC SPACE: PERSPECTIVE OF A MULTICULTURAL CITY




KATERINA MOJANCHEVSKA *



Abstract: Within the academia, the processes of ethnic division and conflicts have received significant research attention. Yet, we know little of how in multicultural societies, representations of identity visible in public space shape the process of ‘production’ of that same space, its political and social value. We also lack understanding of how in the context of new nation-states as Macedonia, where ethnicity is the only politically relevant identity, the sense of belonging and citizenship are framed through the symbols accommodated in public space. The analysis of these processes in Skopje showed that the accommodation of difference (language, ethnicity, religion and cultural symbols) in the shared public spaces in multicultural environments is following an ethno-national understanding of citizenship and belonging, without wider citizens’ participation. The symbolic spatial expressions in public spaces praise the dominant ethnic group and inflict both, positive feelings among ‘one’s own’ and negative feelings in crossing into the Others’ territory. These differing attitudes demonstrate how complex is the relationship between identity and public space.

Key Word: *Identity, Public space, Diversity*



1. Introduction

Neighbourhoods are considered as places of mundane social interaction and ‘natural sites of integration’ (Duyvendak, 2004: 28). Open and universally accessible public spaces in the neighbourhoods permeate between the private spaces of individual control and allow a variety of functional and symbolic uses. However, public spaces are

* International Institute of Social Studies,
part of the Erasmus University of Rotterdam, The Netherlands

also highly contested and exclusionary places, in a historical perspective but also in multicultural societies. Violent intergroup conflicts and spatial segregation in ethnic enclaves (Yiftachel and Hedgcock, 1993: 140) reminds us that facilitation of intercultural contact in public spaces is not an easy task, neither social integration always happens spontaneously. So, are public spaces and the neighbourhoods among the few places left for intercultural interaction and integration now that traditional family ties and communal, political engagement is declining (Duyvendak, 2004: 28)? Or, as Duyvendak (2004: 28) points out, 'Are these the only sites for integration of those outside of the labour market?'

Public spaces, cafes, parks, streets and squares are places in the immediate neighbourhood where mundane encounters among citizens happen. In multicultural cities, public spaces provide an opportunity for interethnic contact. The outcomes of the contact situation depend on the conditions upon which relations between groups are established. The perception and the personal feeling about the place where interaction happens can shape the dynamics of intergroup contact. Thus, this paper believes that among other factors that influence contact outcome, such as: working towards common goals, equal status, institutional support, widely elaborated by Allport (1954), the way how cultural and ethnic diversity is visible represented in the public places where intergroup contact happens can affect the quality of the encounter. As such, public spaces become hauled in the dynamics between groups and setting. This process is dialectic and often 'spatial contradictions express conflicts between socio-political interests and forces' (Lefebvre, 1991: 365), as those between citizens, ethnicities, politicians and other interest groups.

Accommodation practices of diversity in public space are more than just a symbolic recognition of one's ethnicity, language, religion, symbols within the wider community (Kymlicka and Norman, 2000: 29). Rather, they may directly affect the self-respect of members of minority group as well as their willingness to take part in the political life of the state (Kymlicka and Norman, 2000: 29). Denied recognition or trivialisation of requests may instigate people to feel harmed even when other political and economic rights are respected or to dominate the minority right discourse in a situation when other opportu-

nities are also constrained (Taylor, 1992; Tamir, 1993) (according to Kymlicka and Norman, 2000: 5). Furthermore, Kymlicka and Norman (2000: 30) reminds us that minorities' claims for symbolic recognition are not a matter of majority's acknowledgment of their special status. It is also a claim for re-questioning majority's identity and the relation to the state.

This paper argues that in the context of Macedonia, the accommodation approach to public representation of diversity under requests for cultural specificity of ethno-cultural groups cannot be organised to satisfy the idealistic, liberal citizenship model. 'Ethnicity, nationality, language and religion are the cornerstones of the primordial identities in Macedonia, sometimes they are overlapping and fostering a single identity and, in other cases, they are providing incentives for having multiple identities or a choice of identity', notes Taleski (2008: 127-128). Rather, somewhere between recognition of cultural autonomy of ethnic groups and participation in common, shared space which represents a civic value of citizenship, the practices of accommodation of diversity into public space should be created. Envisioning a way forward means de-categorising and re-categorising belonging and identity and as Buzar (2006: 4) succinctly observes: 'to link the production of difference with the production of space'. Such pursuit 'opens the path for alternative, interpretations of ethno-political projects and conflicts in the post-socialist space more generally.'

JSHS|439

2. Skopje – a central stage of urban re-imagining performance

The city of Skopje, the capital of Macedonia is situated along the river Vardar with a population of 506.926 inhabitants. According to the last official Census conducted in 2002, 66.75 percent of the citizens are Macedonians, 20.49 percent are Albanians, 4.63 percent are Roma, 2.82 percent are Serbs, 1.7 percent is Turks and small communities of Vlachs, Bosnians and others. The territorial organisation distinguishes ten administrative units (municipalities) and a separate administrative entity of city of Skopje. In three municipalities, the majority of residents are from a single minority, the Albanian ethnic group dominates in two municipalities and the Roma in one municipality.

Skopje, being a political and cultural capital, in the last few years, was a subject of re-imagining by the political elite. Symbols and 'identity markers' played crucial role in constructing the imaginary of the new neighbourhoods and public spaces where new churches, mosques and monuments celebrating ethnic cultures were accommodated. They marked ethnic territories, making cultural presence being felt. The urban political-cultural project 'Skopje 2014' was at the center of this re-imagining, costing more than a 560 million Euro, for a country with around 10 billion USD GDP in 2015.

3. Diversity and the city: inconclusive results

The impact of diversity and increased heterogeneity of the city and its neighbourhood cohesion has brought an inconclusive results of unanimous positive or negative effect over urban life. Allport (1954) argues that contact among groups under certain conditions is an effective way to reduce anxiety, hostility and prejudice. Contact produces a 'sense of knowledge or familiarity between strangers', it moderates uncertainty and anxiety, creates sense of familiarity and control over the events (Valentine, 2008: 324). On the other side, studies report on the deteriorating effect of diversity and heterogeneity over social cohesion. It is argued that too much diversity along ethnic, cultural, social lines is detrimental for social integration and erodes the social capital of the area (Putnam, 2007).

It is also debated whether minority and majority groups given their history of experience, receive the same effects from a joint interaction. In a contact situation, minority groups more frequently fear of experiencing offensive behaviour and anticipate such conduct being practiced from the majority groups (Tropp and Pettigrew, 2005: 951). The later, then, are more likely to be perceived as the source of a prejudiced conduct or expected to behave in congruence with their super-ordinate status (Livingston, Brewer and Alexander, 2004; Tropp and Pettigrew, 2005: 952). Moreover, real or perceived difference in status makes minorities more susceptible of negative evaluation based on their group identity while majorities are less receptive to change their position (Leach, Snider and Iyer, 2002) unless the context demands so. That said, what is certain is that increased

ethno-cultural diversity challenges civic engagement and social interactions (Hero, 2003) and this is more the case in context of mis-balanced power relations between the groups in contact.

The size of the urban area is considered an important contributor to residents' psychological engagement in the community (Jun, 2013: 324). At neighbourhood or small city level, residents have more opportunities for individual and direct contacts, and when encountered with diversity, they experience lower level of anxiety, increased level of perceived variability of 'Others' and a more positive attitude toward them (Brown and Hewstone, 2005: 287). Residents in the neighbourhood are more acquainted with each other, than with the population in the larger city and such familiarity catalyses more talks about politics and communal issues, and thus makes them more actively engaged in the community (Oliver, 2000).

Diversity also yields different outcomes for homogeneous and heterogeneous neighbourhoods. Semyonov and Glikman (2009: 699) argue that the place of residence significantly determine interethnic attitudes. Their secondary analysis of 2003 European Social Survey data confirmed that interethnic contact is more difficult in homogeneous neighbourhoods, that is, the residents of homogenous all-European neighbourhoods compared to those living in mixed neighbourhoods have less opportunities to establish interethnic contacts and develop cross-ethnic friendships (Semyonov and Glikman, 2009: 701-703).

While there are also those who suspect the potential of residential mix to provide more frequent intergroup interactions (Duyvendak, 2004; Kempen and Priemus, 1999; Smets, 2004), they do agree that it provides the opportunity for contact. This does not mean that every individual will seize these opportunities, or, that direct contact is the only way through which diversity can be experienced. But, individuals in diverse settings have a greater likelihood (i.e., opportunity) for intergroup contact.

4. Does spatial distance reflect social distance: current research focus

The aim of this paper is to discuss how accommodation practices of diversity (language, ethnicity, religion and cultural symbols) shape the relation between ethnicity and public space, by looking at the

political and social value of public space in the multicultural city of Skopje.

The paper looks at the potential differences between residents of ethnic and mixed neighbourhoods in relation to their understanding of how diversity should be accommodated in public spaces. It also explores the potential differences in the perception of the political and social values of public spaces, as setting for deliberation and participation in communal decisions, as well as for intercultural contact.

5. Data and methods

The research is based on both quantitative and qualitative methods. The quantitative methodology used a two-stage probability sampling approach. In the first stage, sampling units were selected, e.g. the municipalities, based on the Census data originating in 2002. Two ethnic¹ and two mixed² municipalities in Skopje³ were selected (Kisela Voda and Saraj were selected as ethnic while Butel and Chair as mixed municipalities). The next stage of the sampling process involved random selection of households and household members using Simple random sampling without replacement (SRSWOR) method. Stratification was done according to type of settlement – urban and rural as well as according to proportion of ethnic groups. In total 535 persons were contacted and 403 accepted to take part in the survey.

The household questionnaire used close-end items on a 5 points Likert-type answering scale. It is partly based on other instruments

¹ An ‘ethnic neighbourhood’ is a neighbourhood/territorial unit where one ethnic group represents a numerical majority and it is cohabitated by only a small proportion of other ethnic groups, resulting in a more or less mono-ethnic communal life.

² A ‘mixed neighbourhood’ is a neighbourhood /territorial unit where one ethnic group is in a majority position but has a significant proportion of minority ethnic groups, set at a threshold of 20 percent. As a result, the local communal life is organised in a more or less bi-ethnic way, including minority language official use and special commission to discuss minority claims for ethnic symbols representation.

³ For practical reasons, the proportion among the two larger ethnic groups in the country (Macedonians and Albanians) is taken into consideration.

such as: the identity subscale by Morrison, Fast and Ybarra (2009), the Multigroup Ethnic Identity Measure (MEIM) and the research conducted by Parker, et al. (2001). Part of it is conceptually new and based on literature review and adapted to the specific context of diversity in public space.

In order to further understand citizens' responses, interviews based on open-end questionnaire with residents of the selected municipalities were conducted. The selection of interviewees was convenient. None of the interviewees participated in both the interview and the survey. In total, 33 persons were contacted and three refused to take part in the research. The interviews were conducted in Macedonian language.

6. Analysis and reporting

Survey sample analysis

A total of 403 respondents were included in the survey. In the sample, 52.6% (212) were female and 47.4% (191) were male. Also, 15.9% were between 15-24 years, 38% between 25-44 years, 31% were between 45-64 years and 15.1% are above 65 years. In relation to the ethnic background, 49.9% of the respondents were Macedonians, 42.9% were Albanians, and the rest are other ethnicities, such as: Serbs (1%), Turks (1.5%), Roma (0.7%), Vlachs (0.7%), Bosniak (3%) and Bulgarian (0.2%). Further in the analysis, the 'Others' category will be used to represent composite measure of ethnicities other than Macedonians and Albanians.

Quantitative data analysis

Survey data processing was based on descriptive statistics (frequencies, crosstabs, central tendency summarised by median and variability using range and interquartile range), Kruskal-Wallis H Test and Mann-Whitney U Test. Statistical analysis was performed by SPSS Version 20.0. The obtained quantitative data were analysed with margin of error of +/- 5 %.

Interviews' sample analysis

The sample consisted of 50% of Macedonians, 44% Albanians, one Serbian (3%) and one Turkish (3%) respondent. There were 53%

females and 47% male respondents. The majority of the interviewees were between 45-64 years old (50%), 33% were between 30-44 years, 13% were up to 29 years old and 3% were above 65 years old.

Organisation of qualitative data

The qualitative methodology of the research involved two coding cycles. The first coding cycle utilised *Structural* coding and the provisional matrix included eight categories: (1) Community transformation; (2) Feelings and conflicts; (3) Outsiders' perception and moving behaviour; (4) Sense of belonging; (5) Roles and participation of diverse actors in decision-making process; (6) Spaces for discussion, deliberation; (7) Political views on space, participation, presence of Other, and intercultural intermediary; and (8) Principles of selection and exchange in public spaces. Structural coding allows organisation of the data based on the research questions (Saldaña, 2009: 51). The coding did not focus only on detecting appropriate attitudes and behaviours but also on detecting the emotions and values that represented participants' experiences and perspectives on diversity and the public space in the neighbourhood. Further, in the second coding cycle, the patterns of responses to the categories were deducted to themes using *Pattern* coding method.

7. Discussion

Deliberation and the political function of public space

In multicultural societies, the plurality of values and needs of different interest groups, ethno-national, cultural and other, makes it more difficult the prospect of coming to public good and common democratic practices. Those elected through a representative democratic process are not an assurance that communal needs will be translated into policy decisions that advocate the rights and needs of the group(s). Steiner (2012: 26) points that: 'Many citizens tend not to trust politicians to make decisions for the public good. There is widespread suspicion that many politicians just look after their career interests or are even corrupt. This suspicion is fuelled by how the media tend to report politics. Amid such cynicism, there are claims of a democratic deficit.' As a result, new models of governance, ones that promote public discussion and direct participation of citizens in the political process are encouraged. In Steiner's view (2012: 26)

decisions brought through a deliberation process are more legitimate and more acceptable to the general public. When designed to allow equal participation of all concerned individuals, the diversity of opinions can result in common shared outcomes. Mitigation between different groups with different and in times, conflictual needs may lead to social polarisation and a shared decision may be difficult to reach. Yet, it is argued that citizens have greater ownership of decisions reached through deliberation (Hendriks, Dryzek, and Hunold, 2007; Michel, 2012: 286).

The present findings indicate low level of participation of citizens in local deliberation activities. Less than a quarter of the citizens have been to a council meeting to deliberate on public representation of diversity while less than a third have participated in a deliberation activity on such topic. This suggests that citizens in Skopje are neither interested in horizontal deliberation, meaning to discuss, talk, debate on policy issues of interest with their co-citizens, nor are interested in debating the issues with their elected representatives in the municipal bodies, or so-called vertical deliberation. The current findings indicate that citizens are passive as they neither have been invited nor informed of any deliberation activity or doubt if this is happening in their neighbourhood. Citizens perceive that decision-making is a process solely within the hands of the politicians and they (the citizens) are powerless to influence any policy-making or change the policy discourse. Citizens' passivity indicates lack of interest to participate in deliberative democracy, accompanied by limited possibilities-contact situations of citizens of different ethnic groups to meet and deliberate on issues of common concern.

JSHS|445

Groups and people in minority status show greater participation in deliberation activities (Neblo et al., 2010: 574). For them deliberation participation is a way to get their voice be heard, initiate public debate and further drive contextual changes. The present findings confirm that ethnic groups have statistically significant different patterns of deliberation participation. Macedonians and Others more than Albanians strongly reject to have participated in vertical delibera-

tion⁴. By contrast, although in low level, Others and Albanians more often than Macedonians attended local council meeting⁵. Ethnic groups have similar pattern of horizontal deliberation. Almost three quarters of Macedonian compared to a quarter of Albanians and small number of Others strongly rejects to have participated in horizontal deliberation⁶. By contrast, small percentage of the citizens take part in such activity, Others show higher level of participation compared to Albanians and Macedonians⁷. Minorities show greater level of participation⁸, with Albanians compared to smaller minority groups or Macedonians reporting greater participation in local deliberation activities. This finding is consistent with the prior data on the positive relation between participation and minority status.

The anticipated relation between neighbourhood homogeneity and participation is not confirmed. Prior research indicates that civic engagement is lower in ethnically more-heterogeneous communities (Costa and Kahn, 2003: 108). The present findings do not indicate difference in the participation score of residents in ethnic and mixed neighbourhoods. Differences between ethnic groups are also weak. Citizens of ethnically homogeneous neighbourhoods compared to those residing in mixed are not better motivated to participate in

⁴ 78% of Macedonians and 70% of Others compared to 26% of Albanians strongly reject to have participated in vertical deliberation.

⁵ 26% of Others compared to 14% of Albanians and 7% of Macedonians have been to local council meeting.

⁶ 72% of the Macedonian compared to 30% of Albanians and 7% of Others strongly rejects to have participated in horizontal deliberation.

⁷ 32% of Others compared to 14% of Albanians and 12% of Macedonians have been part of such activities.

⁸ Albanians have the highest Mean Rank (Mean Rank=245.99) compared to Others (Mean Rank=193.00) and Macedonians (Mean Rank=153.57) in being part of deliberation activities. The differences between groups are statistically significant (Kruskal-Wallis H test ($\chi^2(2) = 68.584, p < .001$). The participation patterns between ethnic groups are same for both being part of deliberation activities (Albanians have the highest Mean Rank (Mean Rank=232.24) compared to Others (Mean Rank=202.80) and Macedonians (Mean Rank=159.78) or attending council meeting (Albanians have the highest Mean Rank (Mean Rank=245.35) compared to Others (Mean Rank=177.78) and Macedonians (Mean Rank=148.01).

local deliberation activities. Macedonians regardless of the type of neighbourhood where they live show low level of participation in horizontal and vertical deliberation. Albanians, on the other side are better motivated to participate in co-ethnic neighbourhood than when they are in a minority status.

Participation has a very high negative correlation with feelings of political powerlessness (Finifter, 1970: 400). The feeling of having an individual influence over decision-making process can be an indicator of civic engagement in deliberation activities. The data from the current research indicate that citizens in general agree to be powerless as an individual to exercise influence decisions concerning public representation of cultural diversity in their neighbourhood. Regardless of their ethnic background, citizens in both ethnic and mixed neighbourhoods share same opinion of powerlessness to individually influence policy decisions of public representation of diversity. Also, both men and women share same feelings of powerlessness⁹. It is evident that the process of planning public representation of diversity is exclusionary and citizens have insufficient capacity or opportunities to influence the political system. *'I don't know if debates are organised, if they are open, I have not heard of anything like it'*, said a 31 year-old Macedonian from Butel. *'Citizens are voiceless'*, added a 21 year-old Albanian from Chair. Some admit that they have been passive in the communication with the local authorities. *'I don't know because I have not tried. Maybe if I try I could exercise some influence'*, noted a 32 year-old Macedonian from Butel. This present findings build upon the indication of low level of participation in local deliberation activities. The lack of trust that civic voices would be taken into consideration hampers participation. At the same time, it could also shape citizens' opinion of how democracy should be exercised, that is as a top-down and narrow-interest majority-rule.

JSHS|447

Public representation of diversity has instigated fierce discussions and protests in Skopje, and in particular, related to the urban project 'Skopje 2014'. Yet, it seems that mobilisation of the wider citizenry to deliberate on this issue remained low. Neblo et al. (2010: 8) argue that people are mobilised around an idea when they have particular

⁹ Mann-Whitney U test (U = 18209, p = .752).

interests and care for the outcomes. When narrow partisan and interest group politics unfold an issue, it may have demobilising effect over the citizens precisely because of the political and ethnocentric interpretations and the accent of partisan instead of civic participation. This is an important subject in shifting the relations between citizens, political parties and governments and institutional innovations towards more direct democratic practices.

Ethnic socialisation and public spaces

The present findings show that residents of mixed neighbourhoods have higher preference for co-ethnic socialisation compared to those living in ethnic neighbourhoods. Residents in mixed neighbourhoods more often than those in ethnic neighbourhoods opt for co-ethnic cultural events in co-ethnic public spaces in the neighbourhood where people from their ethnic group go. While based on the contact hypothesis, it is expected that people in mixed neighbourhoods establish more mundane contacts with people from diverse ethnicities, develop personal communication and cross-cultural friendships, and therefore, hold greater acceptance of 'Others' (Wagner, Christ, Pettigrew, Stellmacher, and Wolf, 2006: 383; Semyonov and Glikman, 2009: 695), the present findings demonstrate the opposite. The current data indicates that members of different ethnic groups living in mixed neighbourhoods tend to avoid intercultural contact demonstrating a tendency for in-group favouritism and a preference for events and traditions celebrating their own ethnic culture.

While the dominant tendency among the residents of mixed neighbourhoods is that of contacts and exchange with members of own ethnic groups,¹⁰ there is some support to inter-ethnic socialisation and participation in events that celebrate other culture than one own¹¹. Despite the fact that those Others are the immediate neighbours, people hardly ever transgress fixed ethnic borders and

¹⁰ 86.1% of residents to strongly agree with co-ethnic socialisation also strongly agree that s/he only participates in events celebrating his/her own ethnic culture, or 68/79.

¹¹ 46.4% of those that strongly disagree to co-ethnic socialise also disagree to only participate in co-ethnic events, or 13/28.

those that prefer to co-ethnic socialise rarely urge oneself in exploring other cultures¹². Similarly, residents in their mixed neighbourhoods that prefer co-ethnic socialisation, also tend to select public spaces where people of their own ethnic group go.¹³ However, compared to their preference for co-ethnic participation, the selection of public spaces is more often a decision that is ethnically neutral¹⁴.

In contrast, people in ethnic neighbourhoods show greater curiosity and preparedness for intercultural ventures in events and spaces with diverse ethnic groups. Why do public spaces in mixed neighbourhoods fail to support intercultural contact? In order to understand co-ethnic favoritism, it is important to look at the context and conditions under which a contact may take place. There is notable ethnocentric transformation of the public spaces in mixed neighbourhoods in Skopje, accommodating symbols and references to a single ethno-national group. Numerical share has been used as a source of legitimacy for the ethnocentric practices of visual representation of the cultural specificity. In line with the dominant ethnocultural ideology, streets, schools and institutions have been renamed. A 31-year old female Macedonian from Chair noted: *'The names of both, my kinder-garden and primary school are changed from Macedonian to Albanian-based her'*. In Chair *'...Earlier you could notice either Macedonian or Turkish language being spoken on the streets while now the Albanian dominates'*, noted a 62-year old Macedonian from Chair. Macedonians and the smaller minority groups are more aware and sensitive to the more evident and real presence of 'Otherness' in the public space of mixed areas. The tendency for ethno-cultural dominance in public space is perceived as a threat towards the existence of Others living there or as a message of

JSHS|449

¹² 39.3% of those that strongly disagree to co-ethnic socialise in public space tend to visit only events celebrating his/her own ethnic culture, or 11/28, and only 3.8% of those that prefer to socialise with their own ethnic group show an interest to visit event of the Others, or 3/79.

¹³ 75.9% of residents to strongly agree with co-ethnic socialisation also strongly agree to select public space where one's own ethnic group goes, or 60/79.

¹⁴ 60.7% of those that strongly disagree to co-ethnic socialise also disagree to select public spaces where people of their own ethnic group go, or 17/28.

who is entitled to use the space. A young Albanian student from Chair said she gets opposing feelings while walking in the central city area where Macedonian ethnocracy dominates *vis-a-vis* the Old bazaar where Albanian symbols are overrepresented. The colliding ethno-cratic designs of public space, especially in practice in mixed neighbourhoods, generate sense of symbolic threat and drive people to compartmentalise within their own ethnic group, stimulating in-group favoritism and out-group homogenisation attitudes. Hence, living in mixed neighbourhood does not necessarily lead to intercultural contact. Despite the fact that the contact happens in multicultural environment, the colliding ethno-nationalisms and symbolic power struggle between dominant ethnic groups, drive ethnic groups away from each other. Thus, it is more viable to expect that the opportunity for contact does not effectuate in out-group acquaintances but rather in prosocial orientation towards in-group members. Previous research confirms that when source of social categorization is salient ethnic identity, groups are less interested in altering the nature of the division and crossing ethnic boundaries (Dovidio, Gaertner, Saguy, and Halabi, 2008: 77). Hence, the tendencies for out-group homogeneity and in-group favouritism practiced by citizens in Skopje shape their personal behaviour and attitude towards Others, and in that respect, where and with whom to socialise. And as the data showed, these tendencies are not resulting in interethnic acquaintances, friendships and collaboration.

Co-ethnic socialisation is not a preference of a specific ethnic group¹⁵. Macedonians, Albanians and Others share similar pro-social attitude towards one's own group¹⁶. This attitude can be exemplified through the view of a 62-year-old Macedonian from Chair: '*There is no need to visit events celebrating the culture of other ethnic groups, I am not motivated*', or in the ethnocentric blindness, as seen in the statement by a 39 years-old Macedonian from Kisela Voda: '*I have not thought about this in such way, I go to places that I like but maybe instinctively I choose places where greater percent of my 'own' go*'. Lack of motivation for intercultural socialisation may suggest that feelings of

¹⁵ Kruskal-Wallis H test ($\chi^2(2) = 3.123$, $p = .210$).

¹⁶ Macedonians have Mean Rank=208.71, followed Albanians with Mean Rank=193.86 and Others with Mean Rank=175.45.

cultural distance and cultural nationalism and not just perceived threats shape inter-ethnic relations.

Ethnic antagonism and public spaces

Public spaces in both mixed and ethnic neighbourhoods are not perceived as generator of antagonism between ethnic groups. In both mixed and ethnic neighbourhoods, people tend to share spaces and do not show discomfort or avoidance of public spaces where other ethnic groups go. However, acceptance and positive experience of diversity is not transferred into unquestioned recognition. Conformity over language(s) used in public space generates disagreements between residents in ethnic and mixed neighbourhoods. Residents of ethnic neighbourhoods insist on conformity with the language spoken by the majority group in the locality. This clashing idea is complemented by aversion in seeing signs in public spaces written on minority-groups languages. Looking through the ethnicity of the residents in an ethnic neighbourhood, Macedonians more often than Albanians and Others support majority language normativity¹⁷. Even in mixed neighbourhoods, Macedonians more often than Albanians and Others support majority language normativity¹⁸. This view can be exemplified in the statement given by a 62-year old Macedonian woman from Chair: *'Ethnic groups should know the official language. Privately it is up to them. In public spaces, bars, institutions, they must use the language that the majority of people understand (meaning the majority of the population in the country-Macedonian language)'*. Such visual transformation of public spaces to include Others' languages is detested by the majority groups. *'I don't like signs in Albanian language or by-lingual boards. They give me discomfort!*, noted a 65-year old Macedonia from Butel. By contrast, a 57-year old Albanian from Saraj noted: *'When communicating with Macedonians I use their language. I don't mind. Just because I am in the centre of*

 JSHS|451

¹⁷ Macedonians have Mean Rank=123.07, followed Albanians with Mean Rank=72.01 and Others with Mean Rank=54.20. Kruskal-Wallis H test ($\chi^2(2) = 46.091$, $p < .001$).

¹⁸ Macedonians have Mean Rank=112.04, followed Albanians with Mean Rank=88.90 and Others with Mean Rank=85.35. Kruskal-Wallis H test ($\chi^2(2) = 9.803$, $p = .007$).

the city I will not speak Macedonian with my brother'. In contradiction, all ethnic groups agree that people should be free to use their mother tongue in public space without threat or fear, and this is more strongly supported in mixed compared to ethnic neighbourhoods.¹⁹ Intergroup differences are significant only in the mixed neighbourhood Chair where Albanians more strongly than Macedonians support the free public use of mother tongue. This poses the questions if Albanians are more multiculturalists than the Macedonians or only supporting the idea of by-lingualism. In this neighbourhood with a dominant Albanian population, the use of mother tongue can be more an expression of the need for wider recognition of their language (being an official language in neighbourhoods where more than 20% of the population is Albanian) while the perception of the Macedonians reflect on the animosity felt while language of Others is used in the immediate public space.

Language is more than a communication tool. It is considered a cornerstone of the nation-state, a common characteristic that binds the imagined community. The preference for majority language normativity is increased with the relative size of the ethnic minority groups in the neighbourhood. And in turn, this is likely to increase negative feelings, antagonism and conflicts between ethnic groups. In coherence with the 'threat' theory, the visibility of minorities' languages in public space may be perceived as a challenge and contesting of the majority group's authority, territory, resources and value system. This is more evident in the views of the Macedonians. Besides group threat, they may also feel individual threat, as it is uncommon for Macedonian to understand Albanian language. As Stratton and Ang (2005: 135) note that just as multiculturalism, language diversity is considered controversial too, because it is perceived as incompatible with national unity.

8. Conclusion

Public spaces in mixed neighbourhoods in Skopje do not serve as natural and spontaneous site of intercultural contact with positive

¹⁹ Ethnic neighbourhoods have Mean Rank=176.54 while mixed neighbourhoods have Mean Rank=213.18. Mann-Whitney U test (U = 1530.500, p < .001).

outcome. The physical shape and the political and social value of spaces may facilitate or hinder contact. In mixed neighbourhoods the question of how diversity is accommodated in public space is closely related to the issue of groups' identity *vis-a-vis* the national identity. Yet, public spaces in the neighbourhoods and a multicultural city can transform from being only bonding social capital towards bridging social capital, that is, to provide positive contact and exchange between different groups of residents (ethnic, social, age, etc.).

Accommodation of ethnic and cultural diversity is not pursued as part of the urban and social planning of the neighbourhoods but rather as an ethno-political consensus between dominant ethnic groups. Trying to balance ethnic nationalistic appetites in the public sphere, lead us to an approach of '*multiculturalism-in design*'. The question of accommodation of cultural diversity is a practical political compromise between ethnic political elites. Public space does not provide dialogue between needs and rights of groups for recognition, beyond blunt acceptance for visible representation. It hinders (more) universalistic or local understandings of belonging and community and a process of 'citizenizing' of the public sphere, where, as Amin (2008: 969) notes: 'interdependence and habitual engagement' can happen freed from ethnic boundaries. Public spaces in both ethnic and mixed areas seems to fail to facilitate social dynamics between ethnic groups in a manner that allows individuals 'the chance to break out of fixed relations and fixed notions, and through this, to learn to become different through new patterns of social interaction' (Amin, 2008: 969).

JSHS|453

Powerlessness, exclusion and majoritarian rule dominate the discourse of citizens' participation in planning and designing public spaces and related policy issues, as public accommodation of diversity is. Lack of motivation or interest accompanies citizens' perceptions of insufficient capacities or opportunities to influence the political system. Governments and policy makers are promoting, or more precisely, requiring citizen involvement in planning everyday life. Yet, the process by which this is usually promoted keeps the government as a key actor with decisive power. As such, citizens' involvement is no longer a shared responsibility between governments and citizens, but rather a barrier in urban and social planning of the

neighbourhoods. Deliberation, civic self-organisation and other platforms of gatherings although considered to be key to social transformation towards more direct democracy, are not the way how citizens and other interest groups, and governments share responsibility in decision-making process in Skopje.

Diversity, among the citizens of Skopje, is perceived as posing a real threat to national unity and division of 'us' and 'them' permeate the discussion on diversity in public space. The ability to normalise, standardise, to define who we are is set within the Macedonian culture. Expectations for conformity and incorporation within the single public culture put greater demands on some ethnic groups than on others. Language was the most contentious issue and conformity in this sense was deemed as necessary. As a result, residents in mixed and ethnic neighbourhoods hold different perception of the multicultural society and the power hierarchies within. Those in ethnic neighbourhoods and the groups in majority more often speak of a cultural assimilation, alignment between ethnic norms and national public culture, while those in mixed neighbourhoods more often articulate ideas of cultural autonomy, recognition and redistribution of resources. These contradictions are also reflected in the legislative change and the political agreement from 2001 that transformed the way Macedonians and Albanians felt of each other and about each other's place. The events from 2001 transformed the state from a nation state owned by the Macedonian majority to a civic state where citizens are defined through their ethnic identity. This installation of a multiethnic society, as some authors note (Bieber, 2011: 20; Muhic, 2004: 40) on a superficial and administrative level, instigated rather formal than substantial equality between groups and did not reconcile the 'frustrated majority', reducing diversity to a narcissism of ethnic differences, a 'symptom' clearly confirmed in the current research. The contradictions in the everyday understanding and living of diversity confirmed in the current research is accompanied by an academic consensus that while multicultural orientation is constitutionally supported value for the new social reality, multiculturalism in Macedonia is neither normatively described, nor a clear and consistent policy (Dodovski, 2005; Sarkanjac, 2005, Janev, 2005). In absence of a more critical and policy oriented debate, the everyday ex-

pressions of diversity add more to confusion than clarity of what it means to live in a multicultural city and plan intercultural public spaces.

Among the citizens of Skopje, discussions on diversity rarely dealt with concerns of social inequality or issues of solidarity. Instead, they mainly focused on issues of (ethnic) unity and order. Crime, social disorder and physical decay are rarely seen in connection to the socio-economic status of the residents in a mixed setting and often tagged to the ethnic background of the people residing in the area. Thus, social inequality persisting between and within ethnic groups is never questioned to intervene in the relationship between the ethnic demography and the perceived decay of neighbourhoods.

Finally, residential mixing strategy based on ethnic belonging may be contentious idea to promote in a fragile multicultural city. Instead, mixing strategy based on the social status should be promoted. At the neighbourhood level, it is expected that mixing people of different social status can promote up-ward social mobility. The more affluent groups can introduce values and norms, among them civic responsibility, participation and communal sharing, and help improve the liveability of the neighbourhood (Smets, 2004: 12). Such differentiation of housing leads toward improved social cohesion and liveability.

JSHS|455

References

- Allport W. G. (1954) *The Nature of Prejudice*. Cambridge: Perseus Books.
- Amin (2008) Collective culture and urban public space, *City: analysis of urban trends, culture, theory, policy, action*, Vol. 12, No. 1, pp. 5-24.
- Bieber, F. (2011) "Introduction: Assessing the Ohrid Framework Agreement", in: M. Risteska and Zh.Daskaloski (Eds.), *One Decade after the Ohrid Framework Agreement: Lessons (to be) Learned from the Macedonian Experience* (pp.12-24). Skopje: Friedrich Ebert Stiftung and Center for Research and Policy Making.
- Bieber, F. (2013) Power Sharing and Democracy in Southeast Europe, *Taiwan Journal of Democracy*, Special Issue, pp. 129-148.

- Bloomfield, J. and Bianchini, F. (2004) *Planning for the intercultural city*. Stroud: Comedia.
- Boyatzis, R.E. (1998) *Transforming qualitative information: Thematic analysis and code development*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Brown, R. and Hewstone, M. (2005) An Integrative Theory of Intergroup Contact, *Advances in Experimental, Social Psychology*, Vol. 37, pp. 255-343.
- Cook, L.F., Delli Carpini, X.M., and Jacobs, R.J. (2007) *Who Deliberates? Discursive Participation in America*, Working Paper 05-08, Institute for Policy Research Northwestern University.
- Costa, L.D. and Kahn, E.M. (2003) Civic Engagement and Community Heterogeneity: An Economist's Perspective, *Symposium Social Capital and Diversity*, pp. 103-111.
- Creswell W. J. (2009) *Research design: Qualitative, quantitative, and mixed methods approaches*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
- Dehnert, S. (2010) *Elections and Conflict in Macedonia: Country Analysis*, International Policy Analysis, Skopje: Friedrich Ebert Stiftung.
- Dixon, J. and Durrheim, K. (2000) Displacing place-identity: a discursive approach to locating self and other, *The British Journal of Social Psychology*, Vol. 39, pp. 27-44.
- Dodovski, I. (2005) Experimentum macedonicum – tragajki po idninata na multiculturalizmot (Experimentum macedonicum – searching for the future of multiculturalism), in: I. Dodovski (Ed.), *Multikulturalizmot vo Makedonija: model vo nastanuvanje (Multiculturalism in Macedonia: model in-progress)* (pp. ix-xv), Skopje: Fondacija Institut Otvoreno Opshtestvo.
- Dovidio, J. F., Gaertner, S. L., Saguy, T., & Halabi, S. (2008). From when to why: Understanding how contact reduces bias, in: U. Wagner, L. R. Tropp, G. Finchilescu, & C. Tredoux (Eds.), *Improving intergroup relations: Building on the legacy of Thomas F. Pettigrew* (pp. 75-90). Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.

- Doucet, I. (2007) Negotiating Brussels: collectives in search for a common world? In: *Urban ontologies: importing ANT into the urban studies seminar*. Berlin, Germany: Centre for Metropolitan Studies.
- Duyvendak, J. W. (2004). Neighbourhoods, cohesion and social safety, in: K. van der Vijver and J. Terpstra, (eds.) *Urban Safety: Problems, Governance and Strategies*, Enschede: University of Twente, pp. 27-35.
- Finifter, W. A. (1970) Dimensions of Political Alienation, *The American Political Science Review*, Vol. 64, No. 2 (Jun., 1970), pp. 389-410.
- Fossett, A.M and Kiecolt, J.K (1989) The Relative Size of Minority Populations and White Racial Attitudes, *Social Science Quarterly*, Vol. 70, No. 4 (December 1989), pp. 820-835.
- Gaertner, S. L., and Dovidio, J. F. (2000) *Reducing intergroup bias: The common ingroup identity model*, Philadelphia: Psychology Press.
- Glazer, N. (1983) *Ethnic Dilemmas*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
- Government of The Republic of Macedonia (2002) *Zakon za upotreba na znamenjata na ethnickite zaednici* (Law on use of the flags of ethnic communities), *Sluzben Vesnik na Republika Makedonija* (State Official Gazette of the Republic of Macedonia), No.58/2005. Available at: <http://www.pravo.org.mk/documentDetail.php?id=272> [18 July 2015]
- Hendriks, M.C., Dryzek, S.J., and Hunold, C. (2007) Turning Up the Heat: Partisanship in Deliberative Innovation, *Political Studies*, Vol. 55, pp. 362-383.
- Hero, R.E. (2003) Social Capital and Racial Inequality in America, *Symposium Social Capital and Diversity*, Vol. 1, No. 1, pp. 113-122.
- Hewstone, M. (2003) Intergroup contact: Panacea for prejudice?, *The Psychologist*, Vol. 16, No. 7, pp. 352-355.
- Horowitz, L.D (1985) *Ethnic Groups in Conflict*, Berkeley: University of California Press.

- Huddy, L., Feldman, S., Taber, C., and Lahav, G. (2005) Threat, Anxiety, and Support of Antiterrorism Policies, *American Journal of Political Science*, Vol. 49, No. 3. (Jul. 2005), pp. 593-608.
- International Crisis Group (2015) Macedonia: Defusing the Bombs, *Europe Briefing*, No. 75. Available at: <http://www.crisisgroup.org/en/regions/europe/balkans/macedonia/b075-macedonia-defusing-the-bomb.aspx> [18.07.2016]
- Janev, G. (2005) Avtohtoniot makedonski multikulturen model (Autochthon Macedonian multicultural model), in: I. Dodovski (Ed.), *Multikulturalizmot vo Makedonija: model vo nastanuvanje (Multiculturalism in Macedonia: model in-progress)* (pp. 97-110), Skopje: Fondacija Institut Otvoreno Opshtestvo.
- Jun, H.J (2013) Determinants of Neighborhood Change: A Multilevel Analysis, *Urban Affairs Review*, Vol. 49, No. 3, pp. 319 –352.
- Keeter, S., Zukin, C., Andolina, M., & Jenkins, K. (2002) The civic and political health of the nation: A generational portrait. Medford, MA: Center for Information and Research on Civic Learning and Engagement.
- Kempen, R. van and Priemus, H. (1999) Undivided cities in the Netherlands: present situation and political rhetoric, *Housing Studies*, Vol. 14, pp. 641–657.
- Kolozova, K., Panov, B. M. and Milcevski, I. (2009) *The nation-state and the institutions of academic knowledge: production and legitimating of dominant discourses of/on knowledge about society* (Research paper), Skopje: Euro-Balkan Institute [web document]. Available at: http://www.rrpp-westernbalkans.net/en/research/Completed-Projects/Macedonia/Nation-state-and-the-Institutions-of-Academic-Knowledge--/mainColumnParagraphs/0/text_files/file0/2_Euro%20Balkan%20paper.pdf [18.07.2016]
- Kukathas, C. (1992) Are There Any Cultural Rights? *Political Theory*, Vol. 20, No. 1 (Feb., 1992), pp. 105-139.
- Kymlicka, W. (2010) The rise and fall of multiculturalism? New debates on inclusion and accommodation in diverse societies, *International Social Science Journal*, Vol. 61, No. 199, pp. 97-112.

- La Due Lake, R. and Huckfeld, R. (1998) Social Capital, Social Networks, and Political Participation, *Political Psychology*, Vol. 19, No. 3 (Sep., 1998), pp. 567-584.
- Leach, C. W., Snider, N., and Iyer, A. (2002). "Spoiling the consciences of the fortunate": The experience of relative advantage and support for social equality: In I. Walker & H. J. Smith (Eds.), *Relative deprivation: Specification, development, and integration* (pp. 136-163). New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Lefebvre, H. (1991) *The Production of Space*, Oxford: Blackwell.
- Levine, R., Martinez, T., Brase, G., and Sorenson, K. (1994) Helping in 36 U.S. Cities, *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, Vol. 67, pp. 69-81.
- Lim, C. and Sander, T. (2013) Does Misery Love Company? Civic Engagement in Economic Hard Times, *Social Science Research*, Vol. 42, pp. 14-30.
- Linville, W.P., Fischer, W.G. and Salovey, P. (1989) Perceived distributions of the characteristics of in-group and out-group members: Empirical evidence and a computer simulation, *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, Vol 57, No. 2, pp. 165-188.
- Livingston, R.W., Brewer, M.B., and Alexander, M.G. (2004) Images, emotions and prejudice: Qualitative differences in the nature of Black and White racial attitudes. Paper presented at the annual convention of the Society for Personality and Social Psychology, January, Austin, Texas.
- Maleska, M. (2013) Multiethnic democracy in Macedonia: political analysis and emerging scenarios, *New Balkan Politics*, Vol. 13 [web document]. Available at: <http://www.newbalkanpolitics.org.mk/item/Multiethnic%20democracy%20in%20Macedonia:%20political%20analysis%20and%20emerging%20scenarios> [18.07.2016]
- Michels, A. (2012) Citizen Participation in Local Policy Making: Design and Democracy, *International Journal of Public Administration*, Vol. 35, No. 4, pp. 285-292.
- Mondak, J.J. and Gearing, F. A. (1998) Civic Engagement in a Post-Communist State, *Political Psychology*, Vol. 19, No. 3, pp. 615-637.

- Muhic, M. (2004) Multiculturalism in Central and Eastern Europe: Challenge or Thread?, *Anthropology of East Europe Review*, Vol. 22, No. 2, pp. 1-8.
- Musick, A.M. and Wilson, J. (2008) *Volunteers: A Social Profile*, Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
- Mutz, C.D. (2006) *Hearing the Other Side: Deliberative versus Participatory Democracy*, New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Neblo, A.M., Esterling, M.K., Kennedy, P.R., Lazer, M.J.D, and Sokhey, E.A (2010) Who Wants To Deliberate—And Why?, *American Political Science Review*, Vol. 104, No. 3, pp. 566-583.
- Oliver, J. E. (2000) City size and civic involvement in metropolitan America, *American Political Science Review*, No. 94, pp. 361–373.
- Putnam, R. (2007) E Pluribus Unum: Diversity and Community in the Twenty-first Century, The 2006 Johan Skytte Prize Lecture, *Scandinavian Political Studies*, Vol. 30, No. 2, pp. 137-174.
- Pazajiti, A. (2005) Multikulturalizmot: nova vizija za idninata na Makedinija (Multiculturalism: new vision for the future of Macedonia), in: I. Dодovski (Ed.), *Multikulturalizmot vo Makedonija: model vo nastanuvanje* (Multiculturalism in Macedonia: model in-progress) (pp. 41-54). Skopje: Fondacija Institut Otvoreno Opshtestvo.
- Parekh, B. (2008) *A New Politics of Identity: Political Principles for an Independent World*. New York: Palgrave MacMillan.
- Petrovska-Beshka, V. (1994) *Metodologija na eksperimentalnite istrazuvanja vo psihologijata* (Methodology of experimentation researches in psychology). Skopje: Malinska.
- Petrovska-Beshka, V. (1999) *Anketiranje: shto, zoshto, kako* (Doing survey: what, why, how). Skopje: Filozofski fakultet.
- Saldaña, J. (2009) *The Coding Manual for Qualitative Researchers*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

- Semyonov, M. and Glikman, A. (2009) Ethnic Residential Segregation, Social Contacts, and Anti-Minority Attitudes in European Societies, *European Sociological Review*, Vol. 25, No.6, pp. 693–708.
- Semyonov, M., Raijman, R., and Gorodzeisky, A. (2008) Foreigners' Impact on European Societies Public Views and Perceptions in a Cross-National Comparative Perspective, *International Journal of Comparative Sociology*, Vol. 49, No. 1, pp. 5–29.
- Smets, P. (2004) Affordable housing for different income groups in working class neighbourhoods in Amsterdam: Social mix or segregation?, Paper presented at International Conference 'Adequate and Affordable Housing for All', June, Toronto.
- State Statistical Office (2005) *Census 2002: Population, Households and Dwellings in the Republic of Macedonia*. Skopje: State Statistical Office of The Republic of Macedonia. Available on: <http://www.stat.gov.mk/Publikacii/knigaXIII.pdf> [20 July 2016]
- State Statistical Office (2015) *Makedonija vo brojki: 2015* (Macedonia in numbers: 2015), pp. 33. Available at: http://www.stat.gov.mk/PrikaziPublikacija_1.aspx?rbr=563 [18 July 2016]
- Steiner, J. (2012) *The Foundations of Deliberative Democracy*, New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Stephan, W. G., Renfro, C. L., & Davis, M. D. (2008). The role of threat in intergroup relations: In U. Wagner, L. Tropp, G. Finchilescu, & C. Tredoux (Eds.), *Improving Intergroup Relations: Building on the Legacy of Thomas F. Pettigrew* (pp. 55-72), Wiley-Blackwell.
- Stratton, J. and Ang, I. (1998) Multicultural imagined communities: cultural difference and national identity in the USA and Australia: in D Bennett, D. (ed.), *Multicultural states: rethinking difference and identity Opens in a new window*, Routledge: London and New York, pp. 135-162.
- Taleski, D. (2008) Minorities and Political Parties in Macedonia, in: *Political Parties and Minority Participation* (ed.) (pp.127-152), Skopje: Friedrich Ebert Stiftung.

- Taylor, C. (1994) The Politics of Recognition, in: A. Gutmann (Ed.) *Multiculturalism: Examining the politics of recognition* (pp. 25-74). Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Tropp, L.R., and Pettigrew, T.F. (2005). Relationships between intergroup contact and prejudice among minority and majority status groups. *Psychological Science*, Vol. 16, pp. 951-956.
- Trajkovski, I. (2005) Nacionalizmite i multiculturalizmot vo Makedonija: sostojbi i perspektivi (Nationalisms and multiculturalism in Macedonia: conditions and perspectives), in: I. Dodovski (Ed.), *Multikulturalizmot vo Makedonija: model vo nastanuvanje* (Multiculturalism in Macedonia: model in-progress) (pp. 5-13). Skopje: Fondacija Institut Otvoreno Opshtestvo.
- Valentine, G. (2008) Living with difference: reflections on geographies of encounter, *Progress in Human Geography*, Vol. 32, No. 3, pp. 323-337.
- Wagner, U., Christ, O., Pettigrew, T.F., Stellmacher, J. and Wolf, C. (2006) Prejudice and Minority Proportion: Contact Instead of Threat Effects, *Social Psychology Quarterly*, Vol. 69, No. 4, pp. 380-390.
- Yiftachel, O., and Hedgcock, D. (1993) Urban social sustainability and the planning of an Australian city, *Cities*, Vol. 11, No. 2, pp. 139-157.

RETHINKING ABOUT THE CYPRUS PROBLEM: A BEAUTIFUL ISLAND TRAPPED BETWEEN GEOPOLITICS AND GEO-STRATEGY

LEVENT KIRVAL *

Abstract: The Cyprus problem continues to be a major issue in the Southeastern Mediterranean region. Given that the problem is currently seen as an integral component of Turkey's EU membership process, it also has significant implications for the political relations between Turkey and Europe. The EU membership of the island has further complicated this already difficult problem. Moreover, the Cyprus conflict continues to have a major impact on the EU's security policies and NATO operations. Another important dimension of the problem pertains to the disputed maritime jurisdiction areas between Turkey, Greece, Cyprus (GCASC and TRNC), Israel, Egypt and Lebanon. This issue has become even more critical following the offshore oil and gas explorations carried out around the island of Cyprus. All of these developments, along with the 'Arab Spring', have exacerbated the uncertainties about the region's future, and the on-going conflicts have increased the importance of the Cyprus problem with regards to Turkish foreign policy. In this context, this article will analyse the current state of the Cyprus problem, paying particular attention to the maritime jurisdiction areas as well as the recent hydrocarbon exploration related developments, and will conclude with an assessment of the parameters that need to be changed to achieve a lasting solution to the problem.

Key Word: *Cyprus, Geopolitics, Realpolitik, South-eastern Mediterranean, Turkish Foreign Policy, Maritime Jurisdiction Areas*

1. Introduction

The recent shifts in the Eastern Mediterranean's strategic balance of power relations confirms the critical position of the island of Cyprus

* Istanbul Technical University Maritime Faculty [lkirval@itu.edu.tr]

and the significance of the classical realpolitik narratives as well as the realist approach with regards to the surrounding geographies of the island. Cyprus also serves as an important policy tool for Turkey and other relevant countries in their efforts to effectively take part in the strategic game taking place in the Eastern Mediterranean. Of further critical importance is the island's strategic location at the heart of many large-scale developments and conflicts, including the so-called "Arab Spring" (gradually transforming towards a disastrous winter), uncertainties surrounding the political fates of countries like Libya, Syria and Iraq, the Israel-Palestine issue and Turkey's strained relations with Armenia and Russia. Finally, the presence of the sovereign British military bases on the island highlights the island's strategic regional and global importance¹ (Milliyet Daily, 2012).

Under the current global circumstances, the political moves available on the Cyprus conflict are highly limited. The recently arisen issue of the ambiguity surrounding maritime jurisdiction areas in the Eastern Mediterranean, coupled with the new interest in the energy (hydro-carbon) resources offered by the region, have further complicated the Cyprus problem and heightened the importance of the island. Therefore, in what follows, this paper will examine the impacts of the contested maritime jurisdiction areas and the energy-related conflicts around the island of Cyprus and conclude by discussing the implications of these new parameters for the solution of this issue as well as the steps that Turkey can take in view of its EU membership process.

2. Turkey's EU Membership Process and the Cyprus Problem

Turkey's EU membership process, which was initiated with the Ankara Agreement signed in 1963 between Turkey and the European Economic Community, has progressed very slowly in the following decades. Among the many causes of this slow progression are the 1971 and 1980 military coups in Turkey, the latter of which culmi-

¹ On March 22, 2012, the Parliamentary Council of the Greek Cypriot Administration unanimously passed a bill for the first time demanding termination of the presence of British military bases in Cyprus.

nated in a highly undemocratic constitution, which is still in effect; the 1974 “Cyprus Peace Operation,” the 1981 accession of Greece to the EEC, which gave Greece unprecedented power to obstruct Turkey’s full membership; and finally, Turkey’s waning standing in the international system following the end of the Cold War in the 1990s.

Nevertheless, Europe continues to play a significant role in Turkey’s transformation. Despite all the difficulties in establishing a mutual relationship, Europe has been one of the main transformative forces for Turkey since the late-Ottoman modernization efforts. In this respect, the EU membership has remained as an important national target for Turkey, notwithstanding the highly turbulent course it has taken in recent years.

Over the years, on top of the domestic and international political challenges Turkey has faced, the EU member countries have generally remained ambivalent about Turkey’s accession to the EU, having largely abstained from accepting Turkey into the union on account of demographic, economic, cultural, and geographical reasons. Moreover, with the end of the Cold War, the EU’s interest shifted towards Central and Eastern Europe as it prioritized the integration of formerly Communist countries.

JSHS|465

Turkey’s strategic partnership with the USA during the Cold War era intricately tied its dealings with the EU to the relations between Europe and the USA. For this reason, Turkey’s integration with Europe largely failed to go beyond being a US-backed process (and therefore an integration seen by some of the EU members as a ‘forced marriage’ or as another ‘Trojan horse’, comparable to the membership of Great Britain).

During the Cold War, the USA endorsed the European integration movement, seeing it as a common market project based on free market principles. However, it was much less supportive about the other potentials it presented, such as social welfare and political integration. European conservative political parties shared this perspective and therefore viewed Turkey’s membership largely in terms of its economic benefits and the integration of national markets. Such an economic perspective persists even today among many groups, the

results of which have left Turkey's potential role in this supra-national political and social project largely unanalysed.

In Turkey, the EU membership has generally been addressed within the same framework of NATO or WTO membership, and therefore its potential transformative effects with respect to democracy and social processes have not been sufficiently discussed. Moreover, Europe as a cultural entity or project has been dismissed by many as an Orientalist or a Eurocentric imperialist endeavour.

Turkey, however, is not able to fully turn to eastwards either, due to the problems it has experienced with its surrounding countries over the years, its domestic concerns regarding its secular model and its memories of Ottoman-Arab relations, particularly during World War I. All these factors have strengthened the deep suspicions about both the West and the East and have led to the growth of Turkish ultra-nationalist feelings, leaving the country trapped between East and West.

The European values laid out within the framework of the Copenhagen criteria involve an active and competitive market economy, a strong legal system protecting individual rights, as well as democratic decision-making mechanisms. The EU's ever-expanding *acquis communautaire* and the recent Treaty of Lisbon (along with preceding discussions on the EU constitution) added, to a certain extent, 'social citizenship' to the above-mentioned values, resulting in the evolution of the EU into a 'social democratic' supra-national model. Unfortunately, recent economic crises have impeded this movement, partly prompting Turkey to shift away from the otherwise attractive target of Europeanization.

The emphasis on democracy, civil society, rule of law, secular politics, social and labour rights, environmental consciousness and a healthy free market within the EU serves to support a geographical and cultural patriotism, one based on shared values, that goes beyond ethnic-sectarian nationalisms. However, a Europeanization process based on the promotion of these values has been far from perfect, even within the EU itself, as politicians in some EU member countries failed to uphold such values. This has led Turkey to move further away from embracing the European project.

Recently, Turkey has had to revert to its realpolitik concerns, due to several reasons, including the ongoing power struggle in the Eastern Mediterranean, the chaos created by the so-called “Arab Spring”, the EU’s ambivalence towards Turkey and its failure to produce viable solutions to the economic crises in its member-states, Turkey’s security concerns, heightened not only by the current state of the Cyprus problem but also by the rekindled conflict with the PKK, as well as by its thorny relations with its neighbours, including Armenia, Russia, and Iran. Moreover, Turkey’s deepening suspicions about the EU have led Turkey to manoeuvre in the region largely independent from the EU (European Voice Daily, 2010).

Under these circumstances, quite understandably, both conservative and social democrat groups in Turkey have grown critical of the EU in the recent years. The chronic failure to achieve a lasting solution to the Cyprus problem, along with the EU’s inconsistent approach to the issue, the destabilization of and conflicts in the Eastern Mediterranean and the lack of support to Turkey’s membership within the EU, have all led Turkey to return to power-centred approaches and to produce policies similar to those prevalent in the Cold War period (Akşit & Şenyuva & Üstün, 2010). In this context, the policies that Turkey will develop and pursue in the upcoming years will be determined by the regional policies of the US and the EU, the future course of the political instability and uncertainty in the region and the new developments regarding contestations over energy resources.

JSHS|467

A New Key Parameter in the Cyprus Problem: Maritime Jurisdiction Areas and Energy Struggles in the Eastern Mediterranean

The problem of demarcating the boundaries of maritime jurisdiction areas has become highly significant for countries having a coast on the Eastern Mediterranean. While land borders continue to be disputed between countries in the region, the newly discovered abundance of offshore natural gas and oil (and other hydrocarbon derivatives) reserves has led to new conflicts, further complicating the balance of power in the region (Milliyet Daily, 2009).

The island of Cyprus, which has already been suffering from multiple realpolitik predicaments, is becoming more important due to its location right in the middle of countries with ambiguous and disputed maritime jurisdiction areas of Greece, Turkey, Cyprus (South and North), Syria, Lebanon, Palestine, Israel, Egypt and Libya. Geological research has revealed that ample hydrocarbon reserves exist in Turkey's northern and southern seas. As is well known, the Anatolian plateau is elevated, having taken its current form by the collision of Eurasian, Arabian, and African plates over thousands of years. Pressure on the northern and southern depressions of this land (Black Sea and the Mediterranean Sea) have formed rich hydrocarbon reservoirs. As a result, the increased value of maritime areas further complicates the issue of geographical sovereignty and has become a new parameter alongside already existing political conflicts in the region (Başeren, 2011: 50).

Naturally, the countries in the region would still compete over such vast reserves, even if Cyprus did not exist. However, the Cyprus island does exist, albeit politically in a highly problematic way (the disputes over whether it is composed of one or two sovereign states, or whether it is a federal state with autonomous constituents continues; and there are ongoing negotiations under the auspices of the UN and with its problematic political structure it became an EU member). Added to this are the Turkish-Greek conflict (especially with regard to maritime jurisdiction areas in the Aegean Sea), and the uncertainties haunting Arab countries and the Israeli-Palestinian conflict (from a wider perspective, the competition between the US and the UK as well as between the US and Russia in the region). All these disputes render it inevitable that power-based, realpolitik approaches will be applied, both on land and at sea. In this respect, laying out the problem of demarcating the maritime jurisdiction areas in the region is key in terms of revealing the manoeuvring spaces available to the parties involved. The biggest problem concerning the hydrocarbon reserves in the region arises from the ambiguities in the delimitation of countries' continental shelves and exclusive economic zones (EEZ).

The United Nations Convention on the Law of the Sea (UNCLOS²) defines (Article 76) the continental shelf of a coastal state as the seabed and subsoil zones of the submarine areas that extend to a distance of 200 nautical miles. If the natural continental shelf goes beyond this point, it stipulates that the continental shelf shall not exceed 350 nautical miles from the baselines whence the breadth of the territorial sea is measured or shall not exceed 100 nautical miles from the 2,500-meter isobaths. A continental shelf can be described as the extension to the sea of the continental sovereignty of a coastal state, which assumes the ownership and use rights of all the seabed and subsoil riches. On the other hand, an exclusive economic zone (provided that it is declared by the coastal state) on a given continental shelf gives the ownership and use rights of the body of water in the area to the coastal state.

Turkey has not yet declared an EEZ in the area due to regional disputes and especially to its conflict with Greece in the Aegean Sea. Moreover, in the remaining parts of the Eastern Mediterranean, neither Turkey nor Greece nor Cyprus have clearly demarcated maritime jurisdiction areas. Nor is there a clear consensus on the existing propositions or mutual agreements between other countries in the region.

JSHS|469

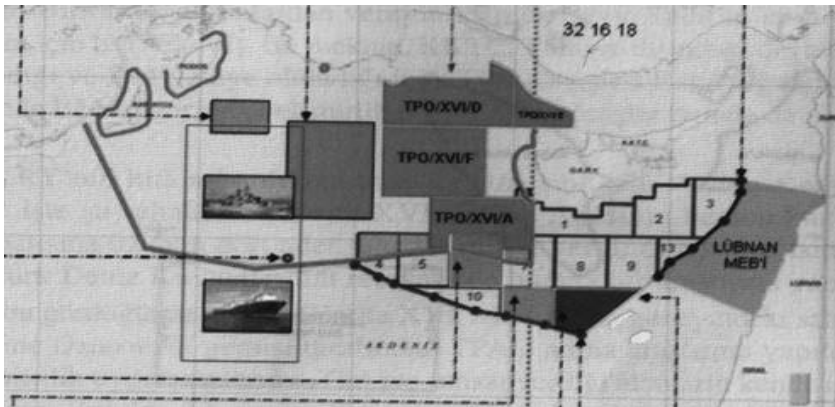
The EEZ agreements that the Greek Cypriot Administration of Southern Cyprus (GCASC) unilaterally made with Egypt, Israel and Lebanon are highly contentious for several reasons, including the uncertain political status of the island, the fact that Turkey does not recognize the Republic of Cyprus, which claims to be the continuation of GCASC, and the exclusion of Cypriot Turks from the processes in which such agreements are made.

Furthermore, there is contention between Turkey and Egypt in terms of maritime jurisdiction areas. Due to the agreement between GCASC and Egypt, these countries have seized Turkey's maritime jurisdiction areas, which should normally extend to the middle of the Mediterranean. The fact that GCASC made an agreement with Egypt and de-

² Turkey is not a party to this convention mainly due to its disputes with Greece over the Aegean Sea.

clared an EEZ, despite the controversial status of the island, complicates the issue of Turkey's possible EEZ.

Additionally, there is conflict between Turkey and Greece in the Eastern Mediterranean over the continental shelf and EEZ. As Greece is involved in the continental shelf zone between Turkey and Libya by the island of Crete, controversy has also ensued on the issue of the maritime jurisdiction areas of these three countries. Greece pursues a joint policy with GCASC, one that is aimed at dominating the maritime jurisdiction areas of both Turkey and Libya in the Eastern Mediterranean. As the existing agreement between GCASC and Egypt on the demarcation of maritime jurisdiction areas was made (conflicting with the decisions of the International Court of Justice) with the overthrown Egyptian government (led by Hosni Mubarak), to the disadvantage of Egypt, this agreement has also become controversial recently.



Current Hydrocarbon Search Activities in the Eastern Mediterranean (Başeren, 2011: 63)

North of the Red Line: Area Claimed by Turkey (not accepted by Greece)

North of Black Line: Area Claimed by GCASC

Shaded Navy Blue Area: Area where GCASC discovered hydrocarbon reserves

By sending frigates to the region (similar to what it does on the Aegean coastal waters and FIR boundary issue), Turkey seeks to remind the countries of the region as well as the world that it does not recognize existing agreements (between Greece, GCASC, Israel, and Egypt) or targeted status quo. Therefore, the controversies among the countries of the region (which is already a hot zone due to existing conflicts on lands) will multiply in the upcoming years as new hydrocarbon reserves are found and the Cyprus problem persists.

Another factor that further complicates the problem is the fact that the EU does not have a clear agenda on the region, and when it does, it generally adheres to the arguments raised by GCASC and Greece. For years, the EU has been searching for alternatives to Russia and the Caucasus in order to ensure energy security. In this respect, the carbon reserves to be potentially discovered in the Eastern Mediterranean are of importance for the EU. To make matters worse, the EU, which is struggling to overcome a number of financial crises, has recently suspended the process for Turkey's full membership, which, as matters stood, had already been held in abeyance, while Turkey in turn has deprioritized its EU membership goal. For these reasons, Turkey, is struggling to see itself as a partner to the EU and as part of the EU's strategic goals, and thus feels obliged to pursue its own national interests in the Eastern Mediterranean energy conflicts.

JSHS|471

As mentioned just above, the EU's habitual tendency of primarily determining its policies according to the arguments raised by Greece and GCASC poses yet another challenge for Turkey. Fearing the prospect of energy dependence on Russia, the EU, not wanting a powerful state (Russia or Turkey) to control the hydrocarbon reserves in the Eastern Mediterranean and the Middle East, strives to empower countries that can be controlled more easily by them. It can therefore be argued that the EU and the US act in harmony in the region in this respect. The support that GCASC and Greece receives in their continental shelf and EEZ claims partly strengthens the belief in Turkey that what is going on in the Mediterranean is part of a greater plan.

In short, in the new strategic environment in the Mediterranean that emerged in the post-Cold War period, Turkey is a player whose presence is undesired (Baç, 2006). This renders Cyprus more crucial strategically for Turkey and reinforces the controversies over how to share the island. Turkey's strong presence in Cyprus strengthens its hand in the greater strategic game in the Eastern Mediterranean and makes it one of the key energy players.

3. General Conclusions

The ongoing process of negotiations addressing the Cyprus problem, especially that of the EU's reluctance or inability to follow a clear agenda and to play an effective role, continues to increasingly pave the way for Turkey's return to its original stances.

Furthermore, Cyprus figures centrally in realpolitik and power-based strategic approaches on account of various factors, such as the so-called "Arab Spring", uncertainties about the future of countries in the region, conflicts over the region's hydrocarbon reserves, and the efforts of Russia, the US-UK, and the EU to increase their regional power and influence. At this point, it should be noted that the EU assumed a serious risk by accepting Cyprus as a full member of the union.

As the current situation in Cyprus is akin to that present in Cold War-era Berlin, a transformation needs to take place within the global system, and the main parameters defining the Middle East and the Eastern Mediterranean, which hold key significance for that system, need to be amended, for a solution to prosper. It is important to point out that the isolated people of Northern Cyprus are the ones who suffers the most from the current state of affairs.

Despite being a legacy of the Cold War, the Cyprus problem continues to exist as a result of the persisting conflicts governing the balance of power relations in the region. In view of this, this paper stipulates that a strong, sustainable peace can be achieved on this beautiful Mediterranean island only when a totally new balance of power and stability regime is established.

References

Akşit, Sait & Şenyuva, Özgehan & Üstün, Çiğdem (2010). *Turkey Watch: EU Member States' Perceptions on Turkey's Accession to the EU*, Ankara: Center for European Studies.


Baç, Meltem Müftüler (2006). *Türkiye-Avrupa Birliği İlişkilerinde Güvenlik Boyutundan Bir Bakış*. İstanbul: TESEV, 17-24.

Başeren, Sertaç (2011). Doğu Akdeniz'de Deniz Yetki Alanları ve Yeni Enerji Politikaları. *Deniz Hukuku Sempozyumu- Bildiriler Kitabı*, Mersin: Çağ Üniversitesi.

European Voice Daily (2010). *NATO Chief Urges EU to Give Turkey Security Role*. 3 October 2010

Milliyet Daily (2009). *Adada Petrol Krizi*. 28 May 2009

Milliyet Daily (2012). 23 March 2012



HOW ARE THE CATEGORIES 'ISLAM' AND 'TRIBE' TRANSFORMED AND MANIFEST IN THE SOMALI DIASPORA?



ROSEANNA LOOKER *



Abstract: Since the civil war in Somalia during the 1990s, Somali people have been dispersed across many corners of the Globe. This formation of a diasporic Somali nation has raised crucial questions surrounding how ethnic identity and religious affiliation and practice are transformed and manifest in the course of dislocation and re-establishment in a host nation. Within the remit of Religious Studies through the use of a *diasporic religious* framework of analysis, the paper seeks to understand the manifestation of Islamic identity, belief and practice and its relativity with tribal affiliation in Somali diaspora communities. The paper is supported by my small-scale ethnography which took place over a period of six months in Bristol's Somali Diaspora community and comprised of interviews in addition to participant observation of a religious event. There exists an urgent need for underscoring the authentic documentation of the Somali Muslim experience in the diaspora, which has often been neglected with academic discourse. A diasporic religious framework of analysis provides a more nuanced understanding of the symbolic importance underlying religious and cultural praxis. Through the use of this framework of analysis the paper seeks to understand the manifestation of Islam identity, belief and practice and its relativity with tribal affiliation and modes of organisation in the Somali Diaspora. The findings reveal the nature of Islam in the Somali diaspora to be a highly transformative, cohesive force, in many instances overriding tribal affiliation and modes of organisation. Islam provides believers with a strong source of spiritual identity, sustenance and continuity in the face of wider social challenges of adjustment and situation in a highly secular society. This research contributes to an increasing remit within religious studies which seeks to understand the renewed importance of religion in a diasporic setting.

* University of Bristol [rl13165@my.bristol.ac.uk]

Key Word: *Somali, Somalia, diaspora, Islam, tribe*

1. Spiritual sustenance and fear of moral corruption

For Somali diaspora, the upholding of religious practice and identity constitutes an inherent part of daily life. Respondents expressed the versatile nature of where prayer can be performed. Despite work commitments, prayer was not to be sacrificed, as explained by a taxi driver: *"I may pray anywhere.. here, coffee shops, work, anywhere"* (02/08/2015). For Somali diaspora, Islam is articulated through the construction of space, daily practices, and forms of interaction in addition to modes of thinking about their lives (Michael 2002: 172). According to a Nursery Nurse from Bristol, maintenance of religious worship, namely the five daily prayers¹, often proved a challenge in a fast-paced working environment: *"at work in the Nursery, we are few Muslim people there. Sometimes I have to make late my prayer or they have to cover for me. Sometimes I struggle to pray on time"* (10/10/2015). Despite believers experiencing difficulty in retaining prayer and other forms of religious practice, the benefits of continuation of one's practice are deeply symbolic.

Religious worship offers a meaningful framework of practice and ideology, which according to Michael (2002), maintains levels of moral during hardships of exile, displacement and resettlement and in times of emotional disdain (2002: 172). This was a continually prevalent theme throughout my fieldwork: *"when you submit to God, truly you will have no worries, you do anything you can to better your life"* (02/08/2015) said a father of two. Religion remained a motivational force for the betterment of the self and reassurance where life may be insecure: *"When I die my body will be the sand, but my soul, no one has the power to know where we are going, only*

¹ Or Salat, the Muslim prayer is performed at specific times of the day marked by the position of the Sun. *Salat-Al Fajr* (Morning) *Salat Al-Duhur* (Midday) *Salat Al-Asr* (Afternoon) *Salat Al Maghrib* (Sunset) and *Salat Al-Isha* (night) (Marranci 2008: 149)

God" (02/08/2015). The submission to God provides believers with a sense of security, in knowing God has the ultimate power, perhaps this is nuanced in the face of diaspora Somalis experiences of wider existential security. Furthermore, the wearing of religious garments is a way one performs a symbolic devotional act. A nursing student described the *hijab* as a means "to get closer to Allah" (21/11/2015) said a nursing student. In addition, religious attire can be a way in which one proudly asserts their religious identity to the outside world, "a silent symbol of self and community" (De Voe 2002: 237).

Teachings on how to live alongside those with differing or no faith, for instance, become more pronounced in the diaspora. This was expressed to me by a mother of four in Bristol: "*The Qur'an says how to treat one another, and Christians and Jews. This is important*" (10/10/2015). The Maintaining of a religious moral standard remained to be of importance for Somalis in the diaspora, and perhaps supports the situation of oneself: An education support worker expressed to me that "*religious people have higher moral ethics than others. A Church goer or Mosque goer has more self-discipline*" (04/08/2015. Sustaining this is essential in maintaining health just as food and drink, for many diaspora Somalis: "*spiritual connection is vital for mental well-being*" (04/08/2015). This is concurrent with Howa Abdi's (2015) findings of the Somali diaspora Muslim experiences in Minneapolis, United Arab Emirates, and South Africa. Where, despite the multiplicity of location "people spoke about a sense of peace and security amid the tumult of their refugee lives: the rhythm of prayer, the solidarity of the Qur'an and hadiths, the companionability of Friday prayer" (2015: 208). From this, it can be inferred how imperative spiritual needs are (Abdi 2015: 118). Interestingly, Roble (2009) found Swedish Somalis turn to reading and recitation of the Qur'an as a strategy to deal with mental ill health.

JSHS|477

Adjusting to a markedly different socio-cultural system can entail significant challenges for Somali diaspora. My ethnograph revealed an extensive fear of becoming morally corrupt or the attenuating of one's religion and cultural values. As a reaction to this fear, De Voe (2002) ascertains Somali families in the mid-western and elsewhere turn to their religion as a strategy to counter "a tide of contamination" (2002: 239). Many Somali parents express concern at their

children becoming 'lost' as they see them experiment with styles of socialisation, clothing and hair and bring home the habits and vocabulary in of their new environments (McGown 1999: 211). Young Somalis often experience a process of integration generally much less strenuous and painful than their parents and grandparents (Moghissi 2007: xvi) and this generational divide often comes into conflation. The concern of many Somali parents remains whether it is possible to instil good religious socialisation in their children whilst living in a multi-religious and secular society (McGown 1999: 211).

2. A Situational Islamic Identity

The process of othering emerges in a range of mechanisms that "that variously subject non-white immigrants to processes [...] that indicate the degree or their closeness to or distance from the white standard" (2007: 73). Somalis in Bristol vocalised an awkwardness in maintaining their religious worship in workspaces, which was met by signs of hostility, a young man studying for an engineering degree explained: "*when being at work on placement it will be uncomfortable for me to perform certain religious acts*" (01/08/2015). The issue of Cultural racism and discrimination on religious grounds is a reality for many Somalis in the UK and elsewhere. Somali women, for instance, find that "prospective employers continually reject her on sight but has no trouble finding work when her head is uncovered." (McGwon 1999: 205). This prevailing Religious discrimination against Muslims in Britain is underscored by 'Islamophobia', "a generalised fear of Islam and Muslims" (Shryock 2010: 1), which is often perpetuated through distorted media representation of Muslims and Islam being antithetical to western values.

Despite the real presence and experience of discrimination, Somalis in Bristol have acknowledged their feelings of a strong sense of religious accommodation which they feel exists in their host nations. In other words "one could feel and breathe Islam" (Sallah 2010: 19). One respondent expressed to me how Somalis from other diaspora settings in Northern Europe such as Holland prefer to live and move to the UK based upon greater inclusivity of religious practice: "*the main reason why Somalis come to the UK from Holland is because there are more Mosques. In Holland there may be one Mosque for the*

whole city" (01/08/2015). This is a striking finding and highlights the vital importance of places of worship for Somali diaspora. Moreover, Mosques are an integral source of community cohesion and often perform other functions besides the spiritual. They provide spiritual recognition with faith as well as fellow Muslims (Abdi 2015: 118). In addition to places of worship the availability of the necessary ingredients of Islam, like halal shops, Mosques, madrasas and the presence of vibrant Muslim communities (Sallah 2010: 19) engenders a sense of belonging and acceptance. In Britain, despite cultural racism and Islamophobia still prevailing many Somalis felt it is a tolerant and hospitable nation with regard to its accommodation of religious minorities.

3. Tribe: a source of division or collective sentiment?

Scholars ascertain that within the diaspora, adherence to the tribe and its structures are still maintained, Griffiths (2002: 25) some Somali diaspora in London maintain clan structure and its subdivisions. Respondents repeatedly expressed how tribe acts as a kind of 'social insurance' with regard to family matters and perform a number of essential functions such as raising funds. Tribe for many remains a positive force, a wider family of networks which can always be relied on. Many of my respondents ascertained that one's tribe would be the 'first point of call' before one would turn to their wider religious community or Ummah: *We are all diaspora [...] If I need help, I turn to them. At the next stage you try to find a Mosque*" (20/08/2015). Similarly a university student, who grew up in Bristol expressed to me that: *"In an emergency, you needed money, the Somali community will be willing to help you"* (21/08/2015). Many participants readily expressed a divisive underscoring of tribal and clan structuring and were adamant it had no place in the diaspora. *"Unfortunately Shaytan (the devil) is using tribe it's the easiest weapon"* (02/08/2015) said a Bristol taxi driver. Some expressed to me how reliance upon tribe as the primary mode of identification conflicts with Islamic teachings. A community worker expressed how: *"In the material world we are competing for resources and this takes away from the unity of Islam"* (04/08/2015). Others were adamant that adherence to one's clan could severely impact upon

one's *deen*². *"I think the number one clashes that happen in Somali community is clan, and people belonging to different tribes and conflicts between that. So that has an effect on your Islamic views"* (27/11/2015) said a student nurse.

In the Holy Qur'an, Surah Al Hujurat³ commands believers to use tribe and other identity markers as a means of identification rather than a divisive sense. Despite Somali diaspora being aware of certain tribe antithetical to Islamic ethics, Bjork (2007) ascertains, diaspora Somalis often deny the significance of clan to outsiders which may be due to its association with the barbarity of the warlords, a factor in the collapse of the Somali state and clan practices being somewhat inconsistency with modernity. McGown (1999) argues in the diaspora setting, the role of the tribe is transformed due to a diminishing of territorial identity that anchored Somalis as pastoralists, farmers or new urbanites in the past. Sadoumi (2008) suggests a pan-Somali identity, which emerged through a shared Islamic identity reshapes the structure of clannism in the diaspora. Perhaps scholarship has tended to exert excessive interest towards tribe, hindering Somalis from speaking for themselves on the role of the tribe and the functions it performs for them.

4. The 'Ummah Affinity'

The idea or concept of the Muslim community is dynamic and proceeds through stages affected by different environments (2008: 104). The concept of the Ummah in the Qur'an it is mentioned sixty times with different, sometimes contrasting meanings such as the followers of the prophet, a religious congregation and a minority group within

² Semantic word often translated as religion in the Qur'an, Islam is often described as Din. Linked to the submission of God and the Sharia. (Marranci 2008: 147)

³ "O mankind, indeed we have created you from male and female and made you peoples and tribes that you may know one another" (Surah Al Hujurat 49:13) (Sahih International)

a majority religious community (Maranci 2008: 108). The condition of diaspora is one in which the multiplicity of identity and community is a key dynamic (Mandaville 2003: 172), an increase in migration toward the west has raised fundamental question surrounding how a community could exist without a nation or definitive borders. It is arguable that shared religious affinity becomes either heightened or more diminished in a diasporic setting. Moreover, there prevails a particular imperative among many Muslim thinkers today who highlight the need for Muslims to increase their 'Umma consciousness' (Mandaville 2003: 176).

My ethnography revealed how more religiously learned community members support those who are struggling to maintain religious practice. *"My friend has six children, in Ramadan he is not praying, I help to support him because for some people it's difficult to keep up the religion here."* (07/10/2015). It was evident the wider Muslim community networks provide the Somali diaspora with not only a strong sense of spiritual kinship, but moral support. A single mother of two explained to me, with reference to other Muslim communities in Bristol, an engendered feeling of inclusivity: *"Sometimes they make activities for the kids [...] Sometimes the Pakistani and Sudanese invite us to their events."* (10/10/2015).

JSHS|481

Ummah consciousness is transformed in the diaspora setting, one respondent described how in the diaspora: *"It's totally different, totally different. Although technology has transformed the access to religion and we have hadith in Social media."* (04/08/2015). According to Mandeville (2001) the advent of information and communication in technologies, particularly in the spaces of diasporic Islam has been crucial in creating public space (2001: 176). Interestingly, McGown (1999) found that when her participants were asked to define community, it was generally defined as all Muslims, whether Somali or not. Somali diaspora is adamant not to lose, or to have their children lose, this sense of responsibility for others, which they saw as being in conflict with Western Individualism (1999: 213). *"The Muslim community [...] I see them as my brothers and sisters, I see them as people who have the same views as me, who would help me, who would make me a better person should I need their advice"* (21/11/2015). Furthermore, there appeared to be strong identifica-

tion and affiliation with other diaspora Muslim communities as a template for success. From speaking with Somali diaspora in Bristol it was evident some tended to view the South Asian community, particularly the Pakistani community as an example of success. Perhaps shared religious values are a discernible factor in this affinity.

5. Concluding remarks

In conclusion, Islam and tribe are categories which undergo significant transformation due to their renewed importance in the Somali diaspora. My fieldwork and the subsequent literature reveal diaspora Somalis to evince a strong consciousness of identity through religion, namely Islam. This is manifest in varying forms, in particular, the religious teachings and moral guidance are heightened in the diaspora. Modes of worship such as the five daily prayers provides a cyclical rhythmic structure to individuals lives. Maintaining Religiosity appeared to provide sustenance and a vigorous sense of continuity and security (McGown 1999: 230). This remains an increased benefit where Somalis reside in a predominately non-Muslim, secular society. It thus mobilises a readiness and confidence to situate and assert oneself in the world. In the Somali diaspora a multiplicity of identity is being redefined by diasporic individuals as a source of adaptive strength (Vertovec 1999: 9). The imperativeness of Spirituality is also highly symbolic with regard to Somali people's wider experiences of displacement and dislocation. The potential for differential or dissimilar interpretations of Islamic beliefs in a diasporic milieu starkly contrasted with my respondent's experience of the practice of Islam in Somalia or other Muslim-majority countries.

With regard to tribal manifestation in the diaspora, my fieldwork reveals its increased importance and beneficial nature. Tribal identification, structure and modes of organisation are a significant source of collective sentiment, providing some individuals with a wider support network. Simultaneously, a significant proportion of my respondents recognised the divisive aspect of tribe, in terms of its counter intuitiveness to Qur'anic teachings. An expression of dismay at the presence and practices of tribe in a modern age, namely in the diaspora. Moreover, this did not hinder the active replication of tribe and its sub-divisions by Somalis across the diaspora. Tribal identity, as

with religious identity, belief and practice manifests and is transformed in a multiplicity of ways. Viewing discursive identities as fluid, dynamic and ever changing is crucial to reveal the internal complexity and variation within the Somali Muslim experience in the diaspora. This paper has demonstrated, that tribal structuring is perhaps not, the principle mode of affiliation in the diaspora [which may be the case in Somalia]. The egalitarian essence of Islam, a pervading sense of moral and social responsibility toward other Somalis or fellow Muslim communities in their host-nations is pronounced in the diaspora.

My research aims to have contributed to the creation of a more authentic documentation of the Somali Muslim experience, with wider aims to yield deeper understanding between communities in Bristol. Providing an insight into the consciousness of diaspora groups remains an empowering framework in terms of raising awareness of a community's self-identity and "state of mind between 'here' (diaspora) and 'there' (back home)" (Haji-Abdi 2013: 47). In addition to enabling greater dialogue between diaspora groups and their host communities. The study of the religions of diaspora groups and their modes of adaptation is an indispensable and increasing remit within religious studies.

JSHS|483

References

- Abbink, J., 1999. The total Somali clan genealogy: a preliminary sketch.
- Abdi, C.M., 2015. Elusive Jannah: The Somali Diaspora and a Borderless Muslim Identity.
- Abdullah, M. 1983. Islamic Prayers. Darul-Ishaat
- Adam, H.M., 1995. Islam and politics in Somalia. *Journal of Islamic Studies*, 6 (2), pp.189-221.
- Ahmed, A.J., 1995. *The invention of Somalia*. The Red Sea Press.
- Aidid, S. 2015. The Audacity of 'Somali Studies'. Africa is a Country. Available online at: <http://africasacountry.com/2015/04/the-audacity-of-somali-studies/> [date accessed 12/09/2015]
- Andre Le Sage (2001) Prospects for al itihad & islamist radicalism in Somalia, *Review of African Political Economy*, 28:89, 472-477, available online at: <http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/03056240108704555> [date accessed 06/10/2015]

- Aviv, C.S. and Shneer, D., 2005. *New Jews: The end of the Jewish diaspora*. NYU Press.
- Barnes, C. and Hassan, H., 2007. The rise and fall of Mogadishu's Islamic Courts. *Journal of Eastern African Studies*, 1(2), pp.151-160.
- Bestemen, C. 1996. Representing Violence and Othering Somalia. *Cultural Anthropology*, 11(1), pp. 120-133
- Bigelow, M. (2008). Somali adolescents' negotiation of religious and racial bias in and out of school. *Theory into Practice*, 47(1), 27-34.
- Bjork, S.R., 2007. Clan identities in practice: The Somali diaspora in Finland. *Somalia: Diaspora and State Reconstitution in the Horn of Africa*
- Britain's Somalis: The Road is long In: *The Economist*, August 17th 2013. Available online at: <http://www.economist.com/news/britain/21583710-somalis-fare-much-worse-other-immigrants-what-holds-them-back-road-long> date accessed 12/04/2016
- Canada: Immigration and Refugee Board of Canada, *Somalia: The Reer Hamar and/or Benadiri, including the location of their traditional homeland, affiliated clans and risks they face from other clans*, 3 December 2012, SOM104241.E, available at: <http://www.refworld.org/docid/51e4facb4.html> [date accessed: 18/04/2016]
- Collet, B.A., 2007. Islam, national identity and public secondary education: Perspectives from the Somali diaspora in Toronto, Canada. *Race Ethnicity and Education*, 10(2), pp.131-153.
- De Voe, P.A., 2002. Symbolic action: Religion's role in the changing environment of young Somali women. *Journal of Refugee Studies*, 15(2), pp.234-246.
- Griffiths, D. J. 2003. Somali and Kurdish refugees in London: new identities in the diaspora. *Refugee Survey Quarterly*, 22.
- Griffiths, D.J., 2000. Fragmentation and consolidation: the contrasting cases of Somali and Kurdish refugees in London. *Journal of refugee studies*, 13(3), pp.281-302.
- Haddad, G, F. *The meaning of Sunnah*. Available online at: http://www.sunnah.org/fiqh/usul/meaning_sunnah.htm [date accessed: 20/04/2016]
- Haji-Abdi, A., 2013. *Critical realism, Somalia and the diaspora community*. Routledge.
- Hammett, D., Twyman, C. and Graham, M., 2014. *Research and fieldwork in development*. Routledge.

- Hansen, S.J., 2013. *Al-Shabaab in Somalia: The History and Ideology of a Militant Islamist Group*. Oxford University Press.
- Harris, H., 2004. The Somali community in the UK. *What We Know and How We Know It*.
- Hinnells, J.R., 2005. *The Routledge companion to the study of religion*. Psychology Press.
- Hoehne, M.V., 2009. Counter-terrorism in Somalia: How external interference helped to produce militant Islamism. *Social Science Research Council: Crisis in the Horn of Africa (ensaio online)*.
- Inhetteen, K., 2012. Translation challenges: Qualitative interviewing in a multi-lingual field. *Qualitative Sociology Review*, 8(2).
- Kaplan, S. 2008. Somalia's Complex Clan Dynamics. Available online at: <http://www.fragilestates.org/2012/01/10/somalias-complex-clan-dynamics/> [date accessed: 12/04/2016]
- Kusow, A.M and Bjork, S.R 2007. From Mogadishu to Dixon: The Somali Diaspora in a global context.
- Langellier, K. M. (2010). Performing Somali Identity in the Diaspora: 'Wherever I go I know who I am'. *Cultural Studies*, 24(1), 66-94.
- Levitt, P. 2003. "You know Abraham was really the first Immigrant": Religion and Transnational Migration. *International Migration Review*, 37(3), 847-873.
- Mandaville, P.G., 2003. *Transnational Muslim politics: Reimagining the umma*. Routledge.
- Marranci, G. 2008. *The Anthropology of Islam*. Berg: Oxford
- Maulawi Sher 'Ali 2004, *The Holy Qur'an: Arabic text and English translation*. Islam International Publications Limited.
- McGown, R.B. 1999. *Muslims in the diaspora: the Somali communities of London and Toronto*. University of Toronto Press
- Michael, C., 2002. 'Everywhere is Allah's place': Islam and the everyday life of Somali women in Melbourne, Australia. *Journal of refugee studies*, 15(2), pp.171-188.
- Moghissi, H. ed., 2007. *Muslim diaspora: Gender, culture and identity* (Vol. 2). Routledge.
- Óasan, M. R. S., & Robleh, S. M. (2004). *Islamic Revival and Education in Somalia. Educational Strategies among Muslims in the Context of Globalization: Some National Case Studies*, 3, 141.
- Roble, A. and Rutledge, D., 2008. *The Somali diaspora: A journey away*. University of Minnesota Press.

- Sallah, M., Sanyang, L., Gassama, A., Lartey, Z., Adelopo, N. and Sambo, R., 2010. The Ummah and Ethnicity: Listening to the Voices of AfricanHeritage Muslims in Leicester. African Caribbean Citizen's Forum.
- Sadouni, S., 2009. 'God is not Unemployed': Journeys of Somali Refugees in Johannesburg. *African Studies*, 68(2), pp.235-249.
- Said, E. 1978. *Orientalism*. New York: Pantheon
- Shams, M., Ummah: Community of Virtues or a Non-Genetic Global Tribe. *Waikato Islamic Studies Review*, p.55.
- Shryock, A. ed., 2010. *Islamophobia/Islamophilia: Beyond the politics of enemy and friend*. Indiana University Press.
- Svenberg, K., Mattsson, B., & Skott, C. 2009. 'A person of two countries'. *Life and health in exile: Somali refugees in Sweden*. *Anthropology and Medicine*, 16(3), 279-291.
- The New York Public library (2009) *Islam in Europe*. Available online at: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-gvFP-HIEdI> [date accessed: 02/03/2016]
- The Noble Qur'an. Sahih International translation. Available online at <http://quran.com/49/11-21> [date accessed 16/01/2016]
- The Shafii School of Law. Oxford Islamic Studies Online. Available online at: <http://www.oxfordislamicstudies.com/article/opr/t125/e2148> [Date accessed 05/02/2016]
- Tiilikainen, M. 2003. 'Somali Saar in the era of social and religious change' from Spirit possession and trance: New Interdisciplinary Perspectives, 117.
- Tiilikainen, M. 2003. 'Somali Women and Daily Islam in the Diaspora.' *Social compass* 50(1), 59-69
- Vertovec, S. 2004. Religion and diaspora. *New approaches to the study of religion*, 2, 275-304.
- Vertovec, S., 1997. Three meanings of " diaspora," exemplified among South Asian religions. *Diaspora: A Journal of Transnational Studies*, 6(3), pp.277-299.
- Who are Somalis Al-Shabab. In: BBC Africa, 3rd April 2015. Available online at: <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-africa-15336689> [date accessed 12/04/201

THE PERCEPTION OF ROMA PEOPLE IN THE REPUBLIC OF MACEDONIA

SERAP YOLCU YAVUZ *

Abstract: The Roma people has first appeared on the historical stage by their "Great Migration". The Roma's status in the Republic of Macedonia has also shaped by migrations and movements. The migration addressed in this paper is the one that was experienced during the establishment of the Republic of Macedonia after it has declared its independence from Yugoslavia in 1991. There was a significant population movement between neighboring countries in this era of reshaped borders. The population distribution was like a patchwork quilt due to this movement. This nation of 2.14 million people, the Republic Macedonia, currently, consists of 64 percent Macedonians, 25 percent Albanians, 4 percent Turks, and 2 to 2.5 percent Roma people. As the figures show, the Roma has the smallest population. Nonetheless, the Roma are one of the most impacted groups of people with regard to population movement following the independence. This research will focus on the status of the Roma people who constitute the smallest portion of the population of the Republic of Macedonia, with regard to ethnic diversity or governance problems on the basis of the national minorities discussion. The study will involve interviews with the Roma from the Republic of Macedonia along with practices of the Macedonian government.

Key Word: *Ethnicity, Roma People, National Minorities*

1. Introduction

The Republic of Macedonia has separated from Yugoslavia to become an independent state in 1991 without getting involved in the Yugo-

* Trakya University Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences
[serapyolcu1@yahoo.com]

slav Wars. During that time, some of the Roma people had migrated mainly to Western Europe to settle in the hopes of better living conditions.¹ That migration has played a role in the rise of troubles with respect to the perception of the Roma people and their general living conditions in Macedonia.

While the Republic of Macedonia was trying to establish a delicate balance due to its complex ethnic structure, some of the Roma have settled back in Macedonia after their hopes of a better life in Western European countries were shattered. Following the repatriation, the Roma population in Macedonia has increased, proving hard living conditions all the more evident and making the Roma people an item on the public agenda in Macedonia. Low economic status, lack of political say and poor living conditions were the most critical problems the Roma in Macedonia face. These conditions help contribute to the creation of a cliché image of the Roma people living in Macedonia. Based on the discussion of national minorities, this study will examine where the Macedonian Roma fit within the country of Macedonia regarding ethnic diversity or management issue within the framework of their socio-economic, political and cultural rights, and living conditions. Thus, this study is aiming to analyze the perception of the Roma in Macedonia.

2. Minority rights in the Republic of Macedonia

The Republic of Macedonia issued four constitutions in the years of 1946, 1963, 1974 and 1991, including the socialist era under Yugoslavian rule. From the perspective of minority rights, constitutions of 1974 and 1991 which is currently in effect, are the important ones.

The 1974 Constitution describes population of the Socialist Republic of Macedonia in three parts. Accordingly, it defines Macedonians as “nation,” Albanians and Turks as “nationality,” and the rest of the minorities as “ethnic groups.” Article 1 in the first section of the Constitution stipulates that the Socialist Republic of Macedonia belongs

¹ “Long Lasting Endeavor: 12 Years of Nowhere” study by the Roma Resource Center in May 2014 dealt with the Amet family, who moved back to Skopje in 2002 after failing to accomplish the living conditions they had desired when they migrated to Western Europe.

to the Macedonian nation along with Albanian and Turkish nationalities, and that they are equal in all respects. Furthermore, in keeping with the principle of equality, it emphasizes that Albanian and Turkish nationalities have the same rights with the Macedonian nation, and that all nations shall be treated equally at the councils and municipalities (Shasivari, 2013, p. 191).

The introduction part of the 1991 Macedonian Constitution stipulates that "Macedonia is established as a national state of the Macedonian people, in which full equality as citizens and permanent coexistence with the Macedonian people is provided for Albanians, Turks, Vlachs, Roma and other nationalities living in the Republic of Macedonia" (Constitution of the Republic of Macedonia, <http://goo.gl/FlthVv>, Date of Access: April 11, 2016). According to Article 8 of the Macedonian Constitution, the Republic of Macedonia shall guarantee free expression of national identity of all the nationalities in the country. Article 48 of the Constitution stipulates that members of nationalities have the right to freely express, foster and develop their identity and national attributes. Members of the nationalities have the right to establish institutions for culture and art, as well as science and other associations to pursue these goals. They also have the right to teach primary and secondary education in their own language, as determined by law. In schools where education is carried out in the language of a nationality, the Macedonian language is also studied. (Constitution of the Republic of Macedonia, <http://goo.gl/FlthVv> and Netkova, <http://goo.gl/89AQAd>, Date of Access: April 11, 2016).

JSHS|489

In comparing the constitutions of 1974 and 1991 in terms of the Roma people; the former is considered to be more progressive than the latter despite of the lack of use the term Roma people. In the 1974 Constitution, other ethnic groups have the same representation rights as nations have. Nevertheless, using the term Roma people in the 1991 Constitution is an important step. Ultimately, these provisions make it evident that all citizens enjoy equal rights, regardless of gender, race, language, religion, social background, political tendency or civil and social status, in the Republic of Macedonia. In addition to constitutional guarantees, the Ohrid Agreement of 2001 guarantees equal treatment of members of all other nationalities as well (Kotsevski, <http://goo.gl/LYyXzE>, Date of Access: April 11, 2016). How-

ever, guaranteeing the rights of minorities through constitutional, legal and other treaties is not enough by itself. What needs to be done is to convey the rights and freedoms guaranteed theoretically by laws, to daily life. Where the Roma people are subject to discrimination in Macedonia. For instance; police brutality recorded in Štip on August 3, 1997 and on April 16, 1998² or battery of a Roma child by a civilian in eastern Macedonia on April 23, 1999.³

Moreover, violence against the Roma people do not seem to have died down over time. This is made evident by the following incidents: In July 2010, a Roma young man died⁴ while in custody; on February 5, 2013, a Roma was subjected to insults and ill-treatment with the words, “you are a *tigan*⁵, admit that you are a thief” during the interrogation after being taken into custody on suspicion of theft; and on May 19, 2014, two Roma children aged 12 and 17 were subjected to mistreatment in the hands of four police officers with accusation of theft. (European Roma Rights Centre Concerning Macedonia, <http://goo.gl/VC2Igv>, Date of Access: April 11, 2016).

Meanwhile, Macedonian authorities have promised to implement the Universal Periodic Review mechanism by 2014 to effectively fight discrimination. That way discrimination on the basis of ethnic identity, religious belief or sexual orientation will be prevented, and police brutality will be ended. Also, the Project for Regional Support for Integration and Advancement of Roma People run by the Ministry of

² For further information: <http://www.errc.org/article/police-violence-against-roma-in-%C5%A0tip-macedonia/78> and <http://www.errc.org/article/police-brutality-against-roma-in-macedonia/1829> Date of Access: 24.05.2016.

³ For further information: <http://www.errc.org/article/racially-motivated-violence-against-roma-in-eastern-macedonia/823>, Date of Access: 24.05.2016.

⁴ For further information: <http://www.errc.org/article/eminov-v-the-former-yugoslav-republic-of-macedonia-pending/4387>. Date of Access: 09.04.2016.

⁵ “Tigan” (gypsy) is a word used to insult the Roma people in Macedonia. Manuella Saidova, a member of the Kocani-based Svetla Idnina Bright Future, a Roma non-governmental organization, states that children in schools are subjected to same rhetoric at times.

Labor and Social Policy, UNDP, and SCD aim to ensure social integration of outcast Roma by contributing to their socio-economic development (Republic of Macedonia Ministry of Labor and Social Policy, <http://goo.gl/D3a3aq>, Date of Access: May 3, 2016).

Nevertheless, all these incidents prove that the Macedonian Roma are subjected to discrimination despite all of the legal protection provided. At this point, there is a need for a closer examination of the government practices and the efforts to improve the current state and perception of the Roma within the country. The reason for that is that when it comes to the perception of the Roma in the Republic of Macedonia, the degree at which they can access to minority rights and the state practices they are subjected to are important. The first place to look for this is Roma's capacity for political organization.

3. Macedonian roma in terms of capacity for political organization

Acceptance of a country's minority by all parts of that society and to achieve good living conditions primarily depend on its ability to form political organizations. A minority group with the ability of forming political organizations is sure to gain significant power to express and achieve its demands. It is understood that the Macedonian Roma are structured as political parties and non-governmental organizations to put forward their demands.

JSHS|491

The Roma political parties represented at the parliament⁶ are regarded as small political parties. Meanwhile, most of Roma vote for political parties that are active throughout the country, rather than political parties of the Roma. Coalition governments are common in the country, and in the absence of an electoral threshold, the Roma parties get the chance for representation.⁷The Party for the Full

⁶The country's main political parties are Demokratski Sojuz na Romite, Obedineta Partija za Emancipacija, Partija za Integracija, Partija za Celosna Emancipacija na Romite, Unisa na Romite, Sojuz na Romite, ROM (Bechev, 2009, p. 259).

⁷As of 2016, the Roma are represented by two members of parliament – Minister of State Nejdeta Mustafa and Amdi Bajram – a mayor and three undersecretaries. In addition, there are a significant number of Roma civil servants working at various levels, thanks to the 2-percent quota.

Emancipation of the Roma of Macedonia and the Union of Roma in Macedonia are the strongest Roma parties. Meanwhile, Roma parties' political views vary depending on the leadership (Personal interview with Fatima Osmanovska Kundevska and Jalcn Necipov, November 2015). The most significant political participation by the Roma is seen in Skopje's Šuto Orizari region. Šuto Orizari, a Roma neighborhood, is managed by the Roma members, starting with the Mayor Elvis Bajram. Nearly half of the region's population is made up of Roma people.

The Roma people express their demands through political parties, as well as non-governmental organizations. The Macedonian Roma have a total of 150 non-governmental organizations of various sizes (Personal interview with Mustafa Saidova, November 2015).⁸ Macedonian Minister of State Nejdeta Mustafa is the term president of the Balkan Roma Union (BAROM) operating in the region. He also serves in prominent Roma non-governmental organizations, in the Ministry of Labor and Social Policies, and in the Roma Information Center Project run by the Decade of Roma Inclusion. In terms of protests, the Roma people do not resist administration's practices, and express their demands mostly through peaceful demonstrations (Friedman, 2002, p. 108–109).⁹

4. Macedonian roma in terms of economy

Economic inadequacy is a common problem for all citizens in Macedonia. Nevertheless, it becomes a harder issue for the Roma people

⁸Well-known associations include Kumanovo-based Roma Community Centre (DROM) and Skopje-based Association Initiative for Social Change (INSOC) See <http://insoc.org.mk/> The Macedonian Women's Lobby (MWL) See <http://www.womenlobby.org/Macedonian-Women-s-Lobby-5735?lang=en>.

⁹The Roma people have held at least 10 peaceful demonstrations in Macedonia. Those that stand out are the march against police brutality, and the demonstration regarding the Prilep local elections in 1996; the demonstration in support of the Roma refugees arriving from Kosovo in 1999, and protest held in 2000 by the United Party of Roms of Macedonia to gain political rights and improve living conditions. Nevertheless, none of the protests escalated so as to cause any damage to the environment and people.

since they already have to deal with certain problems due to excessive bureaucracy and their ethnic identity (Personal interviews with Elvis Memeti, Mustafa Saidova, Manuela Saidova, Fatima Osmanovska Kundevska and Šuto Orizari Municipality workers, November 2015). As underlined by Hugh Poulton, the Roma people fight discrimination at workplace, and they have the highest rate of unemployment in the country (Poulton, 1997, p. 99).

There are legal regulations against discrimination in the country. Anyone who believes that he or she has been discriminated due to his/her ethnic identity is entitled to take legal measures within the framework of the 2011 Law for the Prevention of and Protection Against Discrimination. According to the Ohrid Framework Agreement of 2001, ethnic composition of the population must be reflected in the defense and public sectors (Ohrid Framework Agreement, <http://goo.gl/b90js1>, Date of Access: June 2, 2016). As such, public institutions employ staff by taking into consideration the ratio of Roma people in the country, which is 2.66 percent. Today, even though this ratio has changed considerably,¹⁰ personnel recruitment is still done based on the old figure since the change has not been recorded through a census, causing great uproar as a result (Open Society Foundation, <https://goo.gl/Cn8C5q>, Date of Access: June 3, 2016).

JSHS|493

¹⁰According to the last census in 2002, the population of the Republic of Macedonia is 2,022,547. The Roma people account for 2.66 percent of the population with 53,879 people. The Roma are spread out to all parts of Macedonia: 23,903 in Skopje, 4,443 in Prilep, 4,256 in Kumanovo, 2,357 in Tetovo, and 2,195 in Štip. [http://www-wds.worldbank.org/external/default/WDSContentServer/WDS/IB/2006/02/28/000090341_20060228112346/Rendered/PDF/352070MKONA0Report.pdf] Nevertheless, these figures do not reflect the current state as the country's demographic distribution has changed considerably since 2002, and the census that began in 2012 is yet to be completed. According to the unofficial figures by the European Roma Rights Centre, The Roma make up 6.77 percent of the population with 135,490 people [<http://www.errc.org/cms/upload/file/macedonia-un-hrc-july-2014.pdf>.]

The Roma people's main livelihoods are temporary jobs such as construction labor, and collection of plastic and cardboard materials from garbage. Also, the Roma are quite prevalent in the entertainment industry, particularly in music. They have difficulty finding permanent jobs, and also due to lack of sufficient state aid which ranges between €30-€50 per month, they usually have to resort to work at temporary jobs. A large part of the Roma people's regular income comes from the state aid they receive (Personal interview with Jalcn Necipov and Elvis Memeti, November 2015). With regard to this matter, the Labor Agency has initiated a pilot project named "Active Employment Program" at the Šuto Orizari, Tetovo, Kumanovo and Prilep municipalities. Out of 777 total Roma that were interviewed, only 43 were able to complete the program successfully and get jobs as part of the program. Even though the Roma in Macedonia are supported with various projects, their economic welfare is still below the average.

The Roma people experience health problems in parallel with their economic inadequacy. A major part of the health problems arises from poor nutrition. Another reason is the repatriation of the Macedonian Roma who had migrated to Western Europe as stated at the beginning of the study. Those returning Roma have resorted to solve their accommodation problem usually by building substandard unlicensed homes. Bad living conditions caused by lack of hygiene and humidity problems in those homes have created a lot of health issues (Personal interview with Fatima Osmanovska Kundevska, and Šuto Orizari Municipality workers, November 2015). Moreover, the Roma's repatriation to Macedonia is creating excessive bureaucracy and thereby preventing access to health services. The Macedonian Roma who had migrated to other countries during the independence process did not obtain identity cards for themselves and their children. Under the circumstances, when they returned to Macedonia, they could neither register themselves nor their children who "legally do not exist."¹¹ Project for Provision of Legal Aid to The Roma Com-

¹¹A report by the Roma Resource Center put the number of Roma, who are defined as "long-term habitual residents," at 400 in Skopje. The Roma Resource Center offers paralegal assistance to the Roma without identification

munity, which is carried out by the Ministry of Labor and Social Policy and the Organization on Security and Co-operation in Europe (OSCE) in 2011, aims to provide information to the Roma regarding the process of bureaucratic procedures. It aspires to prevent the Macedonian Roma losing their rights for not having an identity card, and ensure that they can obtain the title deed registry records for their homes (Decade of Roma Inclusion, <http://goo.gl/YSU71L>, Date of Access: February 24, 2016). Nevertheless, by the time the Roma are informed about all of the bureaucratic procedures, then new rules pop up. Thus, the excessive bureaucracy remains as an insurmountable obstacle (Personal interview with Fatima Osmanovska Kundevska, November 2015).

5. Macedonian roma in terms of cultural rights and freedoms

The Republic of Macedonia is the first ever country to grant the Roma the right for broadcasting in their own language. But, there are no Roma television or radio channels operating anywhere in the country due to financial shortcomings. The same goes for newspapers in Romany. The newspaper “Roma Tayms” that was published in 2008 did not last. Programs aimed at the Roma in Macedonia tend to have music content in general. Educational programs such as documentaries are scarce. In fact, in 1990, all the programs involved solely music broadcasting. Meanwhile, regional Roma channels get stuck in a tight situation between political pressure and public interest, ending up complying with the political authority (Tuneva, <http://goo.gl/r6H1Kk>, Date of Access: February 2, 2016). In addition, Macedonian television and radio broadcasts two hours of program-

JSHS|495

cards, striving to eliminate the problems in accessing health services. Those without identification cards are being registered through a 2011 project named Action Plan to Register the Roma at the Census Bureau, run by the Ministry of Interior and the Ministry of Labor and Social Policy. Nevertheless, these steps fall short because there are difficulties in reaching all of the unregistered Roma and the bureaucratic procedures keep changing all the time. [See Decade of Roma Inclusion 2005–2015, **Progress Report 2014**, p. 2 http://www.romadecade.org/cms/upload/file/9811_file9_mk-2014.pdf, Republic of Macedonia Ministry of Labor and Social Policy, and <http://mtsp.gov.mk/pravna-pomosh-za-romska-zaednica.nsp.x>.]

ming in Romany. On air since 1991, "Byandipe" news program stands out the most among these broadcasts. The half-hour broadcast on Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday features only the current government's activities (Micevski, Trpevska and Trajkoska, <https://goo.gl/AzYijk>, Date of Access: February 1, 2016). Channels that broadcast in Romany are Skopje-based private channels BTR and Šutel, and the other two; Prilep-based Ternipe and Štip-based Encels. The Roma people that live on the eastern part of the country usually watch television stations operating in Turkey, or the Turkish series broadcast in Macedonian.

In terms of the perception of the Roma people in the country; it is pleasing to see national Macedonian channel programs promoting the Roma; however, it is distressing that national news programs disclose the whole name, rather than just initials of the Roma who get involved in crime. Furthermore, news involving the Roma are usually overlooked at national television programs, and this news can be reached only through the social media.

6. Conclusion

The Macedonian Roma add ethnic diversity to the country; however, they do create certain administrative issues. The Roma's socio-economic aspects and living habits play a crucial role in the society's perception of them. The first thing to note here is that the Macedonian Roma have a relatively adequate "legal" perception in comparison to the neighboring countries. First of all, the Macedonian Roma are the first minority in the region to have been recognized by the constitution. Also, the government is carrying out significant work with regard to the poor living conditions of the Roma.

However, the European Roma Rights Centre-ERRC data demonstrate the Roma as a disadvantaged ethnic group in the Republic of Macedonia. The ERRC finds the police brutality against the Roma worrying. The Roma easily assimilate by integrating with the ethnic structure where they live. For instance, the Roma who achieve a certain socio-economic status identify themselves with the ethnic identity of the people in majority where they have settled. Accordingly, the Roma define themselves as Turkish in the east of the country, and as Albanian in the west. Moreover, in order to conduct themselves more

easily in the region, they learn Turkish in the east of the country, Albanian in the west, and Romany in the center.¹² In this case, the political authority must first acknowledge that the Roma are a disadvantaged minority in parallel with their poor living conditions, and then make an effort to remedy the situation in order to bring a permanent solution to the problem. Therefore, the Roma must be supported in terms of political, social, economic and cultural rights.

References

Interviews:

Elvis Memeti: Social Scientist and Roma Activist.

Fatima Osmanovska Kundevska: Roma Resource Center President.

Jalcn Necipov: Legal Counsel at Kocani Municipality

Mustafa Saidova: President of Svetla Idnina Bright Future, a non-governmental organization, and an employee of the Kocani Municipality.

Manuela Saidova: Svetla Idnina Bright Future member.

Roman Municipality Suto Orizari workers.

Other References

Jeton Shasivari, "The Past and The Present of the Constitutional Systems of The Republic of Macedonia in Terms of The Position of Albanians", *European Scientific Journal*, June 2013, Vol.9, No.17 ISSN: 1857 – 7881, (Print) e - ISSN 1857- 7431.

Eben Friedman, "Political Integration of the Romani Minority in Postcommunist Macedonia", *Southeast European Politics*, Vol. III, No. 2-3 November 2002.

¹²For the distribution of the languages used by the Roma by regions, please see: World Bank, 2004, p; 12.

- Dimitar Bechev, *Historical Dictionary of the Republic of Macedonia*, Lanham, Maryland, The Scarecrow Press, 2009.
- Hugh Poulton, "Changing Notions of National Identity Among Muslims in Thrace and Macedonia: Turks, Pomaks and Roma", (Ed.) Hugh Poulton and Suha Taji-Farouki, *Muslim Identity and the Balkan State*, London, Hurst and Company, 1997.
- World Bank, *Study: Assessment of Priority Areas of Activity and Potential Financing Needs in r. Macedonia for The International Roma Education Fund*, National Team Coordinator: Prof. Dr. Divna Lakinska, Team Members: Azbija Memedova, Zaklina Durmish, Ljatif Demir, Skopje, 2004.
- Bechev, D., (2009). *Historical Dictionary of the Republic of Macedonia*. Lanham, Maryland, The Scarecrow Press.
- Friedman, E., (2002). *Political Integration of the Romani Minority in Post-communist Macedonia*. *Southeast European Politics*, Vol. III, No. 2-3.
- Poulton, H., (1997). *Changing Notions of National Identity Among Muslims in Thrace and Macedonia: Turks, Pomaks and Roma*. Hugh Poulton and Suha Taji-Farouki, (Ed.) *Muslim Identity and the Balkan State*. London, Hurst and Company.
- Shasivari, J., (2013). *The Past and The Present of the Constitutional Systems of the Republic of Macedonia in Terms of the Position of Albanians*. *European Scientific Journal*, Vol. 9, No. 17.
- World Bank, (2004). *Study: Assessment of Priority Areas of Activity and Potential Financing Needs in r. Macedonia for The International Roma Education Fund*. Prof. Dr. Divna Lakinska, (National Team Coordinator). Azbija Memedova, Zaklina Durmish, Ljatif Demir (Team Members). Skopje.
- Netkova, B. P., "Makedonya Anayasasına Göre Milliyetlerin Durum ve Hakları", Çev. Erol Tufan, <http://www.journals.istanbul.edu.tr/iugaad/article/viewFile/1023001080/1023000869>
- Tuneva, M., (2013). *Makedonya Cumhuriyeti'nde Medya Alanında Etnik Topluluklar Hakkında Bildirimler ve Haklarının Analizi*. OSKE. <http://aopz.gov.mk/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/Analiza-tr.pdf>
- Micevski, I., Trpevska, S. and Trajkoska, Z., *Media and The Non-Majority Communities in Macedonia: Poor Resources, Low Professional Standards and Ethno-Political Clientelism*. https://www.academia.edu/4103666/Media_and_the_non-majority_communities_in_Macedonia_poor_resources_low_professional_standards_and_ethno-political_clientelism

- Kotsevski, S., (2014). Yerel Seviyede Etnik Topluklar Hakları Gerçekleşmesi ve Korunması -Deneyimler ve Öneriler-. OSCE. <http://aopz.gov.mk/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/Ostvaruvanje-i-zastita-tr.pdf>
- Ohrid Framework Agreement, No 4: “Non-Discrimination and Equitable Representation”, p. 2, <http://www.ucd.ie/ibis/filestore/Ohrid%20Framework%20Agreement.pdf>
- Constitution of the Republic of Macedonia, [http://eudo-citizen-ship.eu/NationalDB/docs/MAC%20Constitution%20\(amended%20by%20XXX\)%20eng.pdf](http://eudo-citizen-ship.eu/NationalDB/docs/MAC%20Constitution%20(amended%20by%20XXX)%20eng.pdf) Short URL Link: <http://goo.gl/FlthVv>.
- European Roma Rights Centre Concerning Macedonia. Written Comments. p. 3-4, <http://www.errc.org/cms/upload/file/macedonia-un-hrc-july-2014.pdf>
- Decade of Roma Inclusion 2005-2015. Progress Report 2014. p. 2 http://www.romadecade.org/cms/upload/file/9811_file9_mk-2014.pdf
- Open Society Foundation. Roma in Political Life: Macedonia—Pride and Prejudice. <https://www.opensocietyfoundations.org/voices/roma-political-life-macedonia-pride-and-prejudice>
- Republic of Macedonia Ministry of Labor and Social Policy. <http://mtsp.gov.mk/regionalna-poddrshka-za-podobruvanje-na-kapacitetite-za-postignuvanje-na-realn- napredok-vo-vklucuvanje-na-romite-vo-opshtestvoto.nsp>
- European Roma Rights Centre, (1997). Police violence against Roma in Štip, Macedonia. <http://www.errc.org/article/police-violence-against-roma-in-%C5%A0tip-macedonia/78>
- European Roma Rights Centre, (1998). Police brutality against Roma in Macedonia. <http://www.errc.org/article/police-brutality-against-roma-in-macedonia/1829>
- European Roma Rights Centre, (1999). Racially-motivated violence against Roma in eastern Macedonia. <http://www.errc.org/article/racially-motivated-violence-against-roma-in-eastern-macedonia/823>
- European Roma Rights Centre, (2016). Eminov v the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia (pending). <http://www.errc.org/article/eminov-v-the-former-yugoslav-republic-of-macedonia-pending/4387>
- Macedonian Women’s Lobby. <http://www.womenlobby.org/Macedonian-Women-s-Lobby-5735?lang=en>
- Roma Education Fund, (2004). Needs Assessment Study for the Roma Education Fund Background Paper. <http://www-wds.worldbank.org/external/default/WDSContentServer/WDSP/IB/>

2006/02/28/000090341_20060228112346/Rendered/PDF/352070
MK0NA0Report.pdf

European Roma Rights Centre, (2014). Written Comments.
<http://www.errc.org/cms/upload/file/macedonia-un-hrc-july-2014.pdf>.

http://www.romadecade.org/cms/upload/file/9811_file9_mk-2014.pdf
Republic of Macedonia Ministry of Labor and Social Policy.
<http://mtsp.gov.mk/pravna-pomosh-za-romska-zaednica.nsp>

„LOST IN EU PARADISE“ – REFUGEE CRISES

SANDRA CVIKIĆ *

SANJA ŠPOLJAR-VRŽINA *

Abstract: The current EU refugee crises represents a security-wise priority issue for the international community, their foreign politics and policies. The scientific community however, dwells upon the question of how to deal with the issue and provide a viable solution to EU policy makers in order for them to sustain and control the influx of unwanted foreigners into their countries. This paper therefore takes a different approach and analyses of the phenomena of refuge through an interdisciplinary lenses of sociology, anthropology and geopolitics. In line with the critical theory explanatory framework which enables better understanding of the initial causes, rather than effects of the current EU refugee crises, this paper is based on the researched case of turbulent differences between receiving countries of the so called “Balkan Route” as well as prior Croatian Defense War country experiences. The main result is a more sophisticated (factography based) comparison line of inquiry which questions the neoliberal platform of basic conditions (reference based) and scientific efforts that are under constant pressure to deliver a new purpose-built vocabulary for EU immigration policies. The scientific inquiry in this paper therefore rests upon refugee’s cultural traits that could better explain what, and more importantly, why current migrants are determined to reach and live in EU.

Key Word: *refugee crises, Balkan Route, critical framework*

* Institute of Social Sciences Ivo Pilar, Regional Centre Vukovar
[sandra.cvikic@pilar.hr]

* Institute of Social Sciences Ivo Pilar
[sanja.spoljar.vrzina@pilar.hr]

1. Introduction

Since the passing of two great World Wars of the 20th Century, nations of the 'civilized' West are determined to eradicate human suffering investing their faith in the universality of human rights, democracy, liberal economy and global justice. Wrapped up in an undisputable belief that science and technology can ensure individual prosperity and security in a rationalized world, finding no basis in religion and the past; the post-modern men of the West are now atomized to the extent that is unrecognizable. A post-modern man of the West is stripped of his/her identity, faith, nationality, past, memories, emotions; reduced to a human being – of biology – all in the name of security, freedom and prosperity. This civilized Western man is therefore, chipped, biometrically identified and scanned, thus safely nested in his supreme citizenry belonging to the normative freedom, sovereignty and citizenship of their respective liberal democracies dispersed throughout nations. His value is measured by the extent he can produce and consume while simultaneously his will is constantly liberated by the global neoliberal economy of development growth. In the context of globalized corporate interests and Bretton Woods financial institutions this self-interested atomized human being has become a hallmark of neoliberalism, purposely detached from the harsh realities of the life people live in the post-communist transitional countries and post-colonial states of the underdeveloped world. Contemporary human rights are therefore social constructions devised, on one hand, as normative values related to respect, empathy and tolerance¹; and on the other hand, as a strategy of re-humanization of the 'Other' as humanistic representations of the 'Victim' (Špoljar-Vržina, 2013, p. 1111; Špoljar-Vržina, 2011, p. 971). Therefore, to start a meaningful contemplation and social research today about the current EU refugee crises is to *continuously* talk about 'polished' sophisticated Western post-modern man's radical turn into idiocracy, namely his moral downfall into the rationalized neo-liberal fiction of globalized human rights, liberal democracy and economy, freedom, security and development.

¹ Which in turn, splits the rational mind and psychic of contemporary "homo economicus" while sensitizing him into humanitarian subject.

2. Frame of Reference

The aim of this paper is to deconstruct socially constructed² (Berger & Luckmann, 1992) purpose-built vocabulary of the respective UN documents and scholarly-expert papers on human rights, international peace and security, directly or indirectly related to current Syrian refugee crisis. The phenomenon of *refugee* is therefore analyzed through interdisciplinary lenses of sociology, socio-anthropology and geopolitics, while critical theory³ explanatory framework is applied to enable better understanding of the initial causes, rather than effects of the current EU refugee crises and the so called *Balkan Route*. With this in mind, a selection of 17 documents⁴ (policy briefs/reports/analysis/papers/manuals and scientific/expert papers) produced by the international organizations/institutions and their political agenda (2001-2016/ see document reference list) is used for a qualitative analysis. These documents provide data suitable to assess the neo-liberal and imperialist/neo-colonial platform of basic concepts (reference based) related to the current Syrian refugee crisis. Namely, policy makers, politicians and scholars are under constant pressure to deliver a workable

JSHS|503

² According to Berger and Luckmann the term social construction helps one to understand „the complexity of institutionalization process in modern society,“ „since the meaning is embedded in society and is attributed by its social actors, people's conception of their reality is inseparably intertwined and connected to the institutional fabric of modern society“ (Cvikić & Živić, 2014, p. 247).

³ In this paper critical theory provides the descriptive and normative basis for social inquiry into initial causes of the current EU refugee crises and issues related to human rights protection, non-convention refugees status and international regulatory legal and normative framework for refugees. Such approach includes explanation and understanding, structure and agency, regularity and normativity in order to provide practical solutions in distinctively moral (rather than instrumental) sense. www.plato.stanford.edu/entries/critical-theory/ . Accessed on August 15, 2016.

⁴ However, it is important to note that selected documents are an example of an extensive collection of more than 50 documents studied for the purpose of this paper.

framework to overcome possible threats to the international security, EU borders and overall global level while at the same time they socially construct the reality of human rightism⁵ and biopolitics⁶ of a refuge process.

The Argumentative Gymnastics of Human Rightism, Global Security and Biological Securization Politics in a Refuge Process

Therefore, a close inspection of only three important international documents: 1) Kofi Annan's reports *More secured world: our shared responsibility. UN Report of the Secretary-General's High-level Panel on Threats, Challenges and Change*; 2) *In larger freedom: towards development, security and human rights for all*, and 3) Garth Evans and Mohamed Sahnoun's report of the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty *The Responsibility to Protect*, indicates a political neoliberal platform of basic conditions and scientific efforts to deliver a new purpose-built vocabulary for integrated international social reconstruction of *refugee*, immigration and asylum. This type of approach, as awkward as it was, has been well observed and analyzed already in the early 90s with the Croatian and Bosnian displaced-persons, refugees and asylum seekers (Špoljar-Vržina, 1996a, 1996b, 2000, 2003). Thus, in this long history of wrong-doing, discourse hegemony (Fisher, 2006) perpetrates both, political and scholarly narrations and its realpolitical perspective obviously is to compensate for the long-term *compassion fatigue* present globally to this day (Dacyl, 1995) and caused by a constant

⁵ *Human rightism* as a concept refers to what Alain Pellet defines as: „... "stance" that consists in being absolutely determined to confer a form of autonomy (which, to my mind, it does not possess) on a "discipline" (which, to my mind, does not exist as such): the protection of human rights. This represents in a nutshell both the definition of human rightism and the argument that I propose to develop very briefly.” (as cited in Đukanović, 2000, p. 3).

⁶ In this paper the term *biopolitics* is understood „not as a mode of governance that takes life as its object rather as the unintended byproduct of the clash between sovereign power and capitalist economics“ (Dean, 2010, p. 2-3).

massive influx of unwanted populations around the globe. Thus, making the post-modern Western man's conscience lighter through the international burden-sharing of UN *contingency humanitarianism* (Dillon, 2007). However, in the global *imaginary of fearsome* (Fisher in Zambylas, 2010) there is a significant shift from 'rights' to 'duties' to: *predict, protect, prevent* and *manage* the ever-increasing uncertainties of the globalized social crises. It is all about *securitization* of the post-modern Western man through *biopower* (Foucault, 2003; Papastergiadis, 2006) and neo-colonial politics of 'war on terror' (Dillon, 2007); then it is to save the ratcheted populations of the *rouge countries* in the *distant lands*.

How politically correct can it be to address these countries with this civilized term *distant lands*? This inverse psychology of the neoliberal humanitarian discourse (Špoljar-Vržina, 2012, p. 1116-1117; 2011, p. 976-978) enshrined in the universal values of human beings is a *Utopian alternative* (Zembylas, 2010) for the 'Victims' of harsh reality – of refugee/asylum detention camps and immigration laws (when prevented of an access to work, education, health care and housing) since they are developed for those unwanted populations who have no *rights to have rights* (Arendt, 1951, p. 294-295). The superiority of *moral obligation to the Other* (Robin, 2004) is coupled with producing, circulating and capitalizing on the fear of refugees, asylum seekers and immigrants, since they pose a threat to the well-being and security of Western nation states and post-modern men. Modern sovereignty of a Western nation-state thus has supremacy over *distant land's "failed, fragile, ill-willed and weak"* states who *"harbor those dangerous to others"* and grossly violate human rights of its people thereby constituting *"a risk to people everywhere"*, namely to the stable global world order (*The Responsibility to Protect*, 2001, p. 5).

Globally connected and interchangeably networked response to terrorism with "its roots in complex conflicts of distant lands" therefore appropriates politically correct concepts of human rights to their populations through *"modern international institutions"* (*The Responsibility to Protect*, 2001: 5-6) since genocide, ethnic cleansing, population displacement and forced migrations, organized crimes, drugs and infectious diseases create, above all, domestic *political and*

financial costs to the civilized West. Therefore, this common language of Western governmentality (Foucault, 2003) entails a purpose-built vocabulary of *biopolitics* that transcends time and space with its universal UN terminology (*The Responsibility to Protect*, 2001): “*right to intervene*,” “*responsibility to protect*,” “*human rights and human security*,” “*self-empowerment and freedom of people*,” “*sovereignty as responsibility*,” “*state accountability and responsibility*,” “*notion of justice*,” “*universal jurisdiction*,” “*new standards of behavior*,” “*legitimacy, authority, operational effectiveness and political will*,” “*added credibility*,” “*early warning mechanisms*,” “*preventive toolbox*,” “*trade, investment and institution building*,” “*coercive measures*,” “*threshold of violence*,” “*criteria for military intervention: right authority, just cause, right intention, last resort, proportional means and reasonable prospects*,” “*a failed or collapsed state*,” “*extreme conscience-shocking cases*,” “*post-conflict peace building*”.

Such a sophisticated socially constructed reality bears horrific social repercussions since it *politicizes life*⁷ (Dean, 2010) which *liberal governmentalities* (Foucault, 2008) exerts on refugees, asylum seekers and immigrants – ending up doing what it most seeks to avoid – a wide dispersed field of surveillance, control, and sovereign power (Dean, 2010). In this way, liberalism produces freedom through what Michael Dillon (2007) calls “complex power/knowledge discourse of microphysically organized regimes of truth” (p. 42) such as Kofi Annan’s report *In Larger Freedom: Decision Time at the UN* who’s “hard headed” language announces a “most radical overhaul yet” that which UN as an “enterprise” professes to deliver: “*collective security system*,” “*new world organization*,” “*security, development and human rights*,” “*justice and rule of law*,” “*liberal democracy and freedom*,” “*a blueprint of new era of global cooperation and collective*

⁷ Jodi Dean (2010) explains that Giorgio Agamben „associates biopolitics with Western models of sovereignty“ namely, „with that modern sovereignty that takes life as its primary political value such that is no separation or distinction between politics and life, what the state includes and what it excludes (...) horrific repercussion of the politicization of life“ (p. 2). Therefore, politicization of life represents an entrapment of bare life in the logics of politics.

action, “*new commitment to prevent,*” “*outlaw terrorism,*” “*right to resist occupation,*” “*peace,*” “*development gains,*” “*develop plan to attack on deadly poverty,*” “*better standards of life in larger freedom.*” However, those great expectations so far have been repeatedly and sadly disapproved by the harsh realities in the troubled underdeveloped countries where such *freedom* results as *capture* (Dean, 2010). This neo-colonial imperialist unhealthy dependency on the reality of human insecurity which requires “*a notable zeal for intervening*” through monitoring, supervision and verification, provides a “*fire-wall*” (*The Responsibility to Protect*, 2001) and armory of technologies of control and exclusion that are mobilized to rescue “*failed states*” by *naming and shaming* (Haass, 2003) those who do not comply to the civilized treatment of the Western products: democracy, human rights and free market economy tied to the value of corporeality (Špoljar-Vržina, 2011, p. 975-976).

One can notice, as it is evident in Kofi Annan’s report *More secured world: our shared responsibility*, that appropriation of the *human reightism* language which binds the contemporary “*human family*” is above all concerned with the task to socially construct the reality of interconnected threats to “*global security and development.*” The old fashioned *peace* is derogated to “*comprehensive system of collective security*” which is to bring together all the States in the world – rich and poor, weak and strong (regardless of its true meaning) – in the UN’s “*indispensable common house of the entire human family.*” States (and their sovereignty) are now individualized according to the individual human rights only to accommodate the political need to replace culpability with responsibility for the front line combat against potential threats to global security. The *UN common house* of the entire human family proudly declares to the ‘infant’ nations of the underdeveloped world an overall “*biological security*” and overwhelming liberation from the extreme poverty, infectious diseases and civil conflicts, with a promise that the advanced biotechnology and legitimate force are the liabilities of the rich, strong and stable states, since they have the *responsibility to protect* the ‘weak’ and ‘failed/collapsed’ governments/states. While development and security are inextricably linked according to expert opinion makers, the very *biological survival* of the human beings is now dependable on

UN's *non-proliferation regime* against a cascade of real and imminent dangers (nuclear proliferation and terrorism). The mutual consensus of the poor and the rich is deemed equally important in order to ensure a long-term mutual gain through cooperation where responsibility for each other's security is mandatory. This however begs the question why? Namely, "*the attacks of 11 September 2001 revealed that States, as well as collective security institutions, have failed to keep pace with changes in the nature of threats*" so "*a threat to one is a threat to all; the mutual vulnerability of weak and strong has never been clearer*" (*More secured world: our shared responsibility*, 2004, p. 13-14). Now the question as to why is this so and how can one interpret this statement requires the ability to critically assess its premises, and acknowledge the fact that great number of the poor and weak nations of the world live under real and imminent danger for many years ravaged by the wars financed and supported by the rich and strong states of the West (Klein, 2008). The weak have always been aware of their vulnerability, however the discovery of the vulnerability on part of the strong and powerful is now amplified to the extent that terrorism represents an attack on the values that "*lie at the heart of the Charter of the UN: respect of human rights, the rule of law, rules of war that protect civilians, tolerance among peoples and nations, and the peaceful resolution of conflict*" (*More secured world: our shared responsibility*, 2004, p. 48).

Eurocentric *securitization*⁸ of the *Europe Fortress* based on the *Frontex Risk Analysis Reports*⁹ on the Western Balkans Route¹⁰ is there-

⁸ Based on the Council Regulation (EC) 2007/2004 on the October 26, 2004 the European Agency for the Management of Operational Cooperation at the External Borders of the Member State of the European Union (Frontex) was established in order to improve EU external borders control. Namely, the FRONTEX was to ensure intergovernmental cooperation in the area of migration and asylum in order to safeguard internal security of EU. Legal and institutional framework was developed in order to achieve the everincreasing need for security and enforce efficient border control through ad-hoc centres: risk analysis center, centre for land borders, air borders centre, western sea borders centre, ad-hoc training centre for training, centre of excellence, and eastern sea borders centre.

fore centered around sophisticated scholarly deliberation on how to manage and efficiently implement an “*appropriate operational response*” then to deal with the root causes of the current migration crises and protection of de-facto human rights of Syrian non-convention refugees (Aas & Gundhus, 2014). The very symbolic¹¹ representation of the efforts undertaken by the Euro-technocratic elite to ensure internal security provides a vicious circle of unbridled neo-colonial power excreted upon those unwanted populations – Syrians who are categorized in order to fit the mirror lenses of bureaucracy that serves to protect primarily international political interests, rather than security of EU citizens. Namely, it is more about “*disciplining domestic behavior by linking it to external danger*” (Campbell, 2005, p. 943) than to establish justice standards that could remove immigration laws “*outside an amoral realm*” (Dauvergne, 1999 : 97) of *pragmatic humanitarianism* since it has failed, as a liberal commitment, to preserve and protect “*the equal moral*

<http://frontex.europa.eu/about-frontex/origin/> Accessed on September 9, 2016.

⁹ For more information see: <http://frontex.europa.eu/publications/?c=risk-analysis> . Accessed on September 9, 2016.

¹⁰ The latest being FRAN Quarterly report for January to March 2016 http://frontex.europa.eu/assets/Publications/Risk_Analysis/FRAN_Q1_2016_final.pdf . Accessed on September 9, 2016.

¹¹ Frontex official publications are concerned with risk analysis, training, operations and research, each marked with a distinct graphic. Risk analysis publications are marked with “a symbol formed by an arrow drawing a triangle, with a dot at the centre” metaphorically representing the cyclical nature of risk analysis processes and its orientation towards an appropriate operational response. “The triangle is a symbol of ideal proportions and knowledge, reflecting the pursuit of factual exactness, truth and exhaustive analysis. The dot at the centre represents the intelligence factor and the focal point where information from diverse sources converge to be processed, systemized and shared as analytical products. Thus, Frontex risk analysis is meant to be at the centre and to form a reliable basis for its operational activities.”

http://frontex.europa.eu/assets/Publications/Risk_Analysis/FRAN_Q1_2016_final.pdf Accessed on September 9, 2016.

worth of all individuals” (Dauvergne, 1999, p. 685). Therefore, *the need* and not *the right* is the logic behind the debate about the Western immigration laws where *“humanitarianism is not a standard of obligation as justice would be, but rather a charity”* – Western emotional appeal to willingly share its prosperity – through conditionality letting few in, but keeping most out (Dauvergne, 1999, p. 620-621). Hereby, human rights as a global justice self-legitimation of the world publicity exerts its *symbolic moralizations* (Lohmann, 2004) on non-convention refugees through *minimal justice* (Lohmann, 2004) while they are stuck in the legal and existential limbo of the *black holes of globalization*¹² (Castell, 1999) – detention and refugee camps.

The co called *Balkan Route*¹³ based on Croatian experience, has so far confirmed how fragile the EU *non-conventional refugee legal limbo* (in Dacyl terms/1995) is, and how its technocratic politicians denote its responsibility to protect massive ad hoc presence of unwanted populations. The realpolitik of the burden-sharing principle for the non-convention Syrian refugees, so far, has removed the *push* factor from the scope of protection rights closer to the *temporary refugee status* raising the questions of resettlement and integration in their respective host countries. Acting as a ‘buffer zone’ Croatia and the

¹² Here Castells's (1999) concept of „black holes of globalisation“ is extended to the detention and refugee camps, namely facilities used to detain and process populations labeled as: bona fide refugees, displaced people, externally displaced, economic refugees, victims of man-made disasters, de facto refugees, non-convention refugees, asylum seekers, irregular refugees, in order to emphasize that they too are excluded from the progress since they belong to the areas without possibility to exercise their political sovereignty („right to have rights“) or for that matter, any kind of sovereignty of choice.

¹³ According to the European Agency for the Management of Operational Cooperation at the External Borders of the Member States of the European Union the Western Balkan route became an important transit way out of Greece for many refugees coming out of Syria, Iraq and Afganistan via the FYR of Macedonia and Serbia into Hungary and Croatia and then towards western Europe. For more information see: http://frontex.europa.eu/assets/Publications/Risk_Analysis/Fran_Q1_2016_final.pdf . Accessed on September 9, 2016.

acceding countries of the Balkan, namely Serbia, Turkey and Macedonia struggle to overcome an overwhelming influx of *non-convention* Syrian refugees, even though their transitional character of support is diverse and temporary in nature. Namely, not that long ago, Croatia was in 1992 on the receiving end providing shelter to over 600 000 refugees from Croatian occupied territories and war thorn Bosnia and Herzegovina, even though itself being in imposed war with Serbia (Špoljar-Vržina, 1996a, 1996b, 2003; Nazor, 2011).¹⁴ Mostly left to its own fate and care capabilities, Croatia has managed to successfully deal with the humanitarian emergency, while UNHCR and UNPROFOR, much to their surprise, have failed in its efforts to protect expelled non-Serbian population and to provide safe and voluntary return to their occupied homes (Špoljar-Vržina, 1996a, 1996b; Pugh & Cunliffe, 1996; Barić 2005). *“The Blue Book”* (Pugh & Cunliffe, 1996) as an official standard field manual was not providing visible results on the ground, contributing to an overall notion that UN’s human rights and democratic protection of minority rights are disconnected from the harsh realities of the war, peace-building, reconciliation and conflict management. The UNHCR and later on UNPROFOR, as leading agencies in the region were a weak substitute for an effective international political management of the crisis; however, much to Croatia’s surprise, agencies’ close association over time became very susceptible to a politization which resulted in a *militarization of humanitarian aid*. In fact the continuous nature of Croatia’s on ground humanitarian assault on facts and factographies of local people can be traced in a time line of over ten years¹⁵.

¹⁴ It is important to emphasize the fact that Croatia was not involved in 'civil war'. For more information on Greater-Serbian Aggression against Croatia in the 1990s see Ante Nazor's historical overview of the ideology behind the disintegration of former socialist Yugoslavia and the full fledged military aggression by Serbia. Additional scholarly work on Greater-Serbian national programme could be found in Ljubomir Antić's (2007) historical analysis.

¹⁵ Among Croatian authors a rare follow-up of over 10 years of humanitarian action on Croatian soil is given through an anthropological approach analyses – for basic redaing see Špoljar Vržina 2000, 2010.

Thus, in well over two decades issues related to standard EU and UN categorization of the non-convention refugees and related legislature have proved to have an increased inequality, segregation and exclusion treating Croatians and Bosnians as populations who *have no rights to have rights*. Human rights were as far away as they could technically be from the expelled populations who found only refuge in domestic Croatian institutions despite the fact that the whole country was in a brutal war (Esterajher, 2015). Spatial, cultural and emotional proximity were the key elements contributing to dignified and humane reception of refugees in Croatia by the Croatian people and their institutions, despite the fact that the country was under international arms/economic embargo and dependable entirely on its own financial resources. However, back then the protection provided under the enforceable regime that the *European Convention on Human Rights* (ECHR) constitutes however did not infuse *European values* through a broadly understood universal approach and set of obligations for the MS (Member States) and acceding countries alike (van Selm, 2005, p. 3). Therefore, similar to Croatians, Syrian refugees are left to their own devices fighting the Euro-centric political elite with the blunt demand for human rights protection while on the other side, European neoliberal technocracy is debating on resettlement/admission quotas, categorization, integration - negotiating the management over those undefined non-convention refugees. The mayor issue now is to define and determine how to 'squeeze in' those unwanted Syrian refugees into a category of asylum seekers since the non-convention refugees are not managed by the *Dublin Convention*¹⁶ and the majority of EU MS's have not fully developed a viable refugee policy (van Selm, 2005, p. 15). Therefore, Syrian populations, under the refugee law have no rights to admission "*only a right not to be returned to certain kind of horrific conditions*" (Dauvergue 1999, p. 622) which puts the Euro-technocratic elite in a position to implement its *biopolitics of securitization* as they try to secure life in its totality through amoral means of governmental sovereign power.

¹⁶ The *Dublin Convention* (1989) has determined the state responsibility to examine applications lodged in one of the Member States of the European Community, and CONV/ASILE came into force in 1997 after the ratification by all the Member States.

Syrian ‘refugees’ as a current subject of salvation are defined “*as both the victim of sovereignty and the beneficiary of human rights*” while international politics and experts alike, “*institute and proliferate legal spaces of contestation within the body of the nation-state*” creating an international political market¹⁷ for *human rights goods* (Erni, 2009, p. 421-427). While legal citizens of the Western nations are confronted largely with unseen adversaries – terrorists of various kinds. ‘Syrian Refugees’ are, at the same time – an irreplaceable part of a mechanism for materializing the threat (meticulously described by all the analyzed documents); as well as marginalized and impoverished as communities, scattered around Europe by the EU immigration policies that “incorporate an ethical power of segregation (domestic superior, foreign inferior) in its performance of identity difference” and in doing so, produce a new neo-colonial/imperialist geography of the ‘foreign’¹⁸ (Campbell, 2005, p. 948). Based on the analyzed documents, the formalized practice and ritualized acts of *security discourse* work to produce a conception of an infantile violent states of oppression and anarchy indigenous to the weak and ‘distant lands.’ Therefore, social construction of Syrian ‘civil war’ converges with the widespread public perception of suspended human rights that “legitimizes discourses which privilege efficiency and rationalization of management and expert knowledge” (Petrović, 2013, p. 144) in order to react properly with the extreme response logics on the part of the recipient countries in the situations of mass refugee inflows.¹⁹ Syrian refugees seems to exist, alongside of other earlier asylum seeker descriptors, only as captured images on global

JSHS|513

¹⁷ According to Erni (2009) such international political market works “*to ensure that (a) there will not be an undersupply of human right goods and (b) the distribution of those human rights goods will be morally optimal in the global political market*” (p. 427).

¹⁸ Such as Calais port refugee camp in France as it is now conveniently named the *Jungle*.

media, namely as a *spectacle of naked corporality* (Petrović, 2013, p. 136) while discourse ethics surrounding it, is socially constructed as a reflex to equally proportional decrease in the Syrians ability to get empowered by the globally proclaimed universality of human rights protection.

The *new pragmatism of exported idea of democracy* (Stockton 1999) and its moral objective to *democratically manufacture the will* through human rights (Lohmann, 2004) have had so far devastating effects on the societies who needed to become citizens with rights (Klein, 2008) - an instant solution to the ever increasing problem of immigrant reception dealt with on the local level at the root cause of the problem (Stockton, 1999). Based on the universality of human rights, the neoliberal foreign politics of the West have the legitimate foundations to avoid to deal with the true causes of majority problems that so called 'distant lands' and their 'rogue governments' have locally: socio-economic consequences of colonialism, imperialism and apartheid, structural adjustments, international debt, economic globalization, international arms trade, greedy corporate behavior (Stockton, 1999; Klein, 2008). While Western's neoliberal *new humanitarianism* (Fox, 2001; Harvey, 2005; Moyn, 2014) conditions its respond to human needs with achieving human rights and wider political objectives by undeserving parties of the civil war – such as the one in Syria; it also extends the *undeserving category* to the victims of war putting institutional mechanisms²⁰ before saving lives. Fox (2001) indicates, and rightly so, that this kind of humanitarianism is a “new form of colonialism,” (p. 284)²¹ because those “that reject Western values will be left to their fate” (p. 285). However, the problem arises, when this new tool available to Western governments does not accomplish its intended goal – to *control developing countries*

¹⁹ Dacyl (1995) indicates „two extreme response logics on part of the recipient countries (...) one purely humanitarian called compassion beyond borders, and the other realpolitical“ (p. 20).

²⁰ Defined in analyzed documents as '*development relief*' and '*goal-oriented relief*'.

²¹ “(...) while the old colonists invoked a civilising mission, the new humanitarianists speak about human rights and ethics“ .

(Fox, 2001), and when overbearing influx of unwanted populations could not be predicted, prevented and contained through risk management assessments and immigration laws and policies.

Based on the analyzed documents in this paper, it is evident that its purpose-built vocabulary socially construct a neoliberal and imperial/neo-colonial sophisticated line of reasoning confirming what Douzinas's (2014) says in his conclusion - "human rights are a hybrid of liberal law, morality and politics" and their "ideological power lies in their ambiguity, not in their adherence to liberal values of individual freedom." Therefore, the power exercised by the EU MS outside their national laws captures Syrian populations of all Castell's type *black holes* - refugee camps and legal limbos. On the other hand, their exercise of peace is increasingly taking a form of *war without end*²² against those rouge governments and distant failed countries, physically separated from the globally networked world, resulting in gaining such immense *necropower* (Mbembe, 2003) that proliferates legitimate sites of violence throughout the underdeveloped world. Namely, principle root causes of today's global security crises are not those found in respective documents which profess and promise security, progress and infinite wellbeing of fellow human beings. Long-term persistent consequences of colonial and imperialist descent are now coupled with huge structural inequalities and state repression of a neoliberal globalization that is supported by a new legal ideology of human rights which promises dignity and equality to all. As indicated by Douzinas (2014), "rights as individual entitlements cannot tackle inequality nor are they synonymous with justice," so "antagonism is the reality of politics and social justice its

JSHS|515

²² As Bush Administration not that long ago has indicated its „nonnegotiable demands of human dignity“ which include „the rule of law, limits on the absolute power of the state, freedom of worship, equal justice, respect of women, religious and ethic tolerance, and respect for private property“ (Swazo, 2004, p. 17). Namely, Stover (2004) indicates that the „Bush Doctrine“ provided motive for a US preemptive attack against Iraq and the „Rumsfeld Doctrine“ ensured the means that made the war operational (p. 3).

aim” which in return creates “the distance between ‘having’ a right and ‘enjoying’ it.

Therefore, refugees, asylum seekers and immigrants still exist out of a political community stripped off their citizenship and personality, while they seek recognition as universally treated human beings (Arendt, 1951). Current *biopolitization of refugee politics* (Muller, 2004) on the EU level where unwanted Syrian refugees challenge *the originary fiction of modern sovereignty in crises* (Agamben, 1999) and against all odds seek for human rights and political status, thus, break through ‘speechlessness’ while their condition paradoxically means good business for those who can provide workable solutions like the UK so-called *induction centres* (Muller, 2004), and “Voluntary Assisted Return Programme” by the International Organization for Migration,²³ or Norway’s paid voluntary leaves.²⁴ Today’s EU refugee politics and policies are replaced by *spectacles of life*— a matter of mere biological survival where truth is hidden behind the biopolitical maxim of *doing what is necessary out of life necessity* (Dillon, 2015, p. 9). Haunted by the problem of time and rationalization of humanitarian aid while preserving law and order, and providing legal status and dignified living conditions for the refuged Syrians, is however, promulgated by the emergent need to continuously adapt, transform and change EU political relations in order to fit the operationalized timeframe of *territorially displaced life* (Dillon, 2015). Adopted EU coercive system (*Dublin Convention*) that limits and contains *unruly movements* is marked by the neoliberal circumstances of human rights that have obliterated the *normative ceiling on inequality* (Moyn, 2014) which now understandably is strongly confronted by the Syrian refugees. Without being causally responsi-

²³ Namely, this financial support programme is implemented by Norway in it’s national branch under the slogan „Migration for the benefit of all“ <http://iom.no/en/varp> . Accessed on September 12, 2016.

²⁴ For more information see newspaper digital article by Lizzie Dearden *Norway’ paying’ asylum seekers to return home as refugee crisis continues* <http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/europe/norway-paying-asylum-seekers-to-return-home-as-refugee-crisis-continues-a6763496.html> . Accessed on September 12, 2016.

ble or morally culpable for it, the EU community and the UN ground their blame on the political and material circumstances of modern citizenship, while their human rights political creed is invested in the emancipatory possibilities of rights-claiming most plausible individual refugee cases – asylum seekers. Namely, safely nested in the *judicial no-man's land* (Dayan, 2003) - refugee and detention camps, Syrian refugees still must appeal to the European *liberal commitment* to the equal moral worth of all individuals (Dauvergne, 1999) if they are to overcome *Europe Fortress*. What is progressively developing out of this situation is a new form of socially constructed *refugee culture* – a culture which provides refugees and asylum seekers with *rational choices through forced begging*. As a result, refugee culture develops a *bargaining space of contestation* in which populations who *have no right to have rights* are empowered by the host countries only to the extent they are given a limited choice to *trade off* their human rights for the financial benefits of their physical removal from the territory of their refuge.

3. Instead of Conclusion – Refugee Culture and Entrepreneurship

Therefore, the Syrian ‘refugee crisis’²⁵ in Europe brings forward a crude reality of EU sensibility for the humanitarian issues at hand, while Western publicity reduces Syrian population to charts,²⁶ costs to the economy²⁷ and forced acculturation.²⁸ A heavy machinery of

 JSHS|517

²⁵ Current total persons of concern – registered Syrian refugees is 4, 799,677 which includes 2.1 million Syrians registered by UNHCR in Egypt, Iraq, Jordan and Lebanon, 2.7 million Syrians registered by the Government of Turkey, and more than 29,000 Syrian refugees registered in North Africa. See official web site of the Syria Regional Refugee Respos: <http://data.unhcr.org/syrianrefugees/regional.php> . Accessed on September 12, 2016

²⁶ See BBC article: *Migration crisis: Migration to Europe explained in seven charts* <http://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-34131911> . Accessed on September 12, 2016.

²⁷ See Government of Canada official web site – article: *Sponsoring Syrian refugees* <http://www.cic.gc.ca/english/refugees/welcome/sponsor.asp> . Accessed on September 12, 2016.

humanitarianism deployed in the host countries of the Middle East and the Balkans is to manage what they conveniently named *resilient plans* (2016) for Syrian populations, while socially constructing *contingency lives* for them - life situated in rationalized fiction of international care and maintenance. Impact delivery of assistance, so diligently analyzed and assessed by the Response to the Syria Crisis (*Mid-Year Report June 2016*) is disconnected from any possibility to contribute to the clear road map to peace, therefore leaving Syrian people with hope of safe and voluntary return to their homes only through *exit strategies* of refugee culture. Humanitarianism and human rightism as *bargaining chips* infused by this new refugee culture paradoxically transform non-conventional refugees and asylum seekers into *entrepreneurs* who trade their illegal status in international political arena of contested interest and neoliberal agendas of refugee laws and policies. In the context of increasing global governmentalism and securitization however, Syrian non-convention refugees could easily find themselves being a prey to new forms of *biopolitics of surveillance*, namely a rice-sized chip implant.²⁹ With all the legitimate power invested in human rights protection, the Western neoliberal power politics can easily enforce a condition under which every human being who *has no right to have rights*, namely non-citizen is forced to get chipped in order to get access to universally

²⁸ See US Herald article: *Mayor SETS Syrian Refugees STRAIGHT: 'We Don't Adapt To Your Culture, You Adapt To Ours'* <http://usherald.com/mayor-tells-muslim-refugees-dont-adapt-culture-adapt/>. Accessed on September 12, 2016.

²⁹ Already in 1998, a British scientist Kevin Warwick has instigated a serious of pioneering experiments involving the neuro-surgical implantation of a device into the median nerves of his left arm in order to link his nervous system directly to computer to assess the latest technology for use with disabled. However, in March 2016 this technology breaks through scientific realm and enters the surveillance system of border crossing when Andreasu Sojörströmu bordered a plane leaving his country without a passport using a near-field communication chip implant in his arm <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/sciencetech/article-3402048/Would-IMPLANT-chip-breeze-airport-security-Dutch-traveler-use-wireless-tech.html>. Accessed on September 12, 2016.

guaranteed rights. There are endless possibilities to this opportunity for *legitimate bio-surveillance* of the most vulnerable populations in the world – refugees - since it is done in the name and for the security and development of the whole human race. However, one should bare in mind the fact, that the next in line would be de facto real citizens of national states.

Reference List

- Aas, K. F., Gundhus, H. O. I. (2014). Policing Humanitarian Borderlands: Frontex, Human Rights and the Precariousness of Life. *Oxford Journals. Law and Social Sciences. The British Journal of Criminology*, 55 (1), 1-18.
- Agamben, G. (1998). *Homo sacer: Sovereign power and bare life*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
- Anderson, T. (2016). *The Dirty War on Syria: Washington, Regime Change and Resistance*. Centre for Research on Globalization: GlobalResearch.
- Antić, Lj. (2007). *Velikosrpski nacionalni program. Ishodišta i posljedice*. Zagreb: Golden marketing-Tehnička knjiga. Hrvatski institute za povijest.
- Appadurai, A. (1996). *Modernity at Large*. Minnestota Press.
- Aradau, C., Blanke, T. (2010). Governing circulation: A critique of the biopolitics of security. In de Larringa, M., Doucet, M.G. (Ed.), *Security and Global Governmentality: Globalization, Governance and the State* (pp. 44-58). Basingstoke: Palgrave.
- Arendt, H. (1996). *Totalitarizam*. Zagreb: Politička kultura.
- Barić, N. (2005). *Srpska pobuna u Hrvatskoj 1990. 1995*. Zagreb: Golden marketing – Tehnička knjiga.
- Berger, P. L., Luckmann, T. (1992). *Socijalna konstrukcija zbilje. Rasprava o sociologiji znanja*. Zagreb: Naprijed.
- Campbell, D. (2005). The Biopolitics of Security: Oil, Empire, and the Sports Utility Vehicle. *American Quarterly*, 57 (3), 943-972.
- Castells, M. (1999). Information Technology, Globalization and Social Development. *UNRISD Discussion Paper, No. 14*.
- Cvikić, S., Živić, D. (2014). Social Construction, deconstructed reality and demography of the

- Croatian European integration process. In Brekalo, M., Banović-Markovska, A., Buntić, M., Čolić, S., Jakimovska-Tošić, M., Kramarić, Z., Musić, I., ... Špoljar-Vržina, S. (Eds.), *Kultura, identitet, društvo – europski realiteti. Zbornik radova I. međunarodnog interdisciplinarnog znanstvenog skupa (Osijek, 20. – 21. Ožujka 2013.)* (pp.245-261). Osijek-Zagreb: Odjel za kulturologiju Sveučilišta J.J.Strossmayer u Osijeku, Institut društvenih znanosti Ivo Pilar u Zagrebu.
- Dayan, J. (2003). Servile Law. In Cadava, E. & Levy, A. (Eds.), *Cities Without Citizens. Theory Series. Architecture/Theory/Politics, 1*, 87-120.
- Dacyl, J. W. (1995). In Search of a Comprehensive European System for the Protection of Non-conventional Refugees. *Revija za sociologiju, 26 (1-2)*, 9-34.
- Dauvergne, C. (1999). Amoralità and Humanitarianism in Immigration Law. *Osgoode Hall Law Journal, 37 (3)*, 597-623.
- Dean, J. (2010). Drive as the Structure of Biopolitics Economy, Sovereignty, and Capture. *Journal for contemporary philosophy, 2*, 2-15.
- Dillon, M. (2015). *Biopolitics of Security: A Political Analytic of Finitude*. New York: Routledge.
- Đikanović, M. (2014). Human rightism: rousseauovosko ili antirousseauovsko nasljeđe? *Filozofska istraživanja, 1-2*, 69-77.
- Erni, J. N. (2009). Human Rights in the Neo-liberal Imagination. *Cultural Studies, 23 (3)*, 417-436.
- Esterajher, J. (2015). Iskustva zbrinjavanja prognanika i izbjeglica i suvremena izbjegličko-migracijska kriza u Hrvatskoj. *Političke analize, 6 (23)*, 15-22.
- Fisher, R. M. (2006). Invoking "Fear" Studies. *Journal of Curriculum Theorizing, 22 (4)*, 39-71.
- Foucault, M. (2003). *Society must be defended. Lectures at the College de France, 1975-1976*. M. Bertani & A. Fontana (Ed.). New York: Picador.
- Fox, F. (2001). New Humanitarianism: Does It Provide a Moral Banner for the 21st Century? *Disasters, 25 (4)*, 275-289.
- Harvey, D. (2005). *A Brief History of Neoliberalism*. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.
- Jonjić, P. (1992). Izgon i bijeg. *Migracijske i etničke teme, 8 (3-4)*, 251-261.

- Klein, N. (2008). *Doktrina šoka uspon kapitalizma katastrofe*. Zagreb: v/b/z.
- Lohmann, G. (2004). Demokracija i ljudska prava. *Politička misao*, 61 (1), 115-125.
- Lohmann, G. (2004). Globalna pravednost, ljudska prava i uloga globalnog prava. *Politička misao*, 61 (2), 94-102.
- Mađarević, E. (2015). Izbjeglička kriza – najveći izazov za nacionalne države i Europsku uniju. *Notitia – časopis za održivi razvoj*, 1, 101-115.
- Mbembe, A. (2003). Necropolitics. *Public Culture*, 15 (1), 11-40.
- Moyn, S. (2014). *Human Rights and the Uses of History*. London, UK: Verso.
- Nazor, A. (2011). *Greater-Serbian Aggression Against Croatia in the 1990s*. Zagreb: Croatian Homeland War Memorial and Documentation Centre.
- Pellet, A. (2000). Gilbert Amado Memorial Lecture “Human rightism” and international law. *NATIONS UNIES*.
- Petrović, D. (2013). Biopolitike izbjeglištva i azila u ozračju krize političkog azila na Zapadu. *Narodna umjetnost: hrvatski časopis za etnologiju i folkloristiku*, 50 (2), 128-147.
- Robin, C. (2004). *Fear: The history of a political idea*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Stockton, N. (1998). In Defence of Humanitarianism. *Disasters*, 22 (4), 352-360.
- Stover, W. J. (2004). Preemptive War: Implications of the Bush and Rumsfeld Doctrines. *International Journal on World Peace*, 21 (1), 3-14.
- Swazo, N. K. (2004). Primacy or World Order? The New Pax Americana. *International Journal on World Peace*, 21 (1), 15-37.
- Tung, T. F. (2011). Just War Claims: Historical Theory, Abu Ghraib, and Transgressive Rhetoric. In Andreopoulos, G. et al. (Ed.), *International Criminal Justice: Critical Perspectives and New Challenges* (pp. 33 – 67). New York, NY: Springer.
- U.S. Army War College. (1998). *USAWC Individual Study Project. UNPROFOR in Croatia* (19980526 170). Carlisle Barracks, PA: Damir Krstičević, Major General, Croatian Armed Forces.
- Špoljar-Vržina, S. (2012). Brainstorming for which Brains are Prohibited: Analyzing Our Bio-Neoliberal Realities (I), *Collegium antropologicum*, 36 (4), 1109-1118.


- Špoljar Vržina S.M. (2011) Talking Culture, Crying Health, Hoping for Nothing: Surviving the Many Fliers Above the Human Rights Global Cuckoo's Nests. *Collegium Antropologicum*, 35 (4): 969-978.
- Špoljar Vržina S. (2010) Anthropology of Vukovar: Strategically Revealing the 'Civilizing Missions?' and Practices of the Culture of Death. U: Victor quia victima. Nada za Hrvatsku. Živić D (ur.) Zagreb-Vukovar: Institut društvenih znanosti Ivo Pilar, 2010., str- 133-170.
- Špoljar-Vržina S.M. (2003) Medical Anthropology in the Service of Forcefully Migrating Populations: Current Boundaries, Future Horizons and Possible Delusions. In: The Refugee Convention at fifty: a view from forced migration studies. (eds. Van Selm J., K. Kamanga, J. Morrison, A. Nadig, S. Špoljar Vržina and Loes van Willigen) Lexington Books, Garfield.
- Špoljar Vržina, S.M. (2002) Comforting the (Exile) Afflicted in Croatia – Around and Beyond the Analytical Approaches of Critical Medical Anthropology, *Coll. Antropol.* 26: 89-98.
- Špoljar-Vržina, S.M. (2000) Exile and the undestroyable perpetuity of stigmatizations -Some critical (medical) anthropological reflections. *Coll. Antropol.* 24:35-46.
- Špoljar-Vržina S.M. (1996a) Towards further analyzing the methodology in the displaced person and refugee research - an example from the Island of Hvar, Croatia. *Coll. Antropol.* 20: 159-167.
- Špoljar-Vržina S.M. (1996b) An anthropological approach towards forced migrants - reflections upon our responsibilities. *The Mediterranean Soc.Sci.Rev.*, 2: 155-166.
- Wesley, M. (2006). The new interventionism and the invasion of Iraq. In Heazle, M., Islam, I. (Eds.), *Beyond The Iraq War: The Promises, Pitfalls and Perils of External Interventionism*. (pp. 19-38). Cheltenham, UK. Northampton, MA, USA: Edward Elgar.
- Zembylas, M. (2010). Agamben's Theory of Biopower and Immigrants/Refugees/Asylum Seekers. *Journal of Curriculum Theorizing*, 26 (2), 31-45.

Document Reference List


- The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development/The World Bank. (2003). *A World Bank Policy Research Report. Breaking the Conflict Trap. Civil War and Development Policy*. Washington, DC: the World Bank and Oxford University Press.

- The International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty. (2001). *The Responsibility to Protect. Report of the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty*. Ottawa, Canada: Evans, G., Sahnoun, M., Côté-Harper, G., Hamilton, L., Ignatieff, M., Lukin, V., ... Thakur, R.
- US Department of State. State Department's Policy Planning. (2003). *Sovereignty: Existing Rights, Evolving Responsibilities*. Washington, DC: Haass, R. N.
- United Nations. (2004). *Collective Security. A more secure world: Our shared responsibility. Report of the High-level Panel on Threats, Challenges and Change*. New York, USA: Annan, K. A.
- United Nations. General Assembly. (2005). *In larger freedom: towards development, security and human rights for all. Report of the Secretary-General of the United Nations for decision by Heads of State and Government in September 2005*. New York. USA: Annan, K. A.
- UNHCR. The UN Refugee Agency. Evaluation and Policy Analysis Unit. (2005). *New Issues in Refugee Research. Working Paper No. 115. European Refugee Policy: is there such a thing?* Washington, DC: van Selm, J.
- UNHCE. (2006). *The Rights of Non-citizens*. New York and Geneva.
- UNHCR. European Council on Refugees and Exiles. (2008). *Sharing Responsibility for Refugee Protection in Europe: Dublin Reconsidered*. Brussels, Belgium: McDonough, P., Kmak, M. & van Selm, J.
- European Parliament. Directorate-General for External Policies. Policy Department. (2013). *Current Challenges for International Refugee Law, with focus on EU policies and EU Co-operation with the UNHCR*. Brussels, Belgium: Guild, E. & Moreno-Lax, V.
- Refugee Studies Centre. Forced Migration Policy Briefing 10. (2014). *Protection in Europe for refugees from Syria*. Oxford, UK: Orchard, C. & Miller, A.
- HelpAge International. Handicap International. (2014). *Hidden Victims of the Syrian crisis: disabled, injured and older refugees*. London, UK: Calvot, T.
- Cultural Orientation Resource Center. (2014). *Refugees from Syria*. Washington, DC: Davis, R.
- Citizenship and Immigration Canada. (2015). *Population Profile: Syrian Refugees*. Ottawa, Canada.
- UNHCR. (2015). *Culture, Context and the Mental Health and Psychosocial Wellbeing of Syrians. A Review for Mental Health and Psychosocial Support Staff Working with Syrians Affected by Armed Conflict*. Geneva, Switzerland.

- UN Human Rights. Office of the High Commissioner for Human Rights. End Poverty 2015 Millennium Campaign. (2015). *The Millennium Development Goals and Human Rights*. Geneva, Switzerland.
- Boston University School of Law. International Human Rights Clinic. (2015). *Protecting Syrian Refugees: Laws, Policies, and Global Responsibility Sharing*. Boston, MA: Akram, S. M.
- 3RP Regional Refugee and Resilience Plan 2016-2017 in Response to the Syria Crisis. (2016). *Mid-Year Report June 2016*.



COOPERATION BETWEEN TURKEY AND THE US FOR THE PEACE AND SECURITY IN SYRIA




FEHMI AGCA *



Abstract: Turkish-American relations are having a crises period for the last three years. Syrian civil war displayed the differences on the priorities, targets, and instruments of both states. In particular, the cooperation with PYD, the Syrian branch of the PKK terrorist organization, has been negatively affecting Turkey-US relations. In this regard, the weapons given to the PYD by the US is a source of concern. Some global powers are supporting PYD against ISIS, so-called Islamic state of Iraq and Syria. But, to support a Kurdish state in the northern part of Syria will not serve to peace and security in the Middle East. The US support to the PKK/PYD will increase the insecurity between the allies in NATO. Thus, to solve the Syrian Crises with the cooperation of the traditional allies will help better to establish peace and security in Syria and Iraq.

Key Word: *Security, terrorism, Syrian Crises, alliance, international cooperation*



1. Introduction

Along the Cold War period, Turkey became a reliable ally of the US. The end Cold War reduced the importance of Turkey for the Western European powers. Bu the US continued to see Turkey as a strategic partner, particularly in the main conflict areas of Balkans, Caucasus, and the Middle East. Turkey was also important for the US to develop the relations with the Turkish republics in Central Asia. In this context, the cooperation between Turkey and the US accelerated.

* International Balkan University, [fagca2001@yahoo.com]



However, the end of Cold War changed the threat perceptions of NATO. Just one year later after the disintegration of the Soviet Union, a new threat terminology started to be used in the NATO threat assessment documents, in spite of Turkey's counter arguments. The new threat was "Islamic Fundamentalism". The loyal allies of the Western world against the communist threat became the new enemy. It seemed that Western world needed a new threat to find a justification for their weapon industries. The easiest way is to instigate the former hostilities between Islam and Christian civilizations. The article written by Samuel Huntington entitled "Clash of Civilizations" was the first sign of the newly foreign and security policies of the West. Instead of living in diversity, the clash of the civilizations became the preference of the West. They had the power to establish a secure and peaceful world. But their choice was different.

The new policy started with the new media strategy to create negative images against the Muslim societies. Suddenly, terrorists with the Islamic identity appeared in the US and some European states. On 11 September 2001, terrorists surprisingly destructed the twin towers in New York City, by using two commercial airplanes. This attack was the final point. Everybody started to believe that Islam is a religion that produces terrorism. The historical background of the West made easier to accept this perception.

Interestingly, since the end of Cold War, every year Muslims are being killed at increasing numbers every year. The first mass killing started in Bosnia and continued in Kosovo. Then, Russia killed thousands of Muslims in Caucasia. After 2001 attacks in the US, new attacks started against Muslim communities. Wars in Afghanistan, Iraq, Libya and Syria still continue. All the projects to bring democracy, human rights, and better governance conclude with the collapse of the regional states in the Middle East. The more help of the West the more killings of the Muslims. Everything happened before the eyes of the world. But, most of the states preferred to justify the interests and policies of the great powers.

2. Controversial policies of the US and Turkey in Syrian Crises

Arab spring was instigated by the western politicians and western media to bring

democracy and human rights to the whole region. As a result of so-called Arab Spring in Syria supporting by the US and the European states, 12 millions of people had to leave their homes and moved another place to survive, after five years of fighting. The Syrian regime and Russia killed more than 400.000 Syrian people. Consequently, displaced people fled to Turkey. So far, Turkey accepted around 3 million Syrian people. To provide essential living conditions for the refugees, Turkey spent about 10 billion dollars.

At the beginning of the crises, to bring democracy into Syria was possible. The US had to continue its pressures over the Syrian regime after the use of chemical weapons against the resistant groups. Unfortunately, the US did not choose to solve the conflict in an earlier period. Instead, it left the country into the hands of enemies of democracy.

Although there is armistice between armed groups, it may not be possible to find a good solution to the problem. Nobody knows anything about the projects of the civilized world for the Syria. The US seems to follow a strategy to defeat the terrorist organization of ISIS. For this purpose, it openly supports PYD, which is another terrorist organization whose the final target is to separate Turkey. In this context, it seems that a new Sykes-Picot Deal is on the agenda of the Western powers, as the basis of the "Divide and Rule" policy.

JSHS|527

At the beginning of the crises, Turkey, and the US had a full cooperation and worked together to overturn the Syrian regime and to establish peace and democracy in the country. But, after the election victory of the Muslim Brotherhood in Egypt, the approach of the US to the Arab Spring changed. First, together with the other Western powers, the US supported the military coup against the democratic government of the Egypt elected with the clear majority of the Egyptian people. The new non-democratic military regime killed innocent people on the streets because of protesting the illegal acts of government. In March 2016, the US accepted Muslim Brotherhood organization as a terrorist organization. In fact, they had never attempted to use violence against the government forces, even after the killing of more than 5000 peaceful

supporters by the regime forces. Muslim Brotherhood could have been a successful example of the Muslim nations on the road to democracy and better governance. But, it was not allowed. The US and other Western states exaggerated some mistakes of the moderate Islamic government of Egypt. A negative media campaign started against it, instead of helping to correct their failures. Only Turkey had an honest and strong stance against the military coup.

The US gave up on its policy against the Syrian regime, after these developments in Egypt, and other negative consequences of the Arab Spring in Libya. Another important reason for the change of the US policy is the emergence of the ISIS terrorist organization. The unexpected victory of ISIS in Mosul and many parts of Iraq and Syria was a surprise for all the actors.

Together with the emergence of ISIS, another terrorist organization PYD, the Syrian branch of the PKK terrorist organization, started to increase its power. Easy gains of ISIS

contributed to the rise of PYD. PYD managed to expel ISIS from the town of Kobani, with the help of the US. Turkey accepted more than 200.000 Kurdish refugees and supported the rescue operation. Nevertheless, Turkey was criticized because of not involving on the fighting against the ISIS. After Kobani operation, the leader of the Kurdish separatist party in Turkey called their supporters to protest the Turkish government. The protestors killed about 60 innocent Kurdish people who are not supporting them.

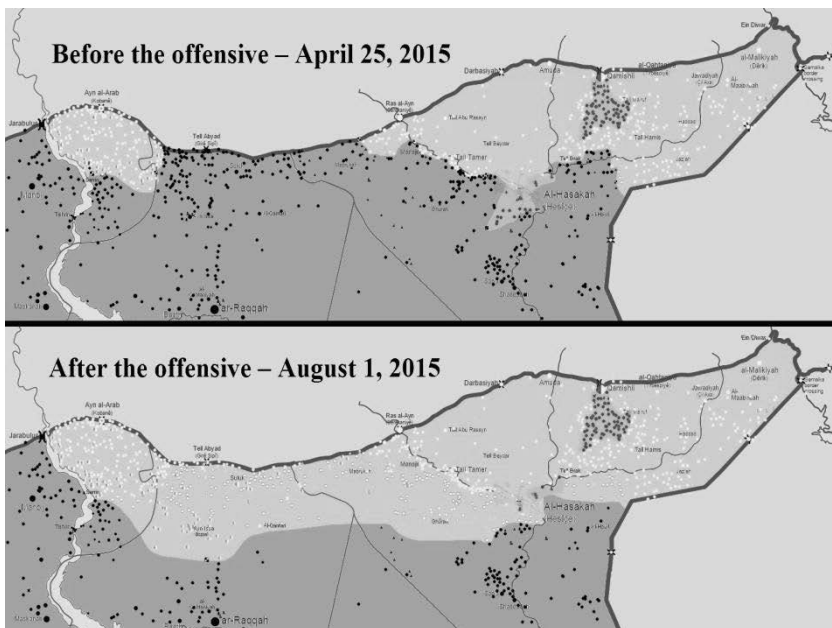
PYD is clearly a terrorist organization. Many of its members are coming from PKK terrorist camps in Turkey and Northern Iraq. Abdullah Ocalan, the founder of PKK terrorist organization, is also the natural leader of PYD. On the map below, the Kurdish settled areas of Northern Syria are shown in yellow color. PYD occupied many non-Kurdish settlements of the Northern Syria to connect all the Kurdish areas along the southern border of Turkey. Moreover, PYD crushed all other Kurdish political groups by using terror and brutality. Therefore, around

300.000 Kurdish people had to leave their homes and moved to Northern Iraq to survive. As a result, many Kurdish people fought against PYD, together with ISIS terrorist organization. Nevertheless,

PYD was never criticized because of brutal and oppressive methods that they used over other Kurdish groups.

ISIS has always been used as an instrument to open the doors for the PYD terrorist organization. DAES attacked Kobani. PYD rescued Kobani with the support of the US and Turkey. Then, PYD occupied Tel Abyad, a region with non-Kurdish population.

Map 1: The expansion of PYD terrorist organization



JSHS|529

Source: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rojava> (11 Mart 2016)

Meanwhile, the US and Russia had no success against ISIS. Russia only supported the mass killings of the Assad regime and didn't show a real effort to hit the ISIS. Russian air-fighters mainly targeted the Free Syrian Army, the democratic opposition group fighting against the Syria regime. Thus, ISIS successfully protected all the ar-

areas they controlled. The ineffective policies of the US in Syria concluded with the filling of vacuum by Russia and created a danger situation for Turkey. Russia violated the Turkish border many times although Turkey warned them each time. Finally, Turkey hit the Russian air-fighter as a result of the engagement rules. Then, Turkey hesitated to involve a hot clash with Russia. Russia used this situation as an advantage to hit all the opposition groups fighting against the Assad regime. Consequently, increasing number of refugees fled to Turkey. The US seemed to have a silent agreement with Russia. Thus, the dictator Assad regained its power outside the ISIS-controlled areas.

Russia openly supported PYD terrorist groups everywhere and destroyed the opposition targets to open road for PYD. With the Russian support, they are attempted to seize the region between Azez and Carablus with the goal of integrating the separated Kurdish regions of Kobani and Afrin.

3. Turkey`s efforts to establish a security zone for the displaced people

Turkey offered to establish a security zone as a safe and suitable place to provide the displaced persons with the humanitarian aids. But, the reasonable and peaceful proposal of Turkey was not accepted by the US. Thus, Turkey`s concerns increased about the intention of the US and the other western states.

The weapons to all terrorist groups are coming from the west and Russia. In this regard, the weapons given to the PYD by the US is a source of concern. The support to Kurdish groups by some global powers will not serve to peace and security in the Middle East. The US support to a non-state actor PYD will increase the insecurity between the allies in NATO. Thus, to solve the Syrian Crises with the cooperation of the traditional allies will help better to establish peace and security in Syria and Iraq.

Now, Turkey faces an immediate risk next to its borders threatening its territorial integrity. Kurdish and Turkish people have been living together for about 1000 years. They are sharing the same values and traditions. In this respect, the majority of Kurdish people in Turkey do not support the separatist movements. For Turkey, the containment of Turkey with a Kurdish zone through-

out the Syrian border is unacceptable. It is clear that this project is supported to cut the connection between Turkey and the other Arab states. At the final stage, Kurdish people will suffer the most because of being an instrument of the foreign powers. To manipulate separatist Kurdish politicians and groups against Turkey will not serve the interests of the US in the long run.

4. Cooperation between Turkey and the US for the peace and security in Syria

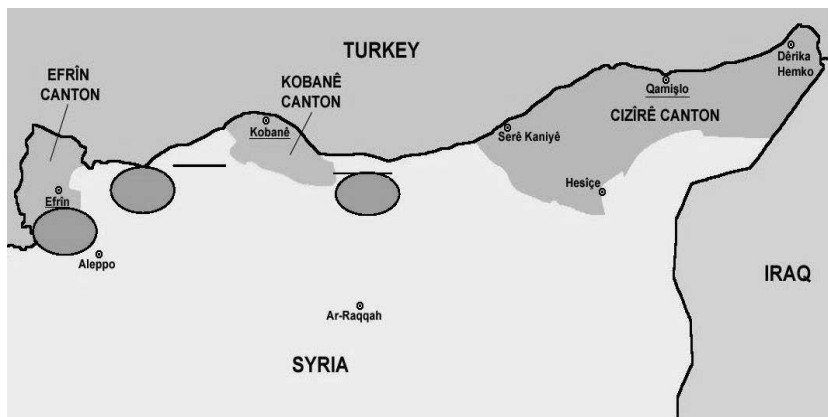
The territorial integration of Syria requires a higher level cooperation between the US and Turkey. Recently, the US government foreign affairs speaker said that the US didn't recognize the semi-autonomous regions in Syria. On the other side, the US continuing support to the separatist terrorist organization of PYD is the biggest concern for Turkey.

Now, there is an increasing suspicion about the US policies in Syria. It is not clear that the US and western European states are supporting a democratic political system in Syria. Instead, all the regional states have a growing concern about the intentions of the West. The peoples of the Middle East share the perception that the West is only trying to separate the region into smaller pieces to control it effectively. The approach of the West is inconsistent with the European values and the universal humanitarian principles. Europe is trying to manage integration in itself but aims to separate the Middle East. The US is the principal actor of this policy because the Europe has not the power to accomplish this mission. The political approach of the West cannot bring peace, security, democracy and the basic human rights to the region and the world. This policy will only increase the hostilities and conclude with economic depression in the world.

Still, there is a hope to solve this conflict and establish the peace and security in Syria. First of all, all the groups representing the Syrian people should be equally accepted. For now, the powerful armed groups seem to have the advantage of getting a greater role in the formation of new Syria. But, a peaceful and permanent solution can only be possible through a democratic, equal and balanced sharing of the rule.

The priority should be on creating security zones in Syria. Taking into account the capabilities of Turkey and the convenience of getting international relief efforts for the displaced people, the area between the Carablus and Azez is the most suitable region to establish a security zone. Then, security zones can be formed at the other secure areas in Afrin and Tel Abyad along the Turkey - Syria border. These regions are relatively far from the dangerous areas and easy to protect. Besides, international help can be brought quickly and easily by using the airport and railways of Turkey.

Map 2: Possible Security Zones in Syria



To accomplish this essential task requires a high-level cooperation between Turkey and the US. The main cooperation areas can be at the following points.

1. To expel all the terrorist groups from the security zones,
2. To provide air security above security zones,
3. To determine and deploy an international security force, (UN peacekeeping force)
4. To start a media operation for the solidarity, friendship and peace in Syria.
5. To distribute the tasks among the willing nations to give support to the Syrian people,

6. To establish the necessary infrastructure at the security zones.
7. To prepare the country for free elections.

Turkey and the US are the historical allies in fighting against the threats to democracy and freedoms. Turkey gave all its support for the protection of democratic values and liberal economic principles. Turkey contributed to all security and humanitarian operations under the leadership of the US. In this direction, the success of the security zones depends on full cooperation between Turkey and the US. For now, the US military actively uses Incirlik Military Base, located in southern Turkey, to conduct operations against ISIS. The infrastructure capacity of Turkey is excellent in the area to conduct all kinds of humanitarian relief operations. Turkey is ready to give its political and military support for the realization of security zones.

5. Conclusion

To support ultra-nationalist and separatist movements cannot help to provide order and peace in the region. Instead, it only helps to the more killings and more refugee movements. The best way to re-establish the security and order in Syria is to maintain the cooperation of the regional states. By realizing this mission, the US will regain the respect of the nations of the Middle East.

In conclusion, the friendship and solidarity between Turkey and the US are the guarantees of the peace and stability in the Middle East. Turkey opened its military bases and airports to the US forces. Turkey wants to see the same solidarity from the US. In the long run, all this anarchy and chaos do not help to the interests of the US and other western powers. To allow or being silent to the killing of innocent people in Syria is a shame of the West. The only way for the western powers to regain the respect of the developing nations is, to be honest and to give support to the establishment of peace and democracy in the region. Democratic rule is not a system only for the western nations. All the peoples of the world deserve to reach democratic governance and fundamental human rights.

References

Wikipedia, <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rojava> (11 Mart 2016)

THE REGULATORY IMPACT ASSESSMENT TOOL IN THE PROCESS OF HARMONIZATION OF THE NATIONAL LEGISLATION WITH THE EU ACQUIS COMMUNAUTAIRE

FEHMI AGCA *

NATALIJA SHIKOVA *

Abstract: The main challenges of the EU candidate countries are to harmonise domestic legislation with the EU Acquis Communautaire and to comply with the EU standards. EU standards envisaged in the Copenhagen criteria comprised set of requirements needed to be fulfilled in order candidate countries to achieve stability of the institutions that guarantee democracy, the rule of law, democratic governance, human rights and functional market economy. Efficiency, accountability and transparency as a part of good governance principles can be more effectuated with use of Regulatory Impact Assessment (RIA). RIA, first created as economic tool for OECD countries, has widened its importance. In the phase of negotiation for EU accession, RIA has special importance for the candidate countries since it gives them standing to know costs and benefits of the steps needed to be taken in the process of adoption of EU legislation. In broader context, RIA procedures could enable national officials to clearly identify impacts of EU proposals on the national interest on a timely basis and thereby to transpose the Acquis in a most appropriate manner. The paper will focus on two case analyses of Turkey and Macedonia as the candidate countries, and the general findings and recommendations will be defined.

Key Word: *Regulatory impact assessment, legislation, transposition, Acquis Communautaire, policy, decision - making, efficiency, countries.*

1. Introduction

Effective policy making is an essential precondition for good governance and is part of EU accession criteria closely connected with

* International Balkan University [fagca2001@yahoo.com]

* International Balkan University [natalijashikova@hotmail.com]



public administration reform and citizens' right for a better administration. The increased complexity of modern governance requires a systematic approach towards policy making process that should be inclusive and evidence – based. Operative and well-focused regulation brought in a transparent manner is increasing competition and protecting the citizens, consumers, and workers and leads to the more functional market economy. Poorly designed regulation generates unnecessary burdens to the ones affected with it and can create obstacles to efficient markets, discourages competition and innovation and lead to unfair wealth distribution.

There is no unique model concerning regulatory management; that is the best one and applicable to all. Thus each country has different approaches in that regards. However, the EU has adopted a policy on Better Regulation as one of the policies to give effect to the renewed Lisbon Agenda. One of the recommended is RIA as core instrument. In EU accession process the EU candidate countries face different challenges. The RIA tool helps the countries to estimate their current resources and the needed ones in the process of approximation of the national legislation with Acquis Communautaire and improves the process of policy creation. Since the positions of the candidate countries in the process of negotiation are not equal, the candidate countries should have the notion and knowledge of RIA that can give them more possibilities and options ensuring better protection of the national interest. Macedonia and Turkey, as two selected countries in the process of EU accession have different capacities and legislative frameworks, but the general findings and recommendations are similar.

2. Basic Understanding of Regulatory Impact Assessment (RIA)

There are many countries adopting RIA to ensure that their policy decisions are based on the qualitative and quantitative information. RIA is not just an estimation of the actual consequences of existing regulations and likely consequences of proposed ones, but it assists the policy-makers in design, implementation, and monitoring of improvements of the public policies (OECD Report on Better Regulation, 2010).

RIA ensures introducing of the regulation when it is necessary, and that the proposal adopted will best meet the Government's objectives and society expectations. Except the economic analysis, RIA provides an efficient consultation with all interested stakeholders to plan the implementation and enforcement of the new and amended regulation ensuring maximization of compliance and diminishing of the costs to citizens, businesses, and the state (Sutcliffe & Court, 2005). RIA is as well a valuable communication tool since it describes the rationale of the government intervention explaining, the intentions and possible ways for their realization.

Since public opinion is a critical component of the policy process, RIA supports and it is closely connected with the principles of 'good governance such as proportionality (the regulation should be appropriate to the size of the problem it is intended to address); targeting (the regulation focuses on the problem and does not cause unintended consequences in other areas of the economy or society); consistency in decision-making (avoiding uncertainty); accountability for regulatory actions and outcomes and transparency through public consultation in decision-making (Kirkpatrick & Parker, 2007).

JSHS|537

3. RIA and EU

In EU context, Better regulation is connected with the creation of EU policies and laws to reach their goals with minimum expenses. It safeguards that policy is created, applied and evaluated in an exposed, transparent manner, supported by the best possible evidence, involving in the process all significant stakeholders. For that reason, the EU Commission issued Platform with a purpose to simplify and make the EU laws more effective and efficient (EU Commission Decision, 2015). The new procedure will improve the quality of the Commission's policy proposals in terms of efficiency, effectiveness, and coherency. In line with EU Sustainable Development Strategy, it identifies alternative policy options and possible positive and negative impacts on the economy, environment and society (EU Commission Staff Working Document, 2015).

The proof of the high link between the EU and OECD in this regard is that EU Commission representative is part of OECD Council for bet-

ter regulation (OECD Report for Better Regulation, 2010). The EU Competitiveness Council concluded that better regulation will continue to be a key factor for strengthening the competitiveness of businesses, especially micro, small and medium-sized enterprises, and for creating sustainable economic growth and jobs. Also, it reaffirms the idea that better regulation improved policy are creating a better environment for businesses, citizens and public administration and operational internal market. In this regard, the EU institutions and the Member States need to put Better Regulation principles at the heart of their decision-making processes (EU Competitiveness Council Conclusions, 2009).

There are many examples for the application of RIA that positively influenced the effectiveness of the new or accepted regulation. In this regard, the OECD has issued guidelines and a list of RIA best practices and the European Commission has issued several communications such as Better Regulation for Growth and Jobs in the European Union in

2005 and Business Impact Assessment. Furthermore, the importance of RIA was outlined in the Communication on Impact Assessment in 2002 which was part of the Better Regulation Action Plan of 2002. The good practices in regards RIA in the EU Member States and OECD countries comprise political commitment to RIA with a clear overview of the responsibilities for RIA program, the comprehensive and continuous training for the regulators, analytical and flexible methods, strategies for data collection and great public participation.

4. RIA in EU Accession Process

Over the last ten years, many countries have adopted strategies that focus on improving the quality of regulation and governance. In particular, the OECD and the EU actively promote the use of RIA as part of a broader strategy to reform the regulations providing an advice and review of the progress in different countries (EU Commission Staff Document, 2015). But RIA is especially important during the EU accession process done between candidate country for EU membership and EU members since it gives possibilities to recognize choices for revising the existing legislation. RIA helps the governments of the accessing countries to understand the effects of

compliance and to identify the best option for implementation and in that line to reduce the negative impacts. That can serve as a base for acquiring a technical assistance for implementation of EU legislation. Moreover, it can be a ground for obtaining transition periods and other concessions.

In the negotiation process, the focus is on the harmonization of the legislation of a candidate country with the Acquis, and its capacity for the efficient implementation. In that process the candidate country can require a longer period for obtaining harmonization in a particular chapter if there are justifiable reasons. RIA tool is essential for transitional periods and possible derogation. In that regard, the application of RIA changed the outcome in several situations such as: Contracts for the application of reduced levels of taxation of energy products and electricity (EU Directive 2003/96/EC) on transitional periods; the Czech Republic negotiated reductions to January 1, 2008; the Estonia achieved transitional period until 1 January 2010; Latvia obtained transition period until January 1, 2011; Slovenia succeeded to reduce the level of taxation to natural gas until May 2014 or until the national share of natural gas in final energy consumption reaches.

JSHS|539

The importance of RIA in harmonization process is acknowledged by many countries. For example, similar RIA pilot case studies were undertaken during the harmonization process with the EU in regards the effects on Lithuanian economy such as Low Voltage Directive, EU Directives on safety at work, and on pharmaceutical production. The cases started with the shallow impact assessment of all EU norms that should be implemented to identify the needs for deep RIA studies for more significance of legal acts. Furthermore, additional 47 RIAs were done during 2001-2004 (Kadziauskas, 2007).

5. RIA in EU Candidate Countries

There is no doubt that RIA has exceptional importance for accession negotiations. But, regardless of EU membership, all the countries that strive to economic development and prosperity should introduce RIA into their legislative systems at least to improve policy making, quality of legislation, enhance transparency, citizen's

participation and the rule of law. That is as well applicable to EU candidate countries that have not formally started the EU accession process.

a) The Case of Macedonia

As candidate country, Macedonia is facing many challenges, but one of them is long lasting harmonization of the domestic legislation with the Acquis and ensuring compliance with the EU standards for democracy, good governance, and the rule of law. Although the RIA is formally introduced into the domestic legislation still, the process is lacking a systematic and coherent approach.

In Macedonia, RIA was considered for the first time in the 2000s. Following the pilot phase in 2008, the Government decree in 2009 made RIA obligatory for all legislative proposals. The legal framework for RIA comprises RIA rules of procedures; Methodology for RIA; Decisions on the format and content of the form of the RIA that tend to improve the national regulatory system (Macedonian Regulations Governing RIA, 2013). Since that, the implementation of the RIA framework becomes an integral part of daily work and practice of the state administration. Following the public administration reforms in 2011, the main responsible institution for implementation and coordination of RIA has been the Ministry of Information Society and Administration.

There is no doubt that introducing RIA into the legislative framework created challenges for administrative servants. Although usage of RIA should have helped in improving the quality of decision-making process promoting openness, accountability and involvement of the general public, many elements of the process were and still are applying without meaningful structure, and the process is vague. According to the EU progress report for 2015, the legal framework and institutional structures are in place to ensure a coherent policymaking system. However, staffing in the core coordination functions is inadequate. A system for medium-term policy planning is in place, but sectorial planning is not well developed, and strategies are usually not estimated. Only some elements of inclusive and evidence-based policy and legislative development have been laid

down. Ministries do not have internal rules laying down processes to draft policies and legislation (EU Commission Staff Document, 2015).

Although the importance of RIA is recognized, there is an evident lack of quality of the process that can ensure the long - term sustainability of RIA as part of evidence - based policy making in Macedonia. That can not only be seen just in the quality of the undertaken RIA analysis for estimating the cost and the benefits of the proposed or amendment regulative but as well in the lack of proper consultations that will fully involve concerned stakeholders, civil society organizations and business community in the decision- making process. The system that should allow citizens to influence the decision and policy makers is formally established and the application of RIA creates obligation to all institutions for involvement of the concerned parties in the consultations process at the beginning of the process and during the drafting of regulations. But, the consultations are still not done timely and the feedback to general public is lacking. In most cases, RIA in Macedonia is done only formally and provisionally without any significant analysis that should be the basis of the process.

b) The Case of Turkey

In 2006, Turkey adopted a new regulation with the By-Law on Preparation of Regulations to improve the regulatory process for better regulation principles and RIA methodologies. In this direction, the Prime Ministerial Circular on RIA dated 2007 assumed that public agencies should assign a unit which is responsible for developing administrative capacity, assuring quality and coordinating with the RIA implementation. RIAs should be in line with the Guideline appended to the Circular. Partial RIA needs to be done on those regulations whose value is under 10 m TRY and full RIA to the proposed regulation above 10 m TRY. Partial RIAs are not subject to impact analysis. The RIAs that have passed quality test are finalized by the relevant agency in line with the Guideline that defines key analytical steps of RIA (Ministry of Environment of Turkey, 2016).

The RIA process is complex. First, parliamentary standing orders require that draft laws should be submitted together with justification, giving the background and purpose of the draft law and a

justification for each article. By tradition, the explanation is attached to the proposed laws and sent for consultation within government and externally. Then all members of the Council of Ministers must sign draft legislation before it is forwarded to Parliament. Other ministries and related bodies may be consulted before draft laws are sent to the Council of Ministers. In this process:

- The Ministry of Justice reviews laws for constitutionality, consistency with existing laws and legal quality;
- The Ministry of Finance is consulted on draft laws affecting budgetary and fiscal policy;
- The State Personnel Department reviews them taking into account public personnel regime and organizational matters;
- The Competition Board controls the competition aspects of draft laws;
- The Council of State is constitutionally authorized to examine draft by-laws.

Additionally, the Parliament completes the regulatory management system through its

16 standing sub-commissions. All draft laws are forwarded to a sub-commission that may invite experts, NGOs, and ministers to assist in its assessments. The Commission send its recommendations suggesting approval, amendment or rejection of the draft law to the General Assembly. Many draft laws can be returned or fundamentally changed due to problems in the consultation procedures. In preparing regulations, ministries must follow the intra-governmental consultation requirements stated in the By-Law. In this process, the opinions of specific ministries are to be considered to recognize if the regulation will have effects within their portfolios. However, they do not propose any specific quality assurance measures. External quality controls during the preparation of laws are limited to the use of ad-hoc expert preparatory commissions in some cases, particularly for major changes to civil laws. Although public agencies have a higher perception towards RIA, public awareness is increasing and NGOs are occasionally involved, there is much more to be done in regards to quality assurance measures and external consultation.

These principles need to be reviewed to ensure full incorporation of RIA into the process for preparing regulations. Administrative capacity needs to be strengthened in coordination with all Ministries. In this context, negotiations with EU are crucial in pushing the RIA process forward. EU's financial and technical support will contribute to Turkey's efforts to improve capacity and know how on RIA. (OECD Review on Regulatory Reform in Turkey, 2002)

6. Conclusion

The RIA framework provides a valuable tool for achieving EU harmonization, by helping to identify the most appropriate and least costly options for implementation. Upon admission into membership, RIA can be applied for lobbying particular interests to be transmitted in future EU legislative. In that sense, the EU member states may influence the adoption of new EU regulations. However, RIA beside the benefits has many limitations. One of them is that it can inform policy makers, but it does not replace the political motives. Even more, the quality of its results is limited due to the limits on information available and the impossibility to quantify all the impacts (Kadziauskas, 2007). Most probably, the challenges in the application of RIA in the examined cases of Macedonia and Turkey, are due to the past legacies and slowness of public administration reforms. The lack of capacities and incentives and the lack of the resources (money, time) play a negative role as well as the administration overload with EU accession agenda. To be beneficial, RIA should be undertaken properly with the right combination of incentives and resources. Otherwise, discrepancies can be in quality of the process.

JSHS|543

References

- Kirkpatrick, Colin & Parker, David (2007), *Regulatory Impact Assessment: An Overview*, Edward Elgar Publishing.
- Sutcliffe, Sophie and Court, Julius (2005), *Evidence-Based Policymaking: What is it? How does It Work? What Relevance for Developing Countries?* Overseas Development Institute.

Kadziauskas, Giedrius (2005), Impact Analysis during the Harmonisation Process with the EU and Effects on Lithuanian Economy, Lithuanian Free Market Institute.

Referent documents

EU Commission Staff Document for Better Regulation Guidelines (2015).

http://ec.europa.eu/smart-regulation/guidelines/docs/swd_br_guidelines_en.pdf

EU Commission Staff Working Document for Republic of Macedonia (2015).

EU Competitiveness Council Conclusions on Better Regulation (2009).
<https://www.consilium.europa.eu/uedocs/cms/data/docs/pressdata/en/intm/111769.pdf>

EU Council Directive 2003/96/EC, Restructuring the Community Framework for the

Taxation of Energy Products and Electricity (27 October 2003).

Lisbon Strategy, 2000-2010.

<https://www.nfer.ac.uk/nfer/index.cfm?9B2730F6-C29E-AD4D-03AB-1011FA252DC9>

Ministry of Information Society of Macedonia, Regulations Governing RIA (2013).

Official Gazette of the Republic of Macedonia, Issues 38/01, 98/02, 9/03, 47/03, 64/03, 67/03,

51/06, 5/07, 15/07, 26/07, 30/07, 58/07, 105/07, 116/07, 129/07, 157/07, 29/08, 51/08, 86/08,

Ministry of Environment of Turkey, Draft Approach and Methodology for the RIA (2015). <http://byt.cevre.gov.tr/Planning/18/>

OECD Report for Regulatory Policy and the Road to Sustainable Growth (2010).
<https://www.oecd.org/regreform/policyconference/46270065.pdf>

OECD Report on Better Regulation in Europe, Executive Summaries (2010).
<http://www.oecd.org/gov/regulatory-policy/45079126.pdf>

OECD Review of Regulatory Reform in Turkey (2002).
<https://www.oecd.org/turkey/1840728.pdf>

Relevant web sites

http://ec.europa.eu/enlargement/policy/glossary/terms/accession-criteria_en.htm

<https://ener.gov.mk/>

IMPACT OF THE PRESS LAW OF 1864 ON THE TURKISH PRESS

NERGİZ YILMAZ AYDOĞDU *

Abstract: The press has played a significant role in the Turkish history of thought in terms of contributing to the development of a political culture in today's sense. Newspapers and journals were the first spaces in which the discussions on the basic political rights such as the freedom of speech, equality and the sovereign right of the people were held in 19th century history of Turkish thought. At the same time, the press also has a significant place in the political, economic and social transformation of the Western thought. Nevertheless, the 19th century governments have introduced several regulations and prohibitions to silence the press. The Ottoman Press Law of 1864 has been made to serve such a purpose. The subject of this paper consists of the purpose, content, discussions and bans of Ottoman Press Law of 1864 which can be seen as a serious obstacle in the formation process of the Turkish public opinion. This regulation, which is basically a practice of Mehmet Emin Ali Pasha government, forms a case of government- public opinion debates in terms of history of Turkish press. The Press Law of 1864 will also be tried to analyse in this respect in this paper.

Key Word: *The Ottoman Press Law of 1865, Public opinion, Opposition*

1. Introduction

First official Turkish newspaper *Takvim-i Vekayi* was founded by the will of Sultan Mahmut II in 1831. *Takvim-i Vekai*, which was directly named by the Sultan, was also being published in Arabic, Persian, Greek, Armenian and Bulgarian. The newspaper, aiming to empower the control and power of the administration over

* Department of Public Administration, Kırklareli University

the society, had different content in each language. First Turkish private newspaper *Ceride-i Havadis* was founded by an English entrepreneur (1840). This newspaper was state-funded; therefore it was a semi-official newspaper. In 1860, *Tercüman-ı Ahval*, the first private newspaper, was published by Agah Efendi, without a state-funding. Şinasi supported this newspaper by giving his articles. *Tercüman-ı Ahval* is the first newspaper that published both national and international news.

After the 24th issue, Şinasi left *Tercüman* and published *Tasvir-i Efkar* by obtaining a new permission letter for his own name (1862) (Kahraman, 2003). Şinasi wrote the earliest articles, which are considered the competent newspaper articles of their time and critics on social problems, education and matters of foreign policy in *Tasvir-i Efkar*. *Tercüman-ı Ahval* and *Tasvir-i Efkar* newspapers approached the social and administrative issues rather than promoting the particular matters of state or the decisions that require consultation with higher districts. (Mardin, 1997) The debate about the old language and new language brought sales record to *Tasvir-i Efkar*. It was also a reflection of the attention to the modernization. It can be said that the newspaper aimed to transform the society and create political socialization through an overwhelming effort contrary to general tendency of the Turkish press, which, among all, was limited to announcing the daily news. (Hanioğlu, 2006) Following statements of Namık Kemal, in a breaking advertisement of *İbret* newspaper, are important: (Aydoğdu and Kara, 2005)

"İtikadımızca burada gazetelerin en büyük vazifesi halkımıza kavâid-i siyâsiye ve terakkiyât-ı medeniyeye müteallik malumât vermektir. Binâenaleyh elimizde olan iktidar-ı âcizâneyi esasen bu hizmete sarf edeceğiz. Mamafih havâdis i'tâsında dahi kusûr etmeyeceğiz" (p. 17).

"According to our belief, lofty goal of the newspapers is to provide the society with information on the political principles and progress of civilization. We will continue devoting our limited opportunities to this service. In addition, we will avoid any fault in giving the news". As an outcome of this thought, it can be stated that newspapers created a public opinion in Ottoman Empire, with the critics to Tanzimat

reform and the statements regarding the need for a social reform. (Koloğlu, 1992)

In the beginning, Turkish press expressed the need for modernization when ever appropriate, by publishing national and foreign news and dealing with social issues without criticizing traditional structure. The press has its place as a complementary factor in the modernization process with respect to intervening language simplification, forming a dynamic public opinion and spreading of centralization in a way that reinforces the Tanzimat reform process. Besides, the press has significant contributions in terms of gaining modern terminology to Turkish language and transferring lots of concepts from Western languages to the Turkish. Numerous political scientists and Turkish historians state that press has contributed much in the process of Turkish society's education. (Koloğlu, 1992; Budak, 2014)¹.

In 1839 Rescript of Gulhane and 1856 Edict of Reform, being the two important texts of Tanzimat era, there are no direct provisions about press. However, in 1857 Penal Law, there are some provisions about newspapers. (Yazıcı, 1994) Before the release of Press Regulation, newspapers' draughts had been controlled. In addition to this, while Ceride-i Havadis's transcripts had been presented to the Palace, other magazines which were published with the professional and cultural goals also had been presented to the Sultan. Yet, with the Press Regulation, publishing a newspaper was subjected to specific provision.

JSHS|547

2. 1864 Press Regulation

Ottoman Government prepared a Press Regulation with the help of French Press Regulation for being able to retain control over the newspapers and magazines which were increasing and also prevent the publications which may work against to both state and government.(Yazıcı, 1994) Full name of the regulation, which was prepared during Keçecizade Fuad Pasha's grand viziership era, is "Dersaadette ve Memâlik-i Şahane'de Tab' ve Neşr Olunan Her Nevi Gazete ve

¹ Ercümend Kuran expresses this thought with these sentecnes "Birth of an intellectual society the Turkish press has the best impression."quoted by Budak, 2014, p. 213.

Evrak-ı Havadis-i Mülkiye ve Politikıyye Tab' ve Neşri Hakkında Nizamname" 2 Şaban 1281/31 Aralık 1864. (İskit, 1939). The regulation was suspended for ten years with the 1867 Exalted Enactment, which entered into force by then and remained in force until 1909. There is a controversy about the date of Regulation in sources. These sources give the proclamation date of Regulation as 1st January 1865. (Ertuğ, 1959; Ebüzziya Tevfik, 1973; Groc, 1985; Gür, 1998). However the accurate date is 31st December 1864.

When the Press Regulation entered into force in 2nd of Shaban, 1281 accordingly with the French Press Regulation which had been prepared by Napoleon III, there were four Turkish newspapers in the country: *Takvim-i Vekayi*, *Ceride-i Havadis*, *Tercüman-ı Ahval* and *Tasvir-i Efkar*. Actually the number of newspapers would be nearly ten if we include other minority and foreign newspapers published in the Ottoman geography.

Press Regulation, which is the first regulation related to media in Dersaadet, is formed of thirty-five chapters. First chapter "Mevadd-ı Umumiye" (1st-9th articles) covers the conditions such as how to publish a newspaper and where to appeal. Second chapter's name is "Mevadd-ı cezaiye". (Articles 10th-35th) It covers methods and principals, and penalty provisions for journalists in case of publishing a newspaper. (Yazıcı, 1994) In addition to this, it also establishes the first Press Court in Bab-ı Ali with the thirty-fourth article. First article of the regulation was clearly emphasizing that "each publication in every language even if they are daily or periodical is subjected to permission". It was saying that if the publishers are the subjects of Ottoman society they have to get their permission from Ministry of National Education (Maarif Nezareti) If they are foreigners, they should have to get it from Ministry of Foreign (Hariciye Nezareti). The second article was specifying the places that grant license for the newspapers which are published in states. The provisions about the license got positive attention from the Turkish publishers because of the equalization between foreigner and Turkish publisher. In the Ottoman Empire, the privileges held by the foreigners' and minorities' publications used to be an issue for the journalists during the Tanzimat era.

Fifth article of the Law was stating that, in any changes of name, owner or director of the newspaper or any periodical publication, should renew the license. This article aims to provide a continuous control over the publication for Ministry of National Education and Ministry of Foreign. Seventh article of the Regulation (hilaf-ı nizam ve kanun) provided that, in the case of publishing a writing against order, the editor would be held responsible editors if the article is anonymous, while both author and editor would be responsible if it was an undersigned text. That article caused many newspapers to be warned and suspended.

Ninth article of the Regulation was clearly prohibiting the sale of the publication which were aiming to attack or oppose to Ottoman Empire Government on administrative or political matters ("mevadd-ı politikıyye ve mülkiyye şamil olmak üzere Devlet-i Aliyyeye taarruz ve husumet efkarı ile"). Namık Kemal's and New-Ottomans' Hürriyet Newspaper, Ali Suavi's Muhbir Newspaper, Abdullah Cevdet's and İshak Sükuti's Osmanlı ve İctihad newspaper were banned according to this article.

Fifteenth article of the regulation was stating that in the case of a using offensive language for ottoman Sultan, or even not respecting him enough would be punished with the prison from 6 months to 3 years or heavy criminal fine. Sixteenth article of the regulation was stating that in case of using offensive language for viziers would be punished with prison for one month to a year or heavy criminal fine. Twentieth article of the regulation was stating that using offensive language for officers would be punished with prison from ten days to ten month or payment of one to forty gold as criminal fine. As it is seen, the 1864 Press Regulation was constraining the newspapers by heavy sentences, to make them avoid criticizing the state and government.

3. Critics to Ottomans and Press Regulation

To be able to understand the conditions of 19th century's Ottoman Empire and why some precautions have been taken accordingly, the newspapers are very important sources. (Aydoğdu and Kara, 2005) It is seen that in the classic Ottoman society public opinion "efkar-ı umumiye" was represented by madrasas, dervish lodges and zawiya

and coffeehouses. These institutions were functional as mediators between public and state. With the emergence of press this public opinion "efkar-ı umumiye" was both represented and built by newspapers. There was a gap in the opposition upon removal of Guild of Janissaries; but it was filled by the press in course of time. Hence, setting aside the state-sponsored or directly built by state newspapers, the government's performances were criticized by newspapers and need for a new system were emphasized by the press. (Türküne, 1994) The function of press performed as an opposition organ is attention-grabbing. In that time almost every newspaper criticized the performances of government and need for a new system and how to apply it was discussed in articles.

Namık Kemal, expresses that the newspapers take the pulse of society as a strong tool of public opinion representer. However, the newspapers had serious problems relating with the legal regulations. According to Kemal, spreading the idea of freedom and consultancy in Ottoman geography press has a significant role. (Hürriyet, No:43) According to him, press's function and importance are not understood as needed by the Ottoman government and made a lot of pressure under the name of "inspection". Reason for that kind of pressure and inspection arose from the concern of public may be announced of the unlawful legal acts of government by the press.

In 1867, 1864 Press Regulation is legislated away and Exalted Enactment (Âlî Kararname) (10 Zilkade 1283-16 Mart 1867) has been implemented for a 'temporary' period by Sadhrazam Mehmed Emin Ali Pasha. (İskit, 1943) However, this 'temporary' enactment had been remained in force for ten years. (Yazıcı, 1994) We need to point out that the journalists who sustained eager chase by the Enactment are instituted or banished to different places accordingly officialdom, and those who did not accept these indications were forced to flee abroad. There is a huge impact of Enactment on the emergence of New Ottoman broadcasts which are especially published abroad.

With the Exalted Enactment putting in force, Muhbir, Vatan and Utarid newspapers were closed by the government with the accusation of damaging the state's interests and threatening the morals of

society. (Ebüzziya, Tevfik, 1973)² İbret, Hadika and Diyojen, one of its writers was Namık Kemal, were also shut down several times based on this enactment. İbret was punished to closure three times in two years. Devir newspaper publishing in İzmir was closed entirely because of their publication about Aydın Temyiz-i Hukuk Meclisi (Aydın Assembly of Supreme court). Rumelia newspaper publishing in Thessaloniki was warned because of their "language modification and thoughts (tadil-i lisan ve efkar etme(si))". Hakayıkü'l-Vekayi newspaper was also shut down within the scope of enactment with the reason for "falsified news publishing and not following the advices". (Yazıcı, 1994)

It is certain that the pressure on the Turkish publication was far more than the pressure on the foreign publications in the Ottoman Empire. (Ziyad Ebüzziya, 1985). Therefore, if Ottoman intellectuals predict that their articles are going to draw reaction or suffer the rage of government they firstly publish the articles in the *Courier d'Orient newspaper* of Giampetri's anonymously and in French. Afterwards, they translate and publish it in their own newspapers again anonymously. (Ziyad Ebüzziya, 1985; Groc, 1985)

²"Dersadette el-sine-i muhtelifede tab ve neşr olunmakta olan gazetelerin bir takımının bir müddetten beri ittihaz etmiş oldukları lisan ve meslek cümle-i vazifelerinden olan tehzib ve ıslahı ahlak merkezinden çıkarak menafi-i umumiye-i memlekete mugayereti asliyesi derkar olan ifrat ve tefrit vadilerine girip ve çok kere esas devlet hakkında bile zebandırılık etmek derecesine kadar mütecasir olup yaşadıkları ve servet ve saman tahsil ettikleri memleket hakkında sairlerinin vuku bulan itirazatının define çalışmaları lazım gelirken husamaya aleti fesat olarak bir takım efkarı muzır ve havadis-i kazibe neşretmektedirler. (...) Şu halin taraf-ı hükümet-i seniyyeden ıslahı ahvali tebaa ve memleket ve istihsali esbab-ı terakki ve mamuriyet zımında (...) gazeteler ve risalelerin bütün devlet ve umum millete raci olan mazarratlarının meni zımında matbuat nizamı mevzuasının ahkamı haricinde olarak hükümetçe icra-yı muamele-i tedbiye ve ittihazı tedabiri maniaya karar verilmiştir" İskit quoted from Exalted Enactment, 1943, p. 24-25.

Even for a temporary period, abolition of the Press Regulation with Exalted Enactment was seen as unlawful by Intellectuals. 1864 Press Regulation provisions were not opposed by journalists but Exalted Enactment was seen as an unlawful text. Ebüzziya Tevfik states that with the Enactment newspapers started to close without giving any legal reason or judgment. Another aspect is that the relativity of the provisions about the criminal acts. Namık Kemal states in his article titled as "Press Regulation" (Matbuat Nizamnamesi) which was published in the Diyojen newspaper that if the newspapers in Ottoman Empire continue to publish under the Enactment they cannot continue their existence and the government will be destitute of "a true language" which makes government know about the feeling of society and public opinion. (No:130)³

Namık Kemal intensely expresses that there is a requirement for an explicit and clarion system for press because of the unlawful punishment of newspapers. He also states that making a clear and understandable law is compulsory service of a fair government. In Ibret newspaper one of his articles about Journal writing he says that if Enactment remains in force the journalism will be left half finished before it is improved. In Diyojen newspaper under the title of "A little bit of this and that" he says that as an implication of civilization freedom of press should be provided.

We see that with the enactment entering into force the validity of 1864 Press Regulation has been started to discuss. After the closure of Ibret newspaper in the article titled as "Farewell Public" (Umuma Veda) points out to unlawfulness which is deprived of the neglect of Press Regulation provisions. He says that in the name of patriotism Ibret newspaper endured until its own destruction and ends his word with the "Long live the homeland" by saying that it is the end of the road.

Along with entering into force of enactment we see in the articles of New Ottoman intellectuals that newspaper became a "profession"

³ For the thought of NAMİK Kemal about the the press as a representer of public opinion.: "Matbuat-ı Osmaniye", *Hadika*, No: 8; Namık Kemal, 2005, p. 532-534.

and important means of existence even though it is for a minor community. Kemal defines the newspaper as a "teayyüş için devlete bâr olmak istemeyen üdebâya bir sanat-ı istifade" profession. In case of closing the newspapers means that government is abolishing one of the livelihood and this punishment counts same as punishing the people with poverty. Below, in the same article he says they publish the newspaper with two purposes, first one is to serve the homeland second is to maintain a life. (Aydoğdu and Kara)

Mr. Ebüzziya Tevfik in *Salname-i Hadika* (1290) in chapter "Biography of Turkish newspapers", along with the part Mr. Refik who is *Mirat* magazine's owner shows the journalism as a profession and mentions Mr. Refik's name as a leader of this profession. "Bir zaman erbâb-ı şebâb içinde ma'îşetini gazete muharrirliğinde aramak fikr-i ahrârânesini memleketimizde icad eden veya ta'bir-i aharla bu fikr-i terakkiye râyet-keş-i müsabakat olanlardan Refik'in fikr ü kalemi sâyesinde devam eyledi" (Ebüzziya Tevfik, 1290). As it is seen forming the journalism as a profession and making principles of this job is Tanzimat Intellectuals' occupation.

JSHS|553

Based upon the Exalted Enactment, a commission is arrived to *Ibret* newspaper in order to close the newspaper, by saying that despite newspaper of *Ibret* is warned and suspended for several times previously, the newspaper continued to its way which is against to the benefits of State. (Aydoğdu ve Kara 2005)

Exalted Enactment which is published for a transient period, is raised from execution a while after the death of Ali Pasha. Mahmud Nedim Pasha who came to position of grand vizier after Ali Pasha executed the provision of Enactment because he feels uncomfortable from the writings which are explaining the expectations from the grand vizier, and bringing up the administrative issues of state. (Aydoğdu, 2003) In comparison with Ali Pasha, the oppressed and arbitrary implementations of Mahmut Nedim Pasha are more disincentive and harsh. (Aydoğdu ve Kara 2005)

It can be said that media of Tanzimat Reform era is prosecuted by Press administration for both as methods and principles and as conditions of shape based on Press Regulation of 1864. The media organs which are prohibited for disapproving as a result of that prose-

cution, continue to their activities under different names as newspapers and journals. That method which is against the government's censored and oppressive policies, is a situation in which publication owners consults in order to provide their jobs and incomes. This circumstance makes difficult to divide the serial media organs, and causes many problems for determining and assorting the periodicals correctly. For instance, *Letaif-i asar* for six times, *Mecmua-i Ibretnuma* for three times, *Kevkeb-i Şarki* for two times changed their names by taking the name of *Ibret*, and also they changed hand for several times.(Öztürk,2016)

It is necessary to state that all of the prohibitions regarding newspapers did not arise from Press Regulation or Exalted Enactment. In the background of some prohibitions, there can be also seen sometimes sensitivity of administrators, sometimes jealousy of statesman, or the idea of defense against accusations about them. Munif Pasha's attempt for reissuing *Mecmua-i Funün* and closing story of that journal could be a suitable example for that point. Munif Pasha desires to reissue *Mecmua-i Fünun* on January of 1883. In new broadcast session, the journal is closed by the command of Sultan Abdulhamit because of the article written by Pasha calling 'A firefly and a traveler'. Here Sultan makes sensitivity with the doubt of referring him by the term of Firefly (Yıldız böceği)⁴ because he lives in 'Yıldız Palace'.

The close story of the first pictorial journal is quite tragic. Munif Pasha refers, in his writing of "Zuhur-i Mirat" (Development of Mirat) published in *Mecmua-i Fünun* with a little envy. (Munif Pasha, 1863) Ebuzziya Tevfik Bey, extracts the closing story of the journal in History of New Ottomans as following, Ali Pasha asks Refik Bey for apology from Munif Pasha referring one of his writings. Refik bey prefers to close the journal by refusing Ali Pasha. However, Ali Pasha, desires to punish Refik Bey by giving the part of an allowance which is given to clerks in Mezaheb room, to a retired servant while it belongs to Refik Bey. (Ebuzziya Tevfik, 1973) In terms of Turkish press history, this example is not extremely overdone for picturing the constructed relationships between government and press members.

4. Conclusion

For Turkish media history, Press Regulation of 1865, is the most important text written about media regime occurring in Turkey. For the reason of determining principles regarding media, content, shape and rules of publication related to newspapers and journals, and publication freedom which are known by government to media. However, it can be said that, in the position of Ali Pasha regulation was suspended thereby performing strict politics to media and most of the newspapers are closed by banishing its writers. It is also seen that many newspapers changed hand or continued to their publication life by taking different names as a result of harsh punishments performed to periodicals. In a period in which journalism is seen as a 'duty' field and 'job' for the sake of its country, the prohibition of newspapers, criticisms and ideas against government facing us with a contradictory for Tanzimat's administrators who are performing policies in the name of political and administrative modernization.

References

- Aydođdu, N. Y., (2003) Âli Pařa vasiyetnamesine dair birkaç yeni bilgi. *Divan* (2003/15, pp. 191-204).
- Budak, A., (2014). *Osmanlı Modernleşmesi Gazetecilik ve Edebiyat*. İstanbul: Bilge Kültür Sanat Yayınları.
- Ebüzziya Tefvik, (1290). *Salname-i Hadika*.
- Ebüzziya Tefvik, (1973). *Yeni Osmanlılar Tarihi*. Haz. Ziyad Ebüzziya. İstanbul: Kervan Yayınları.
- Ertuđ, R., (1959). *Basın ve Yayın Hareketleri Tarihi*. İstanbul: Sulhi Garan Matbaası.
- Groc, G. (1985). Türkiye'de Fransızca Basın. *Türkiye'de Yabancı Dilde Basın*. (pp. 49-71). İstanbul: İstanbul Üniversitesi Yayınları.
- Gür, A., (1998). *Ebüzziya Tefvik*. Ankara: Kültür Bakanlığı Yayınları.
- Haniođlu, ř., (2006). *Osmanlı'dan Cumhuriyet'e Zihniyet, Siyaset ve Tarih*. İstanbul: Bağlam Yayınları.
- İskit, S., (1939). *Türkiye'de Matbuat Rejimleri*. İstanbul: Matbuat Umum Müdürlüğü Neşriyatı.
- Kahraman, A., (2003). Matbuat. *Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı İslam Ansiklopedisi*. (Vol. 28, pp. 122-125).
- Kolođlu, O., (1992). *Osmanlıdan Günümüze Türkiye'de Basın*, İstanbul: İletişim Yayınları.

- Mardin, Ş. (1997). Türkiye’de İletişimin Modernleşmesinin Erken Bir safhası Üzerine Bazı Notlar. *Türk Modernleşmesi*. (pp. 143-176) İstanbul: İletişim Yayınları
- Münif Paşa (1279/1863) “Zuhur-ı Mirat”. *Mecmua-i Fünûn*. (Nr. 9, p. 399).
- Namık Kemal “Biraz da şundan bundan”, *Diyojen*, No: 149.
- Namık Kemal, “Başlıksız Makale”, *Hürriyet*, No: 43.
- Namık Kemal, “Matbuat Nizamnamesi” *Diyojen*, No: 130.
- Namık Kemal, “Sadr-ı esbak müteveffâ Âlî Paşa merhumun vasiyetnamesi”, *Diyojen*, No: 51
- Namık Kemal, Osmanlı Modernleşmesinin Meseleleri-*Bütün Makaleleri I*, Haz. Nergiz Yılmaz Aydoğdu- İsmail Kara, Cilt: 1, İstanbul, Dergah Yayınları, 2005.
- Öztürk, S. (2016). İsim Değiştiren Osmanlıca Gazete ve Dergiler Bibliyografyası. *Müteferrika* (Vol. 49, pp. 249-282)
- Türköne, M. (1994). *Siyasal İdeoloji Olarak İslamcılığın Doğuşu*. İstanbul: İletişim Yayınları.
- Uçman, A., (2003). Münif Paşa. *Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı İslam Ansiklopedisi*. (Vol. 28, pp. 270-271)
- Yazıcı, N., (1994) Tanzimat Dönemi Basını Konusunda Bir Değerlendirme. *Tanzimatın 150. Yıldönümü Uluslar arası Sempozyumu*. (pp. 55-84) Ankara: Türk Tarih Kurumu Yayınları.
- Ziyad Ebüzziya, (1985). Osmanlı İmparatorluğu’nun Türkçe Dili Dışındaki Basını. *Türkiye’de Yabancı Dilde Basın*. (pp. 29-45). İstanbul: İstanbul Üniversitesi Yayınları.

COMPARATIVE REVIEW OF THE LESSEE'S DEFAULT ON RENT MONEY IN TERMS OF THE CODE OF OBLIGATION LAW

ÖZGE TUÇE GÖKALP *

FERRAH NUR DÜNDAR *

AYFER TANIŞ *

Abstract: Due date is crucial in rental payments. In as much as the due date is ignored, the liability shall be considered not to have been duly performed. Therefore, such failure will lead to the default of tenant, which is a liability provided that some other necessary conditions exist. Default shall mean resistance, persistence, insistence, creditor's refusal to deliver its receivables and debtor's refusal to perform its liability, causing delay in any case (Şafak, 1996:614). Tenants fail to pay their rents on time and go into default, sometimes deliberately and sometimes due to incapability. In this study, we will discuss the factors that give way to default.

Key Word: *Review, Rent, Money, Obligation law*

1. Introduction

While the parties can specify the rent amount upon the tenancy contract they make, which is one of the conditions of default this work, they can also assign third persons, committee or arbitrator to perform such assignment. Here, such persons have the capacity of legal experts. (Er, 1980: 607) However, if the rent amount has not been specified either in the contract or by the legal experts, then default shall not apply.

* Kırklareli University, Kırklareli, Turkey [ozge_tuce@hotmail.com]

* Kırklareli University, Kırklareli, Turkey

* Kırklareli University, Kırklareli, Turkey

In such case, the landlord shall be obliged to file an action of debt in an effort to set the amount of rent. If the rent amount fixed by legal experts and ordered by final decree is not paid, the tenant shall be deemed to go into default. (Anıl, 1991: 151)

The time the creditor request the debtor to pay its debt is called the due date. In this sense, the time of due date shall mean that the debt is due and payable. Although it is defined in the Law of Obligations, what is meant by maturity is that such debt is demandable (claimable and actionable) from the debtor. (Oğuzman, 2000: 237) In order for the rent amount to be claimed, it shall be required that no cause which terminates the debt, such as trade/clearing, deduction/offset and lapse of time, has not been occurred. In the event that any of such reasons occurs, the performance of a non-existing debt shall not be applicable since the debt shall terminate.

2. The term “Warning”, its Legal Meaning and Difference from “Notice”.

In general terms, any delay in performance is crucial to be in default but the debtor shall also be served with a warning as per BK (Code of Obligations) 101/1, by the creditor, if we are talking about the debtor’s default. Because, such warning served to the debtor legally means that the debts is not forgotten nor is it ignored but rather demanded and followed up indeed. (Yılmaz, 2005: 72) The law maker considering the heavy consequences burdened by being a debtor requires that the debtor be warned and hence the debtor be reminded of such amount and the due date whereof and a warning be served to the debtor in such a way to protect the debtor. (Barlas, 1992: 34)

The law authorises the lessor to give a warning. Therefore, if the owner is not lessor at the same time, then it shall not be entitle to give a warning to the tenant but on the other hand, the lessor does not have to be the landlord to do the same. (Yavuz, 2003: 3710)

In case the rental property is assigned/transferred, it would be more appropriate to consider any correspondence made by the new landlord that is not a party to the tenancy contract in an effort to put the tenant in default for the reason that rent amount is not paid to the itself, as a “notice” but not as a “warning”. Nevertheless, if such new landlord has previously informed the tenant that it purchased such

rental property and rental amount has not been paid to itself, then any warning to be served by the landlord requesting the payment to made shall put the tenant into default. (Er, 1980: 611)

If the lessor does not know, locate the address of the tenant and it is thus not able to give a warning to the tenant, then it may serve a warning as per Article# 28 of Notification Law. (Karapinar, 1992: 401)

The addressee to the warning may be the tenant or its legal or contractual representative or the agent/attorney of the tenant. If there is more than one tenant, the warning should be served to all tenants, as may be inferred from the decision of the Supreme Court as follows, "The warning of default is issued to respondent (Y.E) and the action is filed against such person. It shall be required that the warning be served to both tenants and action be filed against such tenants, as per the rule "obligatory joinder of parties". (Yavuz, 2003: 3711)

3. The Warning must be Justifiable

It would not be applicable to put the tenant into default with a warning not justifiable, although the Code of Obligations does not include any explicit statement as to such warning should be legitimate, as opposed to the Code of Real Estate Rents No: 6570 indicating otherwise.

If the tenant has failed the rule to pay the rent in a timely manner, ignoring the rules of place, time and mode as specified in the article no: 257 of the Code of Obligations or it has never performed its liability at all, causing a non-performance; then the warning to be served by the lessor/landlord shall be regarded as justifiable. However, if the landlord unfairly abstains from receiving the rent amount even though the tenant is willing to pay the rent, the any warning to be served by the landlord on such grounds cannot be regarded as justifiable. (Er, 1980: 611-612) Pursuant to the Decision of Joint Chambers of the Supreme Court, the tenant is able to prove with evidence that the landlord does not accept the payment of rent amount without a valid reason although the tenant is willing to pay the rent duly

Another significant point under this topic is that any warning served to pay the set amount shall not be considered justifiable, unless a

final decision is made in the action filed to set the rent amount. The Decision of Joint Chambers of the Supreme Court on this issue is as follows: (Karahasan, 2004: 35-36)

“It is necessary not only that the creditor is eligible to demand from the tenant to perform but it shall also be required that such decision be finalised, in order to consider that it is time to perform the receivables of rent difference, as specified upon the decision of a court order as regards the setting of rent amount.”

The article no: 260 of the Code of Regulations regulates the default of tenant in rental payments. Pursuant hereto;

“If the tenant has failed to settle the payments due and payable prior to the termination of tenancy period, the landlord may specify a thirty-day extension of time for rents for a duration of six months or longer and a six-day extension of time for rents for a shorter period and give a warning to the tenant that it will terminate the contract upon the termination of such period unless such rent accrued is paid within the specified timeframe.

Such extension of time begins on the day when the warning is served to the tenant.

Any agreement made to reduce such extension of time or terminate the contract immediately in case of delay in the payments shall be null and void.”

If the tenant fails to pay any rent amount due and payable; the landlord shall call the tenant for payment, upon a notice of default it shall serve to the tenant, in accordance with the terms set out in the article no: 260 of the Code of Obligations. The tenant shall be on default if it still fails to make any payment or pay the full payment within the specified period of time granted to itself. In such case, the landlord shall be entitle to terminate the contract. (Zevkliler/ Havutçu, 2007: 234) If the tenant fails to pay the liability of rent, as may be seen in the clause mentioned above, the extension of time to be granted to the tenant upon warning by the landlord shall be 30 days for ordinary rents for a duration of six months or longer and 6 days for ordinary rents for a duration less than six months. Another point which we consider will be useful to indicate is that any rent to be accrued

within 30/6-day time to be granted to the tenant upon warning to be given shall not be considered in this context. For this reason, default shall only be applicable to such rent to be accrued by the warning date. (Olgaç, 1968: 295)

4. Content of Warning

The landlord shall be obliged to mention in such warning, for which months it is demanding a rental payment and the amount of such rent. The warning can be in any form, as per the General Provisions of the Code of Obligation, so it can be in verbal, writing and even implicitly. It does not matter whether the debt results from a legal transaction formally, as the warning is independent from a debt-bearing legal transaction and does not have any effect to change it. Nevertheless, in legal transactions between traders/merchants, it is a formal condition of effectivity/validity to serve the warning via notary office or registered mail or by wire, as per the article no: 20 of Turkish Commerce Code in order for a trader to put the other trader into default. (Bozovalı, 1991: 545)

Since the warning is a legal transaction as we already mentioned above, it is not possible to prove with evidence that warning of default is actually served. Hence, it is included in the scope of the article no: 288 of Code of Civil Procedures (HMUK), in terms of transactions. So, Postacıoğlu argues that the warning given to the tenant to fulfil its obligations arising from the tenancy contract can be proven with evidence once he/she indicates that only the legal transactions are subject to the scope of the article no: 288 of Code of Civil Procedures (HMUK) and the fact that the warning is identical to a legal transaction does not qualify to include it in the scope of the article no: 288 of Code of Civil Procedures. (Postacıoğlu, 1964: 47)

In our opinion and in the doctrinal belief, as mentioned by Er, it is stated that the warning given as per the article no: 260 of Code of Obligations is not identical to a legal transaction because such warning of default given as per the article no: 260 of Code of Obligations shall also serve as a notice to terminate the contract therefore it allows for termination which is a legal consequence, as part of the will of the landlord who gives the warning. It is indicated that such warning intended for termination and allowing for termination as the con-

ditions occur is without any doubt a legal transaction. (Reisoğlu, 2002: 46)

5. Failure to pay the rent amount within the specified time

If the tenant fails to pay its debt in due time and a warning is given to itself on such grounds and it makes no payment within the timeframe specified in such warning, then the tenant shall be considered to go into default when the said warning contains the conditions we mentioned above in detail. Thus, the landlord shall have the right to terminate the contract and have the rental property evicted.

5. Conclusion

While the landlord is required to give a single warning in order to put its tenant into default as per the article no: 260 of the Code of Obligations, the landlord shall be required to give two warnings to put its tenant into default, as per the clause (e), article no: 7 of Code of Real Estate Rents.

It is required by the law that the warning to be served must be in writing as per the article no: 7, clause (e) of the Code of Real Estate Rents, No: 6570 although the warning served to put the tenants into default can be in any form as per the Code of Obligations.

While it is not required to indicate in the content of the warning given as per the article no: 260 of the Code of Obligations, to which months any outstanding rent amount / amounts belong to, the warnings shall be lose validity in case it is not stated in both warnings given as per the article no: 7, clause (e) of the Code of Real Estate Rents, No: 6570, to which months the rental amounts belong to.

When a warning is served to the tenants as per the article no: 260 of the Code of Obligations, it should be required to give 30-day extension of time for the rents for a period of six months or longer and 6-day extension of time for the rents for a shorter period, upon the warning. Because, the phrase “please pay in due time” instead of such 30/6-day extension of time to be granted according to the duration of the contract is not approved by the Supreme Court and any warning which includes such phrase shall not be considered valid. On the other hand, the fact that the warnings given as per the clause (e), article no: 7 of the Code of Real Estate Rents can be valid does not

presupposes that an extension of time be granted to the tenants in the warnings.

Rapid changes that take place in both social, psychological and economical structure of our country have brought about an increase in the population as well, so this unpreventable population growth has led to a migration from villages to the cities. Rapid growth in population boosted the value of property rentals in the cities but brought about so many problems as well. As the problems increased, the Code of Obligations failed to satisfy such problems. These insufficiencies have caused the benefit balance of the scale, with tenants on one side and the lessors on the other, to be disturbed and shifted towards one side, failing to keep the needle in the middle. It should be noted that both scales of the balance must be equal while trying to resolve the problems. If the weight on the scale shifts towards one side, the balance of benefit will be disturbed and the legal system will no longer be used, causing a chaos. It shall be required to protect the rights of both the tenant and the lessor/landlord equally, in order to prevent any chaotic environment.



EFFICIENCY OF INTERNATIONAL CRIMINAL COURT

SERCAN REÇBER *

Abstract: Even in this century all-out slaughters are frequently happening and this shows international community's legal and institutional structure remains incapable of stopping war despite the fact that all development on international system. The most effective way to protect individuals against genocide, war crimes and crimes against humanity is to punish criminals that's the reason why permanent international criminal court has established. International Criminal Court (ICC) has established in an attempt to avoid the serious crimes such as genocide. Despite all, it's not easy to say that International Criminal Court (ICC) has fulfilled its function since become effective. In this sense it's emphasized regardless of political structure of countries, international law standards must come in effect, also another criticism against International Criminal Court (ICC) is about keeping peace, such as International Criminal Court (ICC) has a power of prohibiting peace by judicial interventions. Even though International Criminal Court (ICC) has a mission to end impunity culture in developing world, for Africa example ICC come across with restraints, but still on general ICC carry Crimes against humanity to court in Africa and has a very selective attitude.

Key Word: International Criminal Court, Genocide, Effectiveness, Africa, Selectiveness.

1. Introduction

Experiencing all-out slaughters frequently even in 20th century demonstrates that legal and institutional structuring of international

* Uludağ University Faculty of Law, Turkey [srecber@uludag.edu.tr]

community remain inadequate for the prevention of conflicts. Considering the fact that the most efficient way of protecting individuals from genocide and war crimes and the crimes against humanity is to punish those who realize such acts, an international criminal court is founded with permanent characteristics. Insufficiency of such international structure means that duty is undertaken by the local authorities, organizer of these events personally in these processes in which they are perpetrator personally in terms of investigating and penalizing perpetrators, this usually give no result as well. For repressing of all these and to say never ever, International Criminal Court (ICC) is founded, aiming at avoiding the crimes which access serious dimension such as genocide.

In this study, efficiency of ICC will be discussed. Critics made in general for sample of Africa, one of mostly discussed points on efficiency and so impartiality of ICC is presented in the study particularly. However, the function that ICC can have regarding peace processes and post-conflict period through judicial interventions of ICC will be discussed. On the other hand, apart from this sample, the samples come through in Sudan and Uganda are offered.

2. Structure and Jurisdiction of International Criminal Court

ICC formed with the participation of the countries up to 150 on 17 July 1998 was entered into force on 1 July 2002 with the enforcement by 60 countries pursuant to their own internal law.

In 1th article of its status, it is specified that ICC is a permanent institution, have a jurisdiction complementary to international courts and may establish international penal responsibility only for individuals. As per 4th articles of the status, ICC is an institution having international personality. In 5th article of the status, it is indicated that its material jurisdiction of ICC is limited to the crimes against humanity, genocide, war crimes and crime of assault.

For emergence of jurisdiction of ICC, it is required that the act which is claimed to constitute crime should be committed in country of a state. Having status by state in which suspect is a citizen will also allow making jurisdiction of ICC usable. Again, in a state where the act in question is committed or a perpetrator who commits an act within the scope of the status is a citizen, if that country accepts ju-

jurisdiction of this concrete event in spite of not being a party to the status, judgment may be done again. If a citizen of a state not becoming a party to the status commits its act in country of state party, it may be judged before ICC¹.

Although state parties may use application right in terms of the events not committed by its own citizens or in the country of its own state, the states not being party may apply to ICC in case of only existence of such connection point.

In the event that Security Council (SC) transfers an event to ICC, in accordance with 25th article of United Nations (UN) Convention, jurisdiction of ICC is valid for all states member to UN regardless of being party to Rome status. All these states have to make cooperation with ICC for conducting investigation accordingly². Possibility of initiating investigation based on its own initiative in ex officio (proprio motu) by attorney general is regulated in article 15 of the status.

In the event of realization of the crimes regulated in the status, if no national courts make necessary actions related to these crimes under its jurisdiction, ICC comes into play and purposes to end remaining unpenalized in case no perpetrators of crime is penalized by national authorities. According to ICC status, jurisdiction of ICC is only for cases no national courts perform their duties. One of the most important properties of ICC is not it is controlled by UN. In this context, no court bears a quantity of a UN body completely.

JSHS|567

3. Critics for International Criminal Court

ICC is discussed frequently within the context of the files it has completed and given verdict of conviction and even the cases no investigation is opened in no way since the date it is enforced. Even though we admit impartiality and independence of ICC in a permanent court as an assumption, we have to consider the reality that today no all states on earth become party to this status. Except for these, when it is looked at the cases decided and the investigations continued, exis-

¹ Rome Statute of the International Criminal Court, art. 12.

² Rome Statute of the International Criminal Court, art. 13/b.

tence of some questions and suspicions are inevitable. Primarily, the following questions comes first;

ICC efficient only in Africa continent? Has witnessing massacre in Africa more than that seen in other places of the world and realization of grave violation of international law lead to ICC becomes more efficient in Africa? Does African leaders employ ICC as shield against its opponents as with sample of Uganda? Why nothing is not made in sample of Sri Lanka? Is the process of making bilateral agreements by US with other states undermined? Which countries are the states not becoming party? Does this system installed upon punishment causes extending of system conflicts? Does the ones becoming party to ICC among African countries act contrary to the status they become a party? What kinds of coercion may be done to the states not being party to the status?

Undoubtedly, it is possible to reproduce these questions. At least, common property of these questions is at the point of efficiency of the court. Dealing with these problems may provide becoming more efficient of the court, some questions needs more detailed answers. Considering that ICC may have negative effect from the point of establishing social peace in some cases, it may be necessary to leave ICC outside process too.

Although more than two third of the states becoming party to African Union (AU) is a party to ICC, General Board of African Union has taken critical decisions towards Criminal Court. In this context, top level representatives of the institution has made very severe expressions for ICC³. This situation has resulted in that African politicians has had an opinion that ICC is selective and prejudiced against Africa⁴.

³ Max du Plessis, Tiyanjana Maluwa and Annie O'Reilly, "Africa and the International Criminal Court", *International Law* 2013/01, July, 2013, p. 2.

⁴ Tim Murithi, "Between Political Justice and Judicial Politics: Charting a Way Forward for the African Union and the International Criminal Court", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer: 2014, p. 188.

With regard to these critics, Louis Moreno Ocampo who has made office of the attorney general in ICC between 2003 and 2013 has signified that situation is exaggerated owing to lack of communication experienced with African respondents, this is seen particularly in AU. In this direction, Jean Ping who conducts presidency of AU Secretariat between 2008 and 2012 has used this expression in very harsh way: "We are not against International Criminal Court, against justice of Ocampo"⁵. Similarly, "Africans become target in the court of westerners, court is "neo colonial toy", Ping said in AU Summit 2009. Ping has stated why ICC ignore the crimes in other regions of the world as follows: why only Africa? Why these laws are not implemented in Israel, Sri Lanka and Chechenia and its application is limited only to Africa⁶.

In this context, the decisions of ICC towards Africa open roads to complicated reactions. Africans have emphasized that ICC is a toy at the hands of imperialists, imperialists seek for their justice, does not take interests of victims into consideration, inciting wars⁷. When the decisions taken General Board of African Union between 2009-2013 are reviewed, it is specified that clearly ICC assume a selective, prejudiced and insulting pose towards Africa, international crime judgement has to act fairly, avoid of the cases to create sense of double standard, act in line with principles of international law⁸.

JSHS|569

In spite of all these, African leaders have presented important support especially for the formation process of ICC, but their objections are available for the cases Africans are tried. The most concrete re-

⁵ Plessis, Maluwa and O'Reilly, op. cit., pp. 2-3.

⁶ Tim Murithi, "The African Union and the International Criminal Court: An Embattled Relationship?", The Institute for Justice and Reconciliation: Policy Brief, Number: 8, March, 2013, p. 5.

⁷ Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, "Introduction: Africa and the International Criminal Court", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer: 2014, pp.2-3; Moses Retselisitsoe Phooko, "How Effective the International Criminal Court Has Been, Evaluating the Work and Progress of the International Criminal Court", *Notre Dame Journal of International and Comparative Law*, Volume: 1, Issue 1, 2011, p. 197.

⁸ Plessis, Maluwa and O'Reilly, op. cit., p. 11.

flection of it on the axis of African leaders is request for detention of Al-Beshir. This bill of indictment dated 2009 towards Al-Beshir is condemned by all AU and called for the countries member to the union not to to make cooperation with ICC. Next year, upon giving decision by ICC for opening investigation for the violence following the elections made in 2007, Kenya, call for withdrawing from the status is made by Kenya Parliament⁹.

Another criticism point is that ICC contains drawbacks for peace process and the re-consensus in post-conflict period. The biggest criticism made here is that ICC has a feature preventing that by means of judicial interventions on building peace. Those who oppose to that have stated that enough evidence on this matter has not occurred and it is early to say that¹⁰.

In this context, the resolution taken by ICC towards Kenya may be given sample. Four important points of the resolution are addressed here and it is mentioned that the resolution taken may give damage to consensus process. It is said Kenya case has given irreparable damage between African Union and ICC¹¹. Another significant point is that realization of witness protection program of ICC is based on the confidence to local actors. In the sample of Kenya, two witness have lost, others are renounced from testimony¹².

All cases (except for Georgia) continuing before ICC is only related to African continent although in fact carnages are committed in every place. It may be said that the target of ICC is small fishes such as re-

⁹ Margeret M. De Guzman, "Choosing to Prosecute: Expressive Selection at the International Criminal Court", *Michigan Journal of International Law*, Volume 33, Issue 2, 2012, pp. 271-272.

¹⁰ Shamila Batohi, "Africa and the International Criminal Court: A Prosecutor's Perspective", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer: 2014, pp. 54-55.

¹¹ Plessis, Maluwa and O'Reilly, op. cit., p. 6.

¹² Lionel Nichols, *The International Criminal Court and the end of Impunity in Kenya*, Springer: 2015, pp. 211-212.

bels, warlords and opponent leaders excluding Al-Beshir, head of state of Sudan¹³.

However, it is mentioned that ICC has become successful in terms of investigation against the persons in charge of violence environment after the elections in Kenya concerning the general prevention role (Uhuru Kenyetta and William Ruto), elections 2013 has passed in peace and the dissuasive role of ICC has become efficient¹⁴.

Having no police power by ICC forms a great difficulty especially on application of arresting decisions for the persons who are accused.

When it is looked from the date of enforcement, it is seen ICC could not have concluded many cases. No many detention resolution taken could be implemented. The perpetrators keep on remaining unpenalized. Insufficient resources of ICC is very important for taking these results. Deficiency of personnel on analysing local cases is apparent. But even though resources are increased, it is observed serious restrictions are present politically and difficulty of application is experienced¹⁵. Another important critics brought in this sense is that bringing legal standards without considering political structure of country is troubled¹⁶.

JSHS|571

The connections and information flow of non-governmental organizations, studies of the court are important in terms of their investigations particularly. Depriving of resources of the court forms obstacle

¹³ Phooko, op. cit., p. 206.

¹⁴ Sosteness Francis Materu, "A Strained Relationship: Reflections on the African Unions Stand Towards the International Criminal Court from the Kenyan Experience", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer, 2014, pp. 221-222; Medlir Mema and Mathias Holvoet, "ICC and RTP: Identifying Main Convergences and Possible Conflicts", *Responsibility to Protect in Theory and Practice*, Ed: Vasilka Sanchin and Masa Kovic Dine, GV Zalozba, Publishing House, Ltd, Ljubljana, 2013, p. 770.

¹⁵ Robert Cryer, *Prosecuting International Crimes: Selectivity and the International Criminal Law Regime*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2005, pp. 95-96.

¹⁶ Mahmood Mamdani, *Saviours and Survivors: Darfur, Politics, and The War on Terror*, HSRC Press, 2009, South Africa, p. 286.

in front of a meaningful progress. In a broad sense, no international consensus exists within the context of targets of the court¹⁷. It is clear that discrepancies are available in terms of investigations conducted, resolutions given by the court so far. When attorney generalship wants to make investigation personally in many cases, with great possibility, states will not help the court and impede execution of duties by the court.

Application to the court due to the events occurred within its own borders of the states becoming to party to ICC Status has two dangers. First possibility is that a state in which internal war exists within its borders may create the opinion on international community by applying for the court that international crimes are committed by opposite party. By ensuring intervention of ICC in this way, court may be used as a tool on accessing to its own purposes in internal policy by the state in question. Second possibility is that state gives no support for searching the crimes to be committed by its own officials and not in full cooperation with the court about examination of the crimes committed only by other party.

4. Darfur and Sample of Al-Bashir

One of the milestones in strained relation between African Union and ICC is the resolution of detention taken against Al-Bashir, head of state by ICC on May 2009¹⁸.

Basis of the arrest warrant towards Al-Bashir consists of the resolution of SC. The commission organized in order to investigate the events in Darfur by SC presented its report to SC on 25 January 2005. In the report, Sudan government is kept responsible from the crimes against humanity. Seven weeks later after publication of the report, UNSC has touched on the matter in Darfur with the resolution it took on 31 March 2005 pursuant to part VII of UN Convention, stated the Court may investigate the situation here as from 1 July 2012 too. SC/Res/1593 is the first in terms of bringing up any event to the

¹⁷ De Guzman, *op. cit.*, p. 267.

¹⁸ Plessis, Maluwa and O'Reilly, *op. cit.* p. 4.

agenda of ICC by using the authorization given it in accordance with paragraph of article 13 of ICC status, has historical value¹⁹.

However, Sudan is not a party of ICC. Upon completion of preliminary examination on 6 June 2005, office of the chief public prosecutor authority has decided to open an official investigation. Thereupon, the file went to 1th Pre-trial department. Pre-trial department took arrest warrant about Al-Bashir on 4 March 2009 due to the crimes against humanity and the war crimes claimed having committed in the last five years. Importance of this decision is emanated from it is the first arrest warrant towards a head of state in office²⁰.

The request for arresting Al-Beshir has created problem between African Union and ICC. The member states of African Union has defended this request for arresting will form obstacle to regional peace and re-consensus process of the unity in Sudan²¹.

However, the opinions regarding that ICC is the best option within the scope of sample of Darfur has also been suggested. The reference point of these opinions is formed from the reality that Sudan management has not acted at sufficient level about catching and judgement of perpetrators of events.

JSHS|573

In this regard, the following is listed a reason. a. The court is founded for auditing in terms of the potential crimes to be experienced in places like Darfur in which peace and security is threatened, b. ICC to

¹⁹ Micheal Contarino and Melinda Negron Gonzales, "The International Criminal Court", An Institutional Approach to the Responsibility to Protect, Ed: Gentian Zyberi, Cambridge Universty Press, Cambridge, 2013, pp. 415-416.

²⁰ Phooko, op. cit., p. 187.

²¹ Tim Murithi, "Between Political Justice and Judicial Politics: Charting a Way Forward for the African Union and the International Criminal Court", op. cit., pp. 182-183; Samantha Buckley, "The Good Intentions of Law: Effectiveness of the International Criminal Court in Deterring Future International Crimes", <http://www.kentlaw.edu/perritt/courses/seminar/Buckley%20%20Effectiveness%20of%20the%20ICC%20Fall%202012.pdf>. (accessed 24.04.2016), pp. 21-22.

be supported by UN Security Council may ensure investigation and penalizing both militia and rebellious groups and Sudan government from the point of judgement of perpetrators of events, c. A fair judgement may be ensured in international sense, d. The court may act without any waiting, e. Authorization of ICC may also save international community from a grave economic load²².

5. Uganda

With respect to Uganda peace process, it is claimed that the court has worsened situation and the main external obstruction in front of peace agreement between LRA (Lord's Resistance Army) and the government is ICC. It is pointed out that ICC is only interested in judging LRA leaders in sense of criminal law. Another case pertaining to Uganda is that central government has prompted ICC. The things experienced in Uganda is transmitted to ICC as from 29 January 2004²³. But, how correct it is to criticize the court here. Main concern of the court is the judgement of the crimes included in its jurisdiction pursuant to the status.

In this context, the problem for Africa (South Africa, Uganda, Sudan and Mozambique, etc.) is not to escape from justice but realization of another justice rather than extension of conflicts. Within this scope, it is mentioned that the important thing is that those who survive ensure justice and two sharp edges are present on this matter and at first, providing peace is before penalizing, this is not a justice search which penalize, but sense of political and social justice and will be made based on consensus. Although it is passed to first one in South Africa, no second one is succeeded²⁴. ICC has initiated investigation only against LRA army for Uganda. While defending the resolution about Uganda ICC has expressed that it has decided who will be accused by using principle of weight, in this regard, crimes committed

²² Cenap Çakmak, "Uluslararası Ceza Mahkemesi'nin Darfur Krizine Müdahil Olması ve ABD'nin Süper Güç Olarak Limitleri", *Uluslararası Hukuk ve Politika*, Cilt 3, Sayı 10, Yıl 2007, p. 54.

²³ Tim Allen, *Trial Justice: The International Criminal Court and The Lord Resistance Army*, Zed Books, London & Newyork, 2006, pp. 98-102

²⁴ Mamdani, *Saviours and Survivors: Darfur, Politics, and The War on Terror*, op. cit., p. 285.

by LRA is a lot more. This approach shows that the function in Uganda of ICC is to provide criminal justice. And in this regard even though Uganda parliament has offered a law for absolution of LRA leaders for peace, Uganda Head of State has invited ICC for investigation of the crimes committed by LRA leaders against humanity²⁵.

At the same time, ICC has made no investigation regarding performance of a full counterinsurgency activity and to the massacres towards the public in Northern Uganda by Uganda government. In this sense, it is seen that strategy of ICC is fragmentary, with its best way, it does not select target regarding related fact, fail to perform its duties concerning protection as a whole²⁶.

Attorney general of the court has requested for taking arrest warrant only for top level commanders of LRA with regard to the conflicts in Uganda. Arrest warrant was taken for Joseph Kony, leader of LRA and Vincent Otti, Okot Odhinambo, Dominik Ongwen and Rasha Lukwiya, top level commanders of LRA. Although these arrest warrants are encountered positive before government, it has lead to concerns on continuing conflicts. Primary concern is the sense concerning that judgement process initiated in ICC will give damage to the dialogue process starting between the parties clashing in Uganda. According to those who think method of amnesty and consensus will reach success, involving in the process by ICC has made problem more complex. Therefore, conventional opinion leaders and religious leaders have requested ICC attorney general to end investigation. The groups that conduct extensive lobby activity in this regard have asserted that LRA may lay down arms through conventional methods and no need to military operation or ICC judgement for peace²⁷.

JSHS|575

²⁵ Mahmood Mamdani, "Responsibility to Protect or Right to Punish?", *Journal of Intervention and Statebuilding*, 4: 1, 2010, p. 61.

²⁶ Angelo Izama, "Accomplice to Impunity? Rethinking the Political Strategy of the International Court in Central Africa", *School of Advanced International Studies Review*, Volume 29, No 2, Summer- Fall, 2009, p. 54.

²⁷ Errol P. Mendez, *Peace and Justice at the International Criminal Court*, Edward Elgar Publishing, 2010, pp. 103-106; Allen, op. cit., pp. 117-118; Cenap Çakmak, "Uganda: Sömürge Kaynaklı Etnik Katliam", *20. Yüzyılda Soykırım ve Etnik Temizlik*, Der: Cenap Çakmak, Fadime Gözde Çolak ve

In spite of these critics concerning the function of ICC in Uganda, it is seen that ICC has contributed to peace process in fact, fear of subjecting to investigation has caused LRA leaders make peace interview, LRA has decreased intensity of assaults and LRA has withdrawn some part of its members from Uganda. At the end of ICC investigation, Sudan, main supporter of LRA had to decrease its support. Despite all these, it should be said that only ICC investigation is insufficient to reduce violence of LRA in certain way²⁸.

6. Conclusion

While efficiency of ICC is discussed, it is seen that it involves dimension more than one. As can be seen in some samples revealed in this study that makes efficiency matter more complex, even in the cases that ICC may be efficient, ICC may give damage to peace processes and the consensus searches in the period following conflict. This subject contains many opinions that contradicts each other. In this context, becoming efficient by ICC may prevent to end conflicting process beyond giving positive result in some cases, may also cause deepening of problems more. This brings looking at subject from much wider perspective. It may be stated at least in terms of those who experience problem at burning level, a justice exceeding scope of that rather than a sense of punitive justice is needed. This also necessitates that the parts specific to it of each problem should be considered.

The objective of ICC is to implement jurisdiction in terms of both location and duty pursuant to status in an impartial and non-selective manner. As presented especially in this study, it could not be said that this function is fulfilled within the scope of sample of Africa. In contradictory way, ICC acts in selective manner between potential many cases, this also bring the discussions regarding the role played by ICC. As such, the insufficiency and selectivity in its resolutions get a blow in consistency of the court, gives damage its efforts towards legitimacy in the direction of targets and priorities.

Gökhan Güneysu, İstanbul Bilgi Üniversitesi Yayınları, İstanbul, 2014, pp. 207-209.


²⁸ Çakmak, "Uganda: Sömürge Kaynaklı Etnik Katliam", op. cit., p. 210.

In order to prove that it is not a court only related to the things experienced in Africa continent, ICC has to give response consistently for these in case of realization of such events in other places of the World in terms of the crime type that material jurisdiction subjects to. In the event that this is not assured, ICC will carry this sense having high rightfulness share.

References

- Allen, Tim, *Trial Justice: The International Criminal Court and The Lord Resistance Army*, Zed Books, London & New York, 2006.
- Batohi, Shamila, "Africa and the International Criminal Court: A Prosecutor's Perspective", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer, 2014, pp. 49-57.
- Buckley, Samantha, "The Good Intentions of Law: Effectiveness of the International Criminal Court in Deterring Future International Crimes", <http://www.kentlaw.edu/perritt/courses/seminar/Buckley%20%20Effectiveness%20of%20the%20ICC%20Fall%202012.pdf>. (24.04.2016), pp. 1-26.
- Cryer, Robert, *Prosecuting International Crimes: Selectivity and the International Criminal Law Regime*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2005.
- Contarino, Micheal and Melinda Negron Gonzales, "The International Criminal Court", *An Institutional Approach to the Responsibility to Protect*, Ed: Gentian Zyberi, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2013.
- Çakmak, Cenap, "Uluslararası Ceza Mahkemesi'nin Darfur Krizine Müdahil Olması ve ABD'nin Süper Güç Olarak Limitleri", *Uluslararası Hukuk ve Politika*, Cilt 3, Sayı 10, Yıl 2007, pp. 43-74.
- Çakmak, Cenap, "Uganda: Sömürge Kaynaklı Etnik Katliam", *20. Yüzyılda Soykırım ve Etnik Temizlik*, Der: Cenap Çakmak, Fadime Gözde Çolak ve Gökhan Güneysu, İstanbul Bilgi Üniversitesi Yayınları, İstanbul, 2014, pp. 191-215.
- De Guzman, Margeret M., "Choosing to Prosecute: Expressive Selection at the International Criminal Court", *Michigan Journal of International Law*, Volume: 33, Issue: 2, 2012, pp. 265-320.
- Izama, Angelo, "Accomplice to Impunity? Rethinking the Political Strategy of the International Court in Central Africa", *School of Advanced International Studies Review*, Volume 29, No 2, Summer- Fall, 2009, pp. 51-60.
- Nichols, Lionel, *The International Criminal Court and the end of Impunity in Kenya*, Springer, 2015.
- Mamdani, *Saviours and Survivors: Darfur, Politics, and The War on Terror*, HSRC Press, South Africa, 2009.

- Mamdani, Mahmood, "Responsibility to Protect or Right to Punish?", *Journal of Intervention and Statebuilding*, 4:1, 2010, pp. 53-67.
- Materu, Sosteness Francis, "A Strained Relationship: Reflections on the African Unions Stand Towards the International Criminal Court from the Kenyan Experience", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer: 2014, pp. 211-228.
- Mema, Medlir and Holvoet Mathias, "ICC and RTP: Identifying Main Convergences and Possible Conflicts", *Responsibility to Protect in Theory and Practice*, Ed: Vasilka Sanchin and Masa Kovic Dine, GV Zalozba, Publishing House, Ltd, Ljubljana, 2013, pp. 765-788.
- Mendez, Errol P., *Peace and Justice at the International Criminal Court*, Edward Elgar Publishing, 2010.
- Murithi, Tim, "The African Union and the International Criminal Court: An Embattled Relationship?", *The Institute for Justice and Reconciliation: Policy Brief*, Number: 8, March: 2013, pp. 1-9.
- Murithi, Tim, "Between Political Justice and Judicial Politics: Charting a Way Forward for the African Union and the International Criminal Court", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer, 2014, pp. 179-193.
- Plessis, Max du, Tiyanjana Maluwa and Annie O'Reilly, "Africa and the International Criminal Court", *International Law*, 2013/01, July, 2013, pp. 1-13.
- Phooko, Moses Retselisitsoe, "How Effective the International Criminal Court Has Been, Evaluating the Work and Progress of the International Criminal Court", *Notre Dame Journal of International and Comparative Law*, Volume:1, Issue 1, 2011, pp. 182-209.
- Werle, Gerhard, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, "Introduction: Africa and the International Criminal Court", *Africa and the International Criminal Court*, Ed: Gerhard Werle, Lovell Fernandez and Moritz Vormbaum, Springer: 2014, pp. 1-9.



STRESS AND EATING HABITS: GENDER DIFFERENCES AMONG UNDERGRADUATE STUDENTS




ADELINA LOKAJ *

ZAMIRA HYSENI DURAKU *



Abstract: The main goal of this study is to identify the level of stress and differences on eating habits among undergraduate students, based on their gender. The intent through the first research question was to understand the gender differences pertaining to stress levels, whereas the second research question aimed to identify the gender differences in regard to eating habits.

Key Word: Gender differences, students, eating habits



1. Introduction

The definition, symptoms and stress coping strategies, vary depending on the circumstances in which stress has incurred and managed (Crocker & Luhtanen, 2003). Torres & Nowson (2007) define stress as the body's general response to defend itself from threats that attack its ability to maintain homeostasis, and an unaffected state of the internal environment of the organism. Stress occurs when the requests toward an individual surpass his/her coping ability, and reactions to stress can vary depending on the nature of the occurring events and the individual's characteristics (Dyson & Renk, 2006).

* University of Prishtina
[adelinalokaj5@gmail.com]

* Department of Psychology, University of Prishtina, Hasan Prishtina
[zamira.hyseni@uni-pr.edu]

Everyday life requires continuous adaptation and maintenance of a dynamic equilibrium in an environment that changes rapidly; this equilibrium is called allostasis (McEwen, 2004). In essence, allostasis includes changes in energy flow, appetite, swallowing, energy maintenance and mobilization.

Many individuals experience high levels of stress on a daily basis, and it is perceived that this contributes considerably to unhealthy eating habits. Studies conducted to understand the effect of stress on eating habits have shown that the level of stress impacts an individual's eating habits. Aiming to illustrate behavioral consequences of stress, many studies have presented ties between chronic stress and changes in eating habits (Epel, Jimenez, Brownell, Stroud, Stoney & Niaura, 2004). According to Adams and Epel (2007) when an individual is seen experiencing chronic stress, the stress hormone called cortisol is released, thereby stirring in the individual a desire to overeat. The findings of this study have also revealed that people who identify themselves as individuals, who overeat when stressed, have higher levels of urinary cortisol and insulin when stressed.

2. Literature Review

It is considered that stress in students' results from the pressure to achieve a good academic performance, to keep up with colleagues and relations, which they wish to build. Therefore, these stressors influence students to find a coping strategy, and statistically, university students have a higher chance to overeat as a means to cope with stress (Laska et al., 2009).

Academic and performance pressure can play a role in habits of consuming unhealthy foods. According to the study conducted by O'Connor, et al. (2008) who researched the influence of a major academic stressor on eating habits in students of secondary education, results showed a considerable increase in the consummation of fat during a major exam day. Though this study was focused on high school students, university students also experience academic stress and are likely to correspond to similar changes in eating habits. Oliver, Wardle and Gibson, (2000) offered further support on this hypothesis through a laboratory study by using a population of uni-

versity students. The results of the study revealed that performance stress is tied to the increase of fatty foods in emotional eaters.

There is qualitative evidence which proves that the stress we experience before undergoing an exam, increases activity in the HPA axis (hypothalamic-pituitary-adrenal), this is a complex group of the interactions and reactions among three endocrine glands: hypothalamus, the pituitary gland (a pea shaped structure located under the hypothalamus) and kidneys, resulting in the release of cortisol (Selye, 1974). Cortisol is a hormone that is produced in the kidney gland, otherwise known as the stress hormone, since it is included in our reaction toward stress (Lewis et al., 2006).

A study carried out by Holm et al. (2008), reveals that men and women gain a considerable amount of weight between the first and second year of university studies.

Healthy eating is associated with stress, according to Ruthig et al., (2011). The majority of students participating in this study, men and women alike, reported consumption of unhealthy foods when under stress. The relevant explanation claims that people are more likely to choose foods dense in energy than foods not dense in energy, when under stress. Rutters et al. (2008) have utilized two quantitative measures, and have found that stressed participants who reported lack of hunger, were still found eating.

JSHS|581

As a result, it is concluded that there is an relationship between psychological stress and eating, regardless of hunger levels. Research by Spoor et al. (2007) provided support on this, by finding as a result that some individuals use food only as a distraction, in this case from work or the university. These results have given clear support on the theory that raised stress levels are accompanied by increase in food consumption, however the explanation of this change is not unanimous. Some have suggested that this increase in food consumption is a result of physiological processes, meanwhile others have insisted that this is because of the utilization of the distraction method, without a presence of hunger (Dallman, 2010; Rutters et al., 2008; Spoor et al., 2007).

Other research studies have suggested that stress elasticity and coping strategies can vary depending on gender (Oliver et al., 2000).

Sanlier and Ogretir (2008) suggest that men, in general, are more likely to be more optimistic compared to women. Their findings also suggest that women are more likely to overeat in both positive and negative moods compared to men. Moreover, Nguyen et al. (2007) have reported that men are more likely to eat more fruit and vegetables when under stress compared to women. Similarly, the study conducted by Stone and Brownell (1994) has found that changes in women's eating habits, occur as a result of low, average or high stress levels, meanwhile men's eating habits are expected to change only as a result of high levels of stress. These results suggest that women, in general, are more sensitive to the effects of stress than are men, thereby offering further backup that gender affects experience of stress and eating habits.

Studies have suggested that some individuals experience high levels of stress that are connected to changes in the type of food they consume, as is the consumption of foods rich in fat (Simsa et al., 2008). A study conducted by Habhab et al., (2009) which aimed to identify food preferences in women with low and high levels of stress, suggested that women with high levels of stress preferred to eat sweets and food rich in fat, more so than women with low levels of stress. Further support on this behavioral pattern includes research from Epel et al. (2004) who also suggests that time periods of higher stress levels were closely tied with changes in food choices, especially in the increase of high-fat and sweet food consumption.

Considering the fact that stress is a part of our daily lives, each day is filled with events that consciously or unconsciously give us stress. Stress management skills vary and differ depending on the stressful situations, and the individual's personality characteristics (Dyson & Renk, 2006). Through time, general causes, signs and stress coping strategies have been reviewed and society awareness has increased (National Health Services, NHS, 2013). Nevertheless, for some effects of stress, the correct interrelationship is not determined, for example, the effects of stress on eating habits (Torres & Nowson, 2007). To understand the impact of stress in our lives it is necessary to conduct research on this topic. Such studies that focus on the affects of stress on eating habits are extremely significant in providing more knowledge to students and general population in regard to the relationship

between these variables. When students are made aware of the consequences of stress in their lives, especially in eating, as an essential process in human life, then they will learn to manage stress and develop beneficial eating habits.

3. Methodology

For the study, the quantitative research method has been used. Research participants were (N= 80) undergraduate students from the University of Gjakova, age 18-24 from whom, (N=40) were females and (N=40) males. Participants were selected randomly from the University lists. The questionnaires were distributed among the students after obtaining their approval. The majority of students were between the ages 20-22. From the total sample (N=80), 32 (40%) of the participants were 18-20 years old, 38 (47.55) were 20-22 years old and 10 (12.5%) were 22-24 years old. The level of stress was measured with 38-item Stressful Situations Questionnaire-SSQ, (Hodges & Felling 1970). Questions in this questionnaire assessed the level of comprehension or anxiety that students face while dealing with stressful situations. The reliability of this measure was satisfactory, with Cronbach's Alpha Scale ($\alpha \geq .83$). The eating habits were measured using the 8 item, Compulsive Eating Scale (CES) questionnaire (Kagan dhe Squires, 1984). The reliability of this measure was not satisfactory, with Cronbach's Alpha Scale ($\alpha \geq .42$). The t-test was used to analyze gathered data; an analysis that has revealed exactly if there are differences among the compared groups.

JSHS|583

4. Results

Following the analysis of the first research question through the t-test, $t(78) = 3.72, p < .001$ results showed that the significant value is smaller than .05, which reveals that there are gender differences in regard to stress levels, (see table 1). The average and standard deviation for men is (M= 101.35, DS= 18.67) and for women (M= 114.65, DS= 12.66) as pertaining to stress levels (tab. 1).

Table 1.Independent Group T-Test between Stress Levels and Students Gender

	Female		Male		t-test
	M	SD	M	SD	
Stress levels	114.6	12.6	101.3	18.7	3.72***

*** $p < .001$. N=80

Note. M=Mean. SD=Standard Deviation. Stress levels are measured using scores that ranges between 1-5 in which 1 indicates low stress and 5 best extreme stress.

Following the analysis of the second research question through the t-test, $t(78) = -826$, $p = .411$ see table 2. This shows that the significant value is larger than .05, revealing that there are no clear differences between men and women in regard to eating behavior. The average and standard deviation for men and women barely differs, men (M= 15.77, DS= 4.89) and women (M= 14.97, DS= 3.68) (tab. 2).

Table 2.Independent Group T-Test between Eating Habits and Students Gender

	Female		Male		t-test
	M	SD	M	SD	
Eating Habits	14.9	3.68	15.7	4.9	-826**

** $p > .001$. N=80

Note. M=Mean. SD=Standard Deviation.

5. Conclusions

The results of this study showed that women have a higher level of stress than do men $t(78) = 3.72$, $p < .001$. These findings were also supported by existing studies as that conducted by Stone and Brownell (1994) the results of which suggested that women, in general, are more sensitive to the effects of stress than are men, thereby offering further backup that gender plays a role in the impact of stress on eating habits.

Meanwhile the results of the second research question showed that men and women have no significant differences in regard to eating habits $t(78) = -826$, $p = .412$. These findings contradict some existing

research as that of (Nguyen et al., 2007) who reported that men are more likely to eat more fruit and vegetables when stressed than are women. The results obtained by this study offer an opportunity for further research on the topic. The understanding of gender differences and the impact of stress on an individual's eating habits, has a great significance because recognizing why such changes occur offers an opportunity for people to understand the causes and even work on prevention.

References

- Adam, T. & Epel, E. (2007). Stress, eating and the reward system. *Physiology & behavior*, 91:449-458.
- Crocker, J. & Luhtanen, R.K. (2003). Level of self-esteem and contingencies of self-worth: unique effects of academic, social and financial problems in college students. *Personality and Social Psychology Bulletin*, 29, 701-712.
- Dallman, M.F. (2010). Stress-induced obesity and the emotional nervous system. *Trends in Endocrinology & Metabolism*, 21 (3), 159-165.
- Dyson, R. and Renk, K. (2006). "Freshmen adaptation to university life: Depressive symptoms, stress and coping", *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, Vol. 62, No. 10, pp. 1231-1244.
- Epel, E., Jimenez, S., Brownell, K., Stroud, L., Stoney, C., & Niaura, R. (2004). Are Stress Eaters at Risk for the Metabolic Syndrome? *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences*, 208-210.
- Habhab, S., Sheldon, J.P. and Loeb, R.C. (2009). The relationship between stress, dietary restraint, and food preferences in women. *Appetite*, 52, 437-444.
- Holm-Denoma, J. M., Joiner, T. E. Jr., Vohs, K. D. and Heatherton, T. F. (2008, January). "The 'freshman fifteen' (the 'freshman five' actually): Predictors and possible explanations", *Health Psychology*, Vol. 27, No. 1, pp. 97-100.
- Laska, M. N., Pasch, K. E., Lust, K., Story, M. and Ehlinger, E. (2009). "Latent class analysis of lifestyle characteristics and health risk behaviors among college youth", *Prevention Science*, Vol. 10, No. 4, pp. 376-386.
- Lewis, R., Patel, F., Garrison-Jakel, J., Berger, D., & Lupien, S. (2006). Examination stress as an ecological inducer of cortisol and psychological responses to stress in undergraduate students. *Stress: The International Journal on the Biology of Stress*, 199-206
- McEwen, B. (2004). Protection and Damage from Acute and Chronic Stress: Allostasis and Allostatic Overload and Relevance to the Pathophysiology of Psychiatric Disorders. *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences*, 1-7.
- National Health Service. (2013a). Stress. Retrieved 09/02/13 from <http://www.nhsdirect.nhs.uk/MentalHealthSelfCare/Stress>
- Nguyen-Rodriguez, S. T., Unger, J. B., & Spruijt-Metz, D. (2007). Psychological determinants of emotional eating in adolescence. *Eating Disorders: The*

- Journal of Treatment & Prevention*, 17(3), 211-224.
doi:10.1080/10640260902848543
- O'Connor, D. B., Jones, F., Conner, M., McMillan, B., & Ferguson, E. (2008). Effects of daily hassles and eating style on eating behavior. *Health Psychology*, 27(1), S20-S31. doi 10.1037/0278-6133.27.1.S20
- Oliver, G., Wardle, J., & Gibson, L.E. (2000). Stress and food choice: A laboratory study. *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 62, 853-865.
- Ruthig, J., Marrone, S., Hladkyj, S., & Robinson-Epp, N. (2011). Changes in College Student Health: Implications for Academic Performance. *Journal of College Student Development*, 307-320.
- Rutters, F., Nieuwenhuizen, A.G., Lemmens, S.G.T, Born, J.M and Westerterp Plantenga, M.S. (2008). Acute stress-related changes in eating in the absence of hunger. *Obesity*, 17, 72-77.
- Sanlier, N. and Ogretir, A.D. (2008). The relationship between stress and eating behaviors among Turkish adolescence. *World Applied Sciences Journal*, 4(2), 233- 237.
- Selye, H. (1974). *Stress without distress*. Philadelphia: Lippincott. ISBN 978-0-397-01026-4
- Simsa, R., Gordona, S., Garcia, W., Clark, E., Monyea, D., Callender, C. & Campbell, A. (2008). Perceived stress and eating behaviors in a community-based sample of African Americans. *Eating behaviors*, 9(2), 137-142.
- Spoor, S., Bekker, M.H.J., Van Strien, T. & Van Heck, G.L. (2007). Relations between negative affect, coping and emotional eating. *Appetite*, 48, 368 - 376.
- Stone, A., & Brownell, K. (1994). The stress-eating paradox: Multiple daily measurements in adult males and females. *Psychology & Health*, 425-436.
- Torres, S. & Nowson, C. (2007). "Relationship between stress, eating behavior, and obesity", *Nutrition*, Vol. 23, No. 11-12, pp. 887-894.
- Hodges, W. and Felling, J. (1970). Types of stressful situations and their relation to trait anxiety and sex. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology*, 34 (3): 333-337.
- Kagan, D.M. and Squires, R.L. (1994). Compulsive eating, dieting, stress and hostility among college students. *J. Coll. Stud. Pers.*, 25 (3): 213-220, 1984.

COMPARISON OF BRAIN-RATE PARAMETER IN
GROUPS OF YOUNG CHILDREN WITH ANOREXIA,
GENERAL ANXIETY DISORDER, HYPERACTIVITY AND HEALTHY
CHILDREN MATCHED IN AGE AND GENDER

ANETA GJ. DEMERDZIEVA *

NADA L. POP-JORDANOVA *

Abstract: *Introduction:* Brain rate is parameter correlated to brain electric and metabolic activity. *Aim:* The aim of this study was to analyze results obtained for brain rate parameter as an indicator for general mental arousal in anxious, anorectic and hyperactive patients and to compare them with results of healthy young people matched in age and gender. *Material and Methods:* The diagnosis for the three groups was made according two statistic manuals (DMS-IV-R and ICD-10), medical history, neuropsychological assessment, biochemical analysis and QEEG. In this study we examined the spectra power of the brain waves through quantified EEG (QEEG). Obtained results were exported to brain rate software and then calculated for each region separately. The QEEG spectra power data and data for brain rate were analyzed using Statistica software. *Results:* According to sagittal and lateral topography maximal values of brain rate parameter were obtained in group of healthy individuals and in group of anorectic patients. The lowest results were obtained in group of hyperactive children for all three regions. *Conclusions:* The general conclusion will be that pathological conditions in childhood, analyzed in this research, can be defined as conditions of hypoarousal and this can be specific sign of brain dysfunction.

Key Word: QEEG, brain rate

* Department for Pediatrics,
Acibadem Sistina Hospital, Skopje, R. Macedonia
[ademerdzieva@yahoo.com]

* Macedonian Academy of Sciences and Arts, Skopje, R. Macedonia

1. Introduction

Human mental arousal, defined as the "general activation of the mind" (1), is related to EEG frequency. Brain rate is parameter correlated to brain electric and metabolic activity (2). In particular, brain rate – in further text- f_b can serve as a preliminary diagnostic indicator of general mental activation (i.e. consciousness level), in addition to heart rate, blood pressure or temperature as standard indicators of general bodily activation. Brain rate can be calculated by following formula:

$$f_b = \sum_i f_i P_i = \sum_i f_i \frac{V_i}{V} \quad V = \sum_i V_i$$

where the index i denotes the frequency band (for delta $i = 1$, for theta $i = 2$, etc.) and V_i is the corresponding mean amplitude of the electric potential or power.

As the authors (2) said - characterizing the EEG spectrum, brain-rate may serve as an quantitative indicator of the general brain activation, and we can term it "brain-rate"(in analogue to e.g. heart-rate). As such, it can contribute to the gross, initial assessment, not substituting the subtle, differential investigations of disorders corresponding to the same general level of arousal. Many pathological states have specific QEEG patterns that can help clinicians in selection of the treatment - medication and neurofeedback (3). Interpretations of results of brain rate need experience and good knowledge of specific QEEG pattern according to age and developmental stage especially during childhood. As very illustrative we will cite an example from Pop-Jordanova and Pop-Jordanov's work that $f_b = 4.59$ for adult would correspond to a very drowsy state (or mental retardation) and a relaxed state for a child, while $f_b = 9.58$ would correspond to a relaxed state for an adult, and a very attentive (or anxious) state for a child.

Starting from the assumption that different brain rate values are somehow coupled with metabolic activity in different disorders, than it is very interesting to compare it with the same parameter of normal (healthy) subjects. The aim of this study was to analyze results

obtained for brain rate parameter as an indicator for general mental arousal in anxious, anorectic and hyperactive patients and to compare them with results of healthy young people on the same age and gender.

Generalized anxiety disorder in childhood is characterized by recurrence of excessive, disproportionate and intrusive concerns or worries (related to child's performance at school, sport activities, his/her physical health, family financial situation, catastrophes, possible disasters) in a period of one month at the least. Anorexia is characterized with weight loss, leading to a body weight of at least 15% below the normal. The weight loss is self-induced by avoidance of "fattening foods". Preadolescents usually have self-perception of being too fat, with an intrusive dread of fatness, which leads to a self-imposed low weight threshold. The diagnosis of hyperkinetic disorder requires to define presence of abnormal levels of inattention and restlessness, that are pervasive across situations and persistent over time, that can be demonstrated by direct observation, and that are not caused by other disorders such as autism or affective disorders (4).

Abnormalities in brain functioning in anxious, anorectic and hyperactive children and young patients are quite often approved by neuroimaging techniques.

2. Methods and Subjects

The examined subjects were divided in three groups – patients with General Anxiety Disorder, anorectic children and patients with ADHD. Their results we compared with results obtained for brain rate parameter in control group of healthy children.

First group comprised 40 anxious young people; mean age 12 (± 3.5) years. Girls were 17 (42.5%) and 23 (57.5%) were boys. Second group comprised of 30 anorectic children and teenagers, average age 14.0 ± 2.4 years. Only 6.67% (or 2) of patients were males and 93.33% (or 28) were females. The third group of ADHD preadolescents and teenagers comprised of 50 individuals mean age 10 ± 2.1 years. Only 2 of them or (4%) were girls and 48 or 96 % were boys.

All subjects were patients of the Department for Psychophysiology at the University Pediatric Clinic in Skopje, in the period from January 2008 until December 2010. The diagnosis was made according to two statistic manuals: DMS-IV-R (American Psychiatric Association: Diagnostic and statistical manual of mental disorders DSM-IV, 4th Ed, 1994) and ICD-10 (World Health Organization: The ICD-10 classification of mental and behavioural disorders. Diagnostic criteria for research, 1993). Medical history, neuropsychological assessment and QEEG has been realized in all patients.

Inclusion criteria were: age between 7 and 18 years; absence of actual neurological impairments and absence of the use of psychoactive or psychotropic substances (screened by a previous anamnesis and clinical examination).

All subjects had normal or corrected to normal vision. Informed consent for QEEG recording has been appropriately obtained from all participants/caregivers. All of them were assessed with psychological testing - for anxious group - Generalised Anxiety Scale - GAS and Eysenck Personality Questionnaire - EPQ, in a single session; for anorectic group personality questionnaires: MMPI and EPQ in a single session that lasted approximately 2 hours and for ADHD children ACTeRS (which is a simple, standardized form that objectively measures four separate factors: Attention, Hyperactivity, Social Skills, and Oppositional Behavior). Subjects were free of medication 48 - hours before testing and were asked to have good sleep a night before testing. All of them must have meal before testing to avoid effects of hypoglycemia on the brain function. They were seated in a comfortable chair with a backrest and were instructed not to move their eyes during recording.

EEG was recorded with Quantitative EEG equipment (Mitsar, Ltd.) amplifier from 19 electrodes, referenced to linked ears (on the International 10-20 system) with 250 Hz sampling rate in 0.3-70 Hz frequency range in the following conditions:

- 1) Eyes opened (EO) - 5 minutes,
- 2) Eyes closed (EC) - 5 minutes,
- 3) Visual continuous performance task (VCPT) - 20 minutes.

4) Auditory continuous performance task (ACPT) - 20 minutes.

The 19 electrode positions were allocated to three sagittal regions:

Frontal – Fp1, Fp2, F3, Fz, F4, F7 and F8.

Central – T3, T4, C3, Cz and C4.

Posterior – T5, T6, P3, Pz, P4, O1 and O2.

Obtained results were exported to brain rate software and then calculated for each region separately. The QEEG spectra power data and data for brain rate were analyzed using Statistica software (version 7.0). A series of repeated measures analysis of variance - Factorial ANOVA was performed using the factors: sagittal topography (frontal, central and posterior region), measurement condition (EO, EC, VCPT and ACPT) and group (disorder and controls) for spectra power values. Then post hoc Bonferroni test was performed to explain significant interactions.

3. Results

Brain-rate results for first group – anxious patients:

JSHS|591

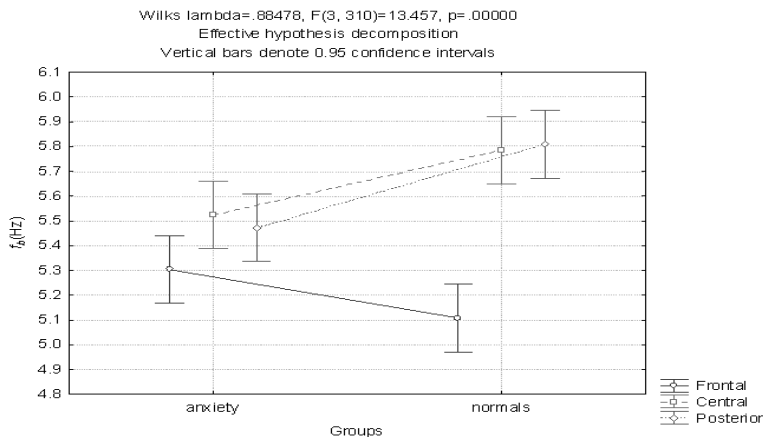


Figure 1: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according sagittal topography in a group of anxious patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD F=13.46; $p < 0.001$)

According sagittal topography f_b parameter in anxious group has higher results only in frontal region. In a group of healthy controls the results show statistically significant higher values for central and posterior regions.

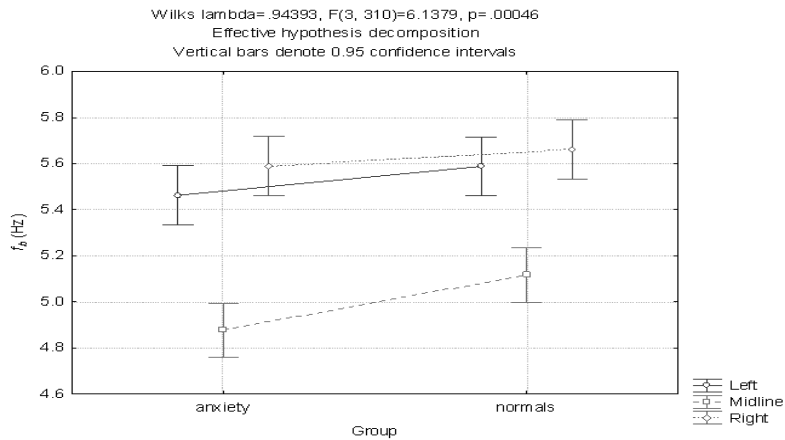


Figure 2: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according lateral topography in a group of anxious patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD F=6.14; $p < 0.001$)

Values of brain rate f_b parameter according lateral topography have statistically significant correlation with factor group F(3,310)=6.14; $p=0.00046$ especially for midline region.

Finally, we performed post-hoc Bonferroni P-values for brain rate difference between groups, regions and conditions (group of anxious patients and control group of healthy children).

Table 1. Summary of significant post-hoc Bonferroni P-values for brain rate difference between groups, regions and conditions (group of anxious patients and control group of healthy children)

		Frontal f_b	Central f_b	Posterior f_b	Lateral Left f_b	Midline f_b	Lateral Right f_b
Group effect	Normal's vs. Anxious	0.046565	0.008615	0.000703		0.005034	
	EC vs. EO			0.000000	0.003495	0.000000	0.013402
Condition effects	EC vs. VCPT	0.000312	0.047107	0.000000		0.000000	
	EC vs. ACPT		0.002157	0.000000	0.000109	0.000000	0.000104
	EO vs. VCPT	0.037274					
	EO vs. ACPT						
	VCPT vs. ACPT						

Brain-rate results for a second group – anorectic patients:

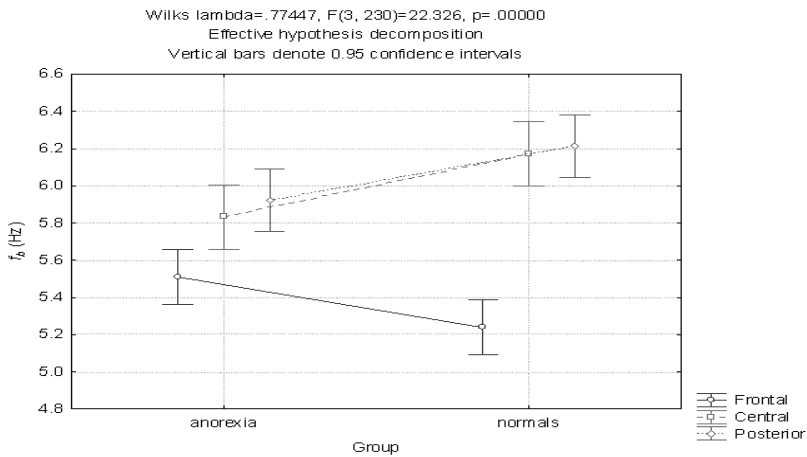


Figure 3: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according sagittal topography in a group of anorectic patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD F=22.33; p<0.001)

According sagittal topography maximal values of f_b parameter were registered in central and posterior region for control group $F(3,230)=22.33$; $p=0.00000$. Using ANOVA/MAOVA test we get positive correlation of f_b parameter and group factor.

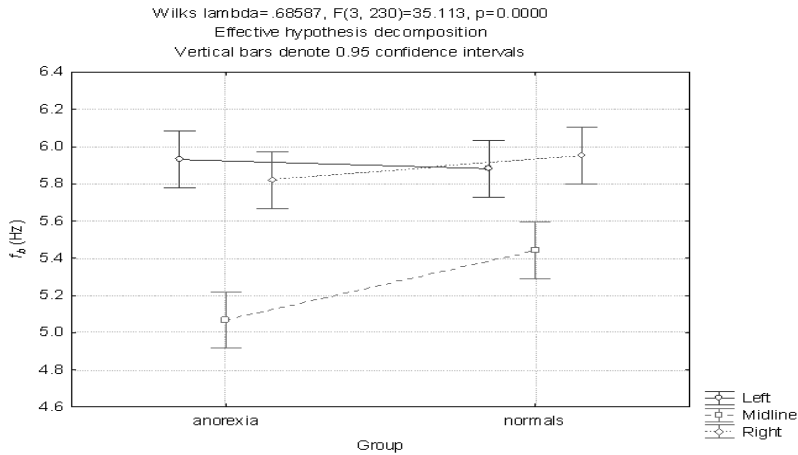


Figure 4: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according lateral topography in a group of anorectic patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD $F=35.11$; $p<0.001$)

According lateral topography ANOVA/MAOVA test showed positive correlation of f_b parameter values with factor group with significantly higher values in both lateral comparing with the midline region.

Finally, for summery significance of the differences for every region separately according different condition we use post hoc Bonferoni test:

Table2. Summary of significant post-hoc Bonferroni P-values for brain rate difference between groups, regions and conditions (group of anorectic patients and control group of healthy children)

		Frontal fb	Central fb	Posterior fb	Lateral Left fb	Midline fb	Lateral Right fb
Group effect	Normal's vs. Anorectic	0.010779	0.006997	0.017625		0.000664	
	EC vs. EO		0.021364	0.000000	0.000068	0.000000	0.000209
Condition effects	EC vs. VCPT		0.036642	0.000000	0.009815	0.000000	0.023117
	EC vs. ACPT		0.007795	0.000000	0.000016	0.000000	0.000594
	EO vs. VCPT	0.004733					
	EO vs. ACPT						
	VCPT vs. ACPT						

Brain-rate results for third group – hyperactive patients:

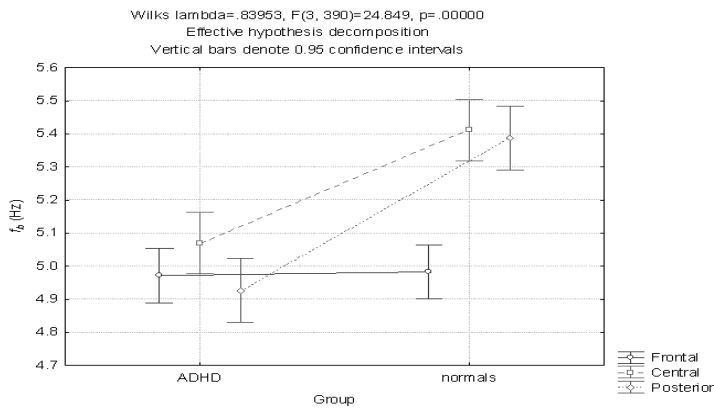


Figure 5: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according sagittal topography in a group of hyperactive patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD F=24.85; $p < 0.001$)

According sagittal topography f_b parameter values after application of ANOVA/MANOVA test present statistically significant difference $F(3,390)=24.85$; $p=0.00000$ between hyperactive and control group for central and posterior region. Differences in frontal region are small and statistically insignificant. F_b parameter values are significantly higher in control group beside the group of hyperactive children.

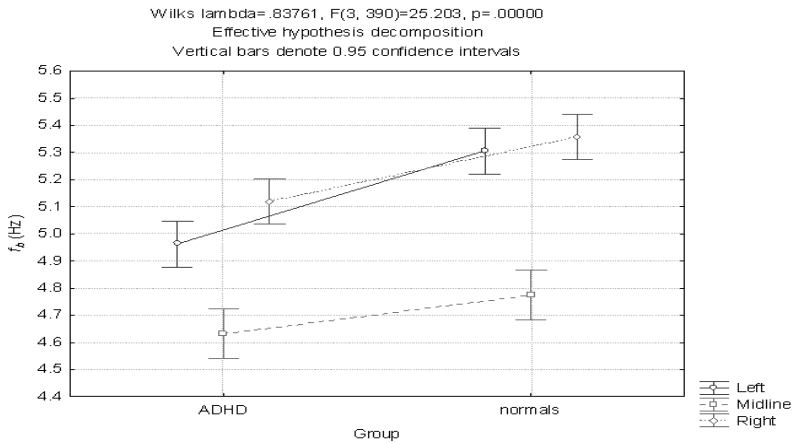


Figure 6: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according lateral topography in a group of hyperactive patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD $F=25.20$; $p<0.001$)

According lateral topography ANOVA/MAOVA test confirmed positive correlation of f_b parameter values with factor group with significantly higher values in both lateral regions comparing the midline region $F(3,390)=25.20$; $p=0.00000$.

For summery significance of the differences for every region separately according different condition we use post hoc Bonferoni test:

Table3. Summary of significant post-hoc Bonferoni P-values for brain rate difference between groups, regions and conditions (group of hyperactive patients and control group of healthy children)

		Frontal f_b	Central f_b	Posterior f_b	Lateral Left f_b	Midline f_b	Lateral Right f_b
Group effect	Normal's vs. Hyperactive		0.00000 0	0.00000 0	0.00000 0	0.02968 6	0.00008 2
	Condition effects						
Condition effects	EC vs. EO	0.03356 9	0.01587 2	0.00000 0	0.00008 3	0.00000 0	0.00001 4
	EC vs. VCPT	0.00000 0	0.00753 0	0.00000 0	0.01495 4	0.00000 0	
	EC vs. ACPT	0.00000 5	0.00019 6	0.00000 0	0.00000 4	0.00000 0	0.00008 9
	EO vs. VCPT	0.00000 1					
	EO vs. ACPT						
	VCPT vs. ACPT	0.00868 6					

Comperison the results between groups:

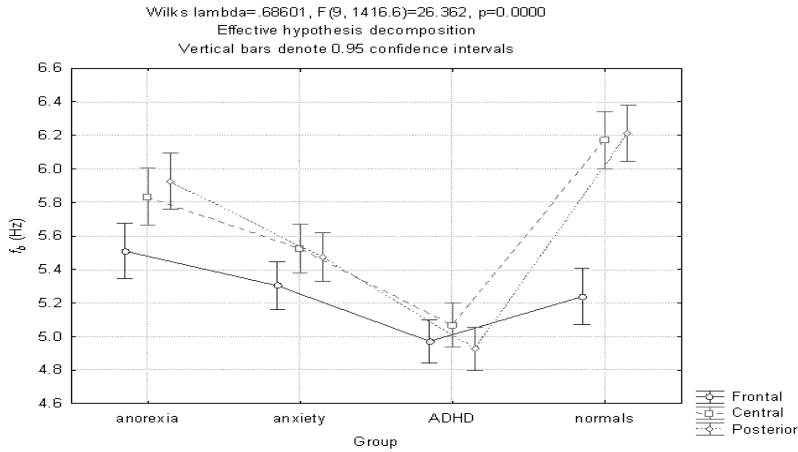


Figure 7: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according sagittal topography between groups of anorectic, anxious, hyperactive patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD F=26.36; p<0.001)

According sagittal topography maximal f_b parameter values were registered in a group of healthy individuals $F(9,1416.6)=26.36$; $p=0.0000$ in central and posterior region, while in the frontal region maximal values were received in a group of anorectic patients.

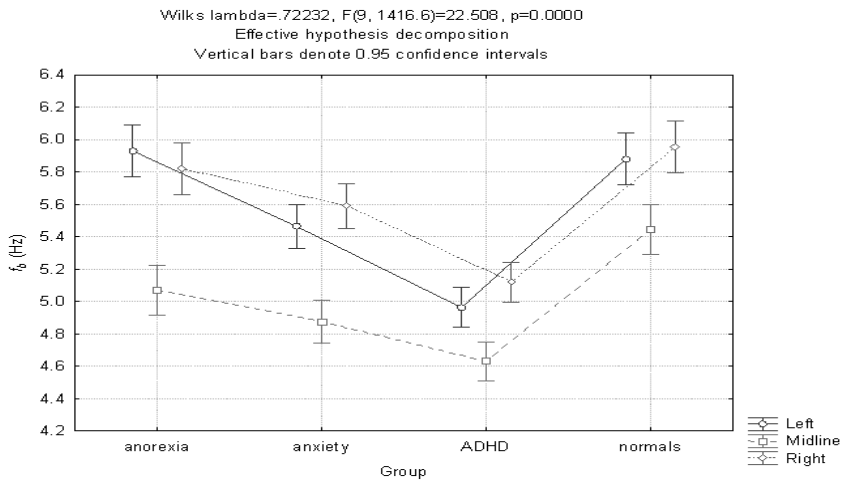


Figure 8: Values of brain rate f_b parameter according lateral topography between groups of anorectic, anxious, hyperactive patients and control group of healthy children (the results are presented as Mean values \pm SD $F=22.51$; $p<0.001$)

According lateral topography maximal f_b parameter values were obtained in anorectic group and a group of healthy controls $F(9,1416.6)=22.51$; $p=0.0000$. The lowest f_b parameter values were obtained in a group of hyperactive children for all three regions.

Post hoc Bonferoni -test was used for establishing the differences between groups according different regions and different conditions.

Table4. Summary of significant post-hoc Bonferroni P-values for brain rate difference between groups, regions and conditions (group of anxious, anorectic and hyperactive patients and control group of healthy children)

		Frontal	Central	Posterior	Lateral left	Midline	Lateral right
Group effect	Normal's vs. Anorexia		0.035903			0.004402	
	Normal's vs. Anxious		0.000000	0.000000	0.000602	0.000000	0.004262
	Normal's vs. Hyperactive		0.000000	0.000000	0.000000	0.000000	0.000000
	Anorexia vs. Anxious	0.000004	0.044061	0.000406	0.000085		
	Anorexia vs. Hyperactive	0.004850	0.000000	0.000000	0.000000	0.000069	0.000000
	Anxious vs. Hyperactive		0.000044	0.000000	0.000001	0.041795	0.000004
Condition effects	EC vs. EO		0.006212	0.000000	0.000000	0.000000	0.000001
	EC vs. VCPT		0.014808	0.000000	0.000131	0.000000	0.001054
	EC vs. ACPT		0.005622	0.000000	0.000005	0.000000	0.000043
	EO vs. VCPT	0.014948					
	EO vs. ACPT						
	VCPT vs. ACPT						

4. Discussion

Many authors reported specific electrophysiological patterns for some mental disorders. Firstly, we would like to discuss the result of anxious group. In these group we found reduced values of alfa and theta spectra power what can be understand as SPECIFIC EEG MARKER for anxious conditions in childhood. We started from the premise that these children have increased mental tension in frontal region what is true but if we analyze whole brain spectar not only beta waves. This is one reason MORE why brain rate is so important. So, when we calculate brain activity and analyse only one brain wave band the received results can be false. Brain rate parameter according sagittal topography has higher values for anxious group only in the frontal region related to increased mental tension. Anxiety is defined as a subjective sense of worry, apprehension, fear and distress. When severe, it can affect a child's thinking, decision-making ability, and perceptions of the environment, learning and concentration. Basal instability in cortical arousal, as reflected in measures of quantitative electroencephalography (qEEG), is common in most of the anxiety disorders. According Clark et al. resting electroencephalographic (EEG) measures tend to correlate with symptom sub-patterns and be exacerbated by condition-specific stimulation (5). For anxiety states detection through EEG there is not much literature as they are considered complex emotions (6,7).

EEG has been widely used for investigation of upper cognitive functions, mental states and models of affect. According Grunwald and colleagues the results of EEG-power changes indicate a cortical dysfunction and deficits in somatosensory integration processing in anorexia nervosa patients (8). Different studies have reported that cortical dysfunctions can be found in patients with anorexia nervosa even after weight gain (9). Abnormal brain functions in eating disorders seems to be located towards executive function deflecs in the pre-frontal and frontal brain areas (10). It is already explained by Tchanturia and colleagues that patients with anorexia have poor cognitive flexibility, particularly linked to the function of the frontal lobes and executive system (11). In our group of anorectic children we found reduced alpha spectral power as specific for central and middle region. This corresponds to research of Rodriguez, Babiloni and their

colleagues (12) who found that eating disorders are related to altered mechanisms of cortical neural synchronization, especially in rolandic alpha rhythms. Beta spectral power is statically significantly lower in frontal region - reason for reduced cognitive flexibility. Again, the same as in anxious group – when we analyze the whole specter we receive statistically significant higher brain rate parameter values in frontal region in anorectic than control group. According different conditions again as in anxious group statistically significant higher brain rate parameter values were obtained in eyes closed condition. Except these situations – frontal region and eyes closed condition, in all other parts and conditions brain rate values in anorectics are statistically significantly lower which means – hypoarousal. Reduced brain metabolism in anorectics is the reason for low brain rate parameter – state of underarousal. We already found (13) that different brain rate values are somehow coupled with reduced metabolic activity in brain region of anorectics.

Robert J. Chabot and collaborates concluded that children with attention disorders are population with QEEG abnormalities in up to 80%. In this population, frontal/polar regions are most likely to show deviations from normal development, with the thalamocortical and/or septal-hippocampal pathways to be disturbed (14). In group of hyperactive children we found increased delta and theta spectra activity especially in posterior region and decreased beta activity in all regions according sagittal and lateral topography. This is very similar to the work of Kropotov who found that slow waves are present in EEG during all states beginning with the deep sleep until the state of focused attention (15). It is wildly spread opinion that ADHD children have dominant slow activity increased frontally (16). In our group slow waves were increased in posterior region, but not in the frontal region. Our results show that ADHD is very complex condition and is correlated with increased delta and theta and decreased beta power. Following Lubar's theory of hypoarousal (17), where it was hypothesized that, if reduced beta and increased theta represents underarousal, we can conclude that ADHD children are hypoaroused. This was confirmed by the calculated brain rate parameter which has statistically significant lower values in all parts and all conditions in comparison with the group of healthy controls. So, brain rate param-

ter corresponds to the state of low mental arousal – underarousal condition. In our previous work we already explain (18) that results from brain rate are in correlation with the results obtained for spectra power analysis.

Additionally, when we analyzed the results between the groups according sagittal topography maximal values of brain rate parameter were obtained in a group of healthy individuals in central and posterior region. Only for anorectic and anxious group of children in frontal region we received statistically significant higher brain rate parameter values which probably explains increased mental tension especially because frontal region contains most of the dopamine-sensitive neurons in the cerebral cortex. In frontal region maximal values were obtained in a group of anorectic patients - $F(9, 1416.6) = 26.36$; $p=0.0000$. According lateral topography again, maximal values were obtained in a group of anorectic and healthy individuals. The lowest results were obtained in a group of hyperactive children for all three regions - $F(9, 1416.6)=22.51$ $p = 0.0000$. According conditions the maximal brain rate parameter values were obtained in eyes closed condition which reflects the state of “inner-arousal” already noted in previous studies of Pop-Jordanov and Pop-Jordanova (19) and Cooper et al. (20).

We started from the assumption that different brain rate values are somehow coupled with metabolic activity in brain region. Low metabolic activity specific for mental disorders is the explanation for lower values of brain rate in comparison with normal controls. At the end in light of all this findings about meaning of some EEG markers in the assessment of brain functions in childhood we would like to promote the brain rate – fb as an indicator of general mental activity which can allow us to put analyzed groups in group of underarousal disorders. Of course, further investigations are needed.

5. Conclusions

In this investigation we started from the point that anxiety behavior which is specific for all three conditions can be the result of excess in beta activity. Accordingly, we expected that the results will suggest the condition of hyperarousal. Obtained results were opposite – we received low spectral power for all four bands especially for slow

bands as specific marker for brain dysfunction. In general, the highest results for brain rate parameter were obtained in a group of healthy children and the lowest results for the group of hyperactive children. The general conclusion which follows is that pathological conditions in childhood, analyzed in this research, can be defined as conditions of hypoaarousal and this can be specific sign of brain dysfunction. However, we must be aware that results obtained with QEEG and brain rate computing are just the framework for further scientific investigation. However, every child is individual story and the treatment must be adjusted according individual results and individual based protocols.

References

- D. Kahnemann.(1973).Attention and Effort, Prentice-Hall, New Jersey.
- Pop-Jordanova N., Pop-Jordanov J. (2005). Spectrum Weighted EEG Frequency ("Brain Rate") as a Quantitative Indicator of Mental Arousal, *Prilozi*, 26, (2):35-42.
- J. Johnstone, J. Gunkelman, J. Lunt. (2005). Clinical database development: Characterization of EEG Phenotypes, *Clin EEG Neurosci*. 36 (2), pp.99-107.
- World Health Organization (1993): The ICD-10 classification of mental and behavioural disorders. Diagnostic criteria for research. World Health Organization.
- Clark CR, Galletly CA, Ash DJ. et al.(2009, Apr.). Evidence-based medicine evaluation of electrophysiological studies of the an anxiety disorders. *Clin EEG Neurosci*; 40(2): 84–112.
- A. Ortony, T.J. Turner,(1990,Jul). Whats Basic About Basic Emotions, *Psychological Review*, vol. 97 (3), pp. 315-331.
- J.L. Tracy, D. Randles.(2011, Oct). Four Models of Basic Emotions: A Review of Ekman and Cordaro, Izard, Levenson, and Panksepp and Watt, *Emotion Review*, vol. 3 (4), pp. 397-405.
- Grunwald M, Ettrich C, Assmann B, Dähne A, Krause W, Beyer L et al. (1999).Haptic perception and EEG changes in anorexia nervosa. *Z Kinder Jugendpsychiatr Psychother*;27:241-50.
- Jáuregui-Lobera I. (2012). Electroencephalography in eating disorders.*Neuropsychiatr Dis Treat*;8:1-11.
- Hatch A., Madden S., Kohn M.R. et al.(2011). EEG in adolescent anorexia nervosa: impact of refeeding and weight gain. *The International journal of eating disorders*. 44(1), 65-75.
- Tchanturia K, Campbell IC, Morris R & Treasure J.(2005). Neuropsychological studies in anorexia nervosa. *The International journal of eating disorders*, 37 Suppl, S72-6.

- Rodriguez G, Babiloni C, Brugnolo A, Del Percio C, Cerro F, Gabrielli F et al.(2007). Cortical sources of awake scalp EEG in eating disorders. *Clin Neurophysiol*;118:1213-22.
- Demerdzieva A. Pop-Jordanova N.(2011,September).Spectrum-weighted EEG frequency as an indicator of mental arousal in patients with anorexia. *Medicina Fluminensis*.Vol.47 No.3;287-293.
- Chabot RJ, di Michele F, Prichep L, John ER.(2001, May). The Clinical Role of Computerized EEG in the Evaluation and Treatment of Learning and Attention Disorders in Children and Adolescents .*JNeuropsychiatry Clin Neurosci* 13:171-186.
- Kropotov JD. (2009). Quantitative EEG, event-related potentials and neurotherapy, Elsevier Inc.:28.
- Johnstone J, Gunkelman J, Lunt J. (2005, Apr).Clinical database development: characterization of EEG phenotypes.*Clin EEG Neurosci.*;36[2]:99-107.
- Lubar JF. (1991). Discourse on the development of EEG diagnosticsand biofeedback for attention-deficit/hyperactivity disorders.*Biofeedback Self Regulation*. 16:201–225.
- Demerdzieva A.(2010, June). EEG spectra power characteristics of attention deficit hyperactivity disorder in childhood. *Epilepsy (The Journal of the League Against Epilepsy of Republic of Macedonia)*: 77-88.
- Pop-Jordanov J, Pop-JordanovaN.(2009). Neurophysical substratesof arousal and attention, *CognitiveProcessing.*;10(Suppl1):S71–S79.
- Cooper NR, Croft RJ, DomineySJ et al.(2003). Paradox lost? Exploringthe role of alpha oscillations duringexternally vs. internally directedattention and the implicationsfor idling and inhibition hypotheses.*International J Psychophysiol.*; 47 (1) : 65-74.

DEVELOPMENT OF INTERNAL PSYCHOLOGICAL RESOURCES USING PSYCHOEDUCATIONAL GROUPS FOR YOUNGSTERS

LJUBISA ZLATANOVIC *

Abstract: Psychoeducational groups for children and adolescents are the relatively recent form of the psychological group work. They combine some basic principles and techniques of the group educational, therapeutic, and counseling work, aiming to help youngsters to develop or enhance their interpersonal skills, positive coping strategies, more adaptive ways of behavior, and positive personality characteristics related to mental health and overall human well-being. The key idea of this article, and at the same time one of its aims, is that psychoeducational group approach could be expanded in some important ways. Therefore, in the article it is strongly suggested the following: (1) it may be useful to integrate basic principles and practical activities developed within the psychoeducational group work with some core assumptions and dimensions of recently developed positive psychology movement; (2) it is also possible to include in this group work some other significant topics relevant and helpful for encouraging social and emotional development of children and adolescents; and (3) the psychoeducational groups broadened and designed in this way may be helpful for youngsters to build up their internal psychological resources that protect them from stress and despair.

Key Word: *psychoeducational groups, psychological resources, positive psychology, youngsters, counseling.*

* University of Nis, Faculty of Philosophy,
Department of Psychology, Serbia

1. Introduction

Mental health professionals have developed a great number of individual and group therapeutic and counseling approaches to psychological prevention and intervention in order to enhance or promote positive psychosocial changes in individuals, confronted with diverse social and cultural changes that affect their lives, helping them in their adaptive and health-related behaviors and cognitions, so that they can live more productive and fulfilled lives.

In recent times – especially with a rapid rise of a new trend in psychological science known as “positive psychology”, a scientific and professional movement which focuses on personal strengths rather than on psychological problems and weaknesses – it is increasingly recognized that the exclusive attention to the reduction of negative thinking and emotions, as well as to associated symptomatology, does not necessary lead to human optimal experience or functioning. It is emphasized that “something else” appears to be essential to healthy and effective psychosocial functioning of individuals. Thus, as a study of positive aspects of human life and optimal human functioning, positive psychology strives to provide a scientifically based knowledge about positive features that make human life worth living, to develop and maintain a “positive health”, and to improve quality of life. In particular, this new research field within contemporary psychology is interested in scientific study of human personal strengths, virtues and positive experiences in relation to various health issues (Zlatanovic, 2012: 17; see more also Compton, 2005; Snyder and Lopez, 2002). What this development within contemporary psychology produces was, among other things, an appearance of a wide variety of sophisticated individual and group psychological interventions, designed particularly for the purpose to help individuals in maximizing their developmental potential in various areas of their lives, increasing the presence of human functioning related to mental health, subjective well-being, and life satisfaction.

Within this context, in what follows in this article are some answers to the following questions: What are psychoeducational groups, and how are they different from other types of groups? Why such groups are helpful for children and adolescents? Finally: Is it possible to

broaden the scope of current topics and particular activities of psychoeducational groups for youngsters?

2. Psychoeducational Groups as a Form of the Group Psychological Work

Nowadays, there are different types of the group psychological work, based upon their own specific goals and interactional or group processes and experiences, as well as upon their conceptual backgrounds. In general, groups can be said to consist of three dynamic systems, each of which has a *spatial* representation: the intrapsychic space ("inner space" of mental life), the interactive space of transactions and communications, and the group-*qua*-group space (space of the group structure, process, and content at a given point in its evolution). In terms of a group as a whole, these spatial representations are dynamic and inter-related containers of experience (Ashbach and Schermer, 1987: 112).

Although there are some important similarities – such as the fact that the individual in the group is no longer merely an individual but is a "group individual", recognition that there is the interdependence of adaptation and psychic conflict, as well as the profound and continuous interaction of the inner mental life and the social context – to eliminate possible confusion, the important point to note here is that there is often a misunderstanding that any type of psychological group work in which there is a relationship between group and subjectivity, or between inner psychic processes and group processes, may be viewed as a group (psycho) therapy. However, in addition to a therapy group, groups can also be basically *preventive* oriented: to focus on learning new and more adaptive personal and social skills, new cognitive strategies and styles, and new ways of behavior and coping; or, to address some critical important developmental issues. Therefore, as Delucia-Waack (2006: 10) emphasizes, it is useful in working with children and adolescents in school setting to provide all interested parties – including staff, parents, children, and adolescents – with a clear description of what psychoeducational groups *are* and what they *do*, focusing on the preventive nature and the skill-building emphasis.

Related to this, psychoeducational groups for youngsters differ from counseling and therapy groups in some key focuses and emphasises. In short, by definition, *counseling groups* address various personal and interpersonal conflicts and problems of everyday living; they support, promote or help personal psychological growth of individuals and development of their appropriate problem solving and better self-understanding. As Carl Rogers, very influential figure within humanistic psychology and the Dean of the encounter – group movement, pointed out: “Sometimes such groups are known as laboratories in human relationships, or workshops in leadership, education, or counseling” (Rogers, 1985: 9). On the other hand, *therapy groups* – which always include the close relationship between the intrapsychic, interactive, and group systems and processes (Ashbach and Schermer, 1987) – are directed at the treatment specific emotional problems, cognitive distortion, and repetitive patterns of dysfunctional behavior – such as anxiety, depression, paranoid disorders, eating disorders, and so on. In general, by providing more deeper and intensive group dynamics and experience, counseling and therapy groups are more appropriate for individuals with more or less severe psychological problems or difficulties, and mostly for adults which need help with various kinds of personal adjustment issues.

In contract to these forms of group psychological work, psychoeducational groups for youngsters focus mainly on skills development, or “skills building”, aiming to *prevent* emotional and behavioral problems. They use certain educational strategies based on group work – in particular, the identification and expression of feelings, role-playing, problem solving, decision making, conflict-resolution, and communication skills training. Through active participation in the interpersonal and group experience, and through here-and-now communication processes and constructive action, these groups try to *teach* youngsters to develop or enhance new and more adaptive skills and coping strategies, to learn improved ways of personal and interpersonal functioning, in an effort to prevent maladjustment and potential psychosocial problems. Such specific cognitive and social skills, styles and positive coping strategies in dealing with the challenging events of life usually include stress, anger and aggression

management, social or interpersonal skills, self-esteem, assertiveness, and making friends (DeLucia-Waack, 2006: 11).

3. Using Psychoeducational Groups to Help Youngsters

In such group psychoeducational work, children and adolescents are exposed to new cognitive concepts, different psychological ideas, and explorations of their current personal questions or problems. As active group participants, they discuss their feelings, interact with group leader and other group members, and identify potential solutions for their actual emotional and social problems and dilemmas. In a supportive group atmosphere, they also have possibility to explore, discuss and practice more adaptive and positive behaviors, *transferring* what is learned from the healing interactions of their group and the group experience to different domains of “real”, everyday life in outer world. The result of this group experience is the improved self-esteem, higher levels of personal efficacy and emotional satisfaction (Smead, 2003: 11). Thus, for example, in a children-of-divorce group, the focus of psychoeducational intervention would be to help young group members *recognize* their own feelings related to parental divorce as a stressful life event which, needless to say, hampers child adjustment, and to begin to *express* these feelings (usually, sadness and anger). As another example, if a lack of interpersonal skills or adaptive cognitive strategies – that result in not having friends or having relationship difficulties, and having unrealistic expectations and beliefs about oneself – are the psychological predictions of depression in adolescents, then teaching them the proper and specific social and cognitive skills or strategies will be a valuable group effort in order to prevent depression, poor self-esteem, and relationship difficulties.

In general, there are very important reasons and advantages to use psychoeducational groups as both preventive and remedial counseling practice for children and adolescents. First of all, as living systems of exchanges of information and energy, these groups are a natural way for youngsters to relate to each other, and through group communication and interaction to share emotions and experiences. Further, such groups emphasize in a strong way the learning of new behavioral and emotional skills and cognitive strategies. Third, they

focus on generalizing behaviors learned and practiced in the group session to real-life situations. Finally, emphasizing unconditional support and acceptance, psychoeducational groups provide multiple feedback, and increase self-confidence and self-esteem of the group participants (see Delucia-Waack, 2006). Related to this, writing from her own therapeutic work with a more remedial population, Carrell (2000) has some valid points about *why* psychoeducational groups are effective with children and adolescents, such as the following ones: (1) groups challenge the myth of uniqueness by emphasizing shared emotions and experiences; (2) they provide adult leadership that youngsters want but with avenues to assert power and independence; (3) groups reduce the discomfort of adult-child dynamics that occur in individual counseling, particularly with adolescents with bad experiences with adults; (4) groups confront adolescent self-absorption because in groups members need to take turns talking and helping each other; (5) these groups may be the first place that a young person truly experiences peer acceptance (Carrell, 2000: 14-15; see also DeLucia-Waack, 2006: 4).

4. Concluding Remarks: Possible Future of the Psychoeducational Groups

The key idea of this article, and therefore one of its aims, is that psychoeducational group approach could be *expanded* in some important ways. For that purpose, we finish the paper by suggesting that psychoeducational group experiences may have important applications for development or enhancement some *other* personal and interpersonal skills, strategies, and adaptive ways of functioning in real world, and in real life that is more complex today than it used to be.

Thus, in addition to current topics for psychoeducational groups – the topics such as relationship and communication skills, children of divorce, loneliness, aggression and anger management, body image, disordered eating, depression management, and similar earlier mentioned issues – it is also possible to include in this group work some other significant topics relevant and useful to youngsters, such as, for instance, general and social self-efficacy beliefs and skills, and enhancing or maintaining resiliency – a “pattern of positive adaption in the face of significant adversity or risk” (Masten and Reed, 2002: 75).

Related to this, if one looks broadly, there are also some specific social and cultural topics that are, as it seems, in particular important for living in today's more inter-related, more globalized, and rapid changing world. For example, these include development of cultural intelligence and/or cultural competence, psychological and sociocultural consequences of the process of globalization, different difficulties (such as miscommunication, prejudice, misunderstanding, maladaptation, and social isolation) experienced by members of some minority group, and the issues of development and maintenance of cultural, bicultural, and multicultural selves and identities. As mentioned, these issues are especially important nowadays, when global trends suggest that there is an increasing amount of contact between people from different cultures, as well as that there is an ever-increasing number of people who leave their country of origin and educate or get a job in another country. As it is recognized within contemporary social psychology, cultural psychology, and personality psychology – where the phenomenon of adjusting to a new culture has been described as “sojourner adjustment” – the ability to adapt to living in a new culture is perhaps one of the most challenging tasks for a modern person (e. g. , Flett, 2007: 491).

In addition, there is an important possibility for psychoeducational groups to incorporate some key elements of theory, research and practice developed within earlier mentioned *positive psychology* movement – a relatively new approach in contemporary psychology that could be viewed as a closely related direction to the former *humanistic* school in psychology, which significant proponents such as Abraham Maslow and Carl Rogers have strongly emphasized that people must not be viewed as a collection of symptoms but first and foremost as people (e. g. , Maslow, 1987). Namely, there are both theoretical and practical reasons for integrating to this type of group work some important concepts and topics of positive psychology, because it is strongly interested in studying and promoting healthy emotional and social development, and optimal states of human well-being.

Therefore, it seems reasonably to argue that youngsters may have more psychological benefit from psychoeducational groups based on the newer views of positive psychology of many significant issues related to mental health promotion, prevention and intervention, as well as to personal growth and constructive self-change. The psychoeducational groups broadened and designed in this way may be helpful for children and adolescents to develop or enhance through the helping relationship the internal *psychological resources* that protect them from stress and despair – including the building of personal strengths and skills such as self-esteem, self-efficacy, positive emotions, optimistic beliefs and hopeful thinking, internal locus of control, flexibility in new situations, and positive outlook on life. In turn, changing also some important aspects of their selves, these groups may in many ways help them to deal with various developmental critical tasks, challenges, failures and difficulties, as well as to deal with problem situations and stressful life events, more successfully, more effectively. In other words, by developing life-enhancing opportunities to adjust well and to live life fully and happier.

5. Conclusion

In conclusion, this article is based upon the strong belief that such an extension in theory and practice of the psychoeducational group work could be a really valuable effort, psychologically helpful for youngsters, for their overall gradual social and personal development and growth – which is, as Kristján Kristjánsson (2012: 220) has said, “the bread and butter of all education”. Needless to say, children and adolescents deserve such an important helping effort. As Gerard Egan (2010: 427) has said in his widely used counseling book *The Skilled Helper*, “Individuals and the world have always had and will always face problems situations. How healthy it would be if managing change were part of our basic educational experience”.

References

- Ashbach, Charles and Schermer, Victor L. (1987). *Object Relations, the Self, and the Group: A Conceptual Paradigm*. New York, NY: Routledge & Kegan Paul.
- Carrell, S. (2000). *Group Exercises for Adolescents: A Manual for Therapists* (2nd ed.). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.
- Compton, William C. (2005). *An Introduction to Positive Psychology*. Belmont, CA: Thomson Wadsworth.
- DeLucia-Waack, Janice L. (2006). *Leading Psychoeducational Groups for Children and Adolescents*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.
- Egan, Gerard (2010). *The Skilled Helper: A Problem – Management and Opportunity – Development Approach to Helping* (Ninth ed.). Belmont, CA: Brooks/Cole, Cengage Learning.
- Flett, Gordon L. (2007). *Personality Theory and Research: An International Perspective*. Ontario: John Wiley & Sons Canada, Ltd.
- Kristjánsson, Kristján (2012). *The Self and Its Emotions*. New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.
- Maslow, Abraham H. (1987). *Motivation and Personality* (3rd ed.) New York, NY: Harper & Row.
- Masten, Ann S. and Reed, M. -G. (2002). Resilience in Development. In C. R. Snyder and S. J. Lopez (Eds.), *Handbook of Positive Psychology* (pp. 74-88). London: Oxford University Press.
- Rogers, Carl R. (1985). *Encounter Groups*. Harmondsworth: Penguin Books.
- Smead, R. (1995). *Skills and Techniques for Group Work with Children and Adolescents*. Champaign, IL: Research Press.
- Snyder, C. R. and Lopez, Shane J. (Eds.) (2002). *Handbook of Positive Psychology*. London: Oxford University Press.
- Zlatanovic, Ljubisa (2012). Positive Psychology: Implications for Mental and Physical Health. *Godisnjak za psihologiju*, 9: 11, 17-24.

COMPARISON OF TRADITIONAL ART AND DIGITAL ART

FERRAH NUR DÜNDAR *

ÖZGE TUÇE GÖKALP *

AYFER TANIŞ *

Abstract: Discussions are generated between traditional and modern sense of art in the second half of the 20th century. Traditional sense of art has been replaced for the concepts such as “web art”, “digital fiction art” and “virtual reality” which are developed in the computer based atmosphere. Technology which forms the digital art becomes not only the tool for the production of the contemporary art but also platform and media for it as it expands thoroughly for every part of our lives and art nowadays. The development of digital technology necessitates the adaption of contemporary art history to the concept of digital art in traditional sense. It also leads to not only the integration of technology, science and art but also contemporary discourse. In that sense, it facilitates for the definition of art as an investigation and discussion. While the communication process is provided with cognitive, sensual, intellectual and spiritual level in traditional art, objects are omitted in the sense of digital art for the effective communication of the audience and artist. *In this concept, this study examines the revealing of form which is created by the means of media and language as a result of disintegration of the plastic arts from its own analytic structure and the problems created in terms of sensing point of art.*

Key Word: *Art, digital art, concept, semiotics*

* Kırklareli Universty-Turkey [ferrahnurdandar@klu.edu.tr]

* Kırklareli Universty-Turkey [ozge_tuce@hotmail.com]

* Kırklareli Universty-Turkey [ayferaksut@gmail.com]

1.introduction

1.1. Concepts of Art and Digital Art

Since the computers have taken an important place in our lives, digital technologies have been considered as an artistic tool. A new art form that contains the concepts of "network art", "digital installation art" and "virtual reality" have been taking over the traditional painting, drawing and sculpture. According to the classification of Verschooren: digital art is defined as Internet art, software art and net worked art. This is also called as electronic art, computer art, interactive art and media art.

"In the second half of 20th century, art has undertaken the duty to generate the world and lifestyle of the society. In this period, visual art has continued with its activities as a liberal art and it has passed over the subjective worlds and aimed to generate new realities by opening to possible worlds." (İpşiroğlu, 1993: 101).

Gönülal Özand defines art as "The existence of supreme ego of person in another dimension after a dynamic process. The indicator of this existence is the art object" (Gönülal, 2010: 54-62); whereas the Performance Artist Marina Abramovic describes the art without an object as follows: "In 21st century, art will have no objects. Objects are barriers between the audience and the intentions of artist. Objects have to be removed for the direct energy exchange between the audience and artist" (Daniken, 1997: 3-4).

Therefore, the "object" dependent artistic understanding was devastated after the second half of 20th century and virtual worlds based on production and consumption behind the indicators was created.

As media and advertisement sectors have rapidly changed the structure of society, the way of expression of art has also changed. Focusing against the object, rupturing the object from its own structure and living with its image, generating simulacr objects at an advanced level and create the existence of a new show society;

and it distinguished the reality between form and content in art. With this reality, it changed the purpose of art.

According to Baudrillard, "Indicators always have the function of capturing and expulsion. To reveal and abnegate in order to capture via indicators (the powers, the truth, happiness etc.) and to associate something." (Baudrillard, 1997:55)

According to Baudrillard, ignoring the truth by taking refuge in indicators causes the art to follow images instead of the truth.

Baudrillard argues that consumption is always about consuming symbols and indicators, that the new media art has no string of meaning, that the meaning is generated by indicators and symbols. *With media and advertisement sector, reality has clearly changed the purpose of art.*

This change of truth has started with pop art and it is considered as a new era in art generated by Andy Warhol's objects of consumption and Roy Lichtenstein's images in tools of mass communication. The artwork of Andy Warhol created by images have fetishized the media world, in his own words. "I paint like this as I wish to become a machine. The reason of me doing everything like a machine is that this is all that I want to do. When everyone is identical, the result is horrifying. (..) Anyone will be a celebrity for 15 minutes in the future" (Lynton, 1982: 503).

JSHS|617

As Andy Warhol has realized the power of media and became aware that art can be marketed; a significant difference appeared in media. "Pop art claims that it has a critical approach to daily reality; however in fact it is in a harmony with it" (Kuspit, 2006: 105).

According to Kuspit, this approach of Pop art was an indicator for the perception of art object as a marketable item and therefore as its destruction.

By using the digital language, a "theory" and "ideology" was generated via the work. The dimension of concept leaves the subjec-

tive art outside this discipline. The image of object in perception became more important than its content.

A new reality that looks like reality was established by digital art. (Kahraman, 1993:43)

2. Mixed reality

P Milgram and his colleagues have made a definition in 1994 which related the reality and virtual environment with continuity for the virtual expanded and mixed reality concepts. The real environment on the left side is an environment that consists of real objects which we can see directly, from a window or at a screen. If it moves to the right on a line of continuity, it is seen that there is a reality existing in there that relies on the overlap of virtual elements (e.g. information, 3-D presentations) and real environment; in other words, reflection of a real world "expanded" by virtual content. As a result, on the right side we see a virtual reality environment which is completely virtual and which does not contain any aspects of natural world.

Within this framework, the concept of "mixed reality" is a more general one and it defines an environment that exists between the ends of "reality" and "virtual" at any point above the line of continuity. The application of virtual reality is primarily implemented on scientific virtuality, medical and military simulations; enhanced and mixed reality has its place inside a vast section of society through usage in marketing, entertainment, irregular training and art.

2.1. Virtual Reality

The concept of "hyper-reality" as used by Baudrillard is a state where all the differences between past and future, mind and body, self and other, individual and society, audience and stage and author and reader have lost their meaning; therefore the difference between real and unreal (virtual, fictive) is removed.

In modern life, product is considered as an object of consumption whereas in postmodern age consumption itself is considered as a production. We can call it as a type of reality.

In 1970s and 1980s; pioneers such as Myron Krueger, Dan Sandin and Morton Heilig, who did not define themselves as "artist" with experience in various fields have implemented experiments by touchable communication, interaction, multiple perception trials and symbolic representations with the audience. According to Heilig, the knowledge of artist about the sensual perception of people towards his/her artistic expression might be a significant benefit.

The fundamentals of "virtual art" were set before the computer was widespread. Then, the first artists in a relationship with research laboratories have had the chance to make trials with Head Mounted Displays and Cave (a dice-shaped room with reflection areas instead of wall). The works such as Osmos of Char Davis, World Skin of Maurice Benayoun, a Photo Safari in the Land of War (Received the Golden Nica award in the area of Interactive Art at 1998 Art Electronica Festival and it is in the continuous exhibition of same museum), Mythologies as generated by the interdisciplinary group of Roussps, Bizri and others (a part of continuous exhibition at Arts Electronica Center), Dancing with the Digital Derwish by Diane Gromola and Yacov Shair, Configuring the CAVE by Jeffrey Shaw and his colleagues (in Tokyo ICC Museum) were exhibited.

JSHS|619

2.2. Enhanced/Mixed Reality and Artistic Understanding

The technologies of virtual reality creates an experimental area for the new media artists. The viewer is forced to participate with an active role, in a game that consists of mutual interaction between the natural and virtual world that consists of immersion.

Technological infrastructure was simplified and it can be obtained easily; and as it reveals the difference between the enhanced reality and virtual reality of 1990s, it also inspires the research on the field of art. The ability to implement the mixed reality via using a

mobile phone enhances the natural borders of indoor and their experiences are disseminated to the outdoors by playful performances and into the whole town as in 'Can You See Me Now?', Uncle Roy All Around You, NetAttack' and others.

3. Comparison of traditional art and digital art understanding

1- Always trying to be a person who thinks, questions and providing messages. To ask for doing the best and succeeding. The best is limited with our information, technologies and capabilities. The way for best and better depends on utilization and increase of our information and technological possibilities. Knowledge consists of scientific information, our material and non-material powers and our imagination. Imagination is considered as the source of science and art. Reaching the knowledge is the goal for scientific information. In art, finding ways to express the self is the goal. The ways of self expression include the technology and the period of measuring the technical knowledge and skills we have. It is seen that the process experienced by scientist and the creativity of an artist overlap.

2) The studies on artistic creation and production have revealed that artistic creation is not only produced by a high ability, but also with randomization which is obtained through computer programs and technical knowledge and skills. With this, the idea that artistic creativity is only for those with high skills was replaced with an idea of democratic right which says that anyone can be creative in terms of art.

3) With the help of this technology, authentic artistic works were reproduced by computer with multiple and cheap ways of production. Precautions were taken against the deterioration of art work and these important cultural heritages have become part of humanity. International Journal of New Trends in Arts, Sports & Science Education - 2012, volume 1, issue 3 Copyright © International Journal of New Trends in Arts, Sports & Science Education 62 One of the most important positive aspects is the precautions taken against the deterioration of art work and transfer for next generations through preservation.

4) Under the impact of new mass communication and information tools, the concepts of private and individualism have transformed in art. The idea that information and art require an intention, patience and a prepara-

tion is left aside today. The utilization of technology, existence of new areas in art and new approaches have surfaced the interactions in artistic information. The creation of new fields have brought together the ability of artist to interact with masses in digital culture environment in terms of artistic- information share and the ability of questioning the utilization of artistic information by the masses in an accurate or wrong way.

5) The current technology and applications against the art work has transformed the position of viewers. It has provided the chance to the "viewer" of today to quit being the "viewer" only and have the authority to interfere into the art work and transform it. The interactive work of Golan Levin, Artist. Golan Levin:24 Golan Levin:25 Interstitial Fragment Processor", 2007 Mixed Media Sylvain Wallez-November 26, 2010 Exhibited at Bitforms Gallery, NYC, November 2007 The intervention of the viewer on the work can be realized with the help of artist who has a specific technical knowledge and skill. In the traditional world of art, viewer was the person who interpreted the art work according to his/her sensual and intellectual perspective. The viewer had no power to change or transform the theme and message of the artist directly. The power of the viewer was the power to criticize about the art work.

JSHS|621

The concept of "hyper-reality" as used by Baudrillard is a state where all the differences between past and future, mind and body, self and other, individual and society, audience and stage and author and reader have lost their meaning; therefore the difference between real and unreal (virtual, fictive) is removed.

6) The art work created by digital art or under the impact of other post-modern art movements is open for the possibility of transformed, reduced, increased and even destroyed by the viewer. The art work also becomes an art piece of the person(s) who have seen or intervened. Identity, ownership, message, word and interactions can change sides. Various cultural, social and aesthetic "data" is loaded on our minds in different forms since the moment we were born. All of these are the data coming from external world. We use this data while creating a product. Because the number of transactions that can be done on a human mind is determined by the experiences from past. In digital culture, when individual generates something, this data will be used.

7) In our age, when the individual-artist evaluates the possibilities he/she has, there might be an illusion of possessing everything. Computer provides all the necessary information. So, the individual is called for pushing his/her own boundaries. Media network and environment. Whether the environment used by art is canvas-oil paint, body-space, electronic environment and digital information. International Journal of New Trends in Arts, Sports & Science Education - 2012, volume 1, issue 3 Copyright © International Journal of New Trends in Arts, Sports & Science Education 63 What really matters is to decide by looking at the work revealed. The important thing is the majority consisting of individuals with that authority during this decision-making process.

8) Art, artistic accumulation, science and technological developments help the humanity to realize/become aware of their own culture and other aspects about their history. All of these might have positive contributions on the establishment of individual change and transformation. It exists as long as it is used accurately. Every aspect of culture in which we currently live are treated as exchangeable objects. Its limitless flow to every corner of the world diminishes all types of resistance. The novelties in industry and culture, changes in visual and plastic arts remove all types of borders. Artistic culture is the most striking one among the developments in recent times, and the inseparable part of human being's action to create the new with a tendency of aligning his needs with the characteristics of current age. This artistic and cultural action contains differences unique for our age. Because the long path of art since the past until today has carried a major concentration and various satisfying samples of new forms until today.

9) In modern life, product is considered as an object of consumption whereas in postmodern age consumption itself is considered as a production. We can call it as a type of reality.

10) Focusing against the object, rupturing the object from its own structure and living with its image, generating simulacr objects at an advanced level and create the existence of a new show society; and it distinguished the reality between form and content in art. With this reality, it changed the purpose of art.

11) Baudrillard argues that consumption is always about consuming symbols and indicators, that the new media art has no string of meaning, that the meaning is generated by indicators and symbols. **With media and advertisement sector, reality has clearly changed the purpose of art.**

12) In digital art, product has various forms in production and there is an interaction with individual instead of artist.

13) Digital art increases the marketing power due to its interactive characteristics.

14) Digital art decreases the costs when compared with traditional methods.

15) Digital art can be updated at any time and it can always be accessed.

4. Conclusion

"The sensual and mental parts of experiencing the art is about the reaction an art work may cause on us. If an art work cannot cause any curiosity or cannot attract the audience in a sensual way, then it will not be possible to spend time on it. We can also establish a spiritual connection with the art work (this will be an inspiring message without any intellectual or sensual level). In a simple way, art touches the soul of individual. When all of these elements come together, art experience can be transformed into a deeply mobilizing experience." (Wands, 2006: 10-11)

Digital art determines and develops its own way of expression about the future of digital art or contemporary art. The aim and examined piece of digital art is object and as it approaches to zero, the theories and meanings bound to it approach to infinite. Therefore, art is transformed into the object of theoretical consciousness. Baudrillard mentions about an understanding of art continuing as long as it loses itself and its object.

The truth about digital art being a type of art is like a Sisyphos myth for those who produce it. The thing that was carried to the top was then rolled to the bottom. However, art has always been a phoenix which is born from its ashes. As Kant defines: "Art is a conceptual thing that does not determine any specific concept...." (Kahraman, 1993: 27). Now, art is

not the projection of natural reality, but a new reality derived from the nature of today's fact.

However, the ability to fulfill the function of digital art is possible with the transformation of quantitative explosion to qualitative works. Time will distinguish the quality products among the quantitative ones.

References

- Baudrillard, Jean, Tüketim Toplum, İstanbul Ayrıntı Yayınları. 1997, ss 55
- Baudrillard, Jean, Simularklar ve Simulasyon,: Çeviren: Oğuz Adanır, Ankara, 2003, ss 166
- Bruce Wands, Dijital Çağın Sanatı, Çev.Osman Akınhay, İstanbul, Akbank Yayınevi, 2006, ss.10-11
- Daniken, Von , Hans-Peter and Beatrix Ruf, "Marina Abromovic in Conversation", New Moment 7, Özel Sayı: La Biennale di Venecia, İlkbahar 1997, s.3-4
- Featherstone, Mike, Postmodernizm ve Tüketim Kültürü, Çeviri:Mehmet Küçük,Ayrıntı Yayınları, İstanbul,1996, ss 129
- Gönülal, Özand, "Sanat Sınıflaması ve Toplumsal Çevre Üzerindeki Etkisi", Elektronik Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, Ekim 2004, s.54-62
- İpşiroğlu, Nazan-Mazhar, Sanatta Devrim, İstanbul, Remzi Yayınevi, 1993,ss 101
- Kuspit, Donald; Sanatın Sonu, İstanbul: Metis Yayınları. 2006, ss 105
- Lynton, Norbert; Modern Sanatın Öyküsü, İstanbul : Remzi Kitabevi. 1982,ss 503
- Kahraman, Hasan B.; Sanatsal Gerçeklikler, Olgular ve Öteleri, İstanbul: Yapı Kredi Yayınları. 1993, ss 27-43

LIVE CODING FOR INCORPORATING SELF-EXPRESSION

SELÇUK ARTUT*

Abstract: This paper is exploring live-coding systems as self-expressive tools in utilizing creative activities that are focusing mainly on audio-visual embodiments. Live coding, as a performance tool is a particular activity that incorporates writing code on the fly with the shared experience of the activity being involved. Many creative platforms are equipped with exuberant tools available to the users to process materials. On the contrary live coding platforms are formed as blank canvases like a tabula rasa so that users may decide what to include for their requirements. As a consequence live coding motivates performers to develop authentic methods to convey their expressive ideas.

Key Word: *Live coding, Programming, Creative Coding, Human-Computer Interaction*

1. Introduction

Competency in programming languages are becoming necessities for creative artists to investigate and digest in order to explore alternative tools to articulate various creative expressions of abstractions. The explosion of Digital Revolution in creative studies enabled the users to be equipped with the liberty of undertaking limitless opportunities of making trials and errors. As a consequence of such continuous building processes, the final outcome becomes a unique reflection of the multitude contingencies. According to G.Wang and

* Sabanci University, Visual Arts and Visual Communication Design
[sartut@sabanciuniv.edu]

P.R.Cook (2004) most of the design programs are limited to off-line development and preparation, leaving only the finished program to “go live”.

In this regard from an observer point of view, experience of confronting a final end result becomes divorced from the creative process and therefore an observer becomes a bystander for the particular production. In order to illustrate this proposition with an example when laptop performances are examined, audience becomes separated from witnessing the actuality of the performing process and an absolute attention is demanded from the participants. On the other hand in many laptop performances it is observed that presentation of visuals are additionally joined into the spectacle. However even in this setting participants are considered to be in the status of being passive observers of a performance, starring at a surface locked in one place. From an artist’s point of view these aforementioned detachments are concealing the experience of seeing the artist’s authentic talent in performing the act.

Although commonly used assistive tools and creative applications are becoming more and more affluent in providing diversified components and features, yet users are experiencing the difficulty in orienting themselves within this exponentially becoming sophisticated environments and complicated interfaces. On the other hand in order to handle this situation most of the applications are providing assistive tools to write scripts to enhance the creative interaction between the user and the system. This allows many users to diverge from the given settings and the frameworks provided on the inter(sur)face, and it contributes to the facilitation of improved customized expressions. However even in this setting users are yet constrained within the limits of the given tools and platforms (Collins et al 2003). On the contrary an alternative form of overcoming such limitations is to build personal tools from a scratch. Progressively a decent number of programmers have been concentrating on producing self-expressive tools that are based on elemental structures to enable the users to be independent of given schemes (Collins 2003).

As a consequence Live Coding performances have become an expressive form of creativity occurring in public spaces. The live coders are

able to program things on the fly and apply changes dynamically while the code is still running (Brown et al 2007). In terms of the creativity involved, live coders have backgrounds in several areas including music, programming and performing arts. Therefore coding becomes an instrumental tool to create and express (Wang 2014). Widely observed, during live coding activities performers are creating audio-visual experiences real time and the tools are accessible to the audiences to observe (Brown et al 2009). Alternative to DJ performances, the live coders are using low-level programming environments such as Supercollider, Sonic Pi, Max/MSP, Impromptu etc. running on computer environments and presenting their activity of development live on stage with the use of projection surfaces. Despite the fact that there exists the potential risk of failing to program correctly and crushing the system to perform on stage, the live coders are courageous enough to overcome such difficulties with depending on their experiences and talents. As Collins (2003) states risk taking becomes an important part of the work.

2. Development PLATFORMS

Due to their flexible nature, software developers have engineered live coding development platforms with proliferating features. Although some of the available development platforms have ceased to exist, currently there are over 30 different platforms provided by independent developers, research groups and commercial companies etc. (Retrieved from <http://toplap.org/wiki/ToplapSystems>.)

Live Coding platforms can be categorized under two main groups: Graphical Building and Text-Based Coding. In Graphical Building environments users are given a set of objects to configure visually by combining chords on a patch system. Some of the commonly used Graphical Live Coding platforms are MaxMSP/Jitter, Reaktor, vvvv and Pure Data.

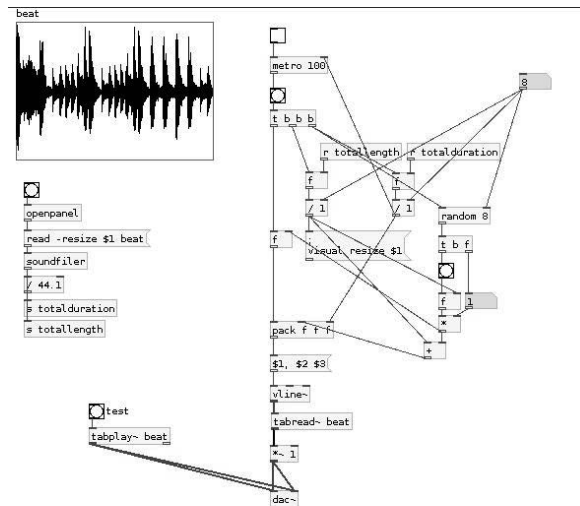


Figure 1. (a) A Pure Data Patch

Combination of chords connected to objects provided within the development platform enables users to avoid holding comprehensive background in advanced programming structures. Live coders are able to work with visual elements to organize their sound and image composing structures. As a consequence graphical building platforms have considerable advantages in terms of their usability and learnability. Since the users are preferably selecting the preexisting objects to combine, it is less likely to make mistakes in generating these objects. Certainly occurrence of incorrect patching combinations between the objects is still prone to ground failures in the system. Moreover graphical building platforms are capable of providing developers with smooth parametric controls triggered by the interactive objects. Subsequently while the developers are employing musical structures with the use of graphical objects, at the same time they are creating interactive interfaces for their performances.

On the contrary text-based coding environments are facilitating their users with more rigid contents empowered by strict wording formats. Typing mistakes in such development environments are not tolerated, so developers need to have competent experience about

the coding standards of a particular platform. In addition to typical way of developing computer programs that are written with lines of codes, several musical concerns such as temporal relations, harmony etc. are additionally included in the production process.

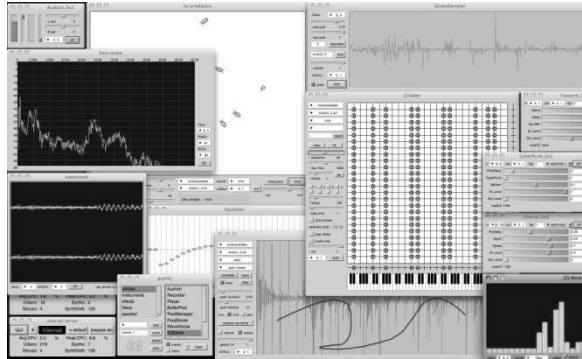


Figure 2. (b) Supercollider Environment

Pros and cons of the two approaches are distinctive in some respects. Comparatively Text-Based Coding environments are more straightforward in understanding their structure, since the given code can be followed from top to down, function call to function, pointer to instance approaches more systematically. However graphical building structures are difficult to follow due to their multi-directional node architecture. Some patches may become incomprehensible because of their disorderly organization. On the other hand a Text-Based Coding system may provide its users with opportunities to consider far generative approaches when compared to a Graphical Building system because of its flexibility in using procedural functions.

3. Programming PARADIGMS

It is widely observed that several different programming approaches are maintained within different algorithmic live coding situations. Platforms such as Supercollider, SonicPi allow the programmers to integrate structural object oriented models with functional programming techniques. In practice the nature of live coding requests faster results while building up a musical idea due to expectancy of compositional structures. Hence hybrid techniques based on functional programming utilizations are providing its users enhanced

skills in building things quicker with relatively small amount of typing. In contrast to structural programming functional programming avoids the use of statements, and uses expressions instead. In that respect in functional programming creating musical gestures becomes analogous to live stage situations for the performing artists.


4. Conclusion

With the extensive use of technological tools provided to creative minds, the users are seeking alternative methods to deliver their ideas in distinct forms. In that respect live coding as a creative approach distinguishes itself as a dialectic system based on human intelligence and computer programming. From an experience point of view being exposed to a live coding session constitutes a welcoming aura around the deployment of artistic skills.

* Dr. Selçuk Artut is Professor of Visual Arts and Visual Communication Design at Sabanci University, Istanbul. His research is mainly focused on contemporary media practices on human technology interactions. Artut is the author of *Datareality* (Atropos, 2013).

References

- [1] Wang, G., & Cook, P. R. (2004, June). On-the-fly programming: using code as an expressive musical instrument. In Proceedings of the 2004 conference on New interfaces for musical expression (pp. 138-143). National University of Singapore.
- [2] Collins, N., McLean, A., Rohrhuber, J., & Ward, A. (2003). Live coding in laptop performance. *Organised sound*, 8(03), 321-330. ISO 690
- [3] Collins, N. (2003). Generative music and laptop performance. *Contemporary Music Review*, 22(4), 67-79.
- [4] Brown, A. R., & Sorensen, A. C. (2007). aa-cell in practice: An approach to musical live coding. In Proceedings of the International Computer Music Conference (pp. 292-299). International Computer Music Association.
- [5] Brown, A. R., & Sorensen, A. (2009). Interacting with generative music through live coding. *Contemporary Music Review*, 28(1), 17-29.



SOCIAL IMPACT AS THE RESULT FROM THE URBAN OVERFLOWED GROWTH IN SKOPJE, MACEDONIA



ALEKSANDAR ANDOVSKI *



Abstract: The unlimited spreading growth of constructed space is not only a tendency but a standard politics of the local and main authorities in Macedonia. In fact, each municipality obtains a significant financial amount for its year budget, collecting the taxes from each new constructed building. Therefore, the main goal of this paper is to encourage the creators of the urban development to establish a completely new pattern for the future development of the cities in the country. In fact, this new pattern is the basic approach for this proposal project within short term plan and long term plan with activities applicable for the communities in order to achieve a human and attractive public open space. Because only with new focus for the future development of the public space and the built space can really change the current layout of Macedonian cities.

Key Word: *Urban growth, social impact, Macedonia, Skopje*



1. Introduction

In the last ten years, the citizens of Skopje are witnesses of a violent increment of constructed space in the main public poles of the city. This spreading growth of urban space considers not only the public buildings, but also the residential areas of the city as well. Possible main cause of this tendency which lasts more than 20 years in Macedonia is the way of financing of all state municipalities. In fact, each municipality obtains a significant financial amount for its year

* International Balkan University



budget, collecting the taxes of each new constructed building. This politic is encouraged not only by the official government, but also by the construction companies. Therefore, there is a lack of long-term planning process in the master plans to avoid this issue. Unfortunately, the urban plans are supported and issued by the communities adapting only the short-term needs of the insatiable construction investors “helping” the speeding tsunami of overflowed urbanization. The biggest problem is that the final users of the planned urban space, the citizens of Skopje, are completely ignored regarding their needs for the future built space. In fact, with the recent urban plans, it is obvious that the citizens are even in jeopardy by those who has the major task to provide better human living conditions, to secure the citizen property and to obtain a growth of the price of its properties.

2. Current issues

Infrastructure issues and inappropriate current public transport in Skopje

Public transport in Skopje is represented only with the bus network, covering most of the territory of the capital. The question is how efficient is this transportation system, knowing the fact that bus lines are serving with bus stops only in the frequent traffic streets and not in the deeper residential quarters itself. That means that the average walking distance from the citizen’s apartment till the closest bus stop is 10-15 minutes. In some dwelling areas, there is no bus stop in the surrounding areas or the walking distance to the closest bus station is 30 minutes and more¹. We will not discuss the accuracy of the time schedule and the frequencies of the buses lines in Skopje because it will make this judgment even more discouraging.

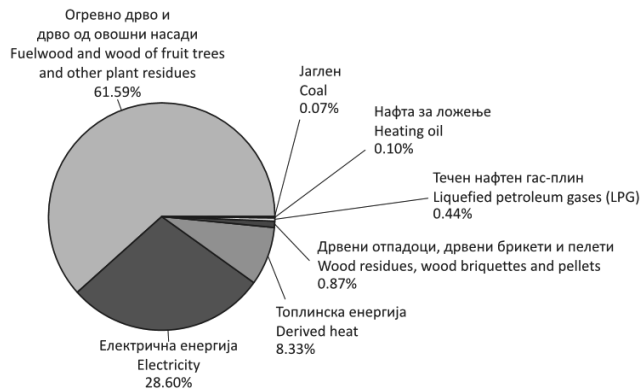
The other problem is the **ring road of Skopje**. In fact, the only function of this surrounding highway is to avoid entering in the capital, so there is only the transit purpose of this road and it is not made for the people of Skopje. Because the main function for the ring roads is not only to surround the city for the vehicles coming from another Macedonian city, but to provide an important optional express-town route for the citizens itself. In Skopje, this express road is unfortunately not

¹ <http://www.jsp.com.mk/VozenRed.aspx>

an option due to a distant location of the ring road (approximately 10 km from the closest main boulevard). This big distance is not helping the citizens to use this ring road as an express highway when someone wants to avoid the traffic jam going from one to another end of the town.

Bigger pollution, smaller natural aeration and diminishing the green areas!

In Skopje (not in the suburbs of the town), there are no new factories built in the last 25 years, and therefore we cannot discuss for some changes of the pollution sources. The bigger problem regarding the polluted air is the winter season, because almost one third of the households in the capital use wood stoves heating system².



JSHS|633

Figure 1: Share of the number of households in the total number of households by primary energy commodity used for heating

The only radical change in the last 6 years, related with the air pollution in Macedonian capital is the sudden import of second hand (old) vehicles due to a significant reducing of customs taxes related with the new Customs law in 13 March 2010 year³. Only in one year, from 2009 till 2010, the result from this new law was an impact from 17

² http://www.stat.gov.mk/PrikaziPoslednaPublikacija_en.aspx?id=74

³ <http://customs.gov.mk/DesktopDefault.aspx?tabindex=0&tabid=355>

times more cars in town⁴. But, the imported cars are approximately 15-20 old! And the eco standards are enormously lower than an average new car or 5 years old car⁵.

Overflowing of new buildings in Skopje, no matter the content of the premises, eliminates the free and natural aeration of the city⁶. There are no urban politics in the local and the main authorities for guarding and protecting the air of the city from the pollution sources. There is absence of a politics against the import of old cars, but also there is a lack of awareness of well organized public space build in order to allow the free and natural aeration of the city. This is directly related with the all urban plans which are only the administrative tool of the potential investors in order to obtain an easy building permit. The authorities unfortunately are not interested for the quality of human space in general, but the only interest is the financial sustainability of the municipalities. More building permits, means more incomes from the communal taxes. More incomes from the communal taxes, means more money for the administration salaries and charges. The only focus of the municipality is how to obtain more building plots and new constructed buildings no matter the consequences of the new overflowed space.

Absence of new poles of public activities

The only public pole in Skopje is the center of the capital: the semi open public space "GTC" –City Trade Center, the old bazaar, main square Macedonia, the pedestrian street "Macedonia" and the quay of Vardar. As a territory, it covers a very small amount of surface, comparing with the totality of entire town. There is a huge absence of other public open and built spaces in the rest of the city which results with an enormous concentration of people only in the center of Skopje. A lack of parking spaces, concentrated pollution in the center,

⁴ <http://opendata.mvr.gov.mk/>

⁵ <http://faktor.mk/2014/11/11/shto-donese-uvozot-koi-vozila-se-najzastapeni-na-makedonskiot-pazar/>

⁶ Shinsuke Kato, Kyosuke Hiyama, *Ventilating Cities, (Air-flow Criteria for Healthy and Comfortable Urban Living)* Springer Dordrecht Heidelberg London New York, 2012, p. 5

traffic jams at the main boulevards are the result of this hyper concentrated and only public pole in the capital.

Also, there are no public spaces outside of Skopje perimeter as we have in every modern European city. The existence of Commercial areas, Sports and recreation areas outside of the city is not even an idea of the creators of the urban development politics. There is an absence of the idea for decentralization of Skopje in general.

Increasing the parking built space and diminishing the pedestrian zones

The town authorities in Skopje only react with the short term activities to patch up the existing problems. Maybe this is a result of the mentality of the Macedonian people because even in the Macedonian dictionary there is only the word “reacting” („реагира“), and the word “acting” („агира“) is not yet created.

One of the biggest challenges represents the parking issue in town. In one of the previous chapters related with the pollution of Skopje in this text, we elaborated the issue of the increasing number of the vehicles in the last five years. To resolve this, the city authorities reacted in the same manner as usual: “This bigger amount of cars needs a bigger amount of parking spots!” Before 2009, there weren’t any car park building. In 2009 was erected the first building that serves as a multilevel garage building in the Municipality of Center and in Skopje. Currently, in Skopje there are seven multilevel garage buildings covering more than 3000 parking spots. There is also a tendency of elevating upper levels above the current ground parking areas like in Kapistec and Novo Lisice just in order to satisfy the lack of parking spots.

“Park and ride”, is only an idea of few urbanists, but not for the authorities.

Absence of awareness and knowledge of the importance and the wealth of well organized human, green public space

In fact, there is no one who could be against more green space in the city, or against well organized public space. The thing is that those things are not at the top of the list of the priorities of the citizens itself. At least, until nowadays there is not such a great initiative or a

wave of radical change in the hierarchy of priority of needs. A possible reason for this could be the permanent race for a profit and the low average of life conditions in Skopje and Macedonia in general. According to the data, the at-risk-of-poverty rate in the Republic of Macedonia in 2014 was 22.1%⁷. This high percentage of poverty could represent the biggest concern of a citizen of Skopje. And because of it, unfortunately the primary life conditions related to the environment such as air, water or food quality are secondary in the priority list for the average people in Macedonian capital.

Spontaneous migration process

Before we enter in summery conclusion regarding the town's problems, we must focus on maybe the biggest issue. And that is the spontaneous migration process which is going on in recent years. This migration has individual character, and it is mostly related with searching for better human conditions in general or other political, social or existential motifs.

In fact these issues of escaping from the polluted city, or moving to other much more organized city in any way, are the consequences from the previous topics of this text. Some people settle in the surroundings of Skopje, in the suburbs of the neighboring villages searching for cleaner air, for calm living conditions no matter the connection with the city.

Other people moves to smaller cities in Macedonia or they go to another country, or different continent. Anyway, those kinds of situations do not resolve the current urban issues of Skopje.

3. Diagnostics

Unfortunately, the previous issues of this text which illustrates the current urban image of Skopje are not the only ones. If we go deeper, let's say if we analyze the mentality and the character of Macedonians, the passiveness, exaggerated tolerance, absence of awareness for maintenance of public goods etc. we will just give more specified definition for this image of Macedonian capital.

⁷ State Statistical Office, R. Macedonia, Poverty Line, No: 4.1.15.100, Skopje, 2015

In general, we could extract several distinctive symptoms from the previous chapter:

Unsatisfied citizens of Skopje from its town in general

Overflowed city center with cars and new buildings

Threatened future for the existing citizen's properties caused from overflowed construction tendency

Permanent growth of the air pollution

Lack of open air activities (sport and recreation, open air culture events)

4. Possible therapy

“Transportation engineering and transportation planning are two sides of the same coin aiming at the design of an efficient infrastructure and service to meet our needs for accessibility and mobility. Many well-designed transport systems that meet these needs are based on good understanding of human behavior. For example, in ergonomics — the science for designing tools for humans — models of action–reaction are used to make sure that machines (e.g., cars) are designed to match human characteristics. In a similar way, when we plan cities and the services provided to their inhabitants, understanding human behavior is a key ingredient that drives most decisions in planning and operation.”

JSHS|637

Konstadinos G. Goulias

In order to achieve the long-term solutions for urban issues of Skopje, in the continuation of this text, there will be some possible answers and guide lines for the future development of the city.

New public transport alternatives-metro, tramway and new eco-public bus transport system with bigger quality of covering network serving the unreachable part of the city.

In order to achieve the most appropriate solution for alternative city transport options, we should study the contemporary European cities with similar and even with five times smaller number of citizens. (Like Lausanne in Switzerland). In those cities, the Bus transport serves only to upgrade the underground train lines, the tramway or

other major public transportation system. The point is that the public transport should serve people in any part of the city, and to provide a walking distance of 5 minutes maximum from home to the first transportation station. Public buildings are always easier to connect with any type of public transport due to the bigger street profile which surrounds those kinds of buildings. On the other hand, residential areas have an infrastructure network with a smaller range of street profile which is more complicated to serve it by the public transport. That means that the number of busses will be the same, only the purpose of city bus transport will be different in the future. The major – Metro transport spine should be introduced in Skopje in order to achieve the better connections, with more accurate and more human character, and definitely closer to the homes of the citizens. Only with this combination, with different transportation units, the cars will not be the major option to go from one to another point of the city. Automatically, the air will be much cleaner, the space previously dedicated for car network, in the future could be a part of new eco transport system or just part of a pedestrian area of the city.

In fact, introducing the new **metro** line is a reasonable and a long-term solution for the basic public transport in Skopje. Due to an elongated shape of the city, following the curves of the river Vardar, this only one line will be planned to take over the current major bus lines (Bus line numbers like: 5,2,22 etc.) which currently crosses the main spots through the Macedonian capital.

The second, ground rail transportation units-a **tramway** will be necessary as well in order to serve the northern and the southern part of the city along the major boulevards.

Then, the third transportation option will be presented with the **new bus lines**, which will connect the parts of city characterized with significant density and the metro and tramway stations. Also, new types of eco-friendly buses with gas engines, instead of the current diesel or petrol engines will significantly purify the current polluted air in the capital.

These changes will help to improve radically the public transport in Skopje, because with this three transport options, in the future the

citizens will be much more willing to use the public transport. Also, the use of cars will be not the best way to go somewhere in town.

The transport issue must be resolved first, before the other suggestions for the embellishment of the city life, because the rest of the measures are directly related with a good infrastructure network in town.

Introducing “Park and Ride” should significantly reduce the rash hours and traffic jams in Skopje

In general, introducing new methods of resolving transport issues in Macedonia is a giant challenge because the most references for developed towns are the bigger surrounding cities around Macedonia (Belgrade, Sofia or Thessaloniki). Park and Ride exists for decades in modern western civilizations in order to avoid the traffic jams in the center of bigger towns and also to provide anyone a dissident possibility to use the public transport. [fig. 2] Speaking about Park & Ride, there is always important to define its roll. In fact, this is a system which provides an option for the common citizen to leave his car for a couple of hours or even for a whole day on a secure open parking space for a reasonable price including free all day ticket for the public transport! The locations of those parking spaces are usually situated in the bordering areas of the town's center or in the suburbs. Imagine if someone is coming from western suburbs, and instead to park his car in the parking buildings in the center of Skopje, to leave his car somewhere in Karposh and then to continue his way by public transport options. In that case, there will be much more clear air in Skopje, much less traffic jams in the boulevard's intersections, no more problems to find a free parking place in the center areas, and the pedestrian zone could be much bigger in the center if all the open parking spaces are transformed in open public spaces.



Figure 2: Park + Ride Terminal Hoenheim-Nord (Strasbourg) from Zaha Hadid

First-cleaner air, than improvement and promotion of bike transport!

“As we look to a future with increasing urbanization, protecting the population from air pollution exposure needs to be a principal consideration in the design of the built environment.”⁸

Andrew L. Dannenberg

The bike, as an important option of individual transport in the city, is not unknown to the people of Skopje. During the last century, the bike was well known and used very frequently particularly due to a size of Skopje in the first half of the twentieth century when the area was literally several times smaller than the current territory of the town. Naturally, due to the price of a motor car and the much smaller size of 20th century’s Skopje, the bicycle was the major individual way

⁸ Andrew L. Dannenberg, Howard Frumkin, and Richard J. Jackson, *Making healthy places : designing and building for health, well-being, and sustainability*, ISLAND PRESS, Washington, DC, 2011, pg.65

of transport through the city. Currently, there are bike lanes in the city designed as joined paths to the boulevard axis. And, what considers the rest of the space previewed for the bicycle transport the bikers are using the car's lanes for that purpose. Already, nowadays the frequency of the car is increasing every day (it was mentioned in the last chapter), and using the same paths together with the vehicles represents an enormous life risk. The second challenge is off course the health issue using the bike in polluted Skopje. The risk of lung disease is much higher if the human's heart works with a bigger pulse in the polluted environment. That means that the open air sport's activities in general, which are essentials for the proper human health, are in danger regarding the level of air pollution as we have in Skopje.



JSHS|641

Figure 3: Street "Macedonia" during the sixties of the last century and the image of the public transport

Government subvention for eco heating systems in every part of the city

It is not unknown this type of financial participation of Macedonian government for some important public issues (like subvention for the low tariff air companies in Macedonia, agriculture subventions etc).

In order to improve the air quality on Skopje, and in the same time to reduce the illegal wood cutting problem, the government should propose a financial support for eco central public heating system. That means that the heating supply company would have a significant amount of financial subvention from the state and the citizens will have symbolic monthly bills for the heating. It will be easy to persuade the citizens to throw their old wood stoves and to embrace the central heating system only if the price of city central heating system is much lower than the price of a fuel wood. If this proposition becomes a reality, that means that in the future, during the heating seasons, the air quality not only in Skopje, but in all cities in Macedonia will be much cleaner and it will stop the uncontrolled and illegal cut of Macedonian woods.

It is also important, to establish a new pipe network to reach every part of the city with this central heating system, because currently in Skopje, barely one third of households use the public central heating. The percentage of households that use fuel wood is 28% which give us a clear picture of the constant source of the pollution during the heating seasons. The rest of the citizens use electricity for heating their dwellings which is the most expensive solution.

Other possible government subvention should be in the installation of gas supply for the old and new petrol vehicles. Knowing the fact that the air pollution in Skopje is directly related with the increasing of used cars in the last decade, than introducing the eco car engines could purify radically the current air of the capital.



Figure 4: Street “Macedonia”, nowadays appearance – now one of the few pedestrian zones in town

Decentralization in many levels and creation of new poles of public centers

JSHS|643

The creation of new public poles in town is one of the most important measures in order to achieve the decentralization of the town. This considers making more coherent and more active the existing small centers and local public centers outside of the center of Skopje.

Every current open or closed public space in town represents a possible solution for defocusing the infrastructural flow in the capital of Macedonia. There is a way of reusing those current public spaces, if the current needs of the population are detected properly by the authorities. The appropriate urban interventions for those spaces including the detected needs from the citizens will give a new impetus in the current local centers and will make them more frequent city destinations.

It should be determined possible new local public centers in the unconstructed part of the city quarters. That means deep scanning and searching for the appropriate location for the new future centers inside the existing and future residential areas around the center of Skopje.

The other important thing is to create a new Commercial areas and sport and recreation centers outside of the city perimeter.

Permanent observation of citizen's needs and their direct involvement in the future creation of a new and "pedestrian friendly" town

The social impact caused by the overflowing of urban development in Skopje, is perhaps the most important and most painful issue. Perhaps, even bigger issue is how to inform the citizens what should be their priority when they choose where to live and how to avoid to live in an overpopulated parts of Skopje. Unfortunately, the new residential areas are not planned to be built in empty and unconstructed spaces, but those new dwelling zones are just filling some current green areas. Also, which is very often in Skopje is demolishing a group of few ground level houses, and in their place urbanists envisaged six floors or nine floors residential building. And that is how the density of some dwelling area becomes even ten times bigger "thanks" to this tendency. The question which is imposing now is "How can this instantly and super populated dwelling zone could be well organized and livable in any way?" The parking issue, absence of proper daylight, inappropriate street profile, absence of green and recreations areas, absence of dissent views from the apartments etc are just one the main disadvantages in this overflowed residential zones. The final result is a complete defeat for the users of this city quarters. Unfortunately, people in Skopje realize those problems many years after living in those zones. So it becomes inevitable to stop the insatiable investors, or to reconsider the community politics to construct in any way (more square meters-brings more money for the municipality) or to encourage the unaware citizens to decide not to live in such an inappropriate and unlivable conditions.

The other problem is that when some discontents appear among the people caused by for instance, a new proposal of a Detail Urban Plan (DUP) within a new building plot planned to be on the place of a current park, this people could react at the municipality, where this DUP is announced in public. This announcement lasts approximately one month and if there are some complains or critics about this DUP, the people could react but if all the representatives in the city hall are approving this DUP, there is nothing that could be done.

But the main problem is that there is an absence of continual observation of human needs and citizen's desires regarding the public space in the city of Skopje in general. Because if we monitor in permanence the wills of the people regarding the quality of human life in the public space or in the city in general, the basic directions of the urban development could be easily applied in the future urban plans. Or at least, the future creators of the city's development politics could be aware of the real needs of the citizens.

Introduction of independent Institution which will guide the municipalities and the city regarding the future development and new urban plans of Skopje

Introducing an independent institution which will give the main directions for the urban development of Skopje could be a possible cure of this painful issue. Multilevel structure of urbanists, architects, and other related professionals will be engaged in order to provide a sustainable environment of the city. That institution should make a constant scanning of the current needs of the citizens. At the end of those scanning, a list of precise citizen's demands should be provided that will become a program list for the possible future investors and the creators of the city planning. Those kinds of institutions should always include the "voice" from the citizens regarding the future and the existing politics of the urban development.

JSHS|645

It will be very important for those institutions to keep their independence from the political parties, because it will not be possible to be functional and operational. Also, when the urban plans will be approved by the municipality parliaments, then the final judgment will be given by those independent institutions. In other words, they will give the final approval of the urban plans.

Uprising the citizen's level of awareness for better human environment, should not be less important role of this institution. Also, this uprising level of awareness should be one of the main duties of the local and central authorities in order to provide a dissent human life in a dissent living space.

5. Conclusion

The issues like: pollution, overflowed constructed space, city parking systems, green areas, transport etc. are universal urban topics for each town.

But, every different city has a different context. That means that we can not apply some urban solutions and methods for embellishment of the public space from some other city using their experiences from urbanists and architects. Each town has some parameters which cannot be comparable with any other city. For example, Macedonia or any country in general, has: different climate and geographic parameters, specific mentality of citizens, specific cultural and historical background, and unique duration of its existence as an independent state. All of these aspects generate a unique urban image. And that is why the prepositions for the future development of the urban progress of Skopje, in this text are related only to the capital of Macedonia.

I believe that there are other even better solutions for the current urban problems of Skopje, and I also strongly believe that if we have more people who think about these crucial issues, there will be more opportunities, more applicable options in order to achieve a dissent urban development of the capital of Macedonia.

References

- Konstadinos G. Goulias, *Transportation systems planning : methods and applications*, CRC Press LLC , Boca Raton, 2003
- Shinsuke Kato, Kyosuke Hiyama, *Ventilating Cities, (Air-flow Criteria for Healthy and Comfortable Urban Living)* Springer Dordrecht Heidelberg London New York, 2012
- Jan Gehl, *LIFE BETWEEN BUILDINGS Using Public Space*, ISLAND PRESS, 2011
- Lawrence A. Herzog, *Return to the center : culture, public space, and city building in a global era*, University of Texas Press, Austin, 2006
- White, Peter, *Public transport : its planning, management and operation*, Routledge, Abingdon, Oxon, 2009
- Lynch Kevin, *The image of the city*, MIT Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts and London, 1960
- Andrew L. Dannenberg, Howard Frumkin, and Richard J. Jackson, *Making healthy places : designing and building for health, well-being, and sustainability*, ISLAND PRESS, Washington, DC, 2011

M.A.P. TAYLOR and P.W. NEWTON, URBAN DESIGN AND REVITALIZATION -- AN AUSTRALIAN PERSPECTIVE, Elsevier Science Publishers B.V., Amsterdam, 1985

Mark Clapson, Suburban Century Social Change and Urban Growth in England and the United States, Berg, Oxford, 2003

Slavicek, Louise Chipley, New York City's Central Park, Chelsea House, New York, 2009


State Statistical Office, R. Macedonia, Poverty Line, No: 4.1.15.100, Skopje, 2015

http://www.stat.gov.mk/PrikaziPoslednaPublikacija_en.aspx?id=74


<http://faktor.mk/2014/11/11/shto-donese-uvozt-koi-vozila-se-najzastapeni-na-makedonskiot-pazar/>

<http://customs.gov.mk/DesktopDefault.aspx?tabindex=0&tabid=355>


<http://opendata.mvr.gov.mk/>



MANAGEMENT OF TOURISM AND HISTORY OF VISUAL ARTS




DZEMIL BEKTOVIĆ *
SAMIR LJAJIĆ *



Abstract: At the time of the global economy, which is often associated with hybrid approaches and combinations of business it is very important to examine all the approaches and innovations in the development of tourist facilities managing bodies and fields of action. During the last two decades has been noticed an increasing segmentation of the tourism market. In addition to tourists who are facing the most part to the enjoyment of the tourist trips, a new group of tourists, which travels to something new discovered and learned. The aim of this paper is to analyze all significant share of world tourist traffic so-called selective forms of tourism, which represent the tourist movement aims to inform of Specific characteristics of certain areas. In this context, a special role is given to unconventional forms of tourism that are related to education, professional and touristic, related to artistic practices and cultural monuments.

Key Word: *History of Visual art, tourism, management, cultural tourism*



1. Introduction

Very little and never fully explored the relation of art and tourism, now tourism as modern science, which also includes multi-functional connections in their profiling. At the time of the global economy, which is often associated with hybrid approaches and combinations of business it is very important to examine all the approaches and innovations in the development of tourist facilities managing bodies

* [dzemilb@yahoo.com]

* [ljajics@gmail.com]

and fields of action. Tourism, which becomes access to everyone and not elitist-oriented opens the possibility of getting to know the cultural treasures of different states and peoples. Mobility and economy in the trip opens the possibility of rapid transport of visits to a larger complement of tourist attractions.

In the field of management of tourist services, modern technology facilitated the choice of destination to potential tourists. In addition to traditional forms of information - tourist guides, catalogs, post-cards, presentation of offers on the international and national tourism fairs, as well as new means of promoting touristic offer- web sites appeared. The tourism industry is engaged in selling experience. Experiential value of the tourism product or service is a dominant factor influencing the decision-making by consumers. Tourists looking for emotional experiences and memories from the trip were their most important characteristics. With that in mind, we can say that the artistic attractions are main generators of tourism experiences and memories. Such experiences can be obtained through a visit to the attractive historical location of art that can be presented in two ways:

1. Promotion of historical and artistic heritage and treasures (religious monuments, ancient architecture, etc.)
2. Promotion of contemporary art production, such as:
 - a) Art festivals, art colonies, film festivals, performances;
 - b) Visiting of contemporary art installations, sculpture and architecture (e.g. Skopje 2014, Eskisehir).

Culture and tourism have a mutually beneficial relationship which can strengthen the attractiveness and competitiveness of regions and countries. Culture is increasingly an important element of the tourism product, which also creates distinctiveness in a crowded global marketplace. At the same time, tourism provides an important means of enhancing culture and creating income which can support and strengthen cultural heritage, cultural production and creativity. Creating a strong relationship between tourism and culture can there-

fore help destinations to become more attractive and competitive as locations to live, visit, work and invest in¹.

Tourism has assumed a vital role in the development of destinations around the world. In most cases, culture is a major asset for tourism development as well as one of the major beneficiaries of this development. Culture is a major factor in the attractiveness of most destinations, not only in terms of tourism, but also in attracting residents and inward investment. The growing relationship between tourism and culture, and the way in which they have together become major drivers of regional attractiveness and competitiveness, will be examined in this paper.

This process can be successfully terminated only if the inventive management solves two ways simultaneously and right now real key question is: why we should study relationship between arts and tourism and how these relationships are managed? Another topic connected with the abovementioned dilemma is whether we living in a time where the invasion of the visual image dominates and in this way we are sending information and knowledge at the same time?

JSHS|651

2. Definition and availability of cultural monuments and works of art

The diversity of approaches to the relationship between tourism and culture underlines the problems of definition which exist in this field. Because culture touches every aspect of human life, it can be argued that everything is cultural. According to this view, all tourism might be considered as “cultural tourism”, because “all movements of persons...satisfy the human need for diversity, tending to raise the cultural level of the individual and giving rise to new knowledge, experience and encounters” (UNWTO 1985). This broad approach is not very useful because it does not allow us to identify those forms of culture which are particularly important for tourism, and vice versa. Richards (1996) suggested that early approaches to the relationship between tourism and culture tended to be based on the “sites and monuments” approach, where the cultural attractions of a country or

¹ OECD, The Impact of Culture on Tourism, 2008

region were basically seen as the physical cultural sites which were important for tourism. This approach informed the compilation of the Cultural Tourism Inventory for Europe in the 1980s, for example. Gradually, however, a broader view of culture in tourism emerged (Box 2.2), which included the performing arts (Hughes, 2000), crafts (Richards, 1999), cultural events, architecture and design, and more recently, creative activities (Richards and Wilson, 2006) and intangible heritage (UNESCO).

During most of the 20th century, tourism and culture were viewed as largely separate aspects of destinations. Cultural resources were seen as part of the cultural heritage of destinations, largely related to the education of the local population and the underpinning of local or national cultural identities. Tourism, on the other hand, was largely viewed as a leisure-related activity separate from everyday life and the culture of the local population. This gradually changed towards the end of the century, as the role of cultural assets in attracting tourists and distinguishing destinations from one another became more obvious. In particular, from the 1980s onwards “cultural tourism” became viewed as a major source of economic development for many destinations.

As a result, culture has been increasingly employed as an aspect of the tourism product and destination imaging strategies, and tourism has been integrated into cultural development strategies as a means of supporting cultural heritage and cultural production. This synergy between tourism and culture is seen as one of the most important reasons for encouraging a more direct relationship between these two elements. This relationship is even more significant, given the growing importance of both tourism and culture for economies around the globe. The OECD estimates that international tourism accounts for approximately 30% of global service exports in 2006 (OECD 2008). Similarly, culture and creativity are increasingly being recognized as important economic drivers. An OECD study on the economic importance of culture indicated that in several major economies, the value of the cultural industries was between 3% and 6% of the total economy.

Regional attractiveness and competitiveness are directly linked. Countries and regions increasingly have to compete to attract residents, visitors and inward investment. Kotler, Haider and Rein (1993:14) have suggested that: "Every place - community, city, state, region, or nation - should ask itself why anyone wants to live, relocate, visit, invest, or start or expand a business there. What does this place have that people need or should want? What competitive advantages does this place offer that others do not?" What different destinations have to offer depends not just on economic factors, e.g. standards of living or local factors such as accessibility, but also on intangible factors such as the "atmosphere" of a place or its general quality of life? In analyzing attractiveness, many studies have borrowed from the work of Porter (1990) on competitiveness. Porter's "diamond" features the main "drivers" of competitiveness: factor conditions, demand conditions, related and supporting industries, and firm strategy, structure, and rivalry. For tourism, the factor conditions have traditionally been most important for destination attractiveness, both in terms of "inherited factors" (natural resources such as beaches, climate, etc.) and "created factors" (such as cultural attractions, events, etc.). But increasingly, destinations have to mobilize all their factor conditions more effectively through industry restructuring, product innovation and marketing in order to compete.

Culture per se is rarely included in measurements of regional competitiveness (PWC 2005), partly because it is difficult to measure and partly because it is not seen as central to location decisions. Wikhal (2002:1) argues: "The capacity to attract people by offering a good quality of life is of crucial importance for regional competitiveness. In studying regional attractiveness, it is important not only to consider what makes people move to a certain region but also what makes people want to stay."

Similarly, Dwyer and Kim (2003) identify the factors that determine competitiveness as available resources (natural resources, cultural assets and heritage items), created resources (tourism infrastructure, the activities on offer, etc.), supporting factors (infrastructure in general, the quality of service, access to the destination, etc.) and destination management factors. They emphasize the role of assets which are inherited or created and the way in which these assets are organ-

ized and deployed in the market. Essentially, it seems, comparative advantage for destinations is derived largely from endowed resources (under which Dwyer and Kim include cultural heritage) while competitive advantage relies more on resource deployment (i.e. management and marketing of the destination). As the OECD report on rural areas (2003) notes: "In some cases, the most intangible aspects (entrepreneurship, cultural identity, participation, and partnerships) are the most important in making the difference. It is difficult to transform stocks into flows: i.e. valorize natural and man-made assets, strengthen the economic environment, invest in human resources, and improve institutional capacity." Therefore, a destination may have a certain attractiveness based on its inherited assets. Its ability, however, to compete with areas to attract tourists or investment may also vitally depend on its ability to transform the basic inherited factors into created assets with a higher symbolic or sign value which may then be translated into higher market values.

3. Art forms used to create history and identity. Quickly create history / case "Skopje 2014"

Macedonian government launched a massive reconstruction (urban, architectural and monumental) through the project Skopje 2014 by which has completely altered the physiognomy and visual appearance of the City. The project, officially announced in 2010, consists mainly of the construction of museums and government buildings, as well as the erection of monuments and sculptures depicting historical figures from the region of Macedonia. At the beginning around 20 buildings and over 40 monuments were planned as part of the project, but up to now we have more than 250 monuments constructed under way.

Main question regarding to "Project Skopje 2014" was what impact is Skopje's postmodern transformation having on its citizens and economy?

This project has caused numerous local and international reactions, because it is changing the historically determined value of identity, but also raises the question of the economic feasibility of the project and the quality of artistic molding.

Supporters say it will transform the image of a city dominated by decades of so-called 'pessimistic' Socialist architecture and neglect. They believe it has the potential to restore a missing sense of national pride and create a more metropolitan atmosphere. On the other hand, some architects and artists are unhappy with the aesthetics of the project and would have preferred a more contemporary approach.

The project is known as Skopje 2014 - but for inspiration it looks to a distant epoch. As Macedonia scrambled around for identity in the wake of Yugoslavia's disintegration, a group of historians, architects and politicians decided that the country should remind itself - and the world - of a proud past.

Skopje is using the time-honored tactic of eye-catching architecture - but in a much more radical way than other European cities which have gone down that road. For example, in Spain, Bilbao used the Frank Gehry-designed Guggenheim Museum to attract tourism and investment. When it opened in 1997, the building's radical, abstract curves completely changed the city's profile. Meanwhile, Liverpool's status as European Capital of Culture in 2008 allowed it to highlight its many beautiful neoclassical buildings. Skopje's strategy is a combination of the two approaches - taken to the extreme.

JSHS|655

The project, instigated by Government of Macedonia, officially started six years ago, and has proceeded at breath-taking speed. In April last year, the government said it had spent 200m euros (\$264m; £159m) on the work - the original estimate was 80m euros (\$106m; £64m) and critics have suggested the true cost could be anything up to a billion euros (\$1.3bn; £795m).

The banks of the Vardar River, which runs through the city centre, now boast new museums, government buildings and a reconstructed National Theatre. All of them have been built in a style its proponents label either neoclassical or baroque, in striking contrast to the modernist character of most of Skopje. But in raising the profile of the city, Skopje 2014 has achieved the desired effect. The project's prime benefit, though, is that it will increase tourism and related economic development in the city. First of all, the project is providing jump in tourist arrivals as proof of its success. Government statistics suggest

that overseas tourist arrivals tripled over the decade from 2002 to 2012. And the changes have been locally-driven.

Despite its rich history and cultural heritage, Macedonia bottoms the list of countries in the region, with tourism incomes amounting to 3% share of the total GDP in 2012. Therefore Government of Macedonia implements a number of projects and promotional campaigns in a bid to define country's tourism niche. The 2012 tourist arrivals growth has been higher compared to the European averages.

4. Post-modernist understanding of art: eclecticism and appropriation in the form of replicas

At the very beginning is very important to emphasize that the connection between economic and artistic performance primarily depends on the time in which we live. With respect to the post-modern context of contemporary society many criteria of modernism are not more valid, but now come into play rules are almost universally valid for all areas of social life. Although it is very difficult to define post-modernism, and it is not the subject of this scientific work, it can be clearly recognize its contours and main characteristics of the new era.

Perhaps the key word in postmodernism is eclecticism, which includes projected selection of everything that's available to you regardless of the field of life and social and artistic work. In fact this concept is highway in defining and analyzing notions about the possibilities of active interaction of economics and art that is particularly evident in the case of "project Skopje 2014". Also in this project are represented by two forms of postmodern aesthetics: retro and re-view of grand narratives. Postmodernists and postmodern cultures tend to be particularly fascinated by the styles and fashions of the past; in this case it is a baroque, which will often use completely out of the original context, while Lyotard sees the collapse of narratives that previously justified the status quo as an important aspect of the postmodern condition. Of course, the modernists are questioning traditional concepts such as law, religion, subjectivity and nationality; what seems to distinguish postmodernism is that such questions are no longer specifically associated with the avant-garde intelligence. Narration, in its many forms, is often seen as central to both economy

and tourism research and practice². Different scholars have tended to approach tourism and economy narratives from distinct perspectives, mainly related to travel writing³ and tourist stories / experience⁴, thus contributing to the wide body of knowledge. Existing research has indicated that narratives of economy and tourism are not only an essential ingredient in the construction of personal, collective and place identities but are also important in the process of contemplating, experiencing, remembering and disseminating economy and tourism experiences, both factual and fictional.

Skopje is the capital and largest city of the Republic of Macedonia. It is the country's political, cultural, economic, and academic center and, since it lies on the major north-south trade route between Belgrade and Athens, has a history spanning of thousands of years and contains many antiquities for tourists to enjoy. At one time part of the Ottoman Empire, Skopje has a mixed Muslim and Christian population. In 1963, Skopje was struck by an earthquake that destroyed three quarters of the city, including most of the public buildings in the central city area. Renovation was slow, especially in the city center. The earthquake destroyed antiquities in the historic center of Skopje, the restoration of which continues today. Now, Skopje is being renovated by means of a large-scale project aimed at transforming the city's economic life and making it even more attractive to tourists.

JSHS|657

5. Conclusion

This article has analyzed the relationship between tourism and Old and New Art and how both have used the notion of a place-based "art experience" to attract tourists who seek a more creative cultural experience. Certainly, such tourists can be a lucrative market: in the Balkan region it has been acknowledged that the arts and cultural

² R. Bendix, "Capitalizing on memories past, present, and future: observations on the intertwining of tourism and narration", *Anthropological Theory*, 2002


³ M. B. Campbell, *The Witness and the Other World: Exotic European Travel Writing*, Ithaca and London: Cornell University Press, 1988

⁴ E. M. Bruner, *Culture on Tour: Ethnographies of Travel*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2005

sectors contribute to the public good through economic development, cultural value and engagement and social impact (Cultural Ministers Council Statistics Working Group, 2010). In the Macedonia a large study discussed the economic, social and creative impacts of museums and art galleries, noting that such institutions “*play leading roles in encouraging civic development and economic regeneration within society*” (Travers, 2006, p. 6). Interestingly, though there has been considerable research on the impact of “destination” museums—the “Bilbao Effect” being the most notable case in point there has been little research on the role a privately owned art museum which might play in attracting cultural tourists.

References

- Pierre Bourdieu and Alain Darbel, *The Love of Art: European Art Museums and Their Public*, Polity Press, 1991 (orig. edn *L'Amour de l'art : les musées d'art européen et leur public*, Minuit, 1966).
- Alan Bryman and Emma Bell, *Business Research Methods* (2nd ed.), Oxford University Press, 2007.
- Herbert Castéran and Claire Roederer, “Does authenticity really affect behavior? The case of the Strasbourg Christmas Market”, *Tourism Management*, vol. 36, June 2013.
- François Colbert et al., *Marketing Culture and the Arts* (3rd ed.), Presses HEC, 2007 (1st edn 1994).
- Denise Cole, “Museum marketing as a tool for survival and creativity: the mining museum perspective”, *Museum Management and Curatorship*, vol. 23, n° 2, 2008.
- Gabriella Coslovich, “The collector”, *The Age*, “Arts”, 14 April 2007 [<http://www.theage.com.au/news/arts/the-collector/2007/04/12/1175971260216.html>].
- Cultural Ministers Council Statistics Working Group, *Vital Signs: Cultural Indicators for Australia* (1st edition for consultation), National Centre for Culture and Recreation Statistics, Australian Bureau of Statistics, 2010.
- Norman Douglas, Ngaire Douglas and Ros Derrett, *Special Interest Tourism: Context and Cases*, John Wiley & Sons, 2001.
- Kathleen M. Eisenhardt, “Building theories from case study research”, *Academy of Management Review*, vol. 14, n° 4, 1989.
- Juliana Engberg, “Southern discomfort: Tasmania’s art scene”, *Monthly*, December 2008-January 2009 [<http://www.themonthly.com.au/art-juliana-engberg-southern-discomfort-tasmania-s-art-scene-1336>].

- Uwe Flick, *An Introduction to Qualitative Research* (2nd edn), Sage Publications, 2002.
- Josephine Giles, "Synaesthesia; how you perceive it", *Aussietheatre.com*, 2102 [<http://aussietheatre.com.au/reviews/synaesthesia-how-you-perceive-it>].
- Valery Gordin and Marina Matetskaya, "Creative tourism in Saint Petersburg: the state of the art", *Journal of Tourism Consumption and Practice*, vol. 4, n° 2, 2012.
- Chris Hamnett and Noam Shoal, "Museums as 'Flagships' of Urban Development", in Lily M. Hoffman, Dennis R. Judd and Susan S. Fainstein (eds), *Cities and Visitors: Regulating People, Markets, and City Space*, Blackwell, 2003.
- Graham Hankinson, "Location branding: a study of the branding practices of 12 English cities", *Journal of Brand Management*, vol. 9, n° 2, 2001.
- George E. Hein, *Learning in the Museum*, Routledge, 1998.
- 

HAVE IT BEEN COMPROMISED AMONG THE MEMBER STATES FOR REFUGEE STATUS IN EUROPEAN UNION LAW SYSTEM?

ZEYNEP ÖZGENÇ *

Abstract: The Union shall develop a common policy on asylum, subsidiary protection and temporary protection with a view to offering appropriate status to any third-country national requiring international protection and ensuring compliance with the principle of non-refoulement in terms of Article 78/1 of The Treaty on the Functioning of the European Union (TFEU). This policy must be in accordance with the Geneva Convention of 28 July 1951 (Geneva Convention) and the Protocol of 31 January 1967 relating to the status of refugees (Additional Protocol), and other relevant treaties, according to this article. This paper is also aimed to identify refugees, asylum seekers, displaced persons in the light of Council Directive 2001/55/EC of 20 July 2001 on minimum standards for giving temporary protection in the event of a mass influx of displaced persons and on measures promoting a balance of efforts between Member States in receiving such persons and bearing the consequences thereof, The European Parliament and of The Council Directive 2011/95/EU of 13 December on standards for the qualification of third-country nationals or stateless persons as beneficiaries of international protection, for a uniform status for refugees or for persons eligible for subsidiary protection, and for the content of the protection granted and Council Regulation (EC) 343/2003 of 18 February 2003 establishing the criteria and mechanisms for determining the Member State responsible for examining an asylum application lodged in one of the Member States by a third-country nationals.

* Assistant Professor Doctor, Uludag University
Faculty of Law, Private International Law Department
[zeynepm@uludag.edu.tr]



Key Word: The 1951 Convention Relating to Status of Refugees, European Union Law, Refugees, Asylum Seekers, Displaced Persons

1. Introduction

The criteria sought for determination of refugee status are revealed objectively in many international regulations especially Geneva Convention and Additional Protocol¹. However, it is seen that states are disposed to comment legislation in restricting way while national regulations are made regarding who will be accepted in refugee status. Thanks to that, states show tendency to avoid of the liabilities arisen from international law. The same matter may be mentioned in terms of European Union (EU) member states. In this study, it will be scrutinized what are the legal criteria to be taken basis for refugee status for EU member states, whether uniform application on this subject is possible in national laws along with the resolutions of the Court of Justice of European Union (CJEU), considering sui generis² structure of EU law.

¹For full English text of related Convention and Protocol, see <http://legal.un.org/avl/ha/prsr/prsr.html> (e.t.: 30.05.2016).

²EU law is independent and autonomous law order. Superiority and priority of EU law to national laws is recognized. In addition, EU law norms are directly applicable in some areas and directly effects conditionally. For detailed info on this matter, see REÇBER Kamuran, *Avrupa Birliği Hukuku ve Temel Metinler*, 2nd Edition, 2013, Bursa, p. 63-94; ARSAVA Ayşe Füsün, *Avrupa Toplulukları Hukuku ve Bu Hukukun Ulusal Alanda Uygulanmasından Doğan Sorunlar*, Ankara, 1985, p. 111-133; KARAKAŞ Ayşe Işıl, *Avrupa Topluluğu Hukuk Düzeni ve Ulus Devlet Egemenliği*, İstanbul, 1993, p. 91-97; TEKİNALP Gülören/ TEKİNALP Ünal, *Avrupa Birliği Hukuku*, İstanbul, 2000, p. 142-170; BAYKAL Sanem, *AT Hukukunun Etkili Uygulanması ve Bireysel Haklar*, Ankara, 2002, p. 48-52; ÖZSUNAY Ergun, *Avrupa Birliği Hukuku ve Türkiye-AB İlişkileri*, İstanbul, 2015, p. 113-116; GÜNUĞUR Haluk, *Avrupa Birliği Hukuk Düzeni*, Ankara, 2007, p. 64-70; GÖÇMEN İlke, *Avrupa Birliği Hukuku'nda Direktiflerin Bireyler Arasındaki İlişkilere Etkisi*, Ankara, 2008, p. 43-63.

2. Determination of refugee status in primary legislations

In general, refugee law forms a part of freedom, security and justice area in EU law³. In historical process, this area is evolved from inter-governmental structure towards supranational structure. With the innovations brought with Treaty of Maastricht⁴, it has started to be institutionalized. Through Lisbon treaty⁵, it is aimed to make it a part of European integration⁶.

Pursuant to article 78/I of TFEU, a part of Lisbon treaty, it is expressed that European Union shall act with the following objectives for determination of refugee status:

In accordance with Geneva Convention and Additional Protocol and other regulations⁷,

To develop a common policy on temporary protection, subsidiary protection and asylum that aim at presenting an appropriate status to third-country nationals who need international protection within the scope of the principle of non-refoulement.

In article 78/II of TFEU, it is resolved that the conditions concerning the principles and procedures about determination of responsible member states and the standards related to granting and withdrawing status of asylum, subsidiary protection and temporary protection shall be determined with the measures that the European Parliament and the Council will adopt in line with ordinary legislative procedures.

JSHS|

³ GÖÇMEN İlke, Avrupa İnsan Hakları Sözleşmesi Işığında Avrupa Birliği ve Türkiye Göç Hukuku, Ankara, 2015, p. 92. (Immigration Law)

⁴ For full English text of Maastricht Agreement, see http://europa.eu/eu-law/decision-making/treaties/pdf/treaty_on_european_union/treaty_on_european_union_en.pdf (e.t.: 05.04.2016).

⁵ For full English text of Lisbon Treaty see., https://www.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/228848/7310.pdf (e.t. 14.06.2016).

⁶ Lisbon Treaty comprises from international law transactions in Treaty Establishing EU (TEEU) and ABİİA on which EU is founded. On this subject, see REÇBER, p. 39-47.

⁷ Lisbon Treaty comprises from international law transactions in Treaty Establishing EU (TEEU) and ABİİA on which EU is founded. On this subject, see REÇBER, p. 39-47.

3. Determination of refugee status in secondary legislations

Geneva Convention and Additional Protocol are accepted as upper normative norms. Thus, it is to develop common asylum policy accordingly. No provision is available in primary norms regarding how refugee status will be determined. In this case, secondary legislations gain importance. In order to implement secondary legislations uniformly that set out the standards pertaining to determination of refugee status, it is required to develop judicial cooperation between CJEU and international courts⁸. However, it is observed that national courts of member states that will manage judicial cooperation about determination of refugee status particularly fight against CJEU and other national courts, go into the effort of applying its own national norms⁹.

Recast Dublin II Regulation

“Convention establishing the criteria and mechanisms for determining the Member State responsible for examining an asylum application lodged in one of the Member States by a third-country national”, with its other name, Dublin Convention¹⁰ was signed by all EU member states except for Denmark and come into force on 1 September 1997. Later, Dublin II Regulation¹¹ no.2003/343 and of 17 March 2003 has taken the place of this Convention¹². With the Regulation

⁸ ARAÚJO Rodrigues, “*The Qualification For Being A Refugee Under EU Law*”, European Journal of Migration and Law, Vol. 16, 2014, s. 535-558, p. 539.

⁹ DÖRING Harald, “*German Courts and Their Understanding of the Common European Asylum System*”, International Journal of Refugee Law, Vol. 25, No., 4, pp. 768-778, p. 768; HÉLÈNE Lambert, “*Transnational law, Judges and Refugees in the European Union*”, The Limits of Transnational Law- Refugee Law, Policy Harmonization and Judicial Dialogue in the European Union, Ed.: Guy S. Goodwin-Gill/Lambert HÉLÈNE, UK, 2010, p. 2.

¹⁰ For full English text of the Convention see [http://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=CELEX:41997A0819\(01\)&from=EN](http://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=CELEX:41997A0819(01)&from=EN) (e.t.: 11.04.2016).

¹¹ For full English text of this Regulation see <http://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/HTML/?uri=URISERV:133153&from=EN> (e.t.: 11.04.2016).

¹² For detailed information on Dublin II Regulation, see KAPLAN Yavuz, “*Avrupa Birliğinin İltica Taleplerinin Kabulü ve Yetki Konusuna ve Yetki Konusuna İlişkin Yeni Standartları*”, AÜEHFD, V. VIII, I. 1-2, 2004, p. 477-496.

no. 604/2013 and of 26 June 2013, Dublin II Regulation¹³ is amended and commenced to be referred as Dublin III Regulation. Pursuant to 10th paragraph of preamble of this regulation, it is recognized that Dublin II Regulation covers the persons those who apply for subsidiary protection and the persons who possess the condition of taking under subsidiary protection especially with the Qualification Directive no. 2011/95 with the purpose of providing unity in current asylum legislation and treating equal to those who benefit from this protection and those who resort to international protection.

It is indicated that objective of recast Dublin II Regulation is to identify the criteria and mechanisms for determining the member states responsible for examining of applications for asylum lodged in one of the Member States by third-country nationals. (article 1) International protection application is specified in the meaning of making application according to Qualification Directive no.2011/95 (article 2/b). It is explained that if third-country nationals or stateless person make international application but process is not finalized yet, these persons will be called applicant under this Regulation. (article 2/c) In this regard, within the scope of Qualification Directive no.2011/95, determination of the member states responsible for the claims of the persons to be deemed under refugee or subsidiary protection status, discretionary power of responsible state, liabilities of responsible member states, claims of applicant and admission procedures of claimant are included.

JSHS|

Qualification Directive

Qualification Directive¹⁴ no. 2011/95 and of 13.12.2011 is laid down standarts for the qualification of third-country nationals or stateless persons as beneficiaries of international protection, for a uniform status for refugees or for persons eligible for subsidiary protection, and for the content of the protection-granted.¹⁵ (article 1)

¹³ For full English text of related Regulation, see <http://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=CELEX:32013R0604&from=EN> (e.t.: 11.04.2016).

¹⁴ For full English text of this Directive, see <http://eur-lex.europa.eu/LexUriServ/LexUriServ.do?uri=OJ:L:2011:337:0009:0026:en:PDF> (e.t.: 14.04.2016).

¹⁵ The Directive no.2011/95 is amended state of the Directive no.2004/83 and of 29.04.2004.

Pursuant to Qualification Directive, refugee is described as a third-country national who, owing to a well-founded fear of being persecuted for reasons of race, religion, nationality, political opinion or membership of a particular social group, is outside the country of nationality and is unable or, owing to such fear, is unwilling to avail himself or herself of the protection of that country, or a stateless person, who, being outside of the country of former habitual residence for the same reasons as mentioned above, is unable or, owing to such fear, unwilling to return to it, and to whom Article 12 does not apply (Exclusion from being refugee status) (article 2/I-d). Refugee status means that ‘refugee status’ means the recognition by a Member State of a third-country national or a stateless person as a refugee (article 2/I-e)¹⁶.

Three criteria is adopted in Qualification Directive for acceptance of refugee status to a stateless person of citizen of third party state in accordance with Geneva Convention article 1(A)/II¹⁷:

Well- founded fear of persecution. Two main questions come to mind for establishing this criteria: First, what are persecution acts? Second, how can well- founded fear of persecution be determined? For both cases, existence of current persecution acts are not only sought, but also presence of a real risk related to occurrence potential of persecution acts in the future.

It is seen basic human rights are grounded to determine acts of persecution in Qualification Directive. Hence, in chapter three entitled “Acts of Persecution” of this Directive, European Convention on Human Rights is grounded for determining what the persecution acts to be evaluated under Geneva Convention¹⁸. (Article 9)

¹⁶ On description of refugee status in Turkish law, see ÇELİKEL Aysel/ÖZTEKİN GELGEL Günseli, *Yabancılar Hukuku*, Renewed 22th Edition, İstanbul, 2016, p. 20-23; EKŞİ Nuray, *Yabancılar ve Uluslararası Koruma Hukuku*, 3rd Edition, İstanbul, 2015, s. 155-162; ÇİÇEKLİ Bülent, 6548 sayılı Kanunla Güncellenmiş Yabancılar ve Mülteciler Hukuku, Updated 6th Edition, Ankara, 2016, p. 266-270; ÖVÜNÇ ÖZTÜRK Neva, *Mültecinin Hukuki Statüsünün Belirlenmesi*, Ankara, 2015, p. 398-404.

¹⁷ In Geneva Convention it is not indicated which acts enter within the scope and description of persecution. On refugee status pursuant to Geneva Convention, article 1(A)/II, see ÇİÇEKLİ, p. 238; ÖZTÜRK, p. 207; GOODWIN-GILL G.S./MCADAM J, *The Refugee in International Law*, New York, 2011, p. 15-49.

¹⁸ ÖZTÜRK, s. 224; GOODWIN-GILL/MCADAM, p. 90-92.

On the other hand, it is also recognized that human right violations do not mean unjust persecution risk directly¹⁹. In order to assess an act as persecution, it is required that it leads to serious violation in case of repetition and depending on the content. National courts may establish different criteria for evaluation of this matter.

Narrow approach²⁰ on this matter is to make evaluation about that if the act resulting in serious and continuous violation is legal or not. For instance, German courts take the criteria on violation of core of freedom basis for determination of persecution. While searching existence of persecution act, German Federal Administrative Court approves that only serious and extensive restriction may affect core of freedom. In this sense, it was not contested in German asylum jurisprudence that immediate threats to health life or physical freedom arising from the exercise of religious practice amount to acts of persecution.²¹ On the contrary, as regards the broad approach²² adopted in Anglo-American Law, serious and continuous violation of basic human rights is determined as per the damage occurred.

In this subject, no clarity is available in Qualification Directive as well. In order to ensure a uniform application, CJEU commented what should be understood with the term “severe violation of basic human rights” indicated in article 9 of Qualification Directive.

JSHS|

In the dispute which is brought before German Administrative Court with regard to the Combined decision²³ no C-71/11 and C-99/11 on 05.09.2012 of CJEU, Y entered in Germany in 2003 and Z in 2003 and made asylum application and requested international protection within the scope of refugee status. Y and Z are tied to Ahmediyye

¹⁹ LEHMANN Julian, “Persecution, Concealment and the Limits of a Human Rights Approach in (European) Asylum Law- The Case of Germany v Y and Z in the Court of Justice of the European Union”, *International Journal of Refugee Law*, Vol. 26, No 1, 2014, p. 65-81, p. 70.

²⁰ LEHMANN, s. 74.

²¹ Regarding the applications on this subject of German Federal Administrative Court, see LEHMANN, s. 67.

²² LEHMANN, p. 74.

²³ For full English text of related decision, see <http://curia.europa.eu/juris/document/document.jsf?text=&docid=126364&pageIndex=0&doclang=EN&mode=lst&dir=&occ=first&part=1&cid=432835> (e.t: 04.05.2016). (excerpted from: Joined Cases no.C-71/11 and C-99/11)

belief and in Pakistan of which they are citizen, the persons who are tied to this belief are threatened, rocks are thrown their sanctuaries and may be sentenced to prison. German Administrative Court of First Instance has ordered that claim for refugee status of Y and Z is inappropriate, there is no well-founded fear of persecution for leaving their country of origin. Against this decision, Y and Z have applied to superior court. It has also requested opinion of CJEU with preliminary ruling method.

In aforesaid decision, CJEU is based on the concept genuine risk while evaluating existence of well-founded fear of persecution. It has pointed out that genuine risk means availability of the possibility of subjecting to inhuman or degrading treatment or judging due to the presence of one of the persecution reasons which are listed in Qualification Directive, article 10, in the country of origin of the person who makes application²⁴

At the same time, CJEU has also led to national administrative authorities for determination of genuine risk. In this context, it has stated that objective and subjective factors should be taken into consideration for existence of genuine risk. It has ordered that not only being a member of religion different from general society but also pressures created on person by considering how he/she come through his/her belief in country of origin should be considered at the same time in concrete dispute, so subjective factors will also be taken into consideration²⁵. Objective factors are disregarded as it is not known how many persons are put on trail or punished in country of origin by the reason of Ahmediyye belief²⁶.

For determining well-founded fear of persecution, standard provision is regulated in Qualification Directive, article 4/IV. According to this provision, for determining well-founded fear of persecution, not only the subjective condition in which individual experiences but also existence of possible persecution to occur in the future are considered and an evidence based evaluation is sought²⁷.

²⁴ Joined Cases no. C-71/11 and C-99/11, prg., 69.

²⁵ Joined Cases no.C-71/11 and C-99/11, prg., 70-71.

²⁶ DÖRING, p. 770.

²⁷ ÖZTÜRK, p. 219.

In the offer regarding Qualification Directive of European Union, it is stated that existence of well-founded fear of persecution is determined with reasonable possibility test²⁸. For example, in Joined Case²⁹ no. C-199/12, C-200/12 and C-201/12 on 07.11.2013, CJEU has indicated that no prohibition of homosexual orientation in Criminal Code is sufficient³⁰. The penalties given in country of origin as a result of these orientations should be discriminative and disproportionate³¹

On the other side, it is observed that different resolutions are given in the national courts of the member states at the stage of formation of fear with well-founded grounds. Immigration and asylum office of upper tribunal in United Kingdom has deemed existence of reasonable degree of likelihood sufficient for experiencing well-founded fear of persecution by person. When national court resolutions of other member states are considered, for determining existence of well-founded fear of persecution, Germany acts based on considerable likelihood/probability, Spain and Portugal on reasonable likelihood, France on likelihood on certain and satisfactory level, Belgium on certain or sufficiently probable persecution³².

JSHS|

Well-founded fear of persecution is for race, religion, nationality, social group belonging or political view of individual. In Qualification

²⁸ European Commission, *Proposal For A Council Directive On Minimum Standards For The Qualification And Status Of Third Country Nationals And Stateless Persons As Refugees Or As Persons Who Otherwise Need International Protection*, 30.11.2001, 2002/C 51 E/17, COM (2001), 510 final, <http://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=CELEX:52001PC0510&from=EN> (e.t.: 13.06.2016), Article 7/(b).

²⁹ For related decision, see <http://curia.europa.eu/juris/document/document.jsf?jsessionid=9ea7d2dc30d55eeaf55dba9242359121ebe44f0ab1b7.e34KaxiLc3qMb40Rch0SaxuTahz0?text=&docid=144215&pageIndex=0&doclang=EN&mode=lst&dir=&occ=first&part=1&cid=287407>

³⁰<http://curia.europa.eu/juris/document/document.jsf?jsessionid=9ea7d2dc30d55eeaf55dba9242359121ebe44f0ab1b7.e34KaxiLc3qMb40Rch0SaxuTahz0?text=&docid=144215&pageIndex=0&doclang=EN&mode=lst&dir=&occ=first&part=1&cid=287407> (13.06.2016). (excerpted from: Joined Cases no. C-199/12, C-200/12 and C-201/12)

³¹Joined Cases no. C-199/12, C-200/12 and C-201/12, prg. 61.

³² On this matter, see ÖZTÜRK, p. 217.

Directive, article 10, it is described what the concepts race, religion, nationality, special group belonging and political view listed as reason of persecution are in order to accept refugee status.

It is also described that a connection should be present between reasons or acts of persecution listed in Qualification Directive or protection weakness. (article 9/III)

Individual does not benefit or have no desire to benefit from protection of origin of country due to well-founded fear of persecution that it owns due to race, religion, nationality, social group belonging or political views.

Directive on Temporary Protection

One of the constituents of EU asylum legislation is also formed by the Directive on Temporary Protection³³ no.2001/55 and of 20 July 2001. It is stated that the purpose of this Directive is to establish minimum standards for giving temporary protection in the event of a mass influx of displaced persons from third countries who are unable to return to their country of origin and to promote a balance of effort between Member States in receiving and bearing the consequences of receiving such persons. (article 1)

In the Directive on Temporary Protection, it is specified that temporary protection means providing urgent and temporary protection to the persons who are displaced and could not return country of origin or the persons who request protection in case of possible mass flow or in the event of mass flow especially when a risk is available not to cope up with this flow of asylum system without affecting its effective functioning. (article 2/a)

Displaced persons are accepted as third country citizens or stateless persons who have to leave their countries of origin or evacuated upon a request by international organizations especially and could not return under safe and permanent conditions due to the condition continuing in this country, may enter within the scope of Geneva Convention, article 1/(A) or the instruments providing other international or national, international protection, notably:

³³ For full English text of this Directive, see (e.t.: 03.05.2016).

(i) the person who escape from prevalent violence or armed conflict regions,

(ii) the persons who become victim of cases that (their) human right are violated generally or systematically or under risk seriously about subjecting to such case³⁴. (Article 2/c)

Showing differences between the description of displaced person and refugee in the meaning of The Directive on Temporary Protection has importance. When it is looked at the description of both displaced person and refugee, foreigner has to leave its country of origin or be forced to leave it³⁵. When wording is thought, it is seen that the description of displaced person also contains the description of refugee within the scope of this Directive. However, as acceptance of refugee status is basis, it is assumed that the persons who have no acceptance condition of this status should be adopted as displaced person and it is aimed to meet urgent and temporary protection needs of these persons through temporary protection status pursuant to the principle of non-refoulement within the scope of Geneva Convention, article 33³⁶.

JSHS|

Thus, temporary protection status is determined in the discussion paper³⁷ titled "Roundtable on Temporary Protection" of UN High Commission on Refugees, it considers that other regional regulations (i.e. EU Law) regarding refugee status or Geneva Convention and Additional Protocol remain reserved³⁸.

4. Conclusion

When secondary legislations especially related to determination of refugee status in EU law are examined, it is seen no regulations different from Geneva Convention and Additional Protocol are brought. Only a road map is presented to the member countries with respect to the rules they will apply. Because, in the preamble part of secon-

³⁴ ÇİÇEKLİ, p. 241.

³⁵ PHUONG Catherine, *The International Protection of Internally Displaced Persons*, UK, 2005, p. 20.

³⁶ PHUONG, p. 20.

³⁷ For Discussion Paper, see <http://www.unhcr.org/506d85849.html> (e.t.: 03.05.2016).

³⁸ Discussion Paper, prg. 26-28.

dary legislations, it is explained that approximation of national rules concerning acceptance of refugee status is targeted, it may be stated that principle of cooperation between the member states in this field is valid.

On the other hand, no international specialized court that will implement and interpret Geneva Convention assumed as superior normative regulation in terms of EU law and Additional Protocol completing it is available. Therefore, it could not be mentioned about uniformity for commenting the criteria regarding determining refugee status in terms of both CJEU and national courts.